THE NEW TESTAMENT
IN
BRAID SCOTS.

RENDERED BY
REV. WILLIAM WYE SMITH.

NEW EDITION, REVISED.

PAISLEY:
ALEXANDER GARDNER,
Publisher and Bookseller to the late Queen Victoria.
1904
PREFACE.

There are many folk, who have spoken English at their grown-up days, who like to gang back to the tongue of their bairnhood, 'tis the mirk and shadows of auld age. There are others who seem to talk better to the Word when it comes to them wi' a wee o' the Scottish birr. And there are a bundle of folk—and I meet them a'gate—who don't speak Scots theirselves but are keen to hear it, and like to read it.

And there is another consideration—the Scots tongue is no gettin extendit, and some folk think it may be tint a' the gither 'or lang. And God's Word is for a' men; and ony lawfu' means ane can use to get folk to read it, and tak tent to it, is right and proper. For a' theae reasons, and ither's I could bring forrit, I hae putten the New Testament intil Braid Scots. Let nae man think it is a vulgar tongue—a mere gibberish to be dune wi' as sune as ane is bye the schule-time. It is an ancient and honourable tongue; wi' rutes deep i' the yird; aulder than muckle o' the English. It cam doon to us throue oor Gothic and Pictish forebears; it was heard on the battle-field wi' Bruce; it waftit the triumphant prayers and sangs o' the Martyrs intil Heeven; it dirl't on the tongue o' John Knox, denouncin wrang; it sweeten't a' the heevenlie letters o' Samu'l Rutherford; and aneath the theek o' mony a muirland cottage it e'en noo carries thanks to Heeven, and brings the blessins doon!

And I haen pu'tten pen to paper unbidden. A wheen screeches o' the Word dune intil Scots I had at times pu'tten afore the public een; and folk wad write me, "Hae ye ony mair o'it? Is the hail Testament in Scots to be gotten?" till I begude to think that aiblins Providence had gien me the Scots blude and the Scots tongue, wi' the American edication, for the vera reason that—haein baith lang'ages—I sou'd recommend the Word in Scots; and just Scots eneuch no to be unfathomable to the ordinar English reader.

Whiles thar has been a chance o' makin the meanin plainer; whiles a Scots phrase o' unco tenderness or wondrous pith could com in. And at a' times, ahint the pen that was movin, was a puir but leal Scots heart, fu' o' prayer that this sma' effort might be acceptit o' the dear Maister—and, survivin a' the misca'in o' the pernickity and the fashionable—might bring the memory o' a worthy tongue, and the better knowledge o' a Blessed Saviour, to this ane and that ane, as they might chance to read it.

WILLIAM WYE SMITH.

ST. CATHARINES, CANADA.
THE NAMES AND ORDER
OF ALL
THE BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT
WITH
THE NUMBER OF THEIR CHAPTERS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Chap.</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th></th>
<th>Chap.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MATTHEW</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1 TIMOTHY</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>2 TIMOTHY</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>TITUS</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>114</td>
<td>PHILEMON</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THE ACTS</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>TO THE HEBREWS</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>191</td>
<td>EPISTLE OF JAMES</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 CORINTHIANS</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>209</td>
<td>1 PETER</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>294</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 CORINTHIANS</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>226</td>
<td>2 PETER</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GALATIANS</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>237</td>
<td>1 JOHN</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPHESIANS</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>243</td>
<td>2 JOHN</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PHILIPPIANS</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>249</td>
<td>3 JOHN</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COLOSSIANS</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>254</td>
<td>JUDE</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 THESSALONIANS</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>258</td>
<td>REVELATION</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 THESSALONIANS</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>262</td>
<td>THE TWENTY-THIRD PSALM</td>
<td>332</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
MATTHEW.

CHAPTER ANE.

The Forebears and Nativity o' Christ.

The buik o' the generation o' Jesus
the Christ, Davuid's son, the son
o' Abram.
2. Ab'ram begat Isaac; and Isaac
begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Jud- 
dah and his brethren.
3. And Judah begat Pharez and
Zarah o' Tamar; and Pharez begat 
Erom; and Esrom begat Aram.
4. And Aram begat Aminadab;
and Aminadab begat Naasson; and
Naasson begat Salmon.
5. And Salmon begat Boaz, o' 
Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed, o' 
Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse.
6. And Jesse begat Davuid the 
king; and Davuid the king begat 
Solomon, o' her wha was Uriah's.
7. And Solomon begat Rehoboam;
and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and
Abijah begat Asa.
8. And Asa begat Jehosaphat; and 
Jehosaphat begat Jehoram; and Je-
horam begat Uzziah.
9. And Uzziah begat Jotham; and 
Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat 
Hezekiah.
10. And Hezekiah begat Manase-
seh; and Manasseh begat Amon; and 
Amon begat Josiah.
11. And Josiah begat Jehoiachin 
and his brethren, nor-haun the time
they war carry't awa' to Babylon.
12. And eftir they cam to Babyl-
on, Jehoiachin begat Salathiel; and 
Salathiel begat Zerubbabel.
13. And Zerubbabel begat Abiud;
and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eli-
kim begat Azor.
14. And Azor begat Sadoc; and 
Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim be-
gat Eliud.
15. And Eliud begat Eleazar; and 
Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan 
begat Jacob.

16. And Jacob begat Joseph,
Mary's husband, o' wham was born 
Jesus, wha is ca'd "The Christ."
17. Sae a' the generations frae 
Ab'ram to Davuid are fourteen genera-
tions; and frae Davuid to the takin 
awa' to Babylon fourteen generations; 
and frae the takin awa' to Babylon to 
Christ fourteen generations.
18. Noo the nativity o' Jesus
Christ was this gate: when his mither
Mary was maarry't till Joseph, 'or 
they cam thegither, she was fund wi' 
bairn o' the Holie Spirit.
19. Than her guidman, Joseph, bein
an upricht man, and no desirin her 
name soud be i' the mooth o' the public,
wast etlin to pit her awa' hildins.
20. But as he had thir things in 
his mind, see! an Angel o' the Lord 
appearit till him by a dream, sayin,
"Joseph, son o' Davuid, binna feared 
to tak till ye yere wife, Mary; for 
that whilk is begotten in her is by 
the Holie Spirit.
21. "And she sal bring forth a son, 
and ye shall ca' his name JESUS; for 
sal 1 save his folk frae their sins."
22. Noo, a' this was dune, that it 
might come to pass what was said by 
the Lord threw the prophet,
23. "Tak tent! a maiden sal be 
wi' bairn, and sal bring forth a son; 
and they wull ca' his name Emman-
uel," whilk is, translatit, "God wi' us."
24. Sae Joseph, comin oot o' his 
sleep, did as the Angel had bidden 
him, and took till him his wife.
25. And leev'd in continence wi' 
her till she had brocht forth her first-
born son; and ca'd his name JESUS.

1 V. 21. The dourness o' the Jews, and 
e'en o' his ain kith accordin to the flesh, 
was unco strange. The Angel to Joseph,
(and Simeon and Anna,) said naething o' 
his bein a great conqueror, but aye to he 
a blessing to the world; and yet they 
wad hae it that he shou'd be a conqueror 
King like Davuid.
CHAPTER TWA.
The Wyss Men frae the East. To Egypt, and back again.

NOO, whan Jesus was born i' Bethlehem-Judah, i' the days o' King Herod, lo! Wyss Men cam frae the East tae Jerusalem.

2. And quo' they, "Whaur is he bidin that is ca'd King o' the Jews? for i' the East we saw his starn, and are come forrit to worship him."

3. But the King, hearin, was sair putten-aboot; and a' Jerusalem wi' him.

4. And, gatherin a' the heighpriests and writers o' the nation, he wad ken o' them "whaur the Messiah soud be born?"

5. And quo' they, "In Bethlehem-Judah; for sae it is putten doon by the prophet:"

6. "'And thou, Bethlehem, land o' Judah, none the least amang Judah's princes! for oot o' thee sal come a Ruler, wha sal tend my folk o' Isra'!"

7. Than, Herod, convenin the Wyss Men privately, faund oot mair strickly o' the comin o' the starn;

8. And bad them gang to Bethlehem; and quo' he, "Gang, and seek ye oot the wee bairn; and whan ye ken, fesh me woor again, that I as weel may come and worship."

9. Eftir hearin the King, they gaed awa'; and lo! the starn whilk they saw i' the East gaed on afore them, till it stood whaur the wee bairn was.

10. And whan they saw the starn, they were blythe wi' unco blythenees.

11. And comin intil the hoose, they saw the wee bairn, and his mither Mary; and louitin doon, worshipp't him. And openin' oot their
gear, they offerr't till him gifts—gowd, and frankincense, and myrrh.

12. And bein warned in a dream no to go back till Herod, they airtit their way to their ain kintra anither gate.

13. Noo whan they had gane, tak tent! an Angel o' the Lord appear't to Joseph by a dream, and quo' he, "Rise, tak till ye the wee bairn, and his mither, and flee intil Egypt, and bide ye thar till I tell ye; for Herod seeks the wee bairn to destroy him."

14. And he, risin, took the wee bairn and his mither by nicht, and cam intil Egypt.

15. And bade there till Herod's death: that it soud be fulfilled what was said by the Lord throwe the prophet, "Fras Egypt hae I ca'd my Son."

16. Than Herod, seein he was made sport o' by the Wyss Men, was unco furious, and sent oot to slay a' the lad-bairns in Bethlehem, and a' the kintra-side aboot, frae twa-year auld doon: conform tae the time he had been tell't by the Wyss Men.

17. Than cam to pass the sayin o' Jeremiah the prophet:

18. "A voice was heard in Ramah, greetin and maenin, and murnin sair; Ra'hel greetin for her weans, and wadna be comfortit, for that they are-na!"


20. And quo' he, "Rise! tak the wee bairn and his mither, and journey intil Isra'1's land; for they that socht the wee bairn's life are deid."

21. And he raise, and took till him the wee bairn and his mither, and cam intil the land o' Isra'1.

22. But whan it was tell't him that Archelaus rang in Judea in the stead o' Herod his father, he was fley't to gang thar: but, being instruckit in a dream, he gaed intil the paires o' Galilee:
23. And cam and dwalt in a citie ca'd Nazareth; that it sould come to pass that was said by the prophet, "He will be ca'd a Nazarene."

CHAPTER THRIE.
John baptzezin. He spake wi' unco plainness to the folk. Baptizezin the Son of Man.

NOO, i' thae days, comes John the Baptist, preachin' i' the muirlands o' Judea.

2. And qu' he, "Repent ye a! for the kingdom o' Heeven is at baun!"

3. For it is he wha was tell't o' by Esaiab the prophet, sayin', "The sough o' ane crying oot i' the waste, 'Mak ye ready a gate for the Lord! Straucht oot his fitpath!'"

4. And John his sel had his cleedin o' camel's hair, and a belt o' a skin; and his meat was locusts and rock binny.

5. And thar war ganin oot till him Jerusalem and a' Judah, and the kintra-side about Jordan;

6. And war baptzez't by him in Jordan; confessin' a' their sin.

7. But when he saw a hantle o' the Pharisees and Sadducees come till his baptzezin, qu' he to them, "Eh, ye venomous race! Wha has gien ye warnin' to flee frae comin wrath?"

8. "Fesh than forth the frutes conform till repentance!"

9. "And say-ye-na to yersels, 'We hae Abra'am till oor father!' for say I t'ye, God could raise up oot o' thir stanes, bairns to Abra'am!"

10. "And noo is the aixe brocht to the rute o' the trees; and ilka tree bringin'-na forth gude frute is cuttit doon, and cuisten intil the burnin."

11. "I, indeed, div in warit bap-teze ye intil repentance; but he wha follows me is sterk nor mysel; whase shoon I'se no fit to cairry; he sal bap-teze ye wi' Holie Spirit, and flauft o' fire.

12. "Whase fanner is in his neive, and he'se' scour-oot his threshin-flair, and gathir his wheat intil his giral; but the cauff wull he burn in nevir-endin lowe!"

13. Than cam Jesus frae Galilee tae John, to be baptizez't o' him.

14. Noo, John was forbidden him; and quo' he, "I hae need o' thy baptzezin, and come ye to me?"

15. But Jesus answer't him, and said, "Sae be it e noo; for sae it behoves us to fulfill a richt-ga'gin!" Than he contentit him.

16. And Jesus, whan he was baptzez't, gaed up straucht frae the warit, and lo! the hee'vens war unseekit till him, and he saw the Spirit o' God comin doon like a doo, and lichtis upon him.

17. And tak tent! a voice oot e' the lift, sayin', "This is my Son, my Beloved, in wham I delight!"

CHAPTR FOWR.
Sautan has a twisie wi Christ. Jesus takes up wi' Capernaum; and bids a whenn disciples.

THAN was Jesus airtit by the Spirit intil the wilderness, thar to be testit o' the Enemy.

2. And whan he had fastit for forty days and nichts, he was spent wi hunger.

3. And whan the Tempter cam till him, quo' he, "Gin thou be God's Son, speak to thir stanes, that they be bannocks!"

4. But he, answerin' till him, said, "No allenarlie on breid leefes man, but by ilk word o' God's mouth!"

5. Than the deevil taks him wi' him intil the holie citie, and pits him on the tapmaist towerickie o' the Temple.

6. And quo' he till him, "Gin ye be God's Son, cast yersel ower; for it is putten-doorn, 'Till his Angels

1 V. 12. The Lord is unco lang-sufferan'; but wha lichtlies him will fin' a time comin whan the Master reds up his flair; and what's cauff maun gang the gate o' the cauff—intil the lowe!
sal he gie chairge anent ye; and on their hauns sal they hauk ye up, that ye clour-na yere fit again a stane!"

7. Quo' Jesus till him, "Ance mair it is putten-doon, 'Ye sanna temp the Lord yere God!"

8. And again the Enemy takes him up intil an unco heigh mountain, and airts him till a' the kingdoms o' the yirth, and a' their glorie;

9. And says till him, "A' thae things gie I t'ye gin ye, fa'in doon, gie worship to me!"

10. Than quo' Jesus till him, "Awa, Sautan! for it is putten-doon, 'The Lord yere God sal ye worship; and him alane sal ye ser'!"

11. Than the deevil quate him; and lo! the Angels cam to ser' him.

12. Noo whan it was tell't him that John was taen haud o', he gaed awa' intil Galilee:

13. And fersakin Nazareth, he cam and made his dwalin i' Capernaun, on the side o' the Loch, on the border o' Zabulon and Naphtali;

14. That it might come to pass what said Esaiah the Prophet,

15. "Land o' Zabulon! and land o' Naphtali! Galilee o' the nations!

16. "The folk that were sittin' i' the mirk, saw an unco licht; and till a' thae sittin' i' the land and the mirkness o' the deid, the licht raise up!"

17. F're that time forth begude Jesus to preach; and quo' he, "Re-pent ye! for Heeven's kingdom draws nar-baun!"

18. And walkin' by the Loch o' Galilee, he saw twa brothers, Simon, (ca'd Peter), and Andro his brither, casitin aboot a net i' the Loch, for they war fisher-folk.

19. And quo' he to them, "Follow ye me! and I'ae mak ye fishers o' men!"

20. And they, withoot ado, left the nets, and gaed eftir him.

21. And gan gin forrit tharawa, he saw ither twa brothers, James, son o' Zebedee, and his brither John, in a smack wi Zebedee their faither,

workin' on their nets: and he bad them "Come!"

22. And they, forsakin the boat, and their faither, gaed eftir him.

23. And Jesus gaed ower a' Galilee, instructin' i' their kirks, and giean forth the Blythe-Message o' the Kingdom, and healin' a' diseases, and a' in-firmities among the folk.

24. And the sough o' him gaed oot intil a' Syria: and they fesh't till him a' wha war ill wi' a' diseases and pains, and thae possess' wi' demons, and dementit, and that had a stroke: and he healed them.

25. And unco thrangs follow't him —frae Galilee, and the Ten Cities, and Jerusalem, and Judea, and ayont the Jordan.

CHAPTR FYVE.

Wha's happy? A whan aud saysin strauchit out. Bitte ye perfection!

A ND, seein the thrang o' folk, he gaed up intil a mountain; and whan he was putten-doon, his disciples gather't aboot.

2. And he open't his mooth, and instructit them; and quo' he:

3. "Happy the spirits that are lown and cannie: for the kingdom o' Heeven is waitin for them!

4. Happy they wha are makin' their maen; for they sal fin' comfort and peace.

5. "Happy the lowly and meek o' the yirth: for the yirth sal be their ain baddin.

6. "Happy they whase hunger and drough are a' for holiness: for they sal be satisfyt!

7. "Happy the pitfu': for they sal win pitie theirsel's!

8. "Happy the pure-heartit: for their een sal dwal upon God!

9. "Happy the makkers-up o' strife: for they sal be coontit for bairns o' God!

1 V. 5. The "yirth" here isna the great warld; but the grund, the soil. The meek, thae maist like to be ruitit oot by stoutreif and guile, sal keep their ain haddins and mailins, and lea' them till their bairns!
10. "Happy the ill-treatit anes for the sake o' gude: for they're hae the kingdom o' God!

11. "Happy sal ye be when folk sal misca' ye, and ill-treat ye, and say a' things again ye wrangouslie for my sake!

12. "Joy ye, and be blythe! for yere meed is great in Heeven! for e'en sae did they to the prophets afore ye!

13. "The saut o' the yirth are ye: but gin the saut hae tint its tang, hoo's it to be sautit? Is it no clean useless? to be cuisten oot, and trauchit under folk's feet.

14. "Ye are the world's licht. A toon biggit on a hill-tap is aye seen.

15. "Nor wad men licht a crusie, and pit it neath a cog, but set it up; and it gies licht to a' the hoose.

16. "Sae lat yere licht gang abreid amang men; that seein yere gude warks they mae gie God glorie.

17. "Think-na I am come to do awa' wi' the Law, or the Prophets: I' se no come to do awa', but to bring to pass!

18. "For truly say I t'ye, Till Heeven and Yirth dwine awa', ae jot or ae tittle falls-na o' a' the Law, till a' comes to pass!

19. "Than, wha breaks ane o' theae wee'st commauns, and gars ither sae do, he sal be ca'd sma' i' the kingdom o' Heeven: but wha sal keep them, and spread them abreid, he sal be ca'd great i' the kingdom o' Heeven.

20. "For I say till ye, Gin yere guideness gang-na yont the Scribes and Pharisees, ne'er sal ye win intil the kingdom o' Heeven!

21. "Ye ken hoo it was spoken till the folk o' auld: 'Ye mau'nna kill; and whasae kills is in danger o' the Coort.'

22. "But say I t'ye, Whasae is angry wi' his brother-man, sal be in danger o' the Coort: and wha sal say to his brother-man, 'Gonyel!' sal be in danger o' the Cooncil: but wha sal say 'Fule!' sal be in danger o' the fire o' hell!

23. "Sae, gin ye fesh yere offerin to the altar-place, and thar bethink ye o' a sairness in a brither's mind anent ye.

24. "Pit doon yere gift fornent the offerin-stane, and hand awa'; first, be at ane wi' yere brither-man, and syne come and offer yere gift!

25. "Mak up wi' yere enemy while ye are yet in the highway wi' him: sae as he gies ye-na ower to the judge, and the judge to the officer, and ye be cuisten intil prison.

26. "Truly say I t'ye, Ye come-as oot, till ye ha paid the last bodle!

27. "Ye hae heard it was said lang syne, 'Ye sanna commit adultery!'

28. "But say I t'ye, Whasae sets his een on a wumman wi' desire, has e'en e-noo committit the sin wi' her in his heart!

29. "And gin yere richt ee ensnare ye, oot wi't, and cast it fhrae ye! it is for yere gude that ae member soud be destroy't, and no that yere hail body soud fa' intil hell!

30. "And gin yere richt haun ensnare ye, cut it aff, and cast it awa' better for ye that ae member soud fail, and no that yere hail body soud fa' intil hell!

31. "The sayin has been, 'Whasae pits awa his wife, lat him gie her a written divorcement!'

32. "But say I, Whasae pits awa his wife, let abee for the cause o' adultery, gars her commit adultery; and whasae weds her that is putten awa commits adultery.

33. "Ance mair, ye ken it has been said by them o' by-past time, 'Ye sanna manewe yer sel, but ye'se render to the Lord yere aiths!'

34. "But say I, Sweer-na ava! no by Heeven, for it is God's thron:

35. "Nor yet by the Yirth, for it is his fit-brod: nor Jerusalem, for it is the citie o' the Great King.

36. "Nor sal ye sweer by yere ain
heid for ye canna mak ae hair white
nor black.
37. "But lat yere answer be,
'Aye, aye,' and 'Na, na!' for ony-
thing mair comes o' nae gude.
38. 'Ye ken it has been said, 'An
ee for an ee, and a tooth for a tooth!'
39. "But say I, Resist-yee na ill;
but gin ane clour ye on the ae cheek,
turn ye till him the ither as well.
40. "And gin ony man hae a law-
plea wi' ye, and tak awa yere coat,
e'en lat him hae the cloak as well.
41. "And gin ye be impress'd for
a mile wi' ane, gang ane mair wi' hi'm.
42. "Gie till him seekin frae ye;
and frae him wad receive o' ye
turn-ye-no awa.
43. "Ye ken it has been said, 'Ye
sal lo'e yere neebor, and hate yere fae.'
44. "But say I, Lo'e yere faes;
bless the anes that ban and curse ye;
seek the gude o' thae that hate ye;
and pray for sic as shamefully ill-
treat ye, and seek for yere wrang:
45. "That ye a' may be bairns o'
yere Faither in Heeven; for he gars
his sun to glint alike on the ill
and on the gude; and sends oot his rain
baith on the just and the unjust.
46. "For gin ye but lo'e whaur
that is love till yersel, whaur is yere
meed? divna e'en the reivin tax-men
do the same?
47. "And gin ye but sperritt
yere ain kit, how div ye mair nor
ither folk? divna e'en the tax-men
sae?
48. "But ye maun be perfete, e'en
as yere Faither Aboon is perfete!"

CHAPTR SAX.

He wha hears prayer can weil teach it!
Ane soundis hae tua maisters, nor be mair
truncated about things o' the yirth.

"Taik tent no to do yere gude
wariks i' the sicht o' men, that
ye may be seen by them; else hae
ye tint reward frae yere Faither wha
is in Heeven.

2. "Whan, than, ye wad do a
gude warik, dinna hae a bugle-horn
soondit afore ye, as the pretenders
div in kirks and merkits, that they
may be roosed o' men. Truly say I
t'ye, they hae gotten a' their reward!
3. "But whan ye wad do a gude
warik, lat yere left haun no jalouse
what yere richt haun is thrangi' wi'
4. "That yere gude wariks may be
dune hidlins; and yere Faither wha
sees i' the hidlin place, sal his ain sel
reward ye.
5. "And whane'er ye pray be-na
as the pretenders; for weil they like to
pray i' the kirks, and at the
corners o' the braid causeys, sae as
folk soud see them. Aye, aye! say I;
they hae gotten their reward!
6. "But ye, whan ye wad pray,
gang intil yere bower; and, steekin
yere door, pray till yere Faither wha
is i' the hidlin place; and yere Faither,
wha sees i' the hidlin place, sal his
ain sel reward ye!
7. "And in yere prayin, rhyme-na
things ower and ower, incontinent,
like the heathen-folk: for they trow
gin that they speak eneuch, they sal
be heard.
8. "Come-na than to be like tae
them; for yere Faither kens weil a'
yere needs, e'en afore ye ask him.
9. "And sae pray ye: 'Faither o'
us a,' biding Aboon! Thy name be
holie!
10. "'Let thy reign begin! Let
thy wull be dune, on the Yirth as in
Heeven!
11. "'Gie us ilk day oor needfu'
fendin.
12. "'And forgie us a' oor ill deeds,
as we e'en forgsae thaee who did us ill:
13. "'And lat us no be sifit; but
save us frae the 3 Ill-Ane! For the

1 V. 13. "Frae the Ill-Ane" rather read,
than frae "ill" in general. Sae oor best
authorities. And "the croon, and the
micht, and the gorie," ina fund in
mony ancient copies; but seems nathet-
less to hae been generally used i' the
kirks.
croon is thine ain, and the mich and
the glorie, for evir and evir, Amen!'
14. "For gin ye be forgiean men
their faunts, yere Faither in Heeven
wull e'en forgie you.
15. "But gif ye are no forgiean men
their faunts, nae mair wull yere
Faither forgie our faunts.
16. "And again, whan ye are
fastin, ye arena to be as the pretenders,
wi' wae i' yere faces; for they
mar their looks, that they may kythe
afore men as fastin. Aye, aye! say
I, they too hae their reward!
17. "But ye, whan ye fast, snod
yere heid, and freshen yere face;
18. "That ye, be-na seen by men
to be fastin, but seen o' Faither
wha is e'en i' the hidlin place: and
yere Faither, wha sees i' the hidlin
place, his ain sal sal reward ye.
19. "Lay-na up gear for yersel's
on the yirth whaur the moth and
the rust can mak awa wi', and whaur
thieves hwk threwe and steal.
20. "But lay ye up gear in
Heeven, whaur nae moth and nae
rust can mak-awa wi', and whaur
thieves canna hwk throwe nor steal.
21. "For whaur your treasour lies,
e'en thar yere heart wull be!
22. "The lamp o' the hail body is
the ee; than, gin aiblins yere ee is
aseauld and leal, yere hail body is fu'
o' licht.
23. "But gin yere ee be dooble
and ill, yere hail body bides i' the
mirk. Gin, than, the vera licht
within ye is but gloom, hoo unco
great is the gloom!
24. "Nae man can tak service wi'
twa maisters; for aither he wull
lichtlie the ane, and lo'e the ither;
or incontinent he wull hau'd by the
ane, and care-na for the ither. Ye
canna be in God's service, and Mam-
mon's as weel!
25. "Wharfor say I t'ye, Be-na
sair shash'd wi' cark and care anent
yere life—what you are to eat and
what ye are to drink! nor yet for
yere body, hoo ye are to be cleedit!

Isna the life mair nor the meat? and
the body mair nor the cleedit?
26. "Look ye to the wee birdies
i' the lift; for they naither saw nor
shear, nor lead intil the barn; and
yet yere Heevenlie Faither gies
them meat. Are-ye-na a hantle
better nor they?
27. "And wha amang ye, be he
nevir sae fain, could mak his sel a
span heigher?
28. "And anent cleedit; why soud
ye hae sae muckle cark and care?
Look weel at the lillies o' the lea, hoo
they growe; they toil-na, nor spin;
29. "And yet say I, that Solomon
in a' his glorie was-na buskit braw
like ane o' theae!
30. "Noo than, gin God sae cleed
the foggage, (the day on the lea, and
the morn brunt i' the oven), hoo
muckle mair you, O ye o' the sma'
faith!
31. "Sae be-na sair traucht'il
in yere mind, sayin', 'What sal we eat?
or 'What sal we drink?' or 'Hoo
sal we be cleedit?'
32. "For o' a' theae things div the
Nations seek etfir; but yere Heeven-
lie Faither kens weel that ye need a'
theae things.
33. But seek ye first o' a' God's
reign and God's richtousness; and a'
thr things sal be additt till ye.
34. "Hae than nae wearin-care
anent the day to come: for the morn
wull hae care o' its ain. Eneuch for
the day is its ain ill!

CHAPTER SEEEVEN.

JUDGE-NA; that ye be-na judged!
2. "For wi' yere ain judgment sal
ye be judged yersel; and wi' yere
ain friot sal yere corn be measure't
till ye?
3. "And why soud ye craftily spy
oot the mote i' yere brothier's ee, and
think-na o' the caber i' yere ain ee?
4. "Or wull ye say till yere
brither, 'Thole ye, till I tak oot the mote frae yere ee!' and behauld! a caber is in yere ain ee!

5. 'Pretender! oot wi' the caber frae yere ain ee first! and then may ye hae gude sicht to pu' the mote oot o' yere brither's ee!'

6. 'Ye maunna gie holie things to dowgs; nor yet cast pearls afore swine; that they trachle them-na aneather their feet, and than turn on ye and rive ye.

7. 'Ask, and it sal be gien t'ye; seek, and ye sal hae; chap, and it sal be unsteekit t'ye.

8. 'For ilk ane that asks obeens; and he finn'sh wha seeks; and till him wha chaps it sal be open't.

9. 'And whatna man is amang ye, wha gin his son asks for breid—wad gie him a stane?'

10. 'Or, gin he asks a fish, wull he gie him a viper?'

11. 'Gin ye, than, bein sinfu', ken hoo to be aye gien gude things till yere ain bairns, hoo muckle mair sal yere Faither wha is Aboon gie gude things to thae that ask o' him!

12. 'And sae, a' things whatsoever ye wad that men soud do till yersel', div ye do s'en sae tae them; for this is the hail Law and the Prophets.

13. 'Gang ye in at the streitt yett; for muckle is the yett, and braid is the causeye, that leads on to destruction; and mony a ane gangs intil it!'

14. 'For streitt is the yett, and crampit is the fit-road that airts awa to life; but a wee wheen find it!'

15. 'Tak ye tent o' fause-prophets, whilk come t'ye in sheep's-cleedin, but i' the binner-end are devoirin wolves!

16. 'Ye may ken them by their frutes. Dae folk gather grapes frae the thorns, or figs amang thrissles?'

17. 'E'en sae, ilk a gude tree brings forth gude frute; but a fushionless tree brings forth ill frute.

18. 'A gude tree winna bring forth ill frute; nor can a fushionless tree gie gude frute.

19. 'Ilka tree that brings-na forth gude frute is cuttit doon, and cuisten intil the fire.

20. 'Sae by their frutes ye sal aye ken them.

21. 'It is na ilka ane that cries oot 'Lord, Lord!' that gangs intil the Kingdom o' Heeven; but he that daes the wull o' my Faither wha is in Heeven.

22. 'Mony a ane wull say to me i' that day, 'Lord, Lord! prophesy't we-na i' thy name?' And cuist-we-na oot demons i' thy name? And did-we-na mony ferlies i' thy name?'

23. 'And than wull I confess till them, 'I never kent ye! Depairt frae me, ye that cairry-oot wrang!'

24. 'And sae ilk a ane hearin and performin thir sayins o' mine, sal be liken't till a wyss man, wha biggit his hoose on the rock.

25. 'And the rain fell, and the spate cam, and the win's blew and stormed again that hoose; and it fell-na, for it stude siccar on the rock!'

26. 'And ilka ane wha hears and dis-na thir sayins o' mine, sal be like till a sumph wha biggit his hoose on the sand:

27. 'And the rain fell, and the spate cam, and the win's blew and stormed again that hoose; and it whamn't ower; and muckle was the fa' o't!

28. And it cam aboot, whan Jesus had endit thir words, the folk war amazed at his teachin;

29. For he spak till them as ane that had autoritie, and no like the Writers.

CHAPTRIR AUCHT.

Intil Capernaum, whaur he drave out sickness. Oot on the Loch, whaur the storm was hauden in his neive!

AND whan he cam doon frae the mountain, great thrangs o' folk follow't him.
2. And lo! a leper cam and worshippit him, and said, "Lord! gin ye wad, ye coul mak me clean!"

3. And Jesus pat oot his haun, and touched him, sayin', "I wull, be ye clean!" And at aince his leprosie was healed.

4. And Jesus chaired him, "See that ye tell nane; but gang yere ways till the priest, and gie ye the gift commandit by Moses, for a token to them!"

5. And whan Jesus cam intil Caperunaum, thar cam till him a Captain, and besocht him,

6. Sayin', "Lord! my servant-lad is doon wi' a stroke, in my hoose, in unco pain!"

7. Quo' Jesus till him, "I wull come and heal him!"

8. And the Captain answer't, "Lord! I am na fit ye soud come underneath my roof; but only say the words, and my servant-lad sal be weel!"

9. "For e'en I my sel, a man aneath authoritie, haes sodgers under me; and I say till ane 'Gang,' and he gangs; and till another 'Come,' and he comes; and till my servant-lad, 'Do sae and sae,' and he dis it!"

10. Hearin' this, Jesus ferlied; and said to them that follow't, "I haena fund sic faith as this, no in a' Isra'il!"

11. "And I say t'ye, Mony sal come frae the East and frae the Wast, and sit doon wi' Abra'm, and Isaac, and Jacob, i'th Kingdom o' Heeven,

12. "But the sons o' the kingdom sal be cuisiten oot intil the mirk ootby: thar sal be greetin and cherkin o' teeth!"

13. And Jesus said to the Captain, "Gang yere ways! E'en as ye lippened, sae sal it be done t'ye." And his servant-lad was made weel i' that same 'oor.

14. And Jesus, enterin' Peter's house, saw his gude-mither lyin, doon wi' a fivver.

15. And he touched her haun, and the fivver was gane. And she raise, and waitit on him.

16. But whan the gloamin cam on, they brocht till him a bantle wi' evil spirits, and he cuist oot the spirits wi' a word, and healed a' the sick:

17. That sae micht the words o' Essaib be fulfilled, wha threepit. "He his ain sel took oor sillinesses, and bure oor sicknesses!"

18. Noo Jesus, seein great thrangs aboot him, commandit to gang ower to the ither side.

19. And a certain Writer cam, and quo' he, "Maister! I wull follow ye, whaursae'er ye may gang!"

20. Jesus said till him, "The tods hae holes, and the birdies o' the lift hae nests; but the Son o' Man hasna whaur his heid may lie!"

21. And anither o' his followers says, "Lord! let me first gang till my father's burial!"

22. But Jesus says till him, "Follow ye me! and lea the deid to bury their ain deid!"

23. And whaun he gaed intil a boat his disciples follow't him.

24. And see! a great storm raise o the Loch; and wave efteir wave gaed ower the boat: but he was sleepin.

25. And comin' till him, they roused him, sayin', "Maister! save us: we perish!"

26. And he says to them, "Why soud ye be fley't? ye o' sic sma' faith!" Than he raise, and challenged the winds and the sea. And a' was lown!

27. And the men ferlied uncolie, sayin', "Whatna man is this, that e'en the winds and the watirs obey him?"

28. And whan he cam to the ither side, to the pairs o' the Gadarene, thar met him twa possess't anes, comin oot o' the tombs, unco fierce, sae that nose daur gang that gate.
29. And see! they cry: "What hae we wi' you, Son o' God! Are ye come to torment us 'or the time?"
30. Noo that war feedin, a gey bit aff frae them, a great herd o' swine.
31. Sae the evil spirits besocht him, sayin, "Gin ye cast us oot, send us uintil the herd o' swine!"
32. And he said to them, "Gang!" And when they cam oot, they gied intil the herd o' swine; and lo! a' the herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch, and perished i' the watirs.
33. And they that herdit them fled and gaed their gate to the citie, and telt a; and what had befaun the possess't anes.
34. And lo! a' the citie cam oot to meet Jesus; and when they saw him they besocht him to gang awa frae their borders.

CHAPITR NINE.

Two names made blythe—Matthew and Jairus. The blin' and the dumb rejoicce.

A ND he enter't the boat, and gae ower, and cam till his sin toun.
2. And behaud! they war bringin till him a man doon wi' a stroke, lyin on a couch; and Jesus, seein their aseafulness says the man, "Bairn, be o' gude heart; yere sins are forgien ye!"
3. And mark! that war Writers sayin within theirsels, "This ane speaks profaneness!"
4. And Jesus, kennin their thochts, says, "Why soud ye think ill in yere hearts?
5. "Whilk is easier to say, 'Yere sins are forgien!' or to say, 'Rise ye, and walk?'
6. "But sae as ye may ken the Son o' Man has authoritie on the yirth to forgie sins, (quo' he till the ane wi' a stroke,) rise ye, tak up yere bed, and gang yere ways till yere ain hoose!"
7. And he, risin up, gaed awa till his ain hoose.
8. And a' the folk, seein it war dauntit wi' fear, and glorify't God for gien sic poore to men!
9. And as Jesus gaed on freat that, he saw a man ca'd Matthew, sittin whaur the dues were paid; and he says till him, "Follow ye me!" And he raise, and follow't him.
10. And it cam aboot, as he was at meat i' the hoose, that behauid! mony tax-men and ill-deedie anes cam and sat doon wi' him and his disciples.
11. And whan the Pharisiees saw that, quo' they till his disciples, "Hoo is't that yere maister takes meat wi' tax-folk and ill-deedie anes?"
12. Noo Jesus heard; and quo' he to them, "It's no the hale anes that need the leech, but thae that are ill.
13. "But gang ye and learn what that sets forth, 'I wad suner hae mercie nor sacrificee; for I am-na come to ca' the richtous, but sinners.'"
14. Than the disciples o'John cam till him; and quo' they, "Hoo is't that we fast muckle—and the Pharisees—but yere disciples baena to fast?"
15. And Jesus says to them, "Can the bairns o' the bridal-bower fast when the bridegroom is wi' them? But the days come, whan the bridegroom is taes awa frae them, and than wull they fast!
16. "And nae ane pits a clout o' new claiith on an auld coat, for in waukin-up it rives awa frae the cleedin, and the hole is made waur.
17. "Nor div men pit new wine intil auld skins; else the skins rive, and the wine skails; and the skins are destroy't: but they pit new wine intil new wine-skins, and baith are keepit."
18. And, meanwhile he was speakin thir things till them, behauid! a certain Ruler cam, and loutit doon afore him, sayin, "My dochter maun s'en noo be deid! But come and pit thy haun ower her, and she sal leve!"
19. And Jesus raise and follow't him; and the disciples as weel.
20. And behauid! a wumman wi'
an issue o' blude twal year, cam ahint him to touch the border o' his mantle.
21. For she said till hersel', "Gin I can but touch his mantle, I sal be weel!"
22. But Jesus turned him roon', and when he saw her, said, "Dochter, tak heart! Yere faith has made ye hale!" And the wumman was made hale frae that 'oor.
23. And Jesus, comin intil the Ruler's hoose, saw the flute-players, and the folk makin a rowt.
24. He said to them, "Gie place: for the bairn is no deid, but is sleepin!" And they geck't at him, and leuch.
25. But whan a' the folk war putten oot, he gaed ben; and takin her by the haun, the lassie raise.
26. And the sough o't spread abeird in a' that kintra-side.
27. And as Jesus gaed forrit, twa blin' men follow't him, cryin' oot and sayin', "Son o' Dauvid! hae mercie on us!"
28. And whan he was within the hoose, the blin' men cam till him; and Jesus says to them, "Lippen ye that I can do this?" And they say till him, "Aye, Lord!"
29. Tham touched he their een, sayin', "E'en as yere faith, sae be it dune till ye!"
30. And their een war unsteekit; and Jesus stricklie charged them, sayin', "See that nae man ken!"
31. But they gaed oot, and spread abeird his fame in a' that kintra-side.
32. And as they gaed oot, behauld! they brocht him a dumb man, wi' an evil spirit.
33. And whan the evil spirit was cuisten oot, the dumb spak; and a' the folk ferlied, sayin', "Nevir was sic seen in Isra'!"
34. But the Pharisees said, "He casts oot the demons by the prince o' the demons!"
35. And Jesus gaed aboot a' the towns and villages, teachin' i' their kirks, and makin kent the Blythe-

message o' the Kingdom, and healin' a' kinds o' sickness, and every ill amang a' the folk.
36. But whan he lookit on the thrange, he was fu' o' compassion, for they war in distress and war scattered, as sheep wantin a shepherd.
37. Tham said he till his disciples "The hairst is maist abundant, but the hairst-folk are few!
38. "Pray ye to the Maister o' the hairst, that he may send oot laborers intil his hairst!"
wordie; and bide ye than till ye gang awa.
12. "And whan ye come intil a hoose, salute it.
13. "And gin the hoose be wordie, lat yere peace bide upon it; and gin it be no wordie, yere pweel come back till ye again.
14. "And whasie winna tak ye in, nor hear yere words—whan ye gang oot o' that hoose or that toun, flaff aff the vera stour frae yere feet.
15. "Truly say I t'ye, It sal be mair tholeable for Sodom and Go-morrah in the day o' judgment nor for that tice!
16. "And look! I send ye oot as sheep amang wolves: be ye than wyse like serpents, and asauld as doos.
17. "But tak tent o' men! for they wull gie ye up to Cooncils, and clour ye i' their kirks;
18. "And ye sal be brocht afore Governors and Kings for my sake, for a testimonie to them and to the nations.
19. "But whan they deliver ye up, be-na fashad about hoo or what ye sal say: for in that same oor it sal be gien ye what to say.
20. "For it isna ye wha are speakin, but the Spirit o' yere Faither wha speaks in ye.
21. "And brither sal gie up the brither to deid, and the faither the bairn; and the bairns sal rise up again the parents, and hae them putten to deid.
22. "And ye sal be hatit o' a' folk for the sake o' my name; but he wha tholes to the end, that same sal be deliver't.
23. "But whan they persecute ye

i' this toun, flee till anither; for truly say I t'ye, Ye'se no be ower the cities o' Israël till whan the Son o' Man comes!
24. "The learner is no abou the teacher, nor a servant abo the maister.
25. "Enuech that the learner sud fare as dis the teacher, and the serv vant like his maister. Gin they ca' the maister o' the hoose Beelzebul, hoo muckle mair them o' his house-hauld?
26. "Be-na flet at them than; for thar is naething covert that sanna be uncover't; and bid, that sanna be kent.
27. "What I tell ye i' the mirk, tell ye oot i' the licht; and what ye hear whusht i' the lug, proclaim ye on the hoose-taps!
28. "And dreid-na them wha slay the body, but canna slay the saul! but rather dreid ye hir wha is able to wreck saul and body in hell!
29. "Arena twa sparrows gaun for a bodle? And ane frae mang them fa's-na on the grund without yere Faither!
30. "But the vera hairs o' yere heid are a' coonit.
31. "Dinna be dowie, than: ye are better nor mony sparrows!
32. "Whasie sal own me afore men, him sal I own afore my Faither wha is in Heeven.
33. "But whasie disowns me afore men, him sal I disown afore my Faither wha is in Heeven.
34. "Think-na I am come to cast abroad quateness on the yirth: I come-na to cast quateness, but a sword.
35. "For I am come to set in dispute a man again his faither, and a bride again her gude-mither;
36. "And a man's faes are they o' his ain hoose.
37. "Wha lo'es faither or mither mair nor me, isna wordie o' me; and wha lo'es son or dochter mair nor me, isna wordie o' me.
38. "And wha takes-na up his cross, to follow me, isna woddie o' me.
39. "He wha wins his life sal tine it; and wha tines his life for my sake, he sal win it!
40. "He wha welcomes you, welcomes me; and he wha welcomes me, welcomes him wha sent me forth.
41. "He wha taks in a seer, in the name o' a seer, sal receive a seer's reward; and he wha taks in a holie man i' the name o' a holie man, wins a holie man's reward.
42. "And whases sal gie to drink til ane o' that thir wee anes a cup o' the cauld watir only, i' the name o' a disciple—truly I say t'ye, he sanna in onygate tine his reward!"

CHAPTIR ELEEEVEN.
John Baptist sprir; and Jesus answers.
Folk that wadna speir; and wadna be speir't at!

AND it cam aboot, whan Jesus had endit his commans to his disciples, he gaed on, to teach i' their touns.
2. Noo whan John, i' the prison, had heard o' the waroks o' Christ, he sent twa o' his disciples,
3. And speir't at him, "Are ye He wha comes? Or div we look for some ither ane?"
4. Jesus answer't, and says till them, "Gang yere ways; and schaw John a' that ye see and hear!
5. "The blin' are gettin their sicht, the lameters walk aboot, the lepers are made clean, the defi are hearin, the deid are raised up, the pur and destitute hae the Blythe-message proclaim't till them!
6. "And happy sae he be wha sees nae cause o' misdoatin in me!"
7. And as they gaed their ways, Jesus begude to speir at the thranges, anent John, "What gaed ye oot in till the muirlands to see? a reed wafflin' i' the win?
8. "But what gaed ye oot to see? a man in braw claes! See! they wear braw claes are in king's coorts.
10. "For this is he o' wham it is written, 'Tent ye! I send oot my messenger afore thy face, wha sal mak gangable thy fit-path afore thee!'
11. "Truly say I t'ye, Amang a' that are born o' wee men, haensa risen ane greater nor John Baptist: yet whases is wee i' the Kingdom o' Heeven is greater nor he!
12. "And frae John Baptist's days the Kingdom o' Heeven is in the way o' bein reived, and the reiver ak it by main stron' th!
14. "And, gin ye but accept it, this is 'Elijah,' wha was to come!
15. "He wha has hearin to hear, sae lat him hear!
16. "But to what sa! I e'en this race? It is like bairns sittin i' the merkit-place, and cryin oot to their marrows,
17. "And sayin, 'We played till ye, and ye didna dance; we maen'd till ye, and ye made nae wail!'
18. "For John cam, eatin-na and drinkin-na, and ye say, 'He has an evil spirit!'
19. "The Son o' Man cam, eatin an' drinkin; and ye say, 'See! a man gluttonous! a tippler o' wine! a freend o' tax-men and ill-deedie folk!'
But, 'What comes o' Wisdom vindicates her!'
20. Than begude he to challenge these cities whaur the feck o' his great wunner-warks war dune, for that they repentit-na:
21. "Wae comes till ye, Chorazin!"

1 V. 11. "In knowledge made kent till him, in boundless hope, in a felt sibness till his Father and his God, the laighest bairn o' the new covenant has a richer tocher than the greatest prophet o' the sauld."—Farrar, Life of Christ, ch. xx.
Christ's yoke cannie. MATTHEW, XII. Pu'ic corn on Sabbath.

Wae comes till ye, Bethsaida! for gin in Tyre and Sidon had been done sic wunner-warks as were dune in you, they wad hae repentit lang synie in tow-claith and assis!

22. "But say I t'ye, it sal be mair tholeable for Tyre and Sidon at the day o' Judgment nor for you!"  
23. "And ye, Capernaum! Till Heeven are ye to be raised? Till hell sal ye be dung doon! for gin the warks dune in you had been dune in Sodom, it wad hae been to the fore to this day!

24. "But say I t'ye, It sal be mair tholeable for a Land o' Sodom in the day o' Judgment nor for you!"

25. At that time Jesus spak, and said: "I gie thee thanks, O Faither, Lord o' Heeven and Yirth! that thou did hide thir things frae the wyss and the discernin, and did schwach them till weans!"

26. "Aye, Faither! for this it was gude in thy sight!

27. "A' things are gien to me o' my Faither. And nane weil-kens the Son but the Faither alenarie, and nane weil-kens the Faither but only the Son, and he the Son wull schaw him till.

28. "Come ye to me, a' ye wha toil and moil wi' heavy burdens, and I wull gie you rest!

29. "Tak my yoke upon ye, and learn ye o' me: for I am meek and lown-heartit, and ye sal fin' rest tae yer sauls.

30. "For my yoke is cannie; and my burden light."

CHAPTIR TWAL.

Graun teachin—in field, kirk, and hoose; but ill-mow'd, thrawart scholars.

A t sic a time Jesus gaed on the Sabbath-day throwe the corn; and his disciples war yap, and begude to tak haud o' the heids o' the corn, and to eat.

2. But whan the Pharisees saw't, quo' they till him, "See! yer disciples are doin what's no alloo'd on the Sabbath!"

3. But he answer't them, "Hae ye no read what Dauid did, whan he was hunger't, and the anes that were wi' him?"

4. "Hoo he gaed intil God's Hoose, and did eat the Breid o' the Presence, whilk was unlawfu' for him to eat—and unlawfu' for them wi' him to eat—but for the priests allenarlie!

5. "Or hae ye read na' the Law, hoo on the Sabbath-day the priests i' the Temple brek the Sabbath, and sin-na?"

6. "But I say t'ye, Thar is Ane here, greater e'en than the Temple!"

7. "But gin ye had kent the meanin' o' this, 'I choose mercie rather than sacrificee, ye wadna hae wytit the guiltless!"

8. "For the Son o' Man is Lord o' the Sabbath!"

9. And he left thar-awa, and gaed intil the kirk.

10. And see! a man was thar, wi' a wizzen't haun. And they speir't at him, "Is it richt to heal folk on the Sabbath-day?" that they micht wyte him.

11. And said he to them: "Whatna man is amang ye, wha aucht's as sheep, an' gin' it fa' intil a sheugh, wull he no lay haud o'it, and tak' it oot?"

12. "Hoo muckle mair, than, is a man no worth nor a sheep? And sae, it is weel to do gude on the Sabbath-day."

13. Than said he to the man, "Rax oot yere haun!" And he rax't it oot; and it was restor't, hale and weel, like the ither.

14. Than the Pharisees gaed oot, and counsell't thegither, how they micht mak awa' wi' him.

15. But Jesus, kennin it, withdrew frae that place; and great thrangs follow't him; and he heal'd them a'.

16. Chairgin them that they soud-na mak him kent;
17. That it might come to pass what Esaiyah spak, whan he said:
18. "Tent ye, my servant, my Chosen, my Beloved! My saul is weel-pleased in him. I wull lay my Spirit on him, and he sah shaw true judgment to the nations.
19. "He sah mak nae tulzie, nor cryin; and nae man sah hear his voice i‘ the streets.
20. "A dentit reed he brak-na, and the ill-luntit tow he staps-na, till true judgment he sends on to victory.
21. And on his name sal the nations lippen."
22. Than was brocht till him ane possess’d wi’ a demon, blin’ and dumb: and he heal’d him, sae that the dumb man spak and lookit.
23. And a‘ the folk war astonish’t: and quo‘ they, "Is this no Dauvid’s Son?"
24. But whan the Pharishees heard that, quo‘ they, "This ane casts-na oot demone but throwe Beelzebul, the prince o’ the demons!"
25. But, kennin their thocht, he said to them, "Ilka Kingdom workin again itsel is brocht to waste; and ilka citie or hoose workin again itsel canna staun!"
26. "And gin Sautan cast oot Sautan, he is workin again hisel; hoo than wull he mak his kingdom staun?"
27. "And gin I throwe Beelzebul cast oot demons, wha casts them oot by yere sin sons! Sae they sal e’en be yere judges.
28. "But gin I by the Spirit o’ God hae cuisten them oot, that the poorer o’ God has come on ye!"
29. "Or, hoo sal ane come intil a strang man’s haufl, and point his gear, gin he divna first shackle doon the strang man, and than herrie his hoose?"
30. "He wha is iana wi’ me is again me; and wha gaithers-na wi’ me, skails abroid.
31. "Sae, say I t’ye, Ilka sin and blasphemie sal be forgi’en to men; but the blasphemin o’ the Spirit sanna be forgi’en.
32. "And wha sal speak a word again the Son o’ Man, it sal be forgien till him; but wha sal speak again the Holie Spirit, it sanna be forgi’en him, neither i’ this word, nor in that to come!
33. "Mak aither gude the tree and gude the frute; or els mak ill the tree and ill the frute; for the tree is kent by its frute.
34. "Ye spawb o’ vipers! hoo are ye, bein ill, to speak gude things! for o’ the overcome o’ the heart the mou’ wull speak.
35. "A gude man, oot o’ the gude treasur, feshes forth gude things, and an ill man, oot o’ the ill plenishin, feshes forth ill things.
36. "And I say t’ye, Ilka lowe word that men sal say, they sal gie accoont o’ at the Day o’ Judgment!"
37. "For by yere words sal ye be acceptit, and by yere words sal ye be haunden guilty."
38. Than some o’ the Writers and Pharishees anwer’t, sayin, "Maister, we wad see a token frae thee!"
39. But he anwer’t to them, "An ill-doin and adulterous race seek for a token; and nae token sal be gien till’t, but the token o' Jonah the prophet.
40. "For as Jonah was thrie days and thrie nights i’ the wame o’ the sea-monster, sae sal the Son o’ Man be i’ the heart o’ the yirth thrie days and thrie nights.
41. "The folk o’ Nineveh sal rise in judgment wi’ this race, and condemn it; for they turned at Jonah’s preachin; and mark! Ane greater nor Jonah is here!
42. "The Queen o’ the Sooth-land sal rise up i’ the Judgment wi’ this race, and condemn it; for she airtit hersel frae the ends o’ the yirth to hear Solomon’s wisdom; and tent ye!’ Ane greater than Solomon is here!
43. "But the foul spirit, whan it
has gane frae the man, gange oot th Browe drouthie pairts, seekin rest, and fin'in nane:

44. "Tha’, qu’ he, 'I se e'en awa back till my ain hoose, whaur I cam frae!” And when he comes, he finds it toom, soopit oot, and buskit braw.

45. "Tha gang awa he, and takin wi’ him seveen mair, waur nor himsel, enters in and bides thar; and that man’s last state is 1 waur nor the first. Sae sal it be w’ this ill-doin race!"

46. And when he was e’en-noo speakin to the folk, see! his mither and his brithers stude oot-by, seekin to speak wi’ him.

47. And ane says till him, “See! thy mither and brithers, staunin’ oot-by, seekin to speak w’ thee!”

48. But quo’ he till him wha tell’t him, “Wha is a mither to me? and wha are brithers o’ mine?”

49. And raxin oot his hauns to-ward his disciples, he says: “See ye my mither and brithers!

50. “For wha sal do the wull o’ my Father Aboon, he is my brither, and sister, and mither!”

CHAPTRIR THIRTEEN.

Parables and Wyse-Sayins proposed; and a wheen o’ them made plain. Lat ilka man tak tent!

On that vera day gaed Jesus oot o’ the hoose, and sat doon by the side o’ the Loch.

2. And great gaitherins o’ folk cam thegither till him, sae that he gaed intil a boat, and sat doon; and the hail o’ the folk stude on the shore.

3. And he spak mony things to them in parables; and quo’ he: “Tak tent: The sawer gaed oot to saw.

4. "And in his sawin, a neiffiu’ was

mis-cusiten on the fit-path, and eaten up wi’ the birdies.

5. "Some fell on the staney bits, whaur the yird was jimp; and it brairdit bonnie, for the mool was thin.

6. "And when he sun raise heigh, it birrl’t up; and, for that it had nae rute, it dwined awa.

7. "And some fell whaur thorns had been; and up cam the thorns, and smoored it.

8. "And some fell on the gude grun; and brocht forth frute—this a hunner, that saxty, and the ither thretty.

9. "Wha has lugs for hearin, let him hear!"

10. And, drawin nar, his disciples say, "Why soud ye speak to them in parables?"

11. And he anser’ them, “It is, that till you it has been gien to ken o’ the things o’ the Heevenlie Kingdom: but to them it isna sae gien.

12. "For wha has, to him sal be gien, and he sal bae rowth o’t; but wha hasna, frae him sal be taen awa e’en what he has!

13. “Sae, speak I to them by parables: for they, seein, are blin’; and they, hearin, are deif; naither div they ken.

14. "And wi’ them is brocht to pass the prophecy o’ Esaiah, whilk says: ‘Wi’ hearin ye sal hear, and in naegate understaun; and seein ye sal see and in naegate perceive.

15. "For this people’s heart is gross, and their lugs are dull o’ hearin’, and their een hae they stekkit; least they soud see wi’ their een, and hear wi’ their lugs, and understaun wi’ their heart, and turn again and I soud heal them!"

16. "But fair fa’ yere een, that they see! and yere lugs, that they hear!

17. "For truly say I t’ye, that a hantle o’ prophets and holie men war fa’in to see the things ye see, and saw them-nas; and to hear the things ye hear, and heard them-nas!"
18. "Hear ye than the parable o' the Sawyer:
19. "Whan ony ane hears the word o' the Kingdom, and understauns-it-na, than comes the Ill Ane, and cleeks awa that sawn in his heart: this is he sawn by the fit-path.
20. "And he on the staney bit sawn, is he wha hears the word, and blythely receives it;
21. "Yet has he nae rute in himself, and bides but for a wee; and on dool or fash comin, he stumbles belyve.
22. "And he sawn amang the thorns, this is he wha hears the word, and than the cark o' the warl', and the glamor o' riches, smoor the word, and it bears nae frute.
23. "But he sawn on the gude grun', this is he wha baith hears and understauns the word; wha e'en brings forth frute; and gies, this a hunner, that saxy, and the ither thretty."
24. Anither parable set he afore them; and quo' he: "The Kingdom o' Heevan is like to a man, wha saved gude seed in his croft;
25. "But whan folk war sleepin, cam his fae, and sawed tares amang the wheat, and slippit awa.
26. "But whan the wheat brairdit and brocht forth frute, than schawed the tares as weel.
27. "Sae cam the servants o' the gudeman, and quo' they to him, 'SIR, did-ye-na saw gude seed i' yere croft? Frae whatnae way than has it tares?'
28. "And he said to them, 'SOME enemy has dune this!' And quo' the servants to him, 'Wull ye hae us gang and gaither them up?'
29. "But quo' he, 'Na; least as ye gaither up the tares, ye pu' up the wheat wi' them!'
30. "'Lat baith grow thegither till the hairast; and at hairast-time I wull say to the shearers, "Gaither ye thegither the tares first, and burn them; but gaither ye the wheat intil my barn.'"

31. Anither parable set he afore them, sayin', "The Kingdom o' Heeven is like a mustard-seed, whilk a man took, and plantit in his yaird.
32. "Whilk in sooth is sma'est o' a' seeds, but whan it is grown is the biggest o' a' yerbs, and comes to be a tree, sae that the birdies o' the lift come and howff in its branches."
33. Anither parable set he afore them: "The Kingdom o' Heevan is like till risin, whilk a wife took and pat in a firloot o' meal, till the hail was risen."
34. A' thae things spak Jesus to the folk in 1 parables; and wantin a parable spak-he-na to them,
35. That it soud come to pass what was said by the prophet, "I will open my mou' in parables; I will gie oot things keepit hidin frae the world's fundation."
36. Than he pairtit frae the thrang, and gied intil the hoose: and his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "Expone to us the parable o' the Tares o' the Croft!"
37. He answert, and quo' he to them, "He wha saved the gude seed is the Son o' Man.
38. "The croft is the world; the gude seed are the bairns o' the Kingdom; but the tares are the bairns o' the Ill Ane.
39. "The enemie that saved them is Sautan; the hairast is the endin o' the world, and the shearers are the Angels.
40. "And e'en as the tares are

1 V. 34. How mony maun hae been oor Lord's parables! Matthew, maist like, gies us but a wheen o' the number. And think-ye-na, Christ aften gied them ower again? Weel-kent Evangelists in oor ain day fin' the advantage o'. And wadna this account for the differ i' the cleedin o' them? Matthew gian a parable the way he first heard it, or the way he likit it best; and Luke the same parable in anither form that he likit best, or they likit it best wha tell't him. See also note, Luke xiv. 24.
gaither't and burnt i' the fire, sae sal it be at the end o' the world.
41. "The Son o' Man sal send oot his Angels, and they sal gaither oot o' his kingdom a' things that ensnare, and a' that do ill;
42. "And sal cast them intil the lowin furnace; there sal be maenin and cherkin o' teeth!
43. "Than sal the richtous glint forth like the sun, i' their Father's Kingdom. Wha has hearin to hear, lat him hear!
44. "Ance again: The Kingdom o' Heeven is like to gear, hidlins in a field; the same, when a man has fund, he hides again, and for the joy o't ganges and nimmers a' that he has, and buys that field.
45. "Again, the Kingdom o' Heeven is like to a tradin-man, seekin precious pearls;
46. "Wha, whan he has fund ae pearl o' a' price, gaed and sell't a' he had, and coft it.
47. "Again, the Kingdom o' Heeven is like a net cuisten intil the sea, and it gaither't o' a' kinds:
48. "Whilk, when it was fu', they harri't tae the shore, and they put them doon and waled oot the gude intil creels, but cuist the bad awa.
49. "Sae sal it be at the end o' the world: the Angels sal come forrit and waled oot the wicked frae among the gude;
50. "And sal cast them into the lowin furnace: there sal be maenin and cherkin o' teeth!"
51. And quo' Jesus to them:
"Hae ye understude a' thir things?" Quo' they till him: "Aye, Lord!"
52. Than said he to them, "Ilka a' the Kingdom o' Heeven, is like till ane that is heid o' a house, wha can feesh oot o' his presses things baith new and auld."
53. And it cam aboot, that whan Jesus had made an end o' his parables, he gaed fae that place.
54. And whan he was come intil his ain kintra-side, he was teachin them i' their ain kirk, sae that they war astonish't, and quo' they: "Whaur gat this man this wisdom, and thir ferlies?"
55. "Isna this the wricht's son? And isna his mother ca'd 'Mary'? And his brethren James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judah?"
56. "And his sisters, arena they a' wi' us? Frae whaurawa, than, has this man thir things?"
57. And they took a scunner at him. But Jesus said to them: "A Prophet is nevir wantin honour, bin it be in his ain kintra-side, and amang his ain folk."
58. And he wrocht na mony wunner-warks thar, because o' their unbelievin.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

Herod slays John. Breid i' the wilderness, Christ's fit-road on the sea.

A BOOT that time Herod, the King-
Depute, heard a' that was said about Jesus.

2. And quo' he to them o' his hosehauld, "This maun be John the Baptist; he is risen frae the deid; and sae div thir poors schaw thir-sels in him."

3. For Herod had grippit John, and putten him in bonds; and cuist him intil prison for the sake o' Herodias, wife o' his brither Philip.

4. For John said till him: "It is no alloo'd for ye to hae her!"

5. And whan he wad hae putten him to deid, he was fley't o' the people, for they reck'on'd him a Prophet.

6. But whan Herod's birthday cam, the daughter o' Herodias danced in the mids o' them a', and glamor'd Herod.

7. Whauron, he sware to gie her onything she mich speir.

8. And she, bein set on by her mither, said: "Gie me here John Baptist's heid, on an aschet!"

9. And the king was wae; but for the sake o' his aiths, and for thae
that sat at meat wi' him, he commandit it to be gien to her.

10. And he sent, and beheidit John i' the prison.

11. And his heid was brocht on an aschet, and gien to the lass; and she brocht it till her mither.

12. And his disciples cam, and took up the body, and bury't it; and gaed and tell't Jesus.

13. And when Jesus heard it, he gaed awa by boat till a desert-place oot-by; and when the croods heard o't, they follow't on fit frae the toons.

14. And he cam oot, and saw a great thrang; and he had pitie on them and healed their sick anes.

15. And when the e'enin cam on, his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "This is but a desert bit, and the time is gaun by; send the folk awa, that they may gang to the neebor toons, and buy theirsels meat!"

16. But Jesus said to them, "They need-na gang awa; gie ye them to eat!"

17. Quo' they to him, "We hae here but fyve bannocks and twa fish."

18. He said, "Fesh them here to me!"

19. And he gar't the crood sit doon on the gers; and took the fyve bannocks and the twa speldrins, and lookin up till Heeven he gied thanks, and brak, and gied the bannocks to the disciples, and the disciples to the folk.

20. And they a' did eat, and war satisfy't; and they liftit o' the broken bits that war left, 1 twal baskets fu'.

21. And they wha had eaten war aboot fyve thousand men, forby wee-men and weans.

22. And at ance he gar't his disciples gang intil the boat, and gang awa first to the ither side, till he wad send the crood awa.

23. And when he had sent the crood awa, he gaed up intil a mountain by his-seil to pray; and when e'enin fell he was thar alone.

24. But the boat was noo i' the mide o' the Loch, vex'd wi' the waves: for the wund was contrar.

25. And i' the binnmaist watch o' the nicht Jesus cam to them, gan gin on the sea.

26. And when the disciples saw him walkin on the sea, they war sair gliff't, saying, "It is a ghaisit!" And they cry't oot for fear.

27. And at ance Jesus spak to them, "Be o' gude heart! It is I; fear-na!"

28. And Peter answer't and quo' he, "Lord, gin it be thou, bid me come till thee on the waitir!"

29. And he said, "Come!" And when Peter was gotten doon oot o' the boat, he walkit on the waitir to gang tae Jesus.

30. But when he saw the wund gousit, he fear't; and as he begude to sink he cry't oot, "Lord, save me!"

31. And at ance Jesus raxed oot his haun, and grippit him, saying to him, "O thou o' sic sma' faith, why did thou fear?"

32. And when they war gane up intil the boat, the wund was lown.

33. And they i' the boat worshippit him, saying, "Truly thou art the Son o' God!"

34. And when they gat ower, they cam to the land, to Gennesaret.

35. And when the men o' that place had kennin o' him, they sent oot intil a' the kintra-side, and fesh't till him a' that war ailin;

36. And entreatit him that they micht but touch the border o' his garment; and a' that touched were made hale.

CHAPITIR FYFTEEN.

What fylce a man? The Canaan-wumman.
A great denner on sma' providin.

---

1 V. 30. The twal basket-fu's war nac doot gien to the purest o' the folk. Bred is a sacred thing, and tho' multiplyt by miracle, is no to be wastit.
THAN cam Writers and Pharisees o' Jerusalem to Jesus; and quo' they,

1. "Hoo is't yere disciples mind-na the biddins o' the faithers o' auld? For they eat breid wi' unweshin hauns."

2. But he anwer'nt them, and quo' he, "Hoo is't that ye too gang contrar to God's comman' wi' yere biddens?

3. "For God commandit, 'Honor father and mither,' and, 'Wha banns mother or mither, let him dee!'

4. "But ye say, 'Wha says till his father or his mither, It is a' devoutis, ocht that ye micht hae by me;

5. "He sal do nocht to mainteen his father or his mither. Sae hae ye brocht God's comman' to nocht by yere biddens.

6. "'Ye fause anes! Essaiah weel foretell't o' you, sayin',

7. "This folk come nar me wi' their mou', and gie me honor wi' their lips, but their heart is far awa!

8. "'But a' in vain worship they me, layin down for rules the biddens o' men.'"

9. And he ca'd till him the folk, and quo' he to them, "Hear ye, and understaun!

10. "It is na what ganings intil the month that fyles the man; but what comes oot o' the month that fyles the man!"

11. Than cam his disciples, and quo' they, "Kenn'st thou the Phari-sees war ill-pleased, whan they heard you sayin?"

12. But he said, "Ilka plant no o' my Heevenlie Faither's plantin, sal be upritit.

13. "Lat abeey! they're but blin' leaders o' the blin'. And gin the sightless airt the sightless, baith sal fa' intil the shewigh."

15. Than up-speak Peter, and quo' he, "Expone us to ye the parable!"

16. And Jesus says, "Are ye e'en yet wantin knowledge?"

17. "Div ye no ken, that whate'er may gang in at the mouth, fin's its way intil the paunch, and is cuistien oot intil the sewer?

18. "But thea things whilst come frae the mouth, come oot frae the heart, and they fyle the man!

19. "For frae the heart come oot ill-thochts, bludshed, adulteries, lecherie, thievie, fause-smeerin, blaspheymes;

20. "Thir things fyle a man; but to eat wi' hauns unpurifyit fyles-na a man!"

21. And Jesus gaed thence, and cam to the pairs o'Tyre and Sidon.

22. And see! a Canaanite wumman cam oot frae thea pairs, and cry't oot till him; and quo' she, "Hae pitie on me, O Lord, thou Son o' Dauvid! my dochter is sair vex't wi' a demon!"

23. But he anwer'nt her no a word. And his disciples cam and entretat him, and quo' they, "Send her awa, for she skreighs etfir us!"

24. But he anwer'nt, and said, "I wasna sent, but to the forwanderin sheep o' Isra'ls hoose!"

25. And she cam nar, and worshipp't him, sayin, "Lord! help me!"

26. But quo' he, "It isna bonnie to tak bairns' breid, and to cast it to the dowgs!"

27. And she said, "Even sae, Lord! yet the vera dowgs eat o' the moos fa'in frae the maister's buird!"

28. Than anwer'nt Jesus till her, "Eh, wumman! yere faith is great! Let it be till ye as ye wull!" And her dochter was made hale frae that oor.

29. And Jesus gaed awa frae that place, and came nar to the Loch o' Galilee; and gaed up intil a moun-tain, and set him doon.
30. And great croods o' folk cam to him, haein wi' them lameters, sightless, dumb, maimed, and mony mair; and laid them doon at Jesus' feet; and he healed them.

31. Sae that the folk ferlied uncolie, to behauld the dumb speakin, the maimed hale, the lameters to gang, and the blin' seein; and they glorify't the God o' Isra'il.

32. Than Jesus ca'd his disciples to him, and quo' he, "I hae pitié on the folk, for that they hae been wi' me noo thrée days, and hae nae meat; and I winna send them awa, least they soud swarf i' the gate."

33. And the disciples said to him, "In whatna way coud we hae sae muckle breid i' the wilderness, as to fill sae great a crood o' folk?"

34. Jesus says to them, "Hoo mony bannocks hae ye?" And they said, "Seeven; and a wheen wee speldrins.

35. And he commandit the folk to sit doon on the grun'.

36. And he took the seeven bannocks, and the fish, and gied thanks; and he brak, and gied to the disciples, and they to a' the folk.

37. And they did a' eat, and war filled; and they gaithe'r up o' the broken meat left, seeven creels fu'.

38. And they wha did eat war fourw thoosan' men, forby weemen and baurns.

39. And he sent the folk awa; and gae'd intil a boat, and cam to the pairts o' Magadan.

CHAPTIR SAXTEEN.

The barm o' the Pharisees. Peter's graun confession. What is tint, and what is won.

A ND the Pharisees and the Saddu- cees cam, and in a twafoald way speir't at him, "Gin he wadna schaw them a token frae Heeven?"

2. He answer't, and quo' he, "Whan it is e'enin ye say, 'Fair wather; for the sky is reid!'

3. "And i' the mornin, 'Broken wather the day, for the sky is reid and lowerin!" Ye ken hoo to judge the scaum o' the sky;—can ye no the signs o' the times?

4. "An ill-deedie and adulterous race seek effir some sign; and nae sign sal be gien till't but the sign o' Jonah." And he gaed aff rare them.

5. And the disciples cam to the ither side, and forgat to tak breid.

6. And Jesus said to them, "Tak tent, and troke ye-na wi' the barm o' the Pharisees and Sadducess!"

7. And they spak ane till anither, sayin, "We took nae breid!"

8. And Jesus, kennin it, said, "O ye o' the sma' faith, why soud ye reason amang yersels for that ye hae nae breid?"

9. "Dae ye no ken, dae ye no mind, the fyve bannocks o' the fyve thoosan'; and hoo mony baskets ye gaithe'r?"

10. "Naither the seeven bannocks o' the fourw thoosan', and hoo mony creels ye gaithe'r?"

11. "Hoo is't ye dinna ken I spak to-ye-na anent breid; but to tak tent and beware o' the teachins o' the Pharisees and the Sadducess!"

12. Than saw they hoo he bad them no beware o' the barm o' the breid, but o' the doctrines o' the Pharisees and Sadducess.

13. Whan Jesus had come intil the kintra-side o' Philip's Cesarea, he speir't at his disciples, "Wha dae folk say the Son o' Man is?"

14. And quo' they, "Some, John the Baptist; and some, Elijah; and ither, Jeremiah, or ane o' the Prophets."

15. He says to them, "But wha say ye that I am?"

16. And Simon Peter spak, and quo' he, "Thou art the Anointit Ane, the Son o' the Leevin God!"

17. And Jesus answerin, says till him, "Happy are ye, Simon, son o' John! for nae flesh and blude tell't it tye, but my Faither i' the Heevens.
18. "And I say t'ye, ye are a Rockman; and on this Rock wull I bigg my kirk; and the yette o' Hell sal nevir overcome it!
19. "And I wull gie t'ye the keys o' Heeven's Kingdom; and what ye sal bind on the yirth sal be bund in Heeven; and what ye sal louse on the yirth sal be loused in Heeven."
20. Than chairged he the disciples no to tell ony man he was the Anointit Ane.
21. Frae that time forrit Jesus begude to schaw till his disciples, hoo that he bude gang to Jerusalem, and dree mony things o' the Elders and Heid-priests and Writers; and be slain; and on the third day be waukened again.
22. Than Peter took him aside, reprivin him; and quo' he, "Hae mercy on thyseel'! this sal nevir be thy fa'!"
23. But he turned him aabout, and quo' he to Peter, "Ahint me, Sautan! ye are but a snare to me! for ye seek-na the things o' God, but the things o' men!"
24. Than quo' Jesus to his disciples, "Gin ony man wad come eftir me, lat him deny his sel, and tak up his cross, and follow me.
25. "For whasae wad save his life sal tine it; and whasae wull tine his life for my sake, sal win it.
26. "For what is a man the better, tho' he win the hail warld, and tine his ain saul? or what sal a man gie as c action for his saul?
27. "For the Son o' Man comes in the glorie o' his Faither, wi' the Angels; and than sal he gie every man accordin as his wark sal be.
28. "Truly say I t'ye, thar are thae stauin here, wha sal in naegate pree death, till they hae seen the Son o' Man comin in his Kingdom!"

CHAPTIR SEEVERTEEN.

Jesus for a wee in glorie. The puir daft laddie. A fish brings tributar-money.

AND sax days eftir, Jesus taks Peter, and James, and his brither John, and brings them up intil a heigh mountain by their sels:
2. And was transfigur't afore them; and his face beamd like the sun, and his cledin glintit as the licht.
3. And look! thar was seen by them Moses and Elijah, speakin wi' him.
4. Than answer't Peter, and quo' he to Jesus, "Lord! it is guid for us to be here! Gin thou wull, lat us mak here thrie bothies—for thee ane, and for Moses ane, and for Elijah ane."
5. Whiles he was speakin, lo! a clud o' brichtness cam ower them; and a voice cam oot o' the clud, sayin, "This is my Son! the Beloved, whom I delight in! Hear ye till him!"
6. And whan the disciples heard, they fell on their faces, fearin uncolie.
7. And Jesus cam nar, and touched them, and said, "Rise, and be-na fleyt!"
8. And liftin up their een, they saw none, but Jesus alone.
9. And comin doon frae the mountain, Jesus chairged them, "Schaw ye the vision tae nae man, until the Son o' Man rise frae mang the deid!"
10. And his disciples speir't at him, "Hoo than dae the Writers say, 'Elijah maun first come'?"
11. And he answer't them, "Elijah dis come, and redd a' things.
12. "But say I, Elijah is come already, and they kent him na; but did till him as they desir't. E'en sae sal the Son o' Man dree o' them!"

\[1\text{V. 28. Hoo dour they war to, understand that his Kingdom was a spiritual ane! They gat a wee blink o' whatna kingly glory was his ain, at the Transfigurin.}

But it was wae that he bude chairge them no to tell he was the Anointit (ver. 20), as lang as they didna understaun what he was anointit for!
13. Than the disciples begude to see that he spak to them o’ John the Baptist.

14. And when they war come till a’ the folk, thar cam till him a man, loutin doon on his knees, and sayin,

15. “Lord, hae mercie on my son; for he is sair dementit, and unco hauden; for aft he fa’s intil the fire, and aft intil the watir:

16. “And I feshed him tae thy disciples; and they coudna heal him.”

17. And Jesus said, “O race, thrwart and wantin faith? hoo lang sal I be w’ye? hoo lang sal I thole ye? Bring him here to me!”

18. Than did Jesus challenge the demon, and he gaed forth oot o’ him; and the laddie was made hale frae that ’oor.

19. And than the disciples cam to Jesus, a’ by their sels, and quo’ they, “Why wast’ we coudna cast him oot?”

20. And he says to them, “For that ye want faith: for truly say I t’ye, gin aiblins ye had faith e’en as a pickle o’ mustard-seed, ye sal say till this mountain, ‘Flit ye to yon place!’ and it sal flit; and nocht sal be aytont yere poorer.

21. “But this kind ganges-na oot, but in prayer and fastin.”

22. And while they bade in Galilee, Jesus says to them, “The Son o’ Man sal be gien an, intil men’s hauns.

23. “And they wull slay him; and the third day he wull rise again.” And they war uncolie grieved.

24. And whan they cam to Capernaum, they that took in the Hauff-shkelel, cam nar to Peter, and quo’ they, “Yere Maister—dis he no pay the’ Hauff-shkelel?”

25. Quo’ he, “Aye!” And whan he cam intil the hoose, Jesus spak first, and quo’ he, “What dae ye think, Simon? Frae wham dae kings o’ the yirth tak toll and tribute? Frae their ain folk, or frae fremd folk?”

26. Peter says to him, “Frea fremd folk.” Quo’ Jesus to him, “Than their ain folk are free!

27. “But that we gar-them-na stumle, gang ye till the Loch; and cast in a heuk, and tak the first fish comin up; and openin its mou’, ye sal find a shekel. Tak it, and gie to them for me and you.”

CHAPTIR AUCHTENNE.

Bairn-like in God-like. Conquerin wi’ lovin. The ungratefu’ servant.

1 THAT ‘oor cam the disciples till Jesus, and quo’ they, “Wha is boonmaist i’ the Kingdom o’ Heeven?”

2. And he ca’d till him a bairn, and set him i’ the mids o’ them,

3. And quo’ he, “Gin ye turn-na, and come to be like a bairn, ye enter-na intil the Kingdom o’ Heeven.

4. “Whasae than sal mak his sel naething, as this wee bairn, the same is heigher i’ the Kingdom o’ Heeven.

5. “And whasae taks till him asic wee bairn i’ my name, taks me till him.

6. “But whasae sal mak to fa’an a’ thae wee things that lippen tae me, it had been better for him to hae a mill-stane hung about his neck, and he sunk i’ the deeps o’ the sea.

7. “Wae to the world for snares o’ stumlin! For snares wull come; but wae to the man by whom the snares come.

8. “And sae, gin yere haun or fit ensnare ye, sned it aff, and cast it awa; it is gude for ye to enter intil life birplin or maim’d, rather than wi’ twa hauns or feet to be cuisten intil nevir-endin lowe!

9. “And gin yere ee ensnare ye, oot wi’, and cast it awa; it is gude
for ye to enter intil life wi' ae ee, rather than wi' twa een to be cuisen intil hell-fyre!

10. "Tak teunt that ye liichtlie-na ane o' thir wee aees; for say I t'ye, that in Heeven their ain Angels aye look upon my Heevenlie Faither's face!

11. "For the Son o' Man has come to save thae that war lost.

12. "Noo, hoo think ye, yersels? Gin a man hae a hunner sheep, and ane o' them is gane awa, dis he no lea' the ninety-and-nine, and gang intil the mountains, seekin the ane fore-wander't.

13. "And gin sae be that he lichts on't, truly say I t'ye, he is byther ower that sheep than ower the ninety-and-nine that gaed-na awa.

14. "E'en sae, that is nae desire afore yere Faither in Heeven that ane o' thir wee aees sould be lost.

15. "And gin yere brither-man sin again ye, gang to him, and shaw him his fault atween you and him alane: gin he barken to ye, ye hae won yere brither-man.

16. "But gin he winna barken to ye, than tak wi' ye ane or twa mair, sae that at the mooth o'twa or thrie witnesses, ilk word may be made siccar.

17. "And gin aiblins he winna hear them, tell it to the kirk; and gin he winna hear the kirk, than lat him be to ye as a frem'd ane, or ane o' the tax-men.

18. "Truly say I t'ye, wha'oe'er ye be bind fast on the yirth, sal be bun' fast in Heeven; and what ye lowse on yirth sal be lowse in Heeven.

19. "And ances ma'r say I t'ye, that gin twa o' ye mak it up on the yirth what ye sal ask for, it sal be done for them by my Faither in Heeven.

20. "For whaur the twa or the thrie are forgather't i' my name, that am I i' the mids' o' them."

21. Than Peter comes forrit till him, and quo' he, "Lord, hoo aft may my brither-man sin again me, and I maun forgie him? Seeven times?"

22. Jesus said to him, "I say t'ye, No till seeven times, but seeventy times and seeven!

23. "And sae is the Kingdom o' Heeven like to a certain king wha wad hae a reckonin wi' his servants.

24. "And whan he had begude to reckon, ane was brocht till him wha was awn him ten thoosan' talents.

25. "And haein nocht to pay, his maister order't him to be sell't, and his wife, and weans, and a' that he had; and payment to be made.

26. "The servant than fell doon and worshippit him, cryin, 'Lord, thole ye wi' me, and I wull pay ye a'!'

27. "Than, moved wi' pitie, that servant's lord lowsed him, and forgae him the debt.

28. "And that same servant, gaun oot, and ane o' his fellow-servants wha was awn him a hunner pennies; and he laid haud o' him, and grippit him by the hauss, cryin, 'Pay me what ye are awn!'

29. "And his fellow-servant fell doon at his feet, and besocht him: 'Thole ye wi' me, and I wull pay ye a'!'

30. "And he wadna, but gaed and had him cuisen intil prison, till he sould pay what was awn.

31. "Sae whan his fellow-servants saw what was dune, they war unco wae, and cam and tell't their maister a' that was dune.

32. "Than his lord ca'd for him, and quo' he to him, 'O, ye ill-deedie servant! I forgae ye a' that debt, for that ye did beseech me:

33. "'Soud-ye-na had rewth on yere fellow-servant, e'en as I had mercie on you!'

34. "And his lord was sair anger't,
MATTHEW, XIX.

The rich young laird.

and gied him ower to the officers, till he soud pay a' that was awn to him.

35. “E'en sae sal my Heevenlie Faither do to you, gin ye forgie-na ilk ane his brither-man frae yere hearts!”

CHAPTIR NINETEEN.

Marriage and Divorce. His hauns and blessin on the wee bairns. Aboot grace and gear.

A ND it cam aboot, that when Jesus had made ower thae words, he quit Galilee, and cam intil the pairs o' Judea ayont Jordan.

2. And great croeds follow't him; and he healed them thar.

3. And Pharisées cam to him, way-layin him, and sayin, "Is't lawfu' for a man to pit awa his wife, for ony cause ava?"

4. And he answerr't, and quo' he to them, "Hae-ye-na read hoo he wha made them at the beginnin, made them male and female.

5. "And said, 'For this wull a man lee' his father and his mither, and be joined to his wife, and they twa sal be as flesh!"

6. "Sae that they are nae mair twa, but as flesh. And sae what God has joined thegither, lat-na man pit sindry!"

7. They say to him, "Hoo than did Moses comman to gie her a writin o' divorcement, and to pit awa?"

8. He says to them, "Moses, for the hardness o' yere hearts, tholed that ye sould pit awa yere wives; but fre the beginnin it wasna sae.

9. "And I say to ye, that whasae sal pit awa his wife, let-a'bee for adultery, and sal wed anither, commits adultery; and wha weds the divorced wumman commits adultery."

10. His disciples say to him, "Gin it be sae wi' a man and his wife, it isna gude to mairry!"

11. But he said to them, "A' canna' tak in this sayin; but only thae to wham it is gien.

12. "For thar are some eunuchs frae their mither's womb; and thar are some sae, made eunuchs by men; and thar are some that hae made theirsel sae for the Kingdom o' Heeven's sake. Wha has streng'th to tak it in, lat him tak it in!"

13. Than war brocht till him wee bairns, that he soud pit hauns on them, and gie them his blessin: and the disciples challenged them.

14. But Jesus said, "Lat the wee bairns come to me, and dinna forbid them; for sic anes mak up the Kingdom o' Heeven!"

15. And he pat his hauns on them; and gaed awa.

16. And see! ane cam till him, and quo' he, "Maister! Whatna gude thing sal I dae, that I may win Eternal Life?"

17. And he says to him, "Why div ye speir aboot that whilk is gude? Ane thar is wha is gude; that is God! But gin ye wad enter intil Life, keep the Commaunments."

18. He speir't at him, "Whilk?" And Jesus said to him, "'Ye sanna kill; ye sanna commit adultery; ye sanna bear fause-witness;"

19. "'Honor yere father and yere mither; and ye sal loe yere nebor as yersel!"

20. The lad says, "A' thir I keep! What want I yet?"

21. Jesus says to him, "Gin ye wad be perfete, gang and sell a' ye hae, and gie it oot to the puir; and ye sal hae gear laid up in Heeven; and come, follow me!"

22. But whan the young man heard that sayin, he gaed awa dowie; for he had great estates.

23. And Jesus said till his dis-

1V. 21. Ilk man has a besettin sin that he maun ding, gin he wad enter Heeven. This man's sin was the love o' ailler. Wi' anither, it micht be pride, or revenge, or fame. Freend, what wad he lay his finger on, as your besettin sin?
The camel an' the needle's eye.  

MATTHEW, XX.

The grumlin' laborers.

24. “Aye, say, I t'ye, it is easier for a camel to thread a needle's ee, than ane rich to enter the Kingdom o' Heeven!"

25. When the disciples heard it they ferled uncolie; and quo' they, "Wha then can be sav't?"

26. And Jesus, dwallin on them wi' his een, said, "Wi' men, this wad be impossible; but no wi' God. For wi' God, a' things can be possible!"

27. Peter answer't, and quo' he, "We hae left a' to follow thee; what sal we, than?"

28. And Jesus said to them, "In the A' Things New, when the Son o' Man sal sit on the thron o' his glorie, ye as weel sal sit on twal' throns, ower the Twal' Tribes o' Isra'."

29. "And ilka ane forsakin hooses, or brethren, or sisters, or faither or mither, or bairns, or mailin, for my name's sake—sal hae a hunner-fauld, and sal inherit Life Eternal!"

30. "But mony first sal be hin maist; and hinmaist first.

CHAPTER TWENTY.

The laborers. The ambition o' t'va. The blin' gart to see.

"FOR the Kingdom o' Heeven is like till a man, a laird, wha gaed oot i' the dawin, to hire workers until his vine-yaird.

2. "And when he had 'gree't wi' the laborers for a hauf-merk a day, he sent them until his vine-yaird.

3. "And he gaed oot about the chap o' nine, and saw ither anes staunnin idle i' the merkit.

4. "And quo' he to them, 'Gang ye as weel until the vine-yaird, and whate'er is richt, ye sal hae!' And they gaed their ways.

5. "And again he gaed oot about twal'; and thrie o'clock, and did the same.

6. "And at fyve he gaed oot, and faund mair staunnin; and, quo' he, 'Hoo is't ye staun here, idle a' the day?'

7. "They say, 'For that nae man fee'd us!' He says to them, 'Gang ye as weel until the vine-yaird; and whate'er is richt, that sal ye hae!'

8. "Sae whan gloamin was come, the laird o' the vine-yaird says to his grieve, 'Ca' the workers; and gie them their fee; beginnin frae the hinmaist doon to the first.'

9. "And when they o'fyve o'clock cam, they gat ilk man a hauf-merk.

10. "And when the first cam, they trow'd to hae gotten mair; and they, as weel, gat ilka man a hauf-merk.

11. "And when they gat it, they yammer't again the gudeman,

12. "Saying, 'Thir last anes hae putten-in ae 'oor, and ye hae made them even wi' us, wha hae dreed the weary cark and scouter o' the day!'

13. "But he answer't ane o' them, and quo' he, 'Freend, I do ye nae wrang! Did-ye-na tak-on wi' me for a hauf-merk?'

14. "'Tak what belongs t'ye, and gang yere gate! It is my wull to gie to this last oun as to you.

15. "'Is't no richt to hae my ain wull in my ain things? Is your ee skellied because I am upright?'

16. "Sae the hinmaist sal be first, and the first hinmaist. For mony are bidden, but no a' acceptit.'

17. And as Jesus was gaun up to Jerusalem, he took aside the twal' disciples, and on the way said to them,

18. "Noo, we gang up to Jerusalem, and the Son o' Man sal be betray't to the Heid-Priests and the Writers, and they sal doom him to death;

19. "And sal set him ower to the heathen to mock, and to clour, and to crucify; and on the third day he sal rise again."
21. And he says to her, "What wad ye?" Quo' she till him, "Commun that thir my twa sons may sit, the ane on thy richt haun, and the ither on thy left haun, i' thy Kingdom!"

22. But Jesus answer't and said, "Ye kenna what ye seek! Are ye fit to drink o' the cup I am to drink o'?" They say till him, "We are fit!"

23. He says to them, "Ye sal truly drink my cup; but to sit on my richt haun and on my left haun, isna mine to gie, but to thae my Faither has prepar't it for."

24. And the Ten, hearin it, war unco angry again the twa brithers.

25. But Jesus ca'd them till him, and said, "Ye a' ken hoo the rulers o' the nations lord it ower 1 the folk, and their great anes exercise authoritie amang them;

26. "But sae it sanna be amang you; but whasae wad be heigh amang ye, lat him be yere servitor;

27. "And whasae wad be first amang ye, lat him be yere thirman.

28. "E'en as the Son o' Man camna to be ser't, but to ser'; and to gie up his life a ransom for mony."

29. And when they gaed on frae Jericho, a great crood follow't him.

30. And lo! twa blin' men, sittin by the wayside, whan'er they kent that Jesus gaed by, cry't out, "Lord, hae mercie on us, thou Son o' Dauid!"

31. And the folk challenged them, that they sould hau their whisht. But they skreigh't oot the mair, "Lord, hae mercie on us, thou Son o' Dauid!"

32. And, comin till a staun, Jesus ca'd them; and said, "What is't ye wad bae me do for ye?"

33. They say till him, "Lord, that oor een micht be unsteekit!"

34. And Jesus, led wi' compassion, touched their een; and at ane they wan their sicht; and they follow't him.

CHAPTER TWENTY-ANE.
The entry intill Jerusalem. The feckeless fig-tree. The ill-deedie gardeners.

And whan they wan nar Jerusalem, and war come till Bethphage, at the Mount o' Olives, Jesus sent forrit twa o' his disciples.

2. Sayin to them, "Gang yere ways to the toun fornent ye, and ye sal fin' at ane an ass tether't, and a cowt wi' her; lowse them, and lead them to me."

3. "'And gin ony ane challenge ye, say, 'The Lord has need o' them;' and at ane they wull send them."

4. Noo this was sae, that it sould be fulfilled that was said by the prophet:

5. "Tell ye Zion's dochter. Tak tent! thy King comes to thee, lowly, and ridin on an ass; and a cowt, the foal o' a tollin ass."

6. And the disciples, doin as Jesus appointit them,

7. Fesh'd the ass and the cowt, and they laid on their mantles; and he sat thar-on.

8. And a mantle o' the thrang spread their mantles i' the way; ither cuttit branches frae the trees, and strikeld them i' the way.

9. And a' the folk that gaed on afore, and they that cam abint, cry't, sayin, "Hosanna to the Son o' Dauid! Blessed is he comin i' the name o' the Lord! Hosanna i' the heighest Heevens!"

10. And whan he was come tae Jerusalem, a' the citie was putten aboot, speirin, "Wha is this?"

11. And a' the folk said, "This is Jesus the Prophet—frae Nazareth o' Galilee!"

12. And Jesus gaed intil the Temple, and drave oot a' that sell't and bocht i' the Temple, and wham-milt ower the tables o' the nifferers

1 V. 25. The text isna very clear; but it means that rulers tak authoritie owre their ain folk: a thing Christ's disciples are no to do.
The fig-tree.

MATTHEW, XXI. Jesus discomfits the elders.

o' siller, and the binks o' thae that sell't doos.

13. And said to them, “It is put-
ten-doon, ‘My Hoose sal be ca'd a Hoose o' Prayer,' but ye mak' it a howff o' robbers!”

14. And there cam till him i' the Temple the blin' and the lameters; and he healed them.

15. But when the Heid-Priests and the Writers saw the ferlies that he did, and the bairns cryin oat i' the Temple, and sayin' “Hosanna to the Son o' Dauvid!” they war sair vexed;

16. And quo' they till him, “Hear-
ye-na what thir anes say?” And Jesus says to them, “Aye! And hae-ye-na read, ‘Oot o' bairns' and sucklings' mou's hast thou oordent thy praise!”

17. And he left them, and gaed oot o' the city to Bethanie, and lodged the nicht thar.

18. And comin back early tae the city he hung't.

19. And seein a fig-tree by the way, he cam till't and fund naething on't but leaves; and quo' he, “Lad thar be nae frute o' thee frae this forrit, for evir!” And belyve, the fig-tree dwined awa!

20. And when the disciples saw it, they ferled uncolie, sayin, “Hoo sune did the fig-tree dwine awa!”

21. And Jesus answer't, and said to them, “Truly say I t'ye, Gin ye hae faith, ye mayna only do as is done to the fig-tree, but aiblins ye may say to this mountain, ‘Flit thou, and fa' intill the sea!’ it sal be dune.

22. “And ye sal win' a' things— whatsoe'er ye ask in prayer, believin.”

23. And when he was come intill the Temple, the Heid-Priests and the Elders o' the people cam till him as he was teachin, and quo' they, “By whatna authoritie d'ye do thir things? And wha gied ye this authoritie?”

24. And, answerin, Jesus said to them, “I wull ask you as quaisen as weel; and gin ye answer me, I wull tell ye by whatna authoritie I do thir things.

25. “The bapteezin o' John 1— whaurn cam it frae? Frae Heeven? or o' men!” And they counsell'd amang theirsels, sayin', "Gin we say, 'Frae Heeven,' he wull say to us, 'Why, than, dinna ye believe him?'

26. “But gin we say, ‘Frae men,' we are fleit' o' the people; for they a' hau'd John as a Prophet.'

27. And they answer't Jesus, and said, "We canna tell." And than he, too, says to them, "And naibher div I tell you by what authoritie I do thir things!

28. “But bo' div ye judge noo? A man had twa sons; and he cam to the first ane, and quo' he, 'Son, gang and work, the day, in my vineyard!'

29. "He, answerin, said, 'I winna!' but eftir, he bethocht him, and gaed.

30. “And he cam to the second, and said the like; and he answer't, and quo' he, 'I—aye, Sir!' and gaed-na.

31. "Whilk o' thae twa did his father's wull?" They say till him, "The first ane." Jesus says to them, "Truly say I t'ye, that the tax-men and the harlots gang intill the Kingdom o' Heeven afore ye!

32. “For John cam to ye, schawin righteousness; and ye wadna believe him. And ye, seein it a', didna e'en repent eftirhaun, that ye micht lippen till him.

33. “Hear ye anither parable: Thar was a laird wha plantit a vine-
yard, and dykit it round, about, and howkit a wine-vat in't, and biggit a toor, and lat it oat to crofters, and gaed awa till anither land.

34. “And when the time o' frutin' drew nar, he sent his servants to the crofters to receive his frutes.

35. “And the crofters took his ser-

1 V. 25. See note, Mark xi. 30.
vants, and they cloured ane, and slew another, and staned another.
36. "And again, he sent ither servants, mair in number than the first anes; and they did to them the same.
37. "But aftir, he sent to them his son, sayin, 'They will honour my son.'
38. "The crofters, howbeit, seein the son, said amang theirsels, 'This is the heir! Come, let us slay him, and tak his inheritance.'
39. "And they took him, and cuist him oot the vine-yaird, and killed him.
40. "Whan, tharfor, the laird o' the vine-yaird sal come, what wull he do to thae crofters?'
41. They say to him, "Unco destruction sal he bring on thae wicked men; and wull lat oot the vine-yaird to ither crofters, wha wull render him the frutes i' their seasons!"
42. Jesus says to them, "Did ye nevir read i' the word, 'The stane rejekit o' the masons, the same was made the heid o' the corner. Fae the Lord was this: and an unco ferlie in oor-e'en!'
43. "Tharfor say I t'ye, The Kingdom o' God sal be ta'en a' the world, and gien till a nation bringin forth the frutes o't.
44. "And wha fa's on this stane sal be sairly cloured; but on wham it may fa', it wull grind him to pouther!"
45. And the Heid-Priests and Pharisees, hearing his parables, ja-loused that he spek o' them.
46. But whan they socht to grip him, they fear't the crood; for they did hau'd him as a Prophet.

CHAPITIR TWENTY-TWA.

The Royal Bridal. The girts set by the Pharisees and Sadducees.

AND answerin', Jesus spak to them again in parables; and quo' he:
2. "The Kingdom o' Heeven is like to a King, wha made a Bridal-feast for his son.
3. "And sent oot his servin-men to tell them wha had a bode; and they wadna come.
4. "And he sent oot mair servants; and quo' he, 'Tell them that are bidden, See! I hae gotten ready my denner; my owsen and my fed things are killed, and a' is ready. Come tae the Bridal-feast.'
5. "But they geck't at it, and gaed their gate, ane to his ain mailin, and anither to his wares.
6. "And the lave grippit his servin-men, and ill-treatit them, and slew them.
7. "And the King was sair anger't; and he sent oot his armies and destroyed thae men-slayers, and brunt their toon.
8. "Than said the King, 'The Bridal-feast is a' ready, but they bidden warna wordie;"
9. "Gang ye tharfor to the paertin o' the ways; and a', e'en as mony as ye fin', ca' to the feast!'
10. "And thae servants gaed oot intil the heigh-roads, and gather't thegither a', e'en as mony as they faund, baith ill and weel faur'd; and the bridal had its guests.
11. "But the King,1 comin ben to see the guests, spied a man wantin a waddin garment.
12. 'And speirs at him, 'Freend! hoo cam ye here, wantin a waddin-garment?' and he had nocht to say.
13. "Than said the King to his servants, 'Bind him haun-and-fit, and cast him oot intil the deid-mirk; thar wull be greetin and cherkin o' teeth!'
14. "For a hantle are bidden: but only a wheen waled oot."
15. Then gaed the Pharisees, and counsel'd thegither hoo they mich fank him in his talk.
16. And they sent their disciples to him, wi' them o' Herod's pairty,

and quo' they, "Maister! we ken ye are leal and true, and teach God's ways truly, and swither for nae man; for ye look-na on the person o' men:—

17. "Tell us then what think ye? Isn't weel to gie dues to Cesar, or no?"

18. But Jesus, takin tent o' their wickedness, said to them, "Why fausely deal wi' me, ye hypocrites?"

19. "Schaw me the siller for the dues!" And they brocht to him a siller penny.

20. And he says to them, "Whase is this heid, and this inscription?"

21. They say to him, "Cesar's." Than says be to them, "Gie to Cesar Cesar's things; and to God God's things!"

22. And when they heard, they ferled uncolie; and lea' in him, gaed their gate.

23. That vera day cam till him the Sadducees, wha say thar is nae Risin-again, and they speir't at him:—

24. "Maister, Moses said, 'Gin a man soud dee, lea' in nae bairn, his brither sal mairry his wife, and rear up seed till his brither.'

25. "Noo thar war wi' us seene brithers; and the first eftir mairryin, dee't; and haein nae bairn, left his wife to his brither.

26. "In like manner the second, and the third, e'en to the seeneventh.

27. "And eftir them a', the wife dee't.

28. "At the Great Risin, than, whase wife sal she be o' the seeneven? for they a' had her?"

29. Jesus answer't them, and quo' he: "Ye are a' wrang! for ye ken naither the Scriptures nor the poorer o' God!"

30. "For in the Risin-again, they naither wed nor are gien in wedlock; but are as the Angels in Heeven.

31. "But, anent the Risin-o'-the Deid, hae ye no read what God spak t'ye, sayin:

32. "'I am the God o' Abra'm; and Isaac's God, and Jaucob's God!'

33. And a' the folk, hearin it, fer-ried muckle at his teachin.

34. But the Pharisees, whan they heard he had putten the Sadducees to silence, forgather't;

35. And ane frae mang them speir't at him a quaisten, testin him, and sayin,

36. "Maister! whilk is the great commaun o' the Law?"

37. Jesus says till him, "'Ye sal lo'e the Lord yere God wi' yere hail heart, and wi' yere hail saul, and wi' yere hail mind!"

38. "This is the great and first commaun.

39. "And a second ane is like till'; 'Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel.'

40. "On thir twa commauns hing a' the Law and the Prophets."

41. Noo, while the Pharisees war gaither't thegither, Jesus speir't at them:

42. "What think ye about the Anointit Ane? Whase Son is he?" They say to him, "Dauvid's son."

43. He said to them; "Hoo than dis Dauvid ca' him 'Lord'? sayin,

44. "'Jehovah said to my Lord, Sit thou on my richt haun, till I mak thy faes thy fit-brod.'

45. "Seeing Dauvid ca's him 'Lord,' hoo is he his son?"

46. And nae man was fit to answer him a word: naither, frae that day forrit daur ony man to speir at him ony mair quaistens.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THRIE.

The desperate corruption o' the Pharisees. Jerusalem bewailed.

THAN spak Jesus to a' the folk, and till his disciples:

V. 32. Gin Abra'm was leevin fowr hun-ner year eftir the death o' his body—and in consequence (to a' who believe the Scripture), the great matter o' the immortality o' the saul is proved—the sma'er matter o' the restoration o' the body may well be admittit!
2. "The Writers and the Pharisees are sitten doon in Moses’ seat.


4. "And they bind heavy burdens, and lay them on the shouter’s o’ men; but they winna move them wi’ ae finger.

5. "For they mak braid their amulets and enlaige their tassels,

6. "And seek for the first seats at feasts, and heid places i’ the kirks,

7. "And courtesie i’ the merkits, and to be ca’d ‘Maister! Maister!’ o’ men.

8. "But be-na ye ca’d ‘Maister;’ for ye hae ae Maister, Christ; and a’ ye are brethren.

9. "And ca’ nae man ‘Faither,’ on the yirth; for Ane is yere Faither—the Heevenie.

10. "Nor be ye ca’d ‘Leaders;’ for Ane is yere Leader, Christ.

11. "But the ane wha is greatest amang ye sal be the ane that ser’s.

12. "And whasae sal mak himsel heigh, sal be pu’d doon; and whasae sal abase himsel sal be upliftit.

13. "But wae for ye, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye steek up the Kingdom o’ Heeven afore men wha wad gang in; ye naither gang in yersels, nor alloo them to gang in wha wad!

14. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye devoor weedows’ hooses, e’en while ye are makin lang prayers: sae sae ye hae the wechtier judgment!

15. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye gang ower yirth and sea to bring in ae disciple; and when he is sae become, ye mak him twaufauld mair a son o’ hell than yersels!

16. "Wae for you, ye blin’leaders! whilk say, ‘Wha sal swer by the Temple, it is nocht; but wha sweers by the Temple’s gowd, he is hauden!’

17. "O fules and blin’! Whilk is greater, the gowd, or the Temple that hallows the gowd?

18. "‘And, ‘Wha sweers by the offeran-stane, it is nocht; but wha sweers by the offeran on’t, he is hauden!’

19. "‘O blin’! For whilk is mair, the offeran, or the Altar-stane that hallows the offeran?

20. "Wha, tharfor, sweers by the offeran-stane, sweers by it, and by a’ things on’t.

21. "And wha sweers by the Temple, sweers by it, and by Him that dwalls within.

22. "And wha sweers by Heeven, sweers by God’s thron, and by Him wha sits tharon.

23. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye tithe mint, and dill, and cummin; and pit awa the wechtier things o’ the Law, justice, mercie and faith. Thir ye behoved to do—no leavin the ither undune.

24. "Ye blin’leaders! Ye seil oot the midge, and ower wi’ the caumel!

25. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders; for ye dicht the outside o’ the cup and the dish, but within they are fu’ o’ reivin and riot!

26. "O blin’ Pharisee! mak clean first the inside o’ the cup and the dish, that the outside o’t may be made clean as weel!

27. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye are like whited tombs, whilk look bonnie outside, but within are fu’ o’ deid men’s banes, and a’ uncleanness.

28. "E’en sae, ye hae the owtward seemin o’ being holie men, but within ye are fu’ o’ fauseness and sin.

29. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye bigg the tombs o’ the Prophets, and busk the graffe o’ the gude.

30. "And say, ‘Gif we had but been i’ the days o’ oor faithers, we wadna hae been ane wi’ them anent the blude o’ the Prophets!’
31. "Sae ye are witnesses to yer-sels, that ye are bairns o' thae wha killed the Prophets.
32. "And you! fill ye up the measur o' yere faithers!
33. "Serpents! offspring o' vipers! hoo are ye to escape the judgment o' hell?
34. "Tharfor, see! I send ye Prophets, and Wyss Men, and Scribes: some o' them wull ye slay and crucify, and some clour i' yere kirks, and persecute them frae toon toon:
35. "That on ye may fa' a' the holie blude shed on the earth, frae the blude o' Abel the richtous, to the blude of Zechariah, son o' Barachiab, that ye slew atween the Temple and the altar.
36. "Truly say I t'ye, a' thir things sal come on this race!
37. "'Eh, Jerusalem! Jerusalem! wha slays the prophets and stanes the messengers sent to her! Hoo aft and fian would I hae gaither't thy bairns thegither, like as a ben gaithers her cleckin aneath her wings!—and ye wadna.
38. "See! yere hoose and hauld is left a' desolate t'ye!
39. "For say I t'ye, ye see me nae mair frae this forrit, till whansae'er ye may say, 'Blessed is he, comin' i' the name o' the Lord!'

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FOUR.
Behaulding Jerusalem; and tellin o' her pyne.

AND Jesus gaed oot frae the Temple, and was gangin his ways; and his disciples cam to airt him to look at the biggins o' the Temple.
2 But he anser' tae them, "See-ye-na thae things? Truly say I t'ye,

1 V. 37. This wail ower Jerusalem and her bairns is like the skreigh o' a mither ower her deid son! Its sough has follow't us, a'doon the ages; and we canna get quat o't! Think ye-na the Lord foresaw this, and kent hoo sic tenderness wad draw despairin anes till him? thar sal-na remain here as stane on anither that sanna be cuisten doon!"
2 V. 3. The Temple had the city ashint it, and faced the East, (aiibins that the worshippers comin till't sould hae nae temptation to worship the sun; (see Ezek. viii. 16) and as they sat on Oliveret, east o' the citie, it maun hae been ane o' the bonniest sichts i' the world forten them. It was wae that Jerusalem wasna as gude as she was bonnie!
16. "Than thae that are in Judea, lat them hie to the mountains!
17. "Lat him that is on the hose-tap no gang doon to tak ony o' his plenishin oot o' the hoose!
18. "Nor lat him wha is in the croft, rin back to grip his mantle.
19. "But wae for thae that are mithers to-be! and for thae that gie sook i' thae days!
20. "And pray that yere flittin be-na i' the winter, or on the Sabbath!
21. "For thar sal be dolor and dool, sic as nevir has been sin' the world begude, till noo; na, nor evir sal be mair!
22. "And but for that thae days hae been shortened, nae flesh soud hae been saved; but for the sake o' the waled-oat, the days are shortened.
23. "Than, gin ony man say t'ye, 'See! here is the Anointit Ane!' or 'yonner!' heed-him-na!
24. "For thar sal rise false Christis, and false prophets, and they sal schaw unco signs and ferlies; sae as to lead awa, gin it war possible, e'en the waled-oat theirsels.
25. "See! I hae tell't ye afore-haun!
26. "Sae, gin they say t'ye, 'See! he is in the desert!' gang-na oot; 'Tak tent! he is ben i' the chaummer!' believe-it-na!
27. "For the fire-flaucht glints i' the East, and flares e'en to the Wast, sae sal the comin o' the Son o' Man be.
28. "Whaur'er the carcass is, thar wull the kites be gaither't gaither!
29. "But incontinent eftir the dool o' thae days, sal the sun be putten oot, and the mune sanna gie her licht, and the starns sal fa' frae their places, and the pooers o' the heevens sal be cuisten doon.
30. "And thar sal be display'd abroad the token o' the Son o' Man in Heeven; and than sal a' the tribes o' the yirth maen; and they sal see the Son o' Man come in the cluds o' Heeven, wi' unco pooter and glorie.
31. "And he wull send oot his Angels wi' an unco blast o' a trumpet, and they sal gaither thegither his chosen frae the fourw wunds, frae ae far-awa end o' Heeven to theither.
32. "Noo, frae the fig-tree tak her lesson! Whan her young sprigs are tender, and the leaves are comin, ye ken simmer is nar;
33. "And sae e'en ye, whan ye see a' thir things, ken that it is nar-haun, e'en at yere doors.
34. "Truly say I t'ye, this generation sanna pass awa, till a' thir things are dune!
35. "Heeven and yirth may pass awa, but my words sanna pass awa!
36. "But, anent yon day and 'oor, nane kens—no e'en the Angels in Heeven—but my Father ailean.
37. "For e'en as it was in Noah's days, sae sal be the comin o' the Son o' Man.
38. "For as i' thae days afore the Flude, they war feastin and drinkin, marryin and giean in wedlock, to the vera day Noah gaed until the ark,
39. "And kent na till the Flude cam, and soopit them a' awa; sae sal be the comin o' the Son o' Man.
40. "Than, twa sal be in the field; ane sal be taen, and the tither left.
41. "Twa sal be grindin at the mill; ane is taen, and the tither left.
42. "Tak gude tent tharfor! for ye ken-na on what day yere Lord comes!
43. "But tak ye tent o' this: that gin the gudeman had kent when the reiver wad come, he wadna hae had his hoose howkit throwe!
The ten maidens.

MATTHEW, XXV.

The witless and the wyss.

44. "Sae be ye aye ready! for ye ken-na but at some 'oor ye think-na, the Son o' Man comes!

45. "Wha than is the wyss and leal servant, whom his maister has putten ower his hoosehauld, to gie them their provadin at due times?

46. "Weel is the servant, whom his lord, when he comes hame, sal fin' sae doin.

47. "Truly say I t'ye, he wull set him ower a' his haddin.'

48. "But, gin that ill servant sal say within his sel, 'My lord is lang in comin!'

49. "And sal begin to clour his fellow-servants, and to feast and drink wi' the drucken,

50. "The maister o' that servant sal come in a day he looks-na for him, and at an 'oor he kens-na,

51. "And sal smite him through; and his fa' sal be wi' a' the fause anes: thar sal be gretitin and cherkin o' teeth.

CHAPITIR TWENTY-FYVE.
The ten maidens. The witless and the wyss.
The talents. The great day.

"THAN sal the Kingdom o' Heeven be like to ten maidens, takin ilk ane her ain crusie, and gaun oot to meet the bridegroom.

2. "And fyve o' them war unco witless, and fyve war wysses.

3. "For the witless took nae ulyie wi' them than they took their crusies;

4. "But the wyss took ulyie i' their pouries, wi' their lamps.

5. "Noo, while the bridegroom cam-na, they a' grew sleeperie, and dozed.

6. "But at midnight cam a shout, 'Hey, the Bridegroom comes! C'way and meet him!'

7. "Than raise a' thae maidens, and fettle up their crusies.

8. "And the witless said to the wyss, 'Gie us o' yere ulyie; for oor lamps are gaun oot.'

9. "But the wyss answer't, and quo' they, 'Aibins thar wadna be eneuch for us and you; but rather gang ye to thae that sell, and seek for yersels.'

10. "And while they war aff, trookin, the Bridegroom cam; and they that war ready gaed in wi' him till the marriage-feast; and the door was steeikit.

11. "Then belvye cam the ither maidens, sayin, 'My lord, my lord, open to us!'

12. "But he answer't, and quo' he, 'Truly say I t'ye, I dinna ken ye!'

13. "Sae, tak ye tent! for ye ken-na the day nor the 'oor!'

14. "For it is just like a man gaun till anither lan', wha ca'd till him his servants, and gied ower to them his gear.

15. "And to ane he gied fyve talents, to anither twa, and anither ane; to ilk ane accordin to his ain ability; and than he gaed on his journey.

16. "Than he that had gotten the fyve talents, gaed and trokit and nisser't wi' the same, and made fyve talents o' increase.

17. "And likewise the ane o' the twa talents, he gained twa mair.

18. "But he that gat the ane, gaed awa and howkit i' the grun', and hid awa his maister's siller.

19. "And, lang aftir, the maister o' thae servants comes; and has a reckonin wi' them.

20. "And he that had gotten the fyve talents gien him, cam and said, 'My lord! ye gied me five talents; see, I hae gotten fyve talents forby!'

21. "His maister says to him, 'Weel dune, gude and leal servant! ye hae been leal and true ower a wee wheen things; I wull gie ye chaise ower a bantle o' things. Enter ye intil the joy o' yere lord!'

22. "Likewise he o' the twa talents cam forrit, and quo' he, 'My lord! ye gied me twa talents; see, I hae gotten twa ither talents!'
23. "His lord said, 'Weel dune, gude and leal servant! Ye hae been leal and true ower a wee wheen things; I wull gie ye chaire gwer a bantle o' things. Enter ye intil the joy o' yere lord!'

24. "Ha, too, wha had gotten the ae talent, cam; and quo' he, 'My lord! I kent ye war a siccar man, shearin whar ye saw'd-na, and gaitherin whar ye cuist-na bried;

25. "'And I was fley't, and gaed awa, and hid yere talent i' the grun'. See! ye hae yere ain!'

26. "'But his lord anser't him, and quo' he, 'Wicked and feckless servant! did ye indeed ken that I shear whaur I saw-na, and gaither whaur I cast-na bried?'

27. "'War ye no behauden than to gie ower my siller to the bankers! and at my hame-comin I soud hae gotten back my ain, wi' interest.

28. "'Tak, then, the talent frae him; and gie it to him that has the ten talents!

29. "'For to ilk ane wha hae, sal be gien, and he hae hie rooth; but frae him wha wants sal be taen awa e'en what he hae!

30. "'And cast ye the ungainfu' servant intil the ooter mirk; thar sal be greetin and cherkin o' teeth.'

31. "But when the Son o' Man sal come in his glory, and a' the angels wi' him, than sal he sit on the thron o' his glorie.

32. "And a' the nations sal be gaither't afore him; and he wull paitr them ane frae aneither, juist as a herd paitirs the sheep frae the goats.

33. "And he wull pit the sheep on his richt haun, but the goats on theleft.

34. "Then wull the King say to them on his richt haun, 'Come ye, a' blessed o' my Faither! Inherit the Kingdom made ready for ye frae the up-biggin o' the world!'

35. "'For I was hunger't, and ye gied me meat; I was drouthie, and ye gied me drink; I was a fremd ane, and ye took me in;'}

36. "'Strippit was I, and ye cled me; I was ill, and ye socht me oot; I was in thrall, and ye cam till me!'

37. "Then wull the richtous say to him, 'Lord! whan saw we thee hunger't, and gied meat? or drouthie, and gied drink?'

38. "'Or whan saw we thee a fremd ane, and took thee in? Or strippit, and clad thee?'

39. "'Or whan saw we thee ill, and in thrall, and cam to thee?'

40. "Then sal he answer them, sayin, 'Truly say I t'ye, in-as-muckle as ye did it to ane o' thae my brethren, e'en they least anes, ye did it to me!'

41. "Then, eke, sal he say to them on his left haun, 'Awa frae me, ye curst, intil nevir-endin lowe, made ready for the devill and his angels!

42. "'For I was hunger't, and ye gied me nae meat; I was drouthie, and ye gied me nae drink;'

43. "'I was a fremd ane, and ye took-me-na in; strippit, and ye didna cled me; ill, and in thrall, and ye socht-me-na!'

44. "'Then, eke, wull they answer, sayin, 'Lord! whan saw we thee hunger't, or drouthie, or fremd, or strippit, or ill, or in thrall, and didna ser' thee?'

45. "Then wull he answer them, sayin, 'In-as-muckle as ye did-it-na till ane o' thir least anes, ye did-it-na to me!'

46. "And thir sal gang awa intil nevir-endin pyne; but the richtous intil nevir-endin life.'

Tak tent here, that baith the servant that did nocht wi' the talent, and the wicked that gaed awa' to the pit, war condemned, no for what they did, but for what they failed to do! Fauld yere hauns, and do naething—and yere doom is siccar!

CHAPITIR TWENTY-SAX.
The sweet perfume o' Bethanie. The dool o' the garden. Jesus deliver't up.

AND sae it cam to pass, that whan Jesus had made an end o' thae sayins, he said to his disciples:
2. "Ye ken that twa days mair, and the Pasche comes; and the Son o' Man is deliver't up to be crucifyt.'

3. Than forgather't the Heid-priests and the Elders o' the nation until the palace o' the Heigh-priest—the ane ca'd Caiaphas.

4. And coonseill't thegither that they might tak Jesus hidlins, and slay him.

5. "But," quo'they, "no at the Feast-time; or thar wad be a stramash amang the people."

6. Noo, whan Jesus was in Bethanie, i' the hoose o' Simon the leper, thar cam till him a wumman wi' an alabaster box o' unco precious perfume; and she teemed it on his heid as he was at meat.

8. And the disciples, seein it, war put aboot, and quo'they, "For what is siccan a wastrie?"

9. "For this micht hae been sell't for muckle, and gien to the puir."

10. But Jesus, takin tent, says to them, "Why fash ye the wumman? For a wark that is bonnie has she wrought on me.

11. "For ye aye hae the puir w'ye; but ye hae-na me aye!"

12. "For she, strinklin this perfume on my heid, did it for my burial.

13. "Truly say I t'ye, Whaurso'er thir Gude-tidins sal be made kent i' the hail warld, this too o' what she has dune sal be tell't for a memorial o' her."

14. Than ane o' the Twal, the ane ca'd Judas Iscariot, gaed awa to the Heid-priests.

15. And quo' he tae them, "What meed wull ye gie me, and I wull deliver him up t'ye?" And they trokit wi' him for thretty merks.

16. Anf raes that time forrit he watched for a time to betray him.

17. Noo on the first o' the days o' the Sad Breid, the disciples cam to Jesus, askin him, "Whaur wull ye that we wull mak ready for ye to eat the Pasche?"

18. And he says, "Gang awa intil the citie, tae sic and sic a man, and speir at him, 'The Maister says, My time is comin; I keep the Pasche at yere hoose wi' my disciples.'"

19. And the disciples did e'en as Jesus tell't them; and they made ready for the Pasche.

20. Noo when the e'enin was come, he sat doon at meat wi' the Twal.

21. And whiles they war eatin, he said, "Truly say I t'ye, that ane o' ye wull betray me!"

22. And they were unco wae, and begude to say to him, ilk ane o' them, "Is it I, Lord?"

23. And he said, "He wha dippit his haun wi' me in the dish, that ane wull betray me!

24. "The Son o' Man gangs, as it was written o' him; but wae to that man by whom the Son o' Man was deliver't up! It war gude for yon man gin he nevir had been born!"

25. And Judas, wha betray't him, spak, and quo' he, "Is't I, Maister?" He says till him, "E'en as ye say!"

26. And as they war eatin, Jesus took the laif, and gied thanks, and brak it, and gied to the disciples, sayin, "Tak, eat; this is my body!"

27. And takin a cup, and giean thanks, he gied it to them, sayin, "Drink ye a' o't!"

28. "For this is my blude o' the New Covenant, whilk is shed for mony, for the pittin-awa o' sins!"

29. "But I say till ye, I drink nae mair forrit o' this frute o' the vine, till yon day when I drink it new wi' you i' my Father's Kingdom!"

30. And whan they had sung praise, they gaed oot intil the Mount o' Olives.

31. Than says Jesus till them, "A'
ye sal fin' cause o' stumblin in me this
nicht; for it is putten-doon, 'I wull
clour the Shepherd; and the sheep o'
his hireel sal be scatter't abroil!'
32. "But eftir my Risin, I wull
gang afore ye intil Galilee."
33. Peter answerin, says to him,
"Gin a' sould stumble in thee, yet
nevir wad I stumble!"
34. Jesus says to him, "Truly
say I t'ye, that this vera nicht, 'or
ever the cock craw, ye sal thrice dis-
own me!"
35. Peter threepit to him, "Gin I
soud dee wi' thee, yet wull I no dis-
own thee!" And siolike said a' the
disciples.
36. Than cam Jesus wi' them intil
a place ca'd Gethsemanie; and says
to the disciples, "Sit ye here, till I
gang yonner and pray."
37. And takin wi' him Peter and
Zebedee's twa sons, he grew unco fu'
o' sorrow, and sair putten-aboot.
38. Than says he to them, "My
saul is unco sorrowfu', e'en to death!
Bide ye here, and watch wi' me!"
39. And he gaed on a wee bit yont,
and fell on his face, and prayed, say-
in, "O my Faither! gin it be possible,
lat' this cup pass by me! yet, no as
I wull, but as Thou wult!"
40. And he comes till the disciples,
and fin's them sleezip; and quo' he
to Peter, "E'en sae! Coud-ye-na
watch wi' me a' oor?"
41. "Tak ye tent, and pray, gin
ye fa'-na intil temptation! The spirit
is indeed wullin, but the flesh is
waff!"
42. Again a second time he gaed
aff, and prayed, sayin, "O my
Faither! gin this canna gang by me
unless I drink it, Thy wull be dune!"
43. And, comin again, he faund
them sleezip; for their een had wan
heavisome.
44. And he left them again, and
gaed awa, and prayed a third time,
sayin the same words.

45. And he comes till his disciples;
and says he tae them, "Sleepin are
ye noo, and takin yere rest? Tent
ye! the oor is at haun; and the Son
o' Man is deliver't intil the hauns o'
evil men!
46. "Rise ye, and lat us be gaun!
See, he is at haun wha betrays me!"
47. And e'en while he yet spak,
look! Judas, ane o' the Twal', cam,
and wi' him a great thrang, wi'
swords, and rungs, frae the Heid-
priests, and elders o' the nation.
48. And he wha betrayed him, had
gien them a sign, and quo' he, "Wha
I sall kiss, that same is he; grip
him!"
49. And at ance he cam to Jesus,
and said, "Hail, Maister!" wi' unco
kissin.
50. And . Jesus said to him,
"Freend, for what did ye come?" Than
cam they, and pat their hauns
on Jesus, and grippit him.
51. And see! ane o' them that war
wi' Jesus, rax't oot his haun, and drew
a sword, and strack a servant o' the
Heigh-priest, and sned aff his lug.
52. Than said Jesus to him, "Pit
up yere blade intil its place; for a'
they wha tak oot the sword, by
the sword sae dee!"
53. "Think-ye-na that I coud pray
my Faither, and he sould send me mair
nor twal' legionis o' Angels?"
54. "But hoo than coud the
Scripturs be fulfilled that sae it sould
be?"
55. In that oor said Jesus to the
thrang, "Cam ye oot as again a
robber, wi' swords and rungs to tak
me? I sat day by day, teachin in
the Temple, and ye grippit-me-na."
56. But a' this was dune, that the
writins o' the Prophets sould come to
pass. Than a' his disciples desertit
him, and fled.
57. And they wha had taen Jesus
led him awa till Caiphas, the Heigh-
priest, whaur the Scribes and the
Elders war forgather't.
58. But Peter followt' far ahiist,
72. And again he deny'd wi' an aith, "I ken-na the man!"
73. And eftir a wee, they that stude by cam and said to Peter, "O' a sooth ye are ane o' them; for yere tongue tells on ye!"
74. Than begude he to curse and ban, "I ken-na the man!" And at ane the cock crew.
75. And Peter ca'd to mind the word Jesus spak, "Afore the cock crow, ye wull thrice disown me!" And he gaed oot, and grat sair.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SEEVEN.
Afore the Governor. At the cross. In the tomb.

WHAN mornin was come, a' the Heid-priests and Elders o' the nation coonseillt thegither again Jesus to compass his death.
2. And they bind him, and led him awa to Pilate the Governor.
3. Than Judas, that betray't him, when he saw he was condemned, repentin sair, and took back the thretty merks to the Heid-priests and Elders,
4. Sayin, "I hae sinned, in deliverin up innocent blude!" But quo' they, "What is't to us? See ye till't yersel!"
5. And he cuist doon the siller i' the Temple, and gaed awa; and gangin oot, he hang't himsel.
6. And the Heid-priests liftit the siller, and said, "It isna fit to gang i' the Treasury, seein it is the price o' blude!"
7. And, takin advice on't, they coft wi' the potters'-ground, to bury fremd anes in.
8. Sae that grund was ca'd "The Bludiy Field," to this day.
9. Than cam to pass what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, "And they took the thretty merks, the price o' him that had a price set on him, wha was priced amang Isra'ls sons;'
10. "And gied them for the
pottier's yaird; as the Lord appointit me."

11. And Jesus stude fornt the Governor. And the Governor speir't at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?" And Jesus said to him, "Ye hae sait it."

12. And bein accused o' the Heid-priests and Elders, he answert nocht. 13. Than said Pilate to him, "Hear-ye-na hoo mony things they threep again ye?"

14. And he answert him no sae muckle as a word; sae that the Governor ferlied uncoile.

15. Noo, aye at the Feast, the Governor had lowsed to them as prisoner, sic ane as they wad.

16. And they had, at that time, a noted prisoner, ca'd Barabbas.

17. Sae when they had forgather't, Pilate speir't at them, "Wham wad ye that I lowse? Barabbas, or Jesus that is ca'd Christ?"

18. For he kent that for mere ill-will they had deliver't him up.

19. And as he was on the Judgment-seat, his 1 wife sent till him, sayin, "Hae ye nocht to do wi' you just man! for I hae dree't mony things this day in a dream, on his accont."

20. Noo the Heid-priests and the Elders persuadit a' the folk that they soud ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21. And the Governor said to them, "Whilk wull ye, o' the twa, that I sould release ye?" Quo' they, "Barabbas!"

22. Pilate says to them, "Than what sa! I do wi' Jesus, wha is ca'd Christ?" They a' say, "Lat him be crucify't!"

23. And he said, "Why sae?"

What ill has he dune?" But they cry't oot fierce and lang, "Lat him be crucify't!"

24. Sae Pilate, seein he prevail't-na, but that rather a tuize was risin, had watir, and wesh't his hauns afore a' the folk, sayin, "I am innocent o' the blude o' this richtous man! See ye till't!"

25. And a' the folk answer't, "His blude be on us, and on oor bairns!"

26. Than lowse he Barabbas; but Jesus he lasht, and deliver't him to be crucify't.

27. Than the sodgers o' the Governor, takin Jesus wi' them intil the Judgment-ha', gaither't thegither the hail core:

28. And they stripit him, and pat on him a scarlet manteel.

29. And they wove a croon o' thorns, and pat it on his heid, and a reed in his richt haun; and they loutit doon afore him, and geck't at him, sayin, "Hail, King o' the Jews!"

30. And they spat upon him, and baff't him ower the heid wi' the reed.

31. And when they had mock't him, they took aff the manteel frae him, and pat on his ain cleedin, and led him awa to be crucify't.

32. And, comin oot, they lichtit on a man o' Cyrene, ca'd Simon; him they press'd, to carry the cross.

33. And when they war come till a place ca'd Golgotha, that is to say, "Skull-place,"

34. They offer't him wine wi' ga' in't; and whan he had pree'd, he wadna drink.

35. And whan they had crucify't him, they pairtit his cleedin amang theirsels, castin the lot;

36. And they sat doon and watch't him thar:

37. And put up ower his heid his accusation, "This is Jesus, King o' the Jews."

38. Than war twa reivers crucify't wi' him, ane on the richt haun, and ane on the left.

1 V. 19. E'en as i' the days o' Elijah—we a' mind o' the seven thousand who didn bow the knee—the Lord has unco ma disciples than mony folk think! And I doot'na but that this Claudia Procila (for sae the auld writers gie her name to be) was ane.
Jesus gies up his spirit.  

**MATTHEW, XXVIII.**  
The risin again.

39. And the passers-by misc'd him, waggin their heels,
40. And sayin, "Ye that ding doon the Temple, and up-bigg it in thrie days, save yersel! Gin ye be God's Son, come doon frae the cross!"
41. And e'en the Heid-priests too, and the Scribes and Elders, said,
42. "Ithers he sayt: his ain sel he canna save! Is'ra'li's King he is! lat him, e'en noo, come doon frae the cross, and we wull lippen on him!
43. "He lippen'd on God: lat him, noo, rescue him, gin he cares ocht for him! for he said, 'I am God's Son!'
44. And e'en the reivers that war crucify't wi' him, cuist the same reprooch at him.
45. Noo, frae the 'oor o' twal', thar was black mirk owr a' the kintra, to the 'oor o' thrie.
46. And aboot the 'oor o' thrie, Jesus cry't oot wi' a great voice, sayin, "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani!" that is, "My God! My God! for why did Thou forsake me?"
47. And some o' them staunin thar, said, "He was ca' in for Elijah!"
48. And at ane, ane o' them ran, and took a sponge, fillin it wi' vine-gar, and pat it on a reed, and gied him to drink.
49. But the lave said, "Haud awa, lat us see gin Elijah comes to rescue him!"
50. And Jesus cried oot again wi' a great voice, and gied up his spirit.
51. And look! The Temple-veil was riven in twa, frae tap to bottom, and the grund trimmil't and the rocks war cleft;
52. And the tombs war open't; and a hantel o' the bodies o' the saunts wha had faun asleep, raise;
53. And comin oot o' their tombs eftr his Risin-again, they cam intil the holie city, and schawed theirsels to mony.
54. And the officer, and they that war watchin Jesus, when they saw the yirth trimmle, and the things that war dunc, war uncolie fled't, sayin, "Truly, this was God's Son!"
55. Noo, mony weemen war there, lookin on frae far-awa, wha had fol-low't Jesus frae Galilee, providin for him.
56. And amang them, Mary the Magdalene, and Mary the mither o' James and Josea, and the mither o' Zebedee's sons.
57. And when the gloamin cam on, a rich man frae Arimathea cam, ca'd Joseph; wha himsel was a dis-ciple o' Jesus.
58. This yin, gaun to Pilate, askit for the body o' Jesus. Than Pilate commandit it sou'd be gien up.
59. And Joseph, whan he had taen the body, row't it in a fair linen claith,
60. And laid in his ain new tomb, whilk he had howkit oot i' the rock, and he row't a great stane tae the door o' the tomb; and gaed awa.
61. And Mary the Magdalene was thar, and the ither Mary, sittin ower fornent the tomb.
62. Noo the neist day—the day eftr the "Preparation"—the Heid-priests and the Pharisees gaither't thegither to Pilate, sayin to him,
63. "Sir, we mind weel that you deceiver said whan he was yet leevin, 'Eftir thrie days I wull arise!'
64. "Gie commaun, thar-for, that the tomb be made sure and siccar till the third day; sae that his disci-ples come-na and steal him awa, and say to a' folk that 'He is risen frae the deid!'; sae the last deception wad be war nor the first!"
65. Pilate said, "Ye'ae hae a gaird; gang yere ways, and make it as siccar as ye may!"
66. Sae they gaed, and made the tomb safe, sealin the stane, and settin a gaird.

**CHAPITIR TWENTY-AUCHT.**

*Risin frae the deid. The sodgers sic pitifu' leears. "Gae preach!"*

AND at the binner-end o' the Sabbath, as it begude to break to the first day o' the week, cam Mary
the Magdalene, and the ither Mary, to see the tomb.

2. And see! a great yirdin! for an Angel o' the Lord cam doon frae Heeven, and cam and row't awa the stane and sat on't.

3. To look at him he was like the fire-flaught, and his cleedin was white as the snow;

4. And, cuisten-doone afore him, the gaird did trimme, and war as deid men.

5. But the angel, speaking to the weemen, said, "Be-na ye fley't! For I ken ye are seekin Jesus, the crucify't.

6. "He isna here! for he is risen, e'en as he said! Come, see the bit whaur the Lord was lyin.

7. "And gae quickly, and say ye to his disciples, 'He is risen frae the deid!' And mark! he gangs afore ye intil Galilee. Thar sal ye see him. See! I hae tell't ye!"

8. And quickly lea'in the tomb, in muckle fear and muckle joy, they ran to tak word to the disciples.

9. And look! Jesus met them, and says, "All hail!" And they cam forrit, and grippit him by the feet, and worshipp't him.

10. Than says Jesus to them, "Fear-na! But gae tell my brethren, se as they may gang intil Galilee; thar sal they see me!"

11. Noo, e'en while they war gaun, some o' the gaird cam intil the citie, and tell't to the Heid-priests a' that had been dune.

12. And when they had forgather't wi' the Elders, and counsell't the-gither, they gied a routh o' siller till the sodgers;

13. And quo' they, "Say ye, 'His disciples cam in the nicht, and slippit awa wi' him when we war sleepin.'"

14. "And aiblins gin this come afore the Governor, we wull cajole him, and mak it siccar for you!"

15. Sae they liftit the siller, and did as they war tell't; and this tale was spread abroad amang the Jews—aye, e'en to this day.

16. And the eleven disciples gae a' intil Galilee, to a mountain whaur Jesus had trystit them.

17. And, 1 seein him, they adored him; hoobeit, some swither't.

18. And Jesus, drawin nar, spak to them, sayin, "Thar has been gien to me a' poore in Heeven, and on yirth!"

19. "Gang ye tharfor, and mak ye disciples o' a' the nations, baptizein them intil the name o' the Father, and o' the Son, and o' the Holie Spirit;

20. "Schawin them hoo till obseve a' things, e'en as mony as I hae commandit ye. And tent ye! I am wi' ye a' the days; e'en till a' time!"

1V. 17. Paul tells that war mair nor fivve hunner o' them (I. Cor. xv. 6). I canna think ony o' them wad continue to swither and doot. But the ferlie o' his Risin-again was sae great, they bude hae time to lat the truth get fairly hau'd o' them!
CHAPITIR ANE.

John and his bapteezin. The beginnin o' great works. Wha prays weel, works weel!

THE first o' the Blythe-Message o' Jesus Christ, God's Son.
2. E'en as it is putten-doone by Esaias the prophet, "Lo! I send oot my messenger afore thy face, wha sal mak ready thy way for thy comin.
3. "The sough o' ane cryin oot i' the waste, 'Mak ye ready a gate for the Lord! Mak straucht his fit-roads!''
4. Than raise John, bapteezin i' the muirlands, and preachin repentance-baptism for the pittin.awa' o' sins.
5. And thar gaed oot till him a' the kintra-side o' Judea, and a' thae o' Jerusalem, and war bapteez't o' him i' the River Jordan, tellin oot their sins.
6. And John was cleedit wi' camels'-hair, and had a leather belt about him; and he did eat locusts and rock-hinny.
7. And quo' he in his preachin, "Ane sterker nor I comes eftir me, the whang o' whase shoon I am-na fit to lout doon and lowse!
8. "I watir-baptezee ye; but he sal bapteez ye wi' Holie Spirit!"
9. And i' thae days it cam about that Jesus cam frae Nazareth i' Galilee and was bapteez't o' John in Jordan.
10. And he, comin straucht frae the watir, saw the heevens unsteekit,

and the Spirit like a doo comin doon upon him.
11. And a voice cam frae Aboon, "Thou art the Beloved, My Son; in Thee I delight!"
12. And noo the Spirit leads him oot intil the muirlands.
13. And he was i' the muirlands forty days, tempit o' Sautan; and he was wi' the wild beasts; and the Angels waitit on him.
14. And eftir John was deliver't up, Jesus cam intil Galilee, giean oot the Blythe-Message o' God;
15. And sayin, "The waitin-time is by-past, and the Kingdom o' God has come; turn ye, and lippen the Joyfu'-Message!"
16. And gaun on by the Loch o' Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andro (Simon's brither), castin aboot i' the Loch; for they war fishermen.
17. And Jesus says to them, "Come ye eftir me, and I'se mak ye fisheers o' men!"
18. And at ane, lea'in their nets, they follow'eftir him.
19. And gaun on a wee, he saw James, Zebedee's son, and John his brither, i' the boat, pittin their nets i' guid fettle.
20. And at ane he ca'd them; and lea'in their faither i' the boat wi' the fisher-men, they gaed eftir him.
21. And they cam intil Capernaum; and withoot delay, on the Sabbath day, he cam intil the kirk, and was teachin.
22. And they war uncolie struck wi' astonishment at his teachin; for he spak as gin he had authoritie, and no like the Scribes.
23. And noo, thar was i' the kirk a man wi' a foul spirit; and he cry't oot,
24. Sayin, "What hae we wi' thee, thou Jesus o' Nazareth? Hast

1 V. 2. The second verse is frae Malachi, and is only an introduction to the graun prophecies o' Esaias, in the third verse. A whaen o' the MSS. say "Prophet" or "Prophets"; but the feck o' them, as here, "Esaias."
thou come to destroy us? I ken thee, wha thou art—God's Holie Ane!"

25. And Jesus forbade him, sayin, "Haud yere peace! and come oot o' him!"

26. And the foul spirit, rivin, and cryin' wi' a great voice, cam oot o' him.

27. And they war a' astoundit; sae that they coonsell't amang their-sels, "What is a' this? A new teachin! Like a Ruler he commans e'en the foul spirits, and they do his wull!"

28. And the fame o' him spread abroad at ance ower a' the hail kintra-side o' Galilee roond aboot.

29. And noon, comin oot o' the kirk, they gaed intil the hoose o' Simon and Andro, wi' James and John.

30. Noo Simon's gude-mither was lyin wi' a fivver; and syne they tell't him aboot her.

31. And he gaed ben, and took her by the haun, and rais't her up; and the fivver left her; and she waitit on them.

32. And at s'enin, i' the gloamin, they brocht him a' them that war ill, and them possess' wi' spirits;

33. And the hail toug forgather't at the door.

34. And he healed mony that war ill wi' a' diseases; and cuist oot mony demons; and wadna lat the demons speak; for they kent him.

35. And i' the mornin, lang afore the dawin, he raise up and gaed oot, and airtit him till a desert-bit, and was thar prayin.

36. And Simon, and the lave, follow't affir.

37. And they faund him, and quo' they to him, "A' folk seek thee!"

38. And he says to them, "Let us gang awa to the neist toons, that  

I may preach thar as weel; for to this end cam I oot."

39. And he gaed intil the kirks a' throwe Galilee, preachin and castin oot demons.

40. And thar cam till him a leper, and besocht him, and loutit doon afore him, sayin to him, "Gin aiblins thou wad, thou can mak me clean!"

41. And, touch't wi' rewth, he rax't oot his haun, and touch't him, and quo' he, "I wull; be ye clean!"

42. And at ance the leprosy gaed frae him, and he was recover't.

43. And he stricklie chairged him; and than bad him awa;

44. And says to him, "See! say ye nocht to ony; but gang yere ways, and schaw yersel to the priest, and offer for yere makin-clean what Moses pat doon, to testify to them."

45. But he gaed oot, and begude to spread abroad the tale, sae that Jesus cou'd na gang intil ony citie, but was oot-by in desert-places: and they war comin till him frae a' pairt.

CHAPITIR TWA.

Doon throwe the riggin! Levi bidden.
Aneent fantin, and the Sabbath.

A NCE mair comin intil Capernaun, it was reportit, "He is neath a roof again!"

2. And at ance the folk a' gaither't thegither, sae that thar was nae room, no e'en aboot the door: and He spak the word to them.

3. And they cam, and brocht a man wi' a stroke, cairry't by fowr.

4. And no bein able to fesh him in for the thrang, they strippit the riggin whaur Jesus was; and brekin throws it, they lat doon the pallet on whilk the paralytic lay.

5. Whan Jesus saw their faith, quo' he to the paralytic, "Son, yere sins are forgien ye!"

6. But a wheen o' the Scribes had sitten doon thar; and quo' they i' their hearts,

7. "Hoo is't that this ane speaks..." 43
8. And at anse, Jesus, takin tent in his ain spirit that they thoche thir things, says to them, "Why soud ye hae sic debatin i' yer ain hearts?"
9. "Whilk, think ye, is easier? to say, 'Yere sins are forgien', or to say, 'Rise ye, and walk!'
10. "But that ye may ken the Son o' Man has poer on the yirth to forgie sins"—(he says to the para-lytic),
11. "I say to ye, Rise; row up yere pallet, and gang yere ways till yere ain house!"
12. And he raise up, and gippet his pallet, and gaed oot afore them a'; see that they war clean beside theirsels, and glorify't God, sayin, "We ne'er saw sic things!"
13. And he gaed forth again by the side o' the Loch; and a' the thrang war comin about him, and he was teachin them.
14. And, gaun by, he saw Levi, he o' Alpheus, in chairige o' the tax-gatherin; and says till him, "Come ye wi' me!" And he raise, and followt him.
15. And whan he was at table in his house, mony tax-men and sinners sat doon wi' Jesus and his disciples: for they war mony.
16. And they followt him, e'en the Scribes and the Pharisees; and when they saw he was eatin wi' sinners and tax-men, said to his disciples, "He eats and drinks wi' sinners and tax-men!"
17. And hearin it, Jesus says to them, "The strang and the weel hae nae need o' the leech, but the anes that are ill. I cam no to bid holie anes, but sinners."

18. And the followers o' John and o' the Pharisees war fastin; and they come and quo' they, "Hoo is't that John's disciples, and the Pharisees' disciples fast, and the disciples ye mak dinna fast?"
19. And quo' Jesus to them, "Coud the sons o' the bride-daumer fast, and the bridegroom amang them? Sae lang as the bridegroom bides wi' them, theyanna fast!
20. "But the days come when the bridegroom is to be taen awa frae them; and than, i' thae days, sal they fast.

21. "Nane evir schews a clout o' unwaukit claith on an auld coat, or aiblin the new bit rives awa frae the auld, and the rent is the war.
22. "And nane evir teems new wine intil auld wine-skins; or aiblin the wine will rive the skins, and the wine is tint, and the skins baith; but new wine gangs intil fresh wine-skins."
23. And it cam aboot that he gaed throwe the fields o' corn on the Sabbath; and his disciples begude to mak their way, pluckin the heids o' the corn.
24. And the Pharisees say to him, "See! hoo is't they do on the Sabbath what is no alloot?"
25. And says he to them, "Did ye nevir read what Dauvid did, whan he had need, and hunger't; he and thae wi' him!"
26. "How he gaed intil God's House, i' the time o' Abiathar, the Heigh-priest, and did eat the Bred o' the Presence, whilk isna to be eaten but by the priests; and gied e'en to them that war wi' him?"
27. And said he to them, "The Sabbath was made for man's sake, and no man for the Sabbath's sake.
28. "And sae the Son o' Man is maister e'en o' the Sabbath!"
AND he cam again to the kirk; and a man was thar wi' a wizzen' haun.

2. And they keepit watch ower him, gin he wad heal him on the Sabbath; sae as they micht wyte him.

3. And quo' he to the man wi' the wizzen'd haun, "Staun forth i' the mids!"

4. And to them, quo' he, "Is't richt on the Sabbath to do gude or to do ill? to save life or to slay?" But they said nocht.

5. And lookin roond aboot on them wi' indignation—haein grief for sic hardenin o' their hearts—he says to the man, "Rax oot yere haun!" And he straughtit it oot; and his haun was made richt.

6. And the Pharisees gaed oot, and begude coosellin wi' Herod's pairty again him, hoo they micht mak awa wi' him?

7. And Jesus, wi' his disciples, retir't to the Loch; and a great thrang frae Galilee follow't; and frae Judea.

8. And frae Edom, and ayont Jordan; and aboot Tyre and Sidon, a great thrang, hearin a' the things that he did, cam till him.

9. And he spak to his disciples, that a sma' boat sou'd wait on him, on account o' sae mony folk: that they soudna thrang him.

10. For he healed a hantle o' them; and they wi' plagues press't on him to touch him.

11. And foul spirits, when they saw him, fell at his feet, cryin oot, "Thou art God's Son!"

12. And he chairg'd them stricklie that they soud-na mak him to be kent.

13. And he gaed up the mountain; and cries to him whan he wad hae; and they cam till him.

14. And he waled oot twal', that they micht be wi' him, and sae as he cou'd send them oot to preach;

15. And to hae authoritie to expel demons.

16. And he gied the name Peter to Simon;

17. And James; and John, brither o' James; them he ca'd "Boanerges," meanin, "Men o' Thunner."

18. And Andro, and Philip, and Bartholomie, and Matthew, and Tammas, and James o' Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Zealot.

19. And Judas Iscariot, wha e'en deliver't-him-up. And they gaed intil a hoose.

20. And the thrang cam thegither again; sae that they couldna e'en get their braid eaten.

21. And hearin o't, his ain folk gaed oot to grip him; for they said, "He's clean wud!"

22. And the Scribes—the anes that cam doun frae Jerusalem—said, "He has Beelzebul;" and, "by the prince o' the demons, the demons are cuisten oot."

23. And he brocht them nar, and says to them in parables, "Hoo is't that Sautan casts oot Sautan?"

24. And, "Gin a kingdom be set again itsel, that kingdom maun fa'!"

25. And, "Gin a hoose be set again itsel, that hoose cannna staun!"

26. And, "Gin Sautan rise up again his sel, and be twa, he cannna staun, but comes till an end.1

27. "Nae man comes intil the bald o' a mightly man, to harrie his gudes and gear, till he has first bund-doone the strang ane; and than wull he harrie his hoose.

28. "Truly say I t'ye, a' things sal be forgien to the sons o' men, and a' the sins, and a' the misca'in they misca' wi';

29. "But wha sal misca' the Holie Spirit has pardon nevir! but is fetter'd by an eternal 2 sin!"

1 V. 26. We wad a' like to see sic an end o' Sautan's poorer; but we maunna think Sautan his sel wad help it forrit!

2 V. 29. Haun ye aye in fear o' sinnin again the Holie Spirit! Wha dis that, has ae fit in hell already!
30. For that they war sayin, "He has a foul spirit!"
31. Than cam his mither and his brother; and staunin oot-by, they sent till him, and ca'd him.
32. And war mony folk sittin aboot him; and they say to him, "See! yere mither and yere brother are oot-by, seeking ye!"
33. And he, answerin them, said, "Wha is my mither and my brother?"
34. And, lookin roond on thae sittin aboot him, he says, "See! my mither and my brother!"
35. "For wha dis the wull o' God, that same is my brother, and sister, and mither!"

CHAPTIR FOWR.
The sawer and the seed: and what the seed wodd be. The stillin o' the storm.

AND he begude again to teach by the Loch-side. And an unco thrang gather't till him, sae that he gaed intil a boat, and sat i' the Loch; and a' the folk war by the Loch, on the lan'.

2. And he was teachin them a hantle o' things in his parables, and said to them in his teaching,
3. "Hear ye! Behauld, a sawer gaed oot to saw;
4. "And it cam aboot as he sawed, some was strinkt' aside the fit-road; and the budies cam and devoor't it.
5. "And some fell on rocky bits, whaur it faund little mool; and at once it brairdit, for that the mool was jimp.
6. "And whan the sun raise heigh, it was a' birsl't up; and for that it had nae rout, it dwinde awa.
7. "And ither fell amang the thorns; and the thorns came up, and smoored it, and it brocht forth naething.
8. "And ither fell intil the gude grun', and gied frute, risin up and growin mair; and brocht forth to thretty-fauld, saxty-fauld, and a hunner-fauld."

9. And he said, "Wha has hearin to hear, let him hear!"
10. And whan he cam to be by his sel alone, thae that war aboot him, wi' the Twal', speir't at him aboot the Parable.
11. And he says to them, "To you the mysteries o' the Kingdom o' God hae been gi'en; but to them oot-by, a' thir things are gien in parables;
12. "Sae that lookin they may look, and no see; and hearin they may hear, and no understaan: gin aiblins they soud turn, and it soud be forgien them."
13. And he says to them, "Ken-ye-na this parable? Hoo then wull ye ken a' the parables?"
15. "And thir are they by the fit-road, whan the Word is sawn; and whansoo'er they hear, Sautan comes and cleeks awa the Word whilk was sawn amang them.
16. "And thir are they as weel, that are sawn on the rocky bits; wha, whan they hear the Word, tak it to them wi' joy,
17. "And they bae nae rute in their sels, but staun for a wee; than whan fash and persecution arises for sake o' the Word, at ane they snapper and fa'.
18. "And ither are they sawn amang thorns; they that hear the Word;
19. "And the cark o' the world, and the glamor o' riches, and the fainness for ither things comin in, ding oot the Word, and it is unfruteful'.
20. "And yon are they on the gude grun' sawn, sic as hear the Word, and tak it in, and bear frute; thretty, saxty, and a hunner-fauld'.
21. And he said to them, "Daie ye fesh a licht and pit it under a cog, and no to be putten on the staun?
22. "For naething is hidden, except aiblins that it micht be brocht oot; nor was keepit secret, but that it soud come to licht.
23. "Gin ony man has hearin to hear, let him hear!"
24. And he said to them, "Tak tent wha ye hear! In sic measur as ye gie, it sal be measur't to ye again —and mair!
25. "For he wha has sal hae mair gien to him; and he wha has na-frae him sal be ta'en e'en what he has!"
26. And he said, "Sae is God's kingdom, as gin a man soud cast the seed on the yird;
27. "And soud sleep and rise, nicht and day; and the seed soud braird, and be raxin oot, he kens-na what way:
28. "For the yird brings forth frute o' itsel; first the braird; eftir, the heid; eftir, the fu' pickie i' the heid.
29. "But whansoever the frute wad gie itsel up, he pits in the heuk, for that the hairst has come."
30. And he said, "To what sal we marrow God's kingdom? Or wi' whatna pictur sal we pictur it?
31. "Like to a seed o' the mustard; whilk, whan it is sawn i' the yirth, is sma'er than a' the seeds sawn i' the yirth.
32. "Yet whan it is sawn, it schutes up, and comes to be greater than a' the yerbes; and schutes oot great branches, sae that the burdies o' the air may howf under the beild o' it."
33. And wi' a hantle o' sic-like parables spak he to them the Word, as they war fit to hear it.
34. And but in parables 1 spak he na to them; and whan they war by their sels, he exposed a' things to his disciples.
35. And the same day, whan gloamin had come, he says to them, "Let us gang ower till theither side."
36. And sendin awa the thrang, they tak him, just as they found him, i' the boat; and ither boats war wi' them.
37. And thar cam up a great tempest o' win'; and the waves war dashin ower intil the boat, sae that the boat was fillin.
38. And he was i' the stern-sheets o' the boat, sleepin on a wee pallet: and they rouse him, cryin, "Maister I care ye na that we perish?"
39. And he roused up, and challenged the win'; and said to the Loch, "Peace! Be quate!" And the win' gaed doon, and a' was lown.
40. And he said to them, "Why soud ye be fey'd? Hae ye no yet faith?"
41. And they war in unco terror; and quo' they ane till anither, "Wha can this be, that e'en the win's and the waves obey him?"

CHAPTER FYVE.
An ausfu'-possess't ane. A lassie braocht to life.

And they cam to the ither side, to the pairts o' the Gereenes.
2. And whan he was come oot o' the boat, strauchtway thar cam till him oot o' the tombs, a man wi' a foul spirit,
3. Wha dwalt amang the tombs: and no e'en wi' a chain was ony ane langer able to hau'd him:
4. For he had aft been hauden wi' fetters and chains; and the chain had been pu'd sindry, and the fetters he braik in flinders: and nae man was sterk enerch to tame him.
5. And aye nicht and day was he i' the tombs and i' the mountains, cryin oot, and gashin his sel wi' stanes.
6. And seein Jesus frae far yont, he ran and worshipp't him.
7. And cryt oot wi' a lood voice, "What is that atween thee and me, Jesus? Son o' God maist heigh!

1. V. 34. Gin he had spoken plain to them, and telt them his Divine character, and the spiritual natur o' his Kingdom, they wadna hae listened to him: but he gied them parables to cairry hame, and for the Holy Spirit to work on them wi'. A hantle o' them wad see belvye!
The ill spirit.

MARK, V.

The sick wumman.

adjure thee by the name o' God, torment-me-na!"

8. For he was sayin till him, "Come forth, thou foul spirit!"

9. And he spair't at him, "What name hae ye?" And he answer't sayin, "Legion is my name: for we are mony!"

10. And he was unco beseechin that he wadna send them awa clean oot o' thae pairts!

11. And noo thar war nar the mountain a great herd o' swine, feedin.

12. And they besocht him, "Lat us gang intil the swine, that we may enter intil them!"

13. And he loot them gang. And the foul spirits gaed oot, and gaed intil the swine; and the herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch: aboot twa thousand; and war drooned i' the Loch.

14. And they that herd the swine fled, and tell't it i' the citie and i' the kintra; and they cam oot to see what was dune.

15. And they cam to Jesus, and saw him that was possessit wi' demons, sittin, cleedit, and in soond mind—the ane that had the legion—and they war awfu' feart.

16. And the onlookers tell't them hoo it had fared wi' him that was possessit o' the demons, and aboot the swine as weel.

17. And they begude to pray him to gang awa frae their pairts.

18. And as he gaed intil the boat, he that had been in the poorer o' the demons besocht him that he might be wi' him.

19. And he didna alloo him; but quo' he till him, "Gang till yer hoe, till yere freends, and tell them hoo..."

great things the Lord has dune for ye, and had mercie on ye."

20. And he gaed awa, and begude to spread abreid i' the Ten Cities, hoo great things Jesus had done for him; and a' men ferled.

21. And when Jesus had gane owre again i' the boat to the ither side, a great thrang war gather't till him; and he was nar-haun the Loch.

22. And thar cam ane o' the elders o' the kirk, by name Jairus; and when he saw him, he fell doon at his feet,

23. And wi' muckle beseechin said, "My wee dochter is at death's door; gin thou wad but come and lay thy bauns on her she wad be saved, and she wad leeve!"

24. And he gaed wi' him; and an unco crood follow't him; and they thranged him.

25. And a 2 wumman, wha had a flowin' o' blude for twal years,

26. And had dree'd muckle under mony doctors, and wared a' her gear, and was nane the better, but raither grew waur—

27. When she heard o' the things aboot Jesus, cam i' the thrang ashint, and touched his cleedin.

28. For quo' she to hersel, "Gin I but touch his cleedin, I'se be made hale!"

29. And at ane the fountain o' her blude was stayed, and she kent in hersel that she was deliver't frae that plague.

30. And Jesus, takin tent o' poore gaun oot frae him, turned aboot i' the thrang, and said, "Wha touched me?"

31. And the disciples said to him, "Thou sees the thrang pressin' on thee, and thou says, 'Wha touched me?'"

1 V. 19. This man kent Christ's wark and character better than the lave; and wasna forbidden to tell what he had fund. Ithers o' them, wha wad hae nae Saviour frae sin, but only frae the Romans, be gar' keep quate.

2 V. 25. Some o' the auld writers said she was a Gentile, and lived at Cesarea Philippi. We kent. It was mair like to be her ceremonial uncleanness, than bein a Gentile, that made her sae timorous.
32. And he lookit weel roond, to see her wha had dune this thing.
33. And the wumman, swarin' wi' fear, kennin what was dune till her, cam forrit and fell doon afore him, and tell't him a' the truth.
34. And quo' he to her, "Dochter, yere faith has made ye hale; gang in peace, and be hale o' yere plague!"
35. But s'en while he spak, cam they fraw the kirk-elder's hoose to say, "Yere dochter's deid! Hoo sod ye fash the Master mair?"
36. But at ance Jesus, overhearin what was said, says to the kirk-elder, "Fear-na; only lippen!"
37. But he loot nane follow him, but only Peter and James and John (James' brither).
38. And they cam intil the hoose o' the kirk-elder; and he saw a fash, and folk greetin' and wailin' uncolie.
39. And whan he cam in, quo' he to them, "Hoo mak ye a' this ado, and greetin'? The lassie's no deid, but sleepin'!"
40. And they leuch at him. But he, whan he had putten them a' oot, took the faither o' the wean, and the mither, and them that war wi' him, and gaed ben whaur the lassie was.
41. And takin the haun o' the wean, he says till her, "Talitha cumi!" that is, "Lassie, wauken!"
42. And at ance the lassie raise, and gaed aboot; for she was twal year auld. And they ferlied wi' an unco amazement.
43. And he chirged them tichtly that nane soud ken o't; and spak for her to hae some meat.

CHAPTIR SAX.

"I'ma this the Carpenter?" John's heid fa's. He that could satisfy fyve thousand men wi' fyve bannocks and twa speldrins, micht weel walk the sea!

And he gaed oot frae that, and cam till his ain kintra-side: and his disciples follow't wi' him.
2. And when the Sabbath cam, he begude to teach i' the kirk; and the thrang hearin him, war astoundit, and quo' they, "Whaur gat this ane thir things?" And, "Whatna leir is this that is gien to this ane?" And, "Sic warks o' poore he pits frae his hauns!"
3. "Is this no the carpenter, Mary's son, brither to James and Joses, and Judas and Simon? And are na his sisters here wi' us?" And they took a scunner at him.
4. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is no wantin his honors gin it be-na in his ain place, and amang his ain frends, and in his ain hoose.
5. And he coudna fin' to do ony wark o' poore thar, mair than to lay his hauns on a wheen sick folk, and to heal them.
6. And he was uncolie putten-aboot wi' their unbelievin. And he gaed a' roond in the wee towns, teachin.
7. And he ca'd till him the Twal', and begude to send them oot, twa and twa; and he gied them poorer ower foul spirits;
8. And chaigred them to tak nocht for the journey, but only a staff; nae bannocks, nae wallet, nae plack i' their purse;
9. But only shod wi' sandals. And quo' he, "Pit-na on twa coats."
10. And he said to them, "Intil whatna place ye gang till a hoose, bide thar till ye gang awa frae the place.
11. "And whatna place wull-na receive ye, nor hear to ye, as ye gang oot frae't, flaff aff the vera grymin' o' mool frae yer feet for a witness again them."
12. And gaun oot, they preached that men micht repent.
13. And they cuist oot mony demons, and anointit wi' oyle a handle o' sick anes, and made them hale.

1 V. 7. The Lord aye sent them oot twa-and-twa. And the Apostles seemed aye to gang the same. We're whiles no see wya in sendin oot messengers in oor day!
14. And King Herod heard; for his name was muckle spoken o': and he said, "John Baptist has risen frae the deid! and thus their poore are wrocht in him."
15. But ither war threepin, "It is Elijah!" And ither again, "A Prophet!" or, "Like ane o' the Prophets!"
16. But Herod, comin to hear, said, "John, whom I beheidit is risen frae the deid!"
17. For Herod his sel had sent oot, and laid haud o' John, and putten him in prison, for the sake o' Herodias, his brother Philip's wife; for he had marry't her.
18. For John tell't Herod, "It is no alloo'd for ye to hae the wife o' yere brither!"
19. And sae Herodias held a grudge against him, and wad hae slain him: but she couldn'a.
20. For Herod was in fear o' John, kennin him to be a just and holie man, and keepit him safe: and listenin till him, he did a hantle o' things, and was fain to hear him.
21. And a fit day comin, whan Herod on his birthday made a feast for his nobles, and the heigh rulers, and chiefs o' Galilee;
22. And the dochter o' this vera Herodias cam in and danced, she sae took wi' Herod and them feastin wi' him, that the King said to the wench, "Demand o' me what ye wull, and I'll gie ye!"
23. And he swure to her, "Whatever ye demand o' me, I'll gie ye, e'en to the hauf o' my Kingdom!"
24. And she gaed oot, and said to her mither, "What sa' I ask!" and quo' she, "The heid o' John Baptist!"
25. And she cam ben quickly to the King, and askit, sayin, "I wull that ye gie me, belvye, the heid o' John Baptist on a server!"
26. And the King was unco cuis-tendoon; but for his aith, and for them that feastit wi' him, he wadna refuse her.
27. And without delay the King sent oot ane o' his gaird, and gied orders to bring his heid: and he gaed and beheidit him i' the prison;
28. And he brocht his heid on a server, and gied it to the wench, and the wench gied it to her mither.
29. And when his disciples heard o't, they cam and took up his body, and laid it in a tomb.
30. And the Apostles gather't theirsels thegither to Jesus; and they tell't him as mony things as they had dune, and what they had been teachin.
31. And he said to them, "Come ye by yersel's a foart intil a desert-bit, and rest yersel's for a wee." For thair war mony comin and gaun, that they couldna get thair bried eaten.
32. And they gaed awa quately i' the boat, till a desert spot.
33. And mony saw them gaun aff, and took tent; and a-fit, oot o' a the cities, they ran, and wan there afore them.
34. And he cam oot, and saw an unco thrang: and he had pitie on them, for they war as sheep wantin a Shepherd: and he beguie to teach them mony things.
35. And whan the day war nar endit, his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "This place is desert, and the gloamin is comin on:
36. "Send them awa, that they gang to the kintra and intil the neebor toons, and buy theirsels fendin."
37. And he answerin, says to them, "You gie them to eat!" And they say to him, "Sai we gang and ware twa bunner siller-pennies on bried, and gie them to eat?"
38. He says to them, "Hoo mony laives hae ye? gang and see!" And whan they had speir't, they say "Fyve, and twa speldrins."
39. And he gied orders that s' soud sit doon,1 banquet-like, on the green gerss.

1. V. 39. In hauf-circles; a bunner in ilka ane. But gif ye ca' them "ranks," thair wad be fifty in ilka rank. (See v. 40.)
He walks on the Loch. MARK, VII. The Pharisees.

40. And they loutit doon in order, in fifties and hunners.
41. And he took the fyve bannocks and the twa speldrs, and lookit up till Heeven, and bless't, and brak the bannocks, and gaed on giean to the disciples to ser' them: and the spe-ldrs portioned he oot to them a'.
42. And they a' did eat, and war satisfy't.
43. And they gather't what was ower o' the bannocks, and o' the fish, twa baskets fu'.
44. And they that did eat the bannocks war about fyve thousand men.
45. And noo he wad hae his disciples to gang intil the boat, and gang ower to the other side—by Bethsaida—while he skuil't the thrang.
46. And aftir he had pairtit wi' the thrang, he gaed up intil the mountain to pray.
47. And whan the e'enin cam on, the boat was in the mids o' the Loch, and he alone on the lan'.
48. And seisin them sair forfochten wi' the rowin—for the win' was contrar—about the hinmaist watch o' the nicht he cam till them, walkin on the Loch; and seemed to gang by them.
49. But they, seisin him walkin on the Loch, thocht it had been a ghaist, and cry't oot.
50. For they a' saw him, and war sair putten-aboot. But he begude to speak to them, and says to them, "Cheer-up! be-na fey't!"
51. And he cam up to them, intil the boat; and the win' gaed doon. And they war sair amazed ayont a measur, and ferlaid.
52. For they couldna comprehend aboot the bannocks; for their heart was turned hard.
53. And gangin ower, they cam to the lan' o' Gennesaret; and ty't up at the shore.
54. And whan they war come oot o' the boat, he was kent at ance.
55. And they ran through a' thar-awa roond aboot, and begude to cairry aboot on their pallets them that war sick, whaure'er they heard he was.
56. And ilka place he gaed till—intil wee towns, or cities, or a wheen hooses thegither—they lay doon the sick i' the merkit-places; and be-socht him that aiblins they mich touch but the vera fringe o' his mantle: and as mony as touched war made hale.

CHAPITIR SEEVEN.
The Pharisees needit to wash their hearts mair nor their hauns. The Canaanite mither who scadna gang without a blessin. Speech and hearin at his bidden!

And thar are gather't about him the Pharisees, and the Scribes that had come doon frae Jerusalem.
2. And, takin tent that some o' his disciples war eatin breid wi' unpurify't—that is, unweshen—hauns, they challenged them.
3. For the Pharisees, and a' the Jews, gin they wesh-na their hauns religiously, eat-na; haudin fast the traditions o' the Elders.
4. And comin frae the merkit—gin they wesh-na their sels, they eat-na. And mony mair things are thar that they hae acceptit to haud;—purifyin o' cups and stowps, coppers and tabellecouches.
5. And the Pharisees and the Scribes speir at him, "Hoo is't thy disciples gang-na conform to the tradition o' the Elders, but eat their breid wi' unpurify't hauns?"
6. But he said, "Weel did Essiah prophesie o' you, dissemblers! as it is putten doon:—'This nation honor me wi' their lips, but their heart they hauk faur-awa frae me!'
7. "'But they offer devotion to me in vain, teachin as precepts the commandments o' men.'
8. "'For haein put-awa God's commaun, ye hauk fast the tradition o' men—purifyin o' cups and stowps; and mony sic like things ye do.'

51
9. And he said to them, “Fu’ weel ye reject the comman o’ God, that ye may hauk yer ain tradition.
10 “For Moses said, 'Honor yere father and yere mither: and wha sal revile father and mither, by death last him deo.’
11 “But ye say, Gin a man sal say to his father or his mither, ‘Whatsoe’er ye micht hae frae me is Corban,’—that is, dedicate to God—
12 “Ye nae mair suffer him to do aucht for his father or his mither,
13 “Makin void God’s word by yere tradition ye hae deliver’t! And mony sic things ye do.”
14. And ca’n to him the thrang o’ folk again, he says to them, “Hear me, every ane o’ ye, and understaun!
15. “Thar is naething frae without a man, enterin intil him, can fyle him; but the things that gae forth oot o’ the man, they fyle him.
16. “Gin ony ane has hearin to hear, lat him tak tent!”
17. And when he was come intil the hoose frae the thrang, his disciples speir’t at him anent the parable.
18. And he says to them, “Are even you wantin discernment? Can ye no see that whatsoe’er frae without that comes intil the man, canna fyle him?
19. “For it comes-na ben intil his heart, but only to his stammack; and gae intil the sewer, purifyin a’ meat.”
20. This he said, moreover, “What comes forth oot o’ the man, that fyles the man!
21. “For frae within, frae ben i’ the hearts o’ men, ill designs come forth: lecherie, thefts, murders,
22. “Adulteries, covetines, knaveries, deceit, wantonness, envy, evil-speaking, loftiness, foolishness;
23. “A’ thir ill things proceed

frae within, and they fyle the man!”
24. And frae thar he raise, and gaed intil the borders o’ Tyre and Sidon. And he enter’t intil a hoose, and wad hae nae man ken; but he coudna be keepit private.
25. But forthwith a wumman, whase wee dochter had a foul spirit, hearin’ aboot him, cam and fell down at his feet.
26. The wumman was a Greek, a Canaanite by blude; and she besocht him that he wad cast the demon oot o’ her dochter.
27. And he said to her, “The bairn soud first be satisfee’t; it isna bonnie to tak the bairn’s breid, and cast it to the dowgs.”
28. But she answer’t, and said to him, “E’en sae, Lord; yet the wee dowgs aneath the table eat o’ the moos o’ the bairns?”
29. And he said to her, “For that word, gang yere ways; the demon has gane forth oot o’ yere dochter.”
30. And gaun awa to her hoose, she faund the bairn lyin on the couch, and the demon gane forth.
31. And again, gaun forth oot o’ the pairts o’ Tyre, he cam throwe Sidon to the Loch o’ Galilee, up throwe the pairts o’ the Ten Cities.
32. And they bring to him ane that can hear nane, and speak but a wee; and they beg that he wad lay his haun on him.
33. And he led him aside frae the thrang, and pat his fingers intil his lugs, and touched his tongue wi’ spittle;
34. And lookin up to heeven, he gied a sigh, and said, “Ephphatha!” that is, “Be thou unbarred!”
35. And his lugs war unresteekit, and the string o’ his tongue was lowsed, and he spak plain.
36. And he instrucktit them that they soud tell nane: but accordin as he instrucktit them, sae muckle the mair did they tell o’:
37. And they were astonish’t ayont

---

1V. 15. When wull folk learn that it’s no what’s dune to a man, but what a man dis, that distinguishes the man?
a’ bounds, sayin, “He has done a’ things weel! He gars e’en the deif to hear, and the dumb to speak!”

CHAPTER AUCHT.

*Four thoosan’ fed. What Peter said. Takin up the Cross.*

IN thae days, whan again there was a great thrang, and they had naething to eat, Jesus ca’d his disciples, and said to them,

2. “I hae pitie on the folk; for they hae been wi’ me noo thrice days, and hae-na to eat.

3. “And gin I send them hungerin awa to their hames, they wull swarf by the way; for a handle o’ them come frae far awa.”

4. And his disciples answer’t him, “In whatna gate coul we be able to fill thir men wi’ bannocks, here in a wilderness?”

5. And he speir’t at them, “Hoo mony bannocks hae ye?” And they said, “Seeven.”

6. And he commandit the thrang to lout doon on the grun’: and takin the seiven bannocks, and gieen thanks, he brak, and gied to his disciples to set afore them; and they set afore the thrang.

7. And they had a wheen ama’ speldrins; and he bleeet, and bad them set them on as weel.

8. And they did eat, and war satisfy’t: and they took up o’ the broken bits ower, seeven creels-fu’.

9. Noo, they that war eatin war aboot four thoosan’; and he sent them awa.

10. And without delay, gaun intil a boat wi’ his disciples, he cam intil the kintra-side o’ Dalmanutha.

11. And oot cam the Pharisees, and begude to argu wi’ him; seekin frae him some token frae Heeven—tempin him.

12. And deely maenin in his saul, he says, “Why soud this generation ask a token? Truly say I t’ye, nae token sal be gien till this generation!”

13. And he left them, and again launchin oot, cam to the ither side.

14. And they forgat to tak laives; nor had they i’ the boat wi’ them mair nor ae bannock.

15. And he warned them, “Tak tent, beware o’ the barm o’ the Pharisees, and the barm o’ Herod!”

16. And they war coonsellin amang theirsels, “We hae brocht nae laives!”

17. And Jesus, takin tent, says to them, “Why soud ye be quaistenin thegither for that ye hae nae laives! Dae ye no yet see nor understaun? Hae ye yer heart hardened yet?”

18. “Hae ye een, and see-na! And lugs, and hear-na! and dae ye no ca’ to mind?”

19. “When I brak the fyve bannocks to the fyve-thoosan’, hoo mony baskets-fu’ o’ mools took ye up?” They say to him, “Twal.”

20. “And when the seiven for the four-thoosan’, hoo mony creels-fu’ o’ the mools did ye tak up?” And they said, “Seeven.”

21. And he says to them, “Dae ye no yet comprehend?”

22. And they cam intil Bethsaida; and they bring till him ane blin’, and beseech him to touch him.

23. And he laid hau’d o’ the blin’ man by the haun, and brocht him forth oot o’ the tou’n; and when he had putten spittle on his een, and putten his hauns on him, he speir’t at him, “Dae ye see aucht?”

24. And he lookit up, and said, “I see men; for they are like trees, walkin aboot!”

25. And again he put his hauns on his een, and he saw clearly and was restored; seein’ a’ things in splendor.

26. And he sent him awa till his hame; sayin, “Naither gang intil

---

1 V. 25. *The man needit faith mair nor he needit sicht;* and aiblins it was necessar to wanken his faith. *A handle o’ folk are that gate!*
the toun, nor tell it to ony in the toun!"
27. And Jesus gaed, and his disci- 
plis, intill the touns o' Philip's Cesar-a ; and i' the way he says to 
his disciplis, "Wha dae man say I am?"
28. And they answer't, "John the 
Baptist; but itheres Elijah; and a 
whelen, ane o' the Prophets."
29. And he speir't at them, "Wha 
say ye I am?" Peter answers and 
says to him, "Thou art the Anointit 
Ane!"
30. And he straitly chaired them 
to tell nae man o' him.
31. And he begude to schaw them 
that the Son o' Man maun dree mony 
things, and be rejeckit o' the Elders, 
and the Heid-priests, and the Scribes, 
and be slain; and eftir thirie days to 
rise again.
32. And he was speakin this thing 
freely. Than Peter, takin him in 
haun, begude to reprove him.
33. But he, turnin aboot, and 
fixin his een o' on the disciplis, rebukit 
Peter, sayin, "Get you ahint me, 
Sautan! for ye are na seekin the 
things o' God, but the things o' 
men!"
34. And ca' in till him the thrang, 
wi' his disciplis, he said to them, 
"Wha stelles to follow me, lat him 
deny his ain sel, and tak up his cross, 
and come eftir me!"
35. "For whasse fain wad save his 
life, sal tine it; but whasse sal tine 
his life for the sake o' me and the 
Gude-Word, sal save it!
36. "For what sal a man be 
better't, gin he win the hail world, 
and tine his ain saul?
37. "For what may a man gie, to 
niffer for his saul?"
38. "For whasse sal think shame 
o' me and my words, in this fause, 
and sinfu' generation, the Son o' Man 
sal eke be ashamed o' him, when he 
comes i' the glorie o' the Faither wi' 
the holie angels.

54

CHAPITIR NINE.
The glorie on the mountain-top. The man o' 
sm'a' faith, wha socht for mair! A way 
to be great!

AND he said to them, "Truly say 
A I t'ye, thar are some stuanin 
here, wha sal in naigate pree death, 
till they ha seen the Kingdom o' God 
comin in poore!"
2. And eftir sax days Jesus taks 
Peter, and James, and John, and 
feshes them up intill a heigh moun- 
tain, allenarlie; and he was trans- 
formed afore them.
3. And his cleedin becam unco 
glitterin white, as white as snaw; sic 
as nae wank-miller on the yirth con- 
white them.
4. And Elijah and Moses appear't 
to them; and they spak wi' Jesus.
5. And Peter answerin, says to 
Jesus, "Maister, it is bonnie for us 
to be here! and lat us mak thrie 
bothies; for thee ane; and for Moses 
an; and for Elijah ane!"
6. For he kent-na what to say; 
for they war sair terrify't.
7. And thar cam a clud owern-
shadin them; and a voice spak oot o' 
the clud, "This is my Son! The 
Beloved! Hear ye till him!"
8. And a' o'a suddainie, lookin 
roond, thar was nae ane to be seen, 
but only Jesus wi' their sels.
9. And as they war comin doon 
frae the mountain, he chaired them 
that they sould tell nae man the 
things they had seen, till ane the 
Son o' Man soud rise frae the deid.
10. And they keept that sayin 
amang their sels, what the "Risin-
frae-the-deid" was.
11. And they speir't at him, sayin, 
"The Scribes hau'd that Elijah maun 
first come!"
12. And he answer't and tauld 
them, "Elijah, indeed, dis come first, 
to pit a' things to richts; and yet 
ho is it written o' the Son o' Man, 
that he maun dree mony things, and 
be unco lichtlie?" 
13. "But I say t'ye, Elijah is
come! and they hae done to him \whatasse'er they wad, e'en as it is putten doon concernin him."

14. And whan they joined the discipline they saw a great thrang about them, and the Scribes speir't at them.

15. And at ance a' the folk, whan they gat a glik o' him, war in unco astonishment; and rinnin to him, salutit him.

16. And he said to him, "What was ye speirin at them aboot?"

17. And ane frae mang the crood said, "Maister! I hae brocht my son, wha has a dumb spirit, to thee."

18. "And whaure'er it takes him, it rives him; and he frothins, and cherks wi' his teeth, and dwines awa'; and I spak to thy disciples, that they micht cast it oot, but they couldna!"

19. But he answerin says, "O race wantin faith. Till wha'tna time sal I hae to bide w'y? Till wha'tna time sal I thole ye? Bring him tae me!"

20. And they brocht him to him. And seein him, forthwith the spirit dang him; and he fell on the grun', and row't, frothhin.

21. And he speir't at his faither, "Hoo long syne this cam on him?" And he said, "Frae a bairn!"

22. "And aft it has cuisten him intil the fires, and intil waters, to mak an end o' him: but gin thou can do onything, hae pitie on us, and help us!"

23. And Jesus says, "'Gin thou can'—A' things can come to him wha believes!"

24. And forthwith the laddie's faither cry't oot, and quo' he, "Lord! I believe! Tak awa' my unbeliev'!"

25. But Jesus, seein that mony folk war comin, rinnin thegither, challenged the foul spirit, sayin till', "Ye dumb and deif spirit! I command ye, come oot o' him; and come nae mair intil him!"

26. And cryin oot, and sair mangelin him, he cam oot; and the laddie was like ane deid; sae that the feck o' them said, "He is deid!"

27. But Jesus grippit his haun, and helpit him up; and he raise.

28. And whan they war inside, the disciples speir't at him, "Why couldna we cast it oot?"

29. And he said, "This sort ganges-na oot but by prayer and fastin."

30. And fra' the they gaed forth, and journey't threwe Galilee; and he wadna that ony man soud ken.

31. For he was teachin his discipline, sayin to them, "The Son o' Man is deliver't up intil the hauns o' men, and they wull slay him: and eftir he is slain, in thir days he wull rise again."

32. But they comprehendit-na his words, and war flee't to ask him.

33. And they cam to Capernaum; and bein i' the house, he speir't at them, "What war ye arguin on the way?"

34. And they said nocht; for on the road they had been arguin "Wha was greatest?"

35. And he sutt him doon, and ca'd the Twal', and says to them, "Gin ony ane wad be first, he sal be last o' a', and servitor o' a'."

36. And, takin a bairn, he set it i' the mids o' them, and fauldin it in his airms, he said to them, "Wha sal tak till him ane o' sic bairnis as thir, for the sake o' me, takes me till him; and wha takes me till him, taks no me but him that sent me!"

37. John says to him, "Maister, we saw ane i' thy name castin oot demons; and he ganges-na wi' us; and we forbade him, for he ganges-na wi' us."

38. And Jesus said, "Forbid himna; for thar is nane that sal do a wark o' poorer i' my name, and thar be able to speak ill o' me."

39. "For he that is no again us is for us.

40. "For wha sal gie ye a cup o' water to drink, i' the mind that ye are Christ's, truly say I t'ye, he tines-na his reward!"
42. “And whasea sal ensnare ane o’ thir wee anes that lippen on me, it war better for him gin the muckle millstane was bang’t aboot his neck, for him to be cuisten intil the sea!

43. “And gin siblins yere baum ensnare ye, aff witt’! It is bonnier for ye enterin intil life maiemed, than to hae the twa hauns and gang intil hell, intil lowe unquenchable!

44. “Whaur their worm dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched!

45. “And gin yere fit ensnare ye, aff witt’! It is bonnier for ye enterin into life haltin, than wi’ twa feet to be cuisten intil hell, intil lowe unquenchable.

46. “Whaur their worms dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched!

47. “And gin yere e’e ensnare ye, pyke it oot! It is bonnier for ye enterin intil life ae-e’ed, than wi’ twa seen to be cuisten intil hell,

48. “Whaur their worm dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched!

49. “For ilka ane sal be sautit wi’ fire; and ilka offeran sal be sautit wi’ saut.

50. “Gude is the saut. But gin the saut hae tint its tang, hoo sal ye mak it saut again! Hae saut in vessels, and be at peace ane wi’ anither!”

CHAPITIR TEN.

The blessin o’ the bairns. Ane that lo’ed the siller. Who wad be greatest? The thin’ man o’ Jericho.

AND risin up, he cam intil the borders o’ Jordan. And thrangs cam thegither till him again; and, as he aye did, he instruickit them again.

2. And the Pharisees cam nar till him, and they wad ken, “Is it lawful’ for a man to pit awa a wife?” tempin him.

3. And answerin them, quo’ he, “What dis Moses commaun?”

4. And they said, “Moses alloed a writin o’ divorce, and to put her awa.”

5. But Jesus answer’t, “Anent the hardness o’ yere hearts, he wrae ye this commaun.

6. “But frae the first o’ the creation, God formed them male and female.

7. “And fore-anent this sal a man lees’ his faither and his mither, and cling till his wife:

8. “And they twa sal be ae flesh: sae are they nae mair twa, but ae flesh.

9. “Whasea, than, God has joined thegither let-na man pit sindry’!”

10. And whan they war within again, the disciples speir’t at him anent it.

11. And he says to them, “Whasea pits awa his wife, and takes anither, commits adultery against his wife.

12. “And gin a woman divorces her husband, and takes anither, she commits adultery.”

13. And they war bringin till him bairns, that hesound touch them; but the disciples challenged them that brocht them.

14. But when Jesus saw it, he was unco displeased, and said to them, “Lat the wee anes come to me: hinner-them-na: for o’ sician anes is the kingdom o’ God!

15. “Truly say I t’ye, Whasea takes-na till him the kingdom o’ God as a wee bairn, he’se in naagate comin in!”

16. And he clippit them up in his airms, and socht blessings on them, and pat his hauns on them.

17. And as he was gaun oot in the way, ane cam rinnin, and loutit doon afore him, and speir’t at him, “Gude Maister! what maun I do to heir eternal life?”

18. And Jesus says to him, “Why dae ye ca’ me ‘Gude?’ Thar is but Ane gude—God!

19. “Ye ken the commauns—kill-na, commit-na avouterie, steal-na, steal-na,
mansewir-na, wrangoualy seek-na, cherish father and mither!"

20. And he said to him, "Maister, a' thee things hae I watched ower
sin' my bairnheid!"

21. And Jesus, lookin up on him, lo'ed him, and said to him, "Ye hae
ae thing wantin'; gang, and sell whatsa' ye hae, and gae to the puir;
ye'll hae gear in Heeven: and come, follow ye me!"

22. But dule cam on him at that
sayin'; and he gaed his ways sorrow-
fu'; for he was hau'din great estates.

23. And Jesus lookit roodoo aboot,
and says he to his disciples, "Wi' what
sa'ir strivin sal they win to
Heeven wha hae the riches!"

24. And the disciples ferlied un-
colie at the words. But Jesus
answers again, and quo' he to them,
"Bairns, what sa'ir strivin sal it be
to enter the kingdom o' God!

25. "It's surer that a camel gangs
throwa a needle's ee, than that a rich
man gangs intil the kingdom o' God!

26. And they were amaz't ayont a'
bounds, and quo' they, "Than wha
can be saved?"

27. And gazin on them, Jesus
says, "Wi' men it is impossible; but
no wi' God: wi' God, a' things
are possible!"

28. Than Peter begude to say to
him, "See! we laid doon a', and
followt thee!"

29. And Jesus answer't, "Truly
say I t'ye, nane has left hoose, or
brither, or sisters, or faither or
mither, or bairns, or mailins, for my
sake and the Gude-Word's sake,

30. "But sal win a hunner-fauld
noo in this time—hooses, and
brither, and sisters, and
mither, and bairns,

2V. 30. What's mar till us, books sae
muckle, that we aften it easier to
lippen God for the things o' the meest
life, rather than for the things o' time!
But let us learn the lear o' this verse,
and do so nae mair!

31. "But mony first sal be hin-
maist; and the hinmaist first."

32. Noo they war on the gate till
Jerusalem; and Jesus was gaun afor
them; and they ferlied sair; and as
they followt, they war fley't. And
he took the Twal', and begude again
to tell them the things that sound
bes' him:

33. "Tak tent! we gang up till
Jerusalem; and the Son o' Man sal
be delivert up to the Heigh-priestes,
and Scribes, and they sal adjudge
him to deid, and sal gie. him ower
to the heathen;

34. "And they will geek at him,
and will spit upon him, and will
clour him, and will slay him; and
after thre thay days wull he arise."

35. And James and John, the sons
o' Zebedee, cam; and they say to
him, "Maister! we wad that thou soud
do for us whatsoee'er we ask o' Thee!!

36. And he says to them, "What
is't ye wad hae me to do for ye?"

37. And they say to him, "Gie
until us that we may sit, ane on thy
richt haun, and ane on thy left, in
thy glorie!"

38. Jesus says to them, "Ye ken-
na what ye are seekin'! Can ye
drink the cup I drink o'f or be
bapteezt wi' the bapteezin I am bap-
teezt wi?"

39. And they say to him, "We
can." And Jesus says to them,
"The cup I drink o' ye sal drink;
and wi' the bapteezin I am bapteezt' wi'
sal ye be bapteezt' :

40. "But to sit on my richt haun
and on my left haun isna mine to gie
—but for to be gien to them for
wham it is gotten ready!"

41. And jalousin'it, the Ten begude
to hae indignation at James and
John.

42. And Jesus ca'd them till him,
and said, "Ye ken that they whoa
seem to be rulin ower the nations,
lord it ower the folk; and their great
anes come doon wi' authoritie upon
them.

57
43. "But no in sic like sal it be amang ye; for wha wad become great amang ye, sal be yere servitor:
44. "And wha wad be first amang ye, sal be yere thirman.
45. "For truly the Son o' Man cam-na to be ser't, but to ser'; and to gie his life a ransom for mony.
46. And they cam tae Jericho; and as he gaed oot o' Jericho wi' his disciples and a hantle o' folk, the son o' Timeus, blin' Bartimeus, the beggar, was sittin by the way.
47. And whan he heard it was Jesus o' Nazareth, he begude to cry oot, "Jesus, thou Son o' Dauvid! hae thou mercy on me!"
48. And mony flyit on him, that he sud be quate. But he cry't sae muckle the mair, an unco deal, "Thou Son o' Dauvid! hae mercy on me!"
49. And Jesus stude still, and said, "Ca' ye him!" and they ca'd the blin' man, sayin, "Cheer up! Rise! He's ca'in ye!"
50. And he, threwin aff his manteele, sprang up, and cam to Jesus.
51. And Jesus, answerin him, says, "What wad ye that I sould do till ye?" And the blin' man said, "Lord! that I may hae my sight!"
52. And Jesus said to him, "Gang yere ways! yere faith has made ye hale!" And forthwith he gat his sight, and follow't 1 Jesus.

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.
The lowly triumph. The fickle fig-tree.

AND whan they cam nar to Jerusalem, to Bethphage and Bethanie at the Mount o' Oliv'ez, he sent awa twa o' his disciples.
2. And says to them, "Gang yere ways to the clachan fornent ye; and as sune as ye are come intil't, ye sal see a cowt tethered, whauron nae man evir sat; lowse him and fetch him.
3. "And gin ony man say oocht to ye, or "Why dae ye this?" say ye, 'The Maister has need o' him, and belvye he sends him back again.'"
4. And they gaed their ways, and faund the cowt tethered at a door oot-by i' the street; and they lowse him.
5. And some o' thae that stude thar says to them, "What are ye daein? lowsin the cowt?"
6. And they tell't them e'en as Jesus said to them; and they loot them gang.
7. And they feash the cowt till Jesus; and they cuist on him their manteeles; and he sat upon them.
8. And a hantle spread their manteeles i' the way; and ither green branches, cuttin them oot o' the fields.
9. And they that gaed afore, and they that follow't eftir, cry't, "Hosanna! Blessed is he wha comes i' the name o' the Lord!
10. "Blessed is the comin kingdom o' oor faither Dauvid! Hosanna i' the highest Heeven."
11. And he enter't intil Jerusalem, intil the Temple; and whan he had taen tent o' a' things, it noo wearin late, he gaed oot till Bethanie wi' the Twal'.
12. And on the morn, whan he cam back frae Bethanie, he hunger't.
13. And seein a fig-tree ayont, fu' o' leaves, he gaed, gin aiblins he might fin' onything on't: and whan he cam till't, he faund naething but leaves; for it wasna the time o' figs.
14. And Jesus spak, 2 and says to it, "Nae man forever again eat frute o' thee!" and his disciples war listenin till't.

1 V. 52. The best thing a man can do wi' his new sight—whether o' the een or the spirit—is to follow the Maister wi'!  
2 V. 14. This wasna to schaw his poorer; but it was an acted parable, to teach faith! (v. 22-24).
15. And they cam to Jerusalem; and enterin the Temple, he beguin
to ca' oot thes sellin and buyin 'i the Temple; and cowpit ower the tables
' the nfferers o' siller, and the binks o' thes that trokit wi' doos:
16. And he wadna suffer ony man
to cairry veschels throwe the Temple.
17. And he was teachin, and sayin
to them, "Is it no putten doon,
'My Hoose sae be named a Hoose o' Prayer for a' people;" but ye hae
made it a howf o' robbers!"
18. And the Heid-priests and the
Scribes heard; and coonseil't hoo
they might destroy him: for they
war fleit' o' him, for a' the folk war
astonish't at his teachin.
19. And whanever the s'enin cam,
he gaed oot o' the citie.
20. And i' the mornin as they gaed
by, they saw the fig-tree birl't up
frae the rutes.
21. And Peter ca'in to min', says
to him, "Maister! see: the fig-tree
ye bann'd, is a' dwined awa!"
22. And Jesus, ansererin to him, says,
"Hae ye faith in God!
23. "For truly say I t'ye, Wha-
sae may say to this mountain, 'Be
ye ta'en up, and cuisten intil the
sea!' and doots-na in his heart—but
sal lippen that what he says sal
come to pass—he sal win it!
24. "And thus I say to ye, A' things
that ye pray and seek for,
lippen that ye hae them, and ye sal
win them.
25. "And when prayin ye staun,
frigie, gin ye hae ocht again ony
ane; that yere Faither who is in
Heeven may forgie yere sins.
26. "For gin ye forgie-na, yere
Faither in Heeven wull forgie-na
your sins!"
27. And they come to Jerusalem
again; and as he was walkin aboot i'
the Temple, the Heid-priests, and
the Scribes, and the Elders, cam to
him,
28. And quo' they to him, "By
whatna autoritie div ye thir things?
And wha is he that gied ye this
autoritie to do thir things?"
29. But Jesus said, "I wull speir at
you a' e thing; and anser me: and
I wull tell ye by whatna autoritie I
do thir things:
30. "John's Baptism,—was't frae
Heeven? or o' man? Ye may an-
swer me!"
31. And they coonseil't amang
their sels, sayin', "Gin we say, 'Frae
Heeven,' he will say, 'On what grun'
than, did ye no believe him?"
32. "But gin we see 'Frae men'—
they war fleit' o' the folk; for ane
and a' held John in veritie to be a
prophet.
33. And they anser'it Jesus, and
said, "We canna tell!" And Jesus
says to them, "Nae mair div I tell
you by whatna autoritie I do thir
things!"

CHAPTIR TWAL'.
The ill-deedie crooters. The great com-
maun. The weeden-wummam and her
fardin.

AND he beguie to speak to them in
parables. "A man set oot a vine-yard,
and biggit a wa' aboot it,
and howkit a vat, and set up a tooer,
and let it oot to crooters, and gaed
aff intil anither kintra.
2. "And he sent a servin-man to
the crooters at the season, to hae frae
the crooters o' the frute o' the vine-
yard.
3. "And they grippit him, and
dang him, and sent him toom awa'.
4. "And again he sent to them
anither o' his servants, and him they
cloured on the heid, and did shame-
fu' by him.
5. "And again he sent anither;
and him they slew; and mony mair;

¹V. 30. We maunna think this was but a
sharp way o' confoundin them. John
was a graun witness for Him (John, i. 7,
29, 32, 34), but gin they wadna say gif
the witness oould be lippened, why bring
him forrit?
whiles dingin them, and whiles slayin them.

6. "Yet had he ane, a tenderly-loed son: he sent him last to them, sayin, 'They will honor my son!'"

7. "But thae crofters coonsell't amang their sels, 'This is the heir! Come awa! let us kine him; and we may seize on his hame-haddin!"

8. "And they gippit him and slew him, and cuist him oot o' the vine-yaird.

9. "And noo, what sal the laird o' the vine-yaird do? He will come, and destroy the crofters, and gie the vine-yaird ower to ither.

10. "Hae ye never read this writin, 'The stane that was refused o' thae that biggit, the same is made heid o' the corner!"

11. "'This cam to pass frae the Lord, and it is an unco ferlie in oor e'en!'

12. And theysettled to lay hand o' him; but they war flee't o' a' the folk; for they saw he had spoken this parable anent them: and leavin him, they gaed aff.

13. And they send to him o' the Pharisées,¹ and they o' Herod, that they might snare him in his talk.

14. And comin to him, they say, "Maister, we ken that ye are true, and are awayed by nae man; for ye care-na for the looks o' a man, but o' a truth are teachin the way o' God: Is it richt for us to pay dues to Cesar, or no?"

15. "Sal we gie, or sal we refuse?" But he, seein their fausenees, said to them, "Why-for are ye tempin me? Schaw me a siller-penny that I may see."

16. And they feeb't it. And quo' he till them, "Wha's face and inscription is this?" And they said till him, "Cesar's."

17. And Jesus said to them, "The things o' Cesar aye gie ye to Cesar, and the things o' God to God!" And they war astonished at him.

18. And thar cam to him the Sadducees, wha say, "Risin-again thar is nane;" and they speir't at him, sayin,

19. "Maister! Moses pat doon for us. Gin a man's brither dee, and lea' ahint a wife, and lea nae bairn, that his brither soud tak his wife, and raise up seed to his brither.

20. "Thar war seveen brithers; and the first took a wife, and dee't, lea' in nae bairn;

21. "And the second took her; and deeit, left nae bairn ahint him; and the third as weel.

22. "And the seveen left nae bairn; and, hinmaist o' a', the wumman dee't.

23. "At the Up-risin, than, whase wife sal she be o' them? for the seveen had her for wife?"

24. Jesus said to them, "Div ye no gang wrang, for this vera cause, that ye kenna the Scripturs, and God's poorer?"

25. "For when they sal rise frae the deid, they naither mairry, nor are gien in mairriage; but are as the Angela in Heeven.

26. "But anent the Risin-frae-the-deid, did ye never read i' the buik o' Moses—'Anent the Buss'?—how God spak till him, sayin, 'I am the God o' Abra'm, and God o' Isaac, and God o' Jaucob!'

27. "He isna the God o' deid men, but o' the leevin! Ye this way uncolie deceive yersels."

28. And ane o' the Scribes cam forrit, and heard them reasonin, and seein that he had answer't them weel, speir't at him, "Whilk is the first ane o' the Commandments?"

29. Jesus answer't him, "The first o' a' is, 'Hear ye, O Israel! the Lord oor God, the Lord, is ane:

¹ V. 13. The Pharisées and Herodians war at dagger-points atween theirsels; but they could join thegither in plottin again Christ! We whiles see the same thing in oor ain day!

30. "And ye sal, lo' the Lord yere God wi' a' yere heart, and wi' a' yere saul, and wi' a' yere mind, and wi' a' yere micht; this, a first commaun.

31. "And a second like it; this: 'Ye sal lo' ye're neeboor as yersel.' Heigher than thir, o' commauns thar is nane i!'"  
32. And the Scribe said to him, "Weel, Maister; o' a' truth said ye that he is ane, and thar is nane ither but he;"  
33. "And to lo' him wi' a' the heart, and wi' a' the understandin', and wi' a' the saul, and wi' a' ane's micht—and to lo' ane's neeboor as ane's sel'. is far mair than a' the hail-brunt offeranes and sacrificaees!"

34. And when Jesus saw that he answer't discreet, he said to him, "Ye are-na far frae God's Kingdom! And syne ofter that, nae man daur speir at him quaitely.

35. And Jesus answer't, and quo' he, as he was teachin' i' the Temple, "What way say the Scribes that the Christ is Davvid's son?

36. "Davvid his sel says, by the Holi Spirit, 'The Lord says' to my Lord, Sit thou on my richt haun, till I mak thy faus thy fit-brod!'"  
37. "Davvid his sel names him 'Lord'; and frae whaur-a-wa is he than his son?" And a' the thrang listened to him gladly.

38. And in his teachin', quo' he, "Tak tent o' the Scribes! wha like to gang aboot in lang goons, and lo'e compliments i' the merkites,

39. "And preferred seats i' the kirk, and heid places at feast:
40. "Wha devor weeddows' hames, and i' their deceit mak lang prayers: thir sal hae the deeper condemnation."
41. And he set his sel doon fornet the Treasury; and a hantle o' tham that war rich cuist in muckle.
42. And thar cam ane, a puri' weedow, and she cuist in twa mites, that mak a fardin.
43. And he ca'd till him his ain disciples, and quo' he, "Truly say I t'ye, this puri' weedow has cuisten in mair than a' they that are castin intil the Treasury.
44. "For a' they, oot o' their over-come hae cuisten in; but she oot o' her poortith did cast in a' she had—e'en a' her leevin!"

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

Jerusalem fa'. The Gospel spreads. The King sal come! Lat a' tak tent!

AND as he gaed oot o' the Temple, ane o' his followers says, "Maister! gie tent, and see sic stanes, and unco biggins!"

2. Jesus said to him, "Are ye lookin' at thea great biggins? Thar sal-na be left ae stane on anither that shanna be whammil't ower!"

3. And as he sat on the Mount o' Olives, fornet the Temple, Peter and James, and John, and Andrea, speir't at him quately.
4. "Tell us, whan sal thir things be? And what the sign whan thir things are comin to pass?"
5. And Jesus begude to say to them, "Tak tent that nae man lead ye a-gley:
6. "Mony a ane wull come in my name, sayin', 'I am he!' and wull gar mony gang agees.
7. "And whan ye hear o' weir, and the clash aboot weir, be-na ye putten-aboot; for they munn needs come on; but the endin hasna come.
8. "For nation sal rise up again nation, and kingdem again kingdem:
thar sal be yirdins in a hantle places; and thar maun be famines. Thir are the bearin-pains comin on.

9. "But tak tent to yersels; for they wull gie ye up to hie-cooncils and kirk; ye maun be cloured; and fornent governors and kings maun ye staun for the sake o’ me, for a testimonie to them.

10. "And the joyfu’-tidins maun first be proclaimed to a’ the nations.

11. "And when they lead ye, deliverin ye up, be-na fashin yersels aforehaun what ye sal say; but what-sae sal be gien ye i’ that ‘oor, that speak; for it isna ye that speak; but the Holie Spirit.

12. "And brethren will gie up the brither to deid: and the faithr the bairn; and barns sal rise up again their parents, that they be putten to death.

13. "And ye sal be hatit o’ a’ men for my sake; but wha toles to the end, that same sal be saved.

14. "But whan’er ye see the abomination o’ the Desolatioun staunin whaur it soudna be (wha reads, lat him tak tent!), than lat thae who are in Judea flee to the mountains!

15. "And lat him wha is on the house-tap no come doon intil the house, nor e’en gang in to tak any-thing oot o’ the house;

16. "And lat him that is oot-by i’ the field no return back to tak awa his coat.

17. "But wae for them that are bearin! and for them that gie the breist i’ thae days!

18. "And pray ye that it come-na i’ the winter!

19. "For thae days sal be a time o’ dool, sae as thar has been nane sic-like, sin’ the first o’ the creation that God creatit, e’en till noo, and nevir sal be.

20. "And gie the Lord shorten-na the days, nae flesh wad be saved; but for the sake o’ his ain, whom he waied oot for his sel, he shortens the days.

21. "And, at that time, gin ony ane says t’ye, ‘See! here is the Christ!’ or ‘See there!’ lippen him na;

22. "For thar sal staun up fause Christs, and fause prophets, and wull schaw tokens and wunner-warks, that they may lead awa, gin it war possible, e’en the chosen anes.

23. "But tak ye tent! See, I hae tauld ye a’ things aforehaun!

24. "But in thae days, eftir that dool and stour, the sun sal be darkent, and the mune sanna gie oot her licht,

25. "And the starns sal fa’ frae the lift, and the poors abune sal be shaken.

26. "And than sal they see the Son o’ Man comin i’ the cluds, wi’ unco poore and glorie.

27. "And than sal he send oot his Angels, and sal gaither thegither his chosen anes frae the fouw winds, frea the ootermaist pairt o’ the yirth to the ootermaist o’ heeven.

28. "Noo learn ye a parable frae the fig-tree: whan’er her branch is bein ten’er, and the leaves comin on, ye ken simmer is nar-baun;

29. "Sae ye, whan’er ye see thir things comin on, tak tent that it is nar—at the vera doers!

30. "Truly say I t’ye, this generation passes-na awa, till a’ thir things sal be!

31. "Heeven and Yirth sal pass awa; but my words sal-na pass awa!

32. "But, o’ that day and that ‘oor kens name; no e’en the angels in Heeven; nor the Son; but the Fathr.

33. "Tak ye tent! watch and pray! for ye kenna when the time is.

34. "As a man bidin in a far-awa lan’; wha has left his hoose, and gien authoritie to his servants; to ilka ane his wark; and commandit the porter to tak gude tent;

35. "Tak ye gude tent, thar-for! for ye kenna when the maister o’ the hoose comes hame; gin it be at e’en,
or at midnicht, or at the cock crowin,
or at the dawn;
36. "Least, comin on ye o' a
suddaeintie, he find ye sleepin!
37. "And what I say to you, I
say to a'-tak tent!"

Tak tent! Thar's baith the destruction o'
Jerusalem and the end o' the world here;
and ane needs be wyse to reed them oot.
And aftir a's dune, we kenna weel what
is what. We maun be watchfu' and
ready!

CHAPTIR FOURTEEN.
Anointit for his burial. He dreed unco
doil wha dreed doars? Judas, and Peter,
and the Heigh-priest, and Pilate: and
they a' wran'ed him.

EFTIR twa days was the Pasche,
and the Sad Breid; and the
Heigh-priests and Scribes war coon-
sellin hoo they could griip him by
knaverie, and slay him.
2. For quo' they, "No in the Feast;
for aiblins thar wad be a bruilzie
among the folk."
3. And he bein in Bethanie, i' the
hoose o' Simon the leper, as he was
at meat,1 a wumman cam, haein an
alabaster o' perfume, raal nard, vera
costly; and she brak the alabaster,
and teemed it ower his heid.
4. And thar war some whar ill-
pleased amang theirsel; and quo'
they, "For whatna end was the
perfume wastit?"
5. "For it might hae been sell't
for mair nor three-hunner pennies,
and hae been gien tae the puir!"
And they compleed o' her.
6. But Jesus said, "Dinna fash
her! Why soud ye pit her aboot?
A wark ee-sweet and bonnie has she
dune in me.
7. "For aye hae ye the puir w'ye;

and, whan ye wull, ye may do them
gude; but ye hae-na aye wi' ye.
8. "She did what she was able to
do; she took it aforehaun to perfume
my body for the burial.
9. "Truly say I t'ye, whaursoe'er
the Gude-Tidins sal be cry't, throwe
the hail wirld, e'en what she did sal
be tauld for her memorial!"
10. And Judas Isciariot gaed awa
to the Heigh-priests, that he might
deliver him up to them.
11. And they war crouse whan
they heard it, and promised him siller.

And he was takin tent hoo he cou'd
fin' the richt time to deliver him up.
12. And on the first day o' the
Sad Breid, thay aye kill't the
Paschal lamb, his disciples speir't at
him, "Whaur wull ye that we gang
and mak ready that we may eat the
Pasche?"
13. And he sende oot twa o' the
disciples, and quo' he to them,
"Gang yere ways intil the citie,
and a man wi' a stoup o' watir sal meet
ye: follow him.
14. "And whaur he may gang in,
say ye to the gudeman o' the hoose,
'The Maister says, Whaur is my
lodgins, whaur I may eat the Pasche
wi' my disciples?'
15. "And he himself wull schaw ye
a gudely upper room, plenish't and
ready: and thar prepare ye for us."
16. And the disciples ga'ed oot,
cam intil the citie, and faund as he
had said to them; and they prepared
the Pasche.
17. And whan the e'enin cam on,
he comes wi' the Twal'.
18. And as they sat and war eatin,
Jesus says, "Truly say I t'ye, Ane o'
you, wha eats wi' me, wull betray
me!"
19. Than begude they to be unco
cuisten-doan, and to say to him, aye
by aye, "Is it I?"
20. And he said to them, "It is
ane o' the Twal', and he wha dipes wi'
me i' the dish.
21. "For the Son o' Man bude

---

1 V. 3. Mark disna name Mary. She was
aiblins still leevin, and it might be better
no to draw the enemies' attention to
her. She wasna rich (See Luke x. 40),
but she gat this costly India nard, that
she might anoint her best freend: "had
he no raised her brither frae the deid?"
36. And he was cryin, "Abba, Father! A' things are possible to thee! Tak awa this cup frae me!" But, it isna what I will, but what Thou wills!"

37. And he comes, and fin's them sleepin, and says to Peter, "Simon, are ye sleepin? Could ye na watch as 'oor?"

38. "Tak tent, and pray! that ye come-na intil temptation. The spirit is sair, but the flesh is waff."

39. And ance mair he gaed awa, and prayed, sayin the same words.

40. And whan he was come back, he faund them sleepin, for that their een war unco heavy; and they kent-na what to answer him.

41. And he cam the third time, and says to them, "Sleep on for a wee, and rest. It is eneuch! The time has come! See! the Son o' Man is deliver't up intil the hauns o' the wicked!"

42. "Rise! lat us be gaun. Mark! he wha delivers me up is at haun!"

43. And at ane, e'en while he yet spak, comes Judas, ane o' the Twal', and wi him a great thrang wi swords and rungs, frae the Heid-priests and Elders.

44. And he wha was deliverin him up had gien them a token; quo' he, "Wham I kiss, that is he; grip him, and lead him awa siccar!"

45. And comin, he gaes straught to him, and says, "Maister, Maister!" and kisst him.

46. And they lay hauns on him, and made him siccar.

47. But ane that stude by, drew sword, and attackit the Heid-priest's servin-man, and strack aff his lug.

48. And Jesus answer't them, "Are ye come oot, as again a robber, wi swords and rungs to tak me?"
49. "I was day by day wi' ye i' the Temple, and ye gribbit-me-na; but it is that sae the Scripture might be fulfilled."

50. And they a' desertit him and fled.

51. And a young man cam followin wi' them, haein a linen claih thrawn roun' his body; and they took haud o' him.

52. But he left the claih wi' them, and escapit nakit.

53. And they led Jesus aff till the Heigh-priest; and thar war gaiter't thegither a' the Heigh-priests and the Elders and the Doctors.

54. And Peter had follow't far abint, e'en intil the coort-yaird o' the Heigh-priest: and he sat wi' the servants, and warmed his sel at the lowe.

55. Noo the Heigh-priests and a' the Cooncil socht for prufe again Jesus, for to pit him to deid: but coulna fin' ony.

56. For mony bure fause-witnes again him; but their tales wadna gree thegither.

57. And some stude up, and testify't fausely again him, sayin,

58. "We heard him say, 'I wull pu' doon this Temple—this made wi' hauns—and in thrie days I'ze bigg anither, no made wi' hauns'"

59. And no e'nae sae wis their testimonie agreein.

60. And the Heigh-priest, risin in the mids, speir't at Jesus, sayin, "Div ye answer nocht? What are thir testifiyn again ye?"

61. But he stude quate, and said nocht. Again the Heigh-priest speir't at him, "Are ye the Anointit, the Son o' the Blessed?"

62. And Jesus said, "I am; and ye'se see the Son o' Man sittin on the richt haun o' Pooler, and comin i' the cluds o' heeven!"

63. And the Heigh-priest rived his cleedin, and cryt he, "What need we ony mair testimonie?"

64. "Ye hae heard the wicked words: what think ye?" And they a' condemned him to be wordie o' death.

65. And some begude to spit on him; and hid his face and daddit him, sayin, "Prophesie!" And the servitors dang him wi' their looves.

66. And as Peter was aneath i' the coort-yaird, thar comes ane o' the maids o' the Heigh-priest.

67. And when she saw Peter warmin his sel, she narrowly looks at him, and quo' she, "And thou was wi' the Nazarine—wi' Jesus!"

68. But he deny't, sayin, "I ken na him! nor ken I what ye're sayin!" And he gaed oot-by intil the entry; and a cock crew.

69. And the maid saw him again; and begude to say to them staunnin aboot, "This is ane o' them!"

70. And he deny't it again. And a wee while aftir, they staunnin by say to Peter, "Truly ye are ane o' them; for ye are a Galilee-man!"

71. But he begude bannin and sweirin—"I ken na the man ye speak o'!"

72. And noo the second time a cock crew. And Peter ca'd to mind what Jesus said to them, "Before the cock craw twice, thou wull disown me thrice!" And when he thocht thar-on, he grat.

CHAPITIR FYFTEEN.

Pilate, and Jesus; and the cross, and the tomb.

AN dstraucht the Heid-priests i' the mornin coonsell't wi' the Elders and Doctors, and the hail Cooncil, and bund Jesus, and led him awa and deliver't him up to Pilate.

2. And Pilate speir't at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?" And answerin, he says to him, "Ye say true."

3. And the Heid-priests threepit on mony things again him.

4. And Pilate again speir't at him, "Answer-ye-na? See! hoo mony things they lay again ye!"
5. But Jesus nae mair answer't ocht; sae that Pilate ferried.
6. Noo, at Feast-time, he aye releas'd for them a prisoner—wham they micht wale.
7. And thar was ane Barabbas; bund wi' the insurgents—wha, indeed, in the revolt had committit murder.
8. And a' the folk gaed up, and begude to seek for him to dae as he had aye done for them.
9. And Pilate answer't them, "Wad ye that I release t'ye the King o' the Jews?"
10. For he saw that for jealousie the Heid-priests had deliver'd him up.
11. But the Heid-priests wrocht up the folk, that he sould raither releasethem Barabbas.
12. And Pilate was again speerin at them, "What, than, wad ye that I sound do to the King o' the Jews?"
13. But they cry't oot again, "Crucify him!"
14. But Pilate said to them, "Why sae? What ill has he dune?" And they cry't oot mair furiously, "Crucify him!"
15. And Pilate, being fain to please the croud, released Barabbas to them; and deliver'd up Jesus, first been scourg'd, to be crucify't.
16. And the sodgers led him awa intil the coort, ca'd "The Pretorium;" and they bring thegither the hail cohort.
17. And they cled him in purple, and they weave a croon o' thorns, and pit it on his heid;
18. And begude to salute him, "Hail to thee, King o' the Jews!"
19. And they strack him ower the heid wi' a reed; and spot on him, and bent the knee and worshipp't him.

20. And eftrir mockin him, they strippit aff the purple, and pat on him his ain creelin, and led him oot to crucify him.
21. And they lay haud o' ane Simon, a Cyrenian, comin in frae the kintra-pairts—faither o' Alexander and Rufus—to carry his cross.
22. And they bring him to the place "Golgotha," that is to say "Skull-place."
23. And they proffer't him wine wi' myrr in't; but he wadna haet.
24. And they crucify't him; and dividit his cleedin amang them, and cuist lots wha sound hae ocht.
25. And it was the third 'oor, and they crucify't him.
26. And the writin o' his accusation was ower aboon, "The King o' the Jews!"
27. And eke wi' him they crucify twa robbers; ane on the richt haun, and ane on his left.
28. And the Scriptur cam to pass, whilk says, "And wi' wrang-doers was he coont-it-in!"
29. And the gangers-by war misca'in him, waggin their heids, and sayin, "Aha! thou wha is takin doon the Temple, and up-biggin it in thrie days.
30. "Save yersel, and come doon frae the cross!"
31. And as weel the Heid-priests, jeerin amang their sels, wi' the Writers, said, "He saved itheres; his sel he canna save!"
32. "The Christ, the King o' Isra'! lat him noo come doon frae the cross, that seein it, we may lippen him!" And the anes crucify't wi' him, misca'd him.
33. And at the mid-day 'oor, the mirk cam ower the hail lan', to the ninth 'oor o' the day.
34. And at the ninth 'oor, Jesus cry't oot wi' a loud voice, "Eloi! Eloi! lama sabachthani!" whilk is, in translation, "My God! My God! why did thou forsake me?"
35. And some o' the staunners-by,
whan they heard that, said, "He cries on Elijah!"
36. And ane ran and filled a sponge wi' vinegar, and pat it on a reed, and gied him drink, sayin, "Let be! let us see gin aiblins Elijah comes to tak him doon!"
37. But Jesus, utterin a loud cry, expir't.
38. And the veil o' the Temple was rived in twa, frae the tap to the bottom.
39. Noo the Captain wha stude nar, fornent him, seein he sae cry't oot and expir't, said, "Truly, this man was God's Son!"
40. And weemen too war thar, lookin on frae oot-by: 'mang wham war Mary Magdalene, and Mary (James the less, and Jose's mither), and Salome,
41. Wha, whan he was in Galilee, aye follow't and providit for him; and mony ither weemen wha cam up wi' him to Jerusalem.
42. And gloamin comin on, and it bein "The Preparation," that is "Afore the Sabbath."—
43. Thar cam 1 Joseph of Arimathiea, a Coencilor o' honorable rank, wha himsel lookit for the Kingdum o' God, and gaed openly to Pilate, and craved the body o' Jesus.
44. And Pilate misdootit whether he was sae sune deid; and ca'd the Captain, and speir't at him gin he had been ony time deid?
45. And as sune as he kent it o' the Captain, he grantit the body to Joseph.
46. And he coft fine linen, and takin him doon, rowt' him i' the claith, and laid him in a tomb hewn oot i' the rock: and rowt' a muckle stane to steak the door o' the tomb.

47. And Mary Magdalene, and Mary, James' mither, lookit on, and saw whaur he was laid.

CHAPTIR SAXTEEN.
The risin frae the deid. He shaws his sel; and then ascends.

THE Sabbath bein by, Mary Magdalene, and Mary o' James, and Salome, coft them spices, that they micht come and anoint him.
2. And early on the first day o' the week, they come to the tomb, at the sun-risin.
3. "And they war sayin to thir sels, "Wha wull row us awa the stane frae the door o' the tomb?"
4. And, lookin up, they see that the stane is rowt' awa'; for it was an unco bounk.
5. And, gangin intil the tomb, they saw a young man sittin on the richt, clad in a lang, white robe; and they war unco fley't.
6. But he says to them, "Be na fley't! Ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene, the Crucify't. He raise! He isna here! See the place whaur they laid him.
7. "But gang; tell his disciples and Peter, 1 that he gaes afore you intil Galilee, thar sal ye see him; e'en as he tauld ye."
8. And gangin oot, they fled frae the tomb; for fear and quakin had come on them; and they taund nocht to ony; for they war terrify't.
9. And, comin forth early on the first day o' the week, he was first made kent to Mary Magdalene, frae whom he had cuisten oot seveen demons.
10. She gaed awa' and tell't thae that had been wi' him, as they maen'd and grat.
11. And they, whan they war

1 V. 43. Thank God for necessities! Gin thar hadna been the necessity o' savin the body o' Jesus frae bein cuisten intil a publie place, Joseph mitt nevir hae pluck't up courage eneuch to avow his sel a freend o' Jesus! We aft gain by our losses!
1 V. 7. See hoo unco tender the Lord was toward Peter! Na doot he grat (ver. 10) mair than ony o' them—for he had mair to greet for! Wha fa's far'est, has maist need o' raisin up!
tell't that he was leevin, and seen by her, wadna believe.

12. And eftir thae things, he was schawn in anither form to twa o' them, as they walkit and gaed oot intil the kintra.

13. And they gaed awa', and tell't it to the lave: neither believ't they them.

14. But eftir, to the Eleeven their sels he was schawn, as they sat at meat; and he wyttit them for their dootsomness and hardness o' heart, no to lippen to them wha had seen him eftir he raise.

15. And he said to them, "Gang ye to a' the world, and preach the Gude-Tidins to the hale creation!"

16. "Wha believes and is bapteez't sal be sav't; but wha disbelieves sal be condemned.

17. "And uncos sal follow them that believe; in my name sal the demons be cuisten oot; they sal speak wi' tongues;

18. "They sal tak up vipers; and gin aiblins they drink ony deidly draught, it sal be nae ill to them; they sal lay hauns on the sick, and they sal be weel!"

19. Sae than the Lord Jesus, eftir he had spoken to them, was ta'en up till Heeven, and sat doon on the richt haun o' God:

20. And they gaed oot, and preached a'-gate; the Lord workin wi' them, and makin siccar the Word wi' the uncos that follow't.
LUKE.

CHAPTER ANE.

The wunner-warks at the birth o' John.

INASMUCKLE as mony hae taen in baun to pit doon in order a narration o' thae things that hae been made siccar amang us,

2. E'en as they, wha war at first-haun witnesses and followers o' the Word, gied them till us;

3. It seemed gude to me as weel, haein kent frae the first a' things pertely, to write to you in set order, O weel-deservin Theophilus,

4. That ye micht hae fu' knowledge o' the certaintie o' the things in whilk ye hae been trained.

5. THARE was, in the days o' Herod, King o' Judea, a priest ca'd Zachariah, o' Abijah's coorse; and his wife was o' the dochters o' Aaron, and she was ca'd Elizabeth.

6. And they war baith richt-leevin afore God, walkin i' the Commauns and appointments o' the Lord wyteless.

7. And they had nae bairn, for that Elizabeth bure-na; and they war baith growin auld.

8. Noo it cam aboot, that while he was doin priestly service afore God i' the order o' his coorse,

9. As was the custom o' the priesthood, it was his lot to offer incense, enterin intil the Temple o' the Lord.

10. And the thrang o' folk were oot-by, prayin, at the 'oor o' the incense-offeran.

11. And thar appeare't to him an Angel o' the Lord, staunin on the richt side o' the incense-altar.

12. And Zachariah was uncolie putten-aboot when he saw him, and fear cam on him.

13. But the Angel says to him, "Be-na fleyt, Zachariah! for yere prayer has been heard, and yere wife Elizabeth sal bear a son t'ye, and his name ye'se ca' John:

14. "And ye sal hae joy to ye, and rejoicin, and mony sal' be blythe at his birth.

15. "For he sal be michty afore the Lord, and he'se drink nae wine nor strong drink; and he sal be fu' o' the Holie Spirit, e'en frae the womb.

16. "And mony o' Israel's sons wull he weise roun' till the Lord their God.

17. "And he sal gang afore him i' the spirit and micht o' Elijah to weise roun' faithers' hearts till their bairns, and the dour to the wyse-heid o' the gude; to mak ready for the Lord a prepared folk."

18. And Zachariah says to the Angel, "Hoo's I to ken this? For I'm an auld man, and my wife noo in eild?"

19. And answarin, quo' the Angel to him, "I am Gabriel, that staun afore God! and I hae been sent to speak to ye, and to fesh ye thir gude tidins.

20. And noo see! ye sal be dumh, and hae nae speech, until whatna day thir things are dune, for that ye wadna lippen my words—whilk sal come to pass i' thair time!"

21. And the folk war waitin for Zachariah, and feredlie at his delayin i' the Temple.

22. And when he cam forth, he coudna speak to them; and they kent he bude hae seen a vision i' the Temple. And he gaed on makin signs to them, and remained dumb.

23. And it cam aboot, that when his days o' service war dune, he gaed awa to his ain hose.

24. And eftir thae days his wife Elizabeth conceived, and wadna be seen for fyve months; sayin,
LUKE, I.

25. "Sae has the Lord dune to me, to tak awa my humiliation amang the folk."
26. And i' the sixth month the anger Gabriel was sent frae God till a citie o' Galilee ca'd Nazareth,
27. Till a maid betrothed to a man named Joseph, o' the hose o' Dauvid; and the maid's name was Mary.
28. And the Angel, comin in till her, says, "Joy be to ye, favored ane! The Lord is w'ye; blest be ye amang weemen!"
29. But she was unco put-aboat at the sayin, and was comin ower in her mind whatna kind o' salutation this might be!
30. And the Angel said, "Fear-na, Mary! for ye hae gotten favor wi' God!"
31. "And tak tent! ye sal conceive i' the womb, and bring forth a son, and sal ca' his name JESUS.
32. "He sal be great, an' sal be ca'd 'The Son o' the Maist Heigh'; and the Lord sal gie to him the thron o' his father Dauvid.
33. "And he sal reign ower the hose o' Jacob for aye; and o' his kingdom sal be nae endin!"
34. But Mary said to the Angel, "Hoo sal this be, sin a husband I ken-na?"
35. And the Angel answerin, says, "The Holie Spirit sal come, and the poore o' the Maist Heigh sal descend upon ye; and sae that is that to be born sal be ca'd holie, the Son o' God!"
36. "And mark! Elizabeth, yere kinswumman, e'en she has conceived a son in her auld age; and this is the sixth month wi' her wha was countit hairness.
37. "For nae word frae God sal want poore!"
38. And Mary said, "Lo! I am the handmaid o' the Lord. 1 Be it e'en to me, conform to thy word!"
39. And the Angel gaed awa frae her.
40. And enter'nt until the hose o' Zechariah, and salutit Elizabeth.
41. And it cam aboot that as Elizabeth heard Mary's salutation, the bairn in her womb rejoiced; and Elizabeth was fu' o' the Holie Spirit,
42. And raised her voice in lood exclamation, and said, "Happy ye amang weemen! and blest is the frute o' yere womb!"
43. "And for what is this come to me, that the mither o' my Lord sould come tae me?"
44. "For behaund! as sune as the voice o' yere salutation cam to my hearin, the bairn lap i' my womb for joy.
45. "And happy she wha lippen'd! for thar sal be comin to pass o' thae things spoken to her frae the Lord."
46. And Mary said, "My saul dis magnify the Lord,
47. "And my spirit joyes in God my Saviour!"
48. "For he has lookit upon the laigh estate o' his handmaid; for lo! frae this oot, a' generations sal ca' me blest,
49. "For that the Mighty Ane has dune to me great things; and Holie is his name!"
50. "And his mercie is until generations and generations, to thae that fear him.
51. "He wrocith victorie wi' his airm; he dang them that war heigh i' their heart's intent.
52. "He pu'd doon michty anes frae throns, and liftit up thae o' laigh estate.
53. "To hungry anes he gied maist precious thing wi' a wumman, her reputation amang folk—or her humbleness o' mind a' throwe. She had the word o' the Lord, and she socht nae mair.
rowth o' gude things; and the walthy he ca'd awa toom;
54. "He helpit Isra'1, his servitor, and remember't his mercie,
55. "As he spak to oor faithers, to Abra'm and his seed for aye!"
56. And Mary bidit wi' her for about thrie months; and return't to her sair hoose.
57. Noo Elizabeth's time o' bringing-forth was come; and she bured a son.
58. And her neebors and kin heard hoo the Lord had multiply't his mercies to her, and they rejoiced wi' her.
59. And it cam aboot, that on the aucth day they cam to circusceese the bairn; and they wad hae him ca'd "Zachariah," eftir the name o' his faither.
60. And his mither answert, "Na, but he sal be ca'd John!" 61. And they said to her, "Nane o' yer kin is ca'd by this name!"
62. And they made signs to his faither, "Hoo wad ye hae him ca'd?"
63. And he wad hae a writintablet, and wrate, "His name is John!" And a' feried.
64. And his mou' was unsteekit at ance, and his tongue lowsed; and he spak, and praised God.
65. And a' fell on a' the neebors; and this was noised abreid ower the hill-pairt of Judea.
66. And a' wha heard it laid it up in their hearts, sayin', "Whatna bairn sal this be?" for the haun o' the Lord was wi' him.
67. And his faither Zachariah was fu' o' the Holie Spirit, and prophesyt, sayin',
68. "Blest be the Lord God o' Isra', wha has regained his ain folk, and wrocht salvation for them!
69. "And has raised up a horn o' Salvation for us in the hoose o' his servant Dauvid:
70. "As he spak by the word o' the prophets, wha hae been sin' the beginnin'.

71. "Salvation frae our foes, and frae the haun o' a' that hate us.
72. "To schaw mercie to oor faither, and to keep in mind his holie Covenant:
73. "The aith he swure to Abra'm oor faither,
74. "To grant to us, that, delivirin us frae the haun o' oor foes, we sould ser' him wi' nae dreed,
75. "In holiness and richtousness a' the days o' oor leevin'.
76. "And ye, bairn, sal be ca'd the Prophet o' the Maist Heigh; for ye sal gang on afore him, to mak ready his gangins;
77. "To gie knowledge o' salvation to his folk, for the remittin' o' their sins,
78. "For that God's yearmin mercie is toward us, whaur-by the dawin frae on beigh sal find us,
79. "To gлит on them wha sit in darkness, and the gloamin' o' death; to airt oor feet intil the ways o' peace!"
80. And the bairn grew, and wax'd sterk in spirit, and was i' the deserts to the day he was made kent to Isra'1.

CHAPTIR TWA.

Jesus, till he was thretty years o' age.

NOO i' thae days it cam aboot thar gaed oot a decree Cesar Augustus that a' the inhabitters o' his dominions sould be enrolled.
2. And this enrollment was made when Quirinius was Governor in Syria.
3. And a' war gaun to be enrolled, ilk ane to his ain citie.
4. And Joseph, as weel, gaed up frae Galilee, oot o' the citie o' Nazareth, intil Judea, intil Dauvid's citie, whilk is ca'd Bethlehem; for that he was o' the hoose and stock o' Dauvid:
5. To be enrolled, wi' Mary his betrothed wife, wha was a mither-to-be.
6. And sae it was, that while they
war thar, the days war fulfilled for
her to bring forth.

7. And she brocht forth her son—
her first-born—and row't him in a
barrie-coat, and laid him i' the man-
erg, for that there was nae room for
them i' the inn.

8. And thar war in the same kin-
tra side herds bidin i' the fields, and
keepin gaird ower their flocks by
nicht.

9. And see! an Angel o' the Lord
cam till them, and the glorie o' the
Lord glintit roond aboot them; and
they war sair gliff'd.

10. And the Angel said, "Be-na
gliff'd; for I bring ye gude tidins o'
muckle joy to the hail warld!

11. "For thar is born t'ye this
day, in Davuid's toun, a Saviour, wha
is the Anointit Lord.

12. "And here is the token for ye:
ye'se fin' the barn row't in a barrie-
coat, lyin in a manger."

13. And a' at ane there was wi'
the Angel a thrang o' Heeven's host,
praisin God, and sayin,

14. "Glorie to God i' the heighest
heights, and on the yirth peace!
Gude wull to men!"

15. And as the Angels gaed awa
frae them to Heeven, the shepherds
said o' tae anither, "Let us gang
noo to Bethlehem, and see this thing
that has come aboot, that the Lord
has made kent to us!"

16. And they gaed, makin baste,
and fund Mary, and Joseph, and the
bairn lyin in a manger.

17. And when they saw it, they
tauld abreid the words that war tell't
to them anent this bairn.

18. And a' that heard it ferlied at
the things tauld them by the shep-
herds.

19. But Mary keepit a' thae things,
pondering on them in her heart.

20. And the shepherds returned,
giean glorie to God, for a' thae
things they saw and heard; s'en as
it was tell't them.

21. And when the aucth day was
come for the circumeession o' the
bairn, his name they ca'd Jesus,
whilk was sae ca'd by the Angel 'or
he was conceiv't i' the womb.

22. And when the days o' purifica-
tion by the law o' Moses war fulfilled,
they took him to Jerusalem to pre-
sent him to the Lord;

23. E'en as it is putten-dooin i' the
law o' the Lord, "Ilka male that opes
a womb sal be ca'd holie to the
Lord."

24. And to offer an offeran, as it
is putten-dooin i' the law o' the Lord,
"A pair o' cushata, or twa young
does."

25. And mark! thar was a man i'
Jerusalem, whase name was Simeon;
and this man was holie and devout,
lookin' for Isral's consolation. And
the Holie Spirit was on him.

26. And the Holie Spirit had made
kent to him that he souldna see
death till he had seen the Anointit o'
the Lord.

27. And he cam i' the Spirit, intil
the Temple; and when the parents
brocht in the bairn Jesus, to do for
him what was the custom o' the Law,

28. He took him in his arms, and
praised God, and said,

29. "Noo, wull thou dismiss thy
servant, O Lord! conform to thy
word, in peace!

30. "For my een bae seen thy sal-
vation,

31. "Whilk thou hast brocht for-
rit afore the face o' a' folk.

32. "A licht for unveilin to the
Gentiles, and a glorie for thy folk o'
Isra'1!"

33. And Joseph and his mither
ferlied at a' the things that war said
anent him.

34. And Simeon bless't them, and
said to Mary his mither, "Lo! this
Ane is set for the fa'&n and staunin
again o' mony in Isra'1: and for a
sign to be misca'&d.

35. "And a sword sal thring
throwe yere ain heart as weel, that
the thocht o' mony hearts may be schawn."

36. "And thar was ane Anna, a prophetess, Phanuel's dochter, o' the tribe o' Asher; she was o' an unco age, and had lee'd wi' a husband seven year frae her maidenhood:

37. And she bade a weadow for four-score and four year, wha left-na the Temple; and set't wi' fastins and prayers nicht and day:

38. And she too comin in at that time gied thanks to God; and spak o' him to a' wha war waitin fcr the deliverin o' Jerusalem.

39. And whan they had dune a' things conform to the law o' the Lord, they gaed awa intil Galilee, to their ain citie Nazareth.

40. And the bairn grew, and wax't strang; fu' o' wisdom; and God's tender favor was wi' him.

41. Noo his parents gaed yearly to Jerusalem, at the Feast o' the Pasche.

42. And whan he was twal-year auld, they gaed up to Jerusalem, as was the mairner o' the Feast.

43. And whan they had fulfilled the days, they returned; but the lad Jesus remained abint in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mither ken't-na.

44. But, suppos'in him to be wi' the itbers o' the company, gaed a day's journey, and they socht him amang their kin and acquaintance.

45. And whan they faund-him-na, they gaed back to Jerusalem again, seekin him.

46. And aftir thrie days they faund him i' the Temple, sittin wi' the Doctors, baith hearin them and spairin quaiistence at them.

47. And a' that heard him war astonished ayont a' things at his wisdom and his saysins.

48. And seein him, they feringed uncolie; and his mother says to him, "Son, why hae ye dune this till us? See! yere faither and I hae lookit for ye in pain!"

49. And he said, "Hoo is't that ye socht for me? Wist-ye-na, I maun needs be i' my Faither's hoose?"

50. And they ken't-na the meinin o' what he spak to them.

51. And he gaed doon wi' them, and cam till Nazareth, and obey't them; but his mither laid up a' thae things in her heart.

52. And Jesus war't in wyssheid, and in stature, and in favor wi' God and wi' man.

**CHAPTIR THRIE.**

*Jesus baptizt*; and his genealogy.

NOO, i' the fifteenth year o' the rule o' Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate bein Governor o' Judea, and Herod Tetrarch o'Galilee; Philip, his brother, bein Tetrarch o' the kintra o' Iturea and Trachonitis, and Lysanius Tetrarch o' Abilene,

2. I' the Heigh-priesthood o' Annas and Caiaphas, the word o' God cam to John, Zachariah's son, i' the mui-lands.

3. And he cam till a' pairts about Jordan, preachin repentance-baptism, and remittin o' sins.

4. As it is putten-doon i' the buik o' the saysins o' Esaiah the prophet, "The sough o' ane cryin oot i' the mui-lands, 'Mak ye gangeable the Lord's way! mak straucht his fit-roads.'"

5. "Ilka heugh sal be filled heigh; and ilka mountain and hill sal be made laigh, and the gley't sal be made straucht, and the rough ways plain;"

6. "And a' flesh sal look on God's salvation!"

7. Sae he was sayin to the thrangs that gaed oot to be baptizit by him, "Ye brood o' vipers! wha war't that warned you to flee frae the comin wrath?"

---

1 V. 51. What coud Mary's thochtis be, a' thae years. She aiblins dinna come to the fu' licht, till about the time o' his death. And hoo did Luke ken sae mickle aboot her ponderings o' heart? Nae doot, frae hersel, in aftir days.
8. "Bring ye than forth frutes fit for repentance; and begin-na to say wi’ yersels, ‘We hae a faither, e’en Abra’m!’ For say I t’ye, that God coud raise up o’ thae stanes bairns till Abra’m!

9. "And e’en noo the axe is by the rute o’ the trees: ilka tree bringin-na forth gude fruit is cuttit doon, and cuisten intil the lowe.”

10. And the thrang o’ folk war speirin at him, “What than, sal we do?”

11. And he answer’t, “He that has twa coats, lat him bestow on him that has nae: and he that has meat, lat him dae the same.”

12. Than cam tax-men to be bapteez’t, and said to him, “Maister! what are we to do?”

13. And he says to them, “Tak free the folk nae mair than what is set for ye!”

14. And sodgers, too, war speirin at him, “And we, what sal we do?” And he said to them, “Lift the strang haun to nane, naither grip aucht wrangously; and be content wi’ yere providin.”

15. Noo, as a’ the folk war lookin forrit, and war switherin i’ their hearts about John, gin aiblins he micht be the Messiah;

16. John answer’t, sayin till ane-and-a’, “I, indeed, bapteze ye wi’ watir; but Ane comes who is michtier than I; the whang o’ whase shoon I am-na fit to lout doon and lous. He sal bapteze ye wi’ Holie Spirit and wi’ fire.”

17. “Whase fan is in his neive, and he will redd up his thresh-firn, and teem his wheat intil his girnal, but the cauff will he burn wi’ nevir-endin lowe!”

18. Wi’ mony mair exhortins was he deliverin the Gude-tidins to the people.

19. But Herod, the King-depute, being repruv’d by him anent Herodias, his brother Philip’s wife, and for a’ the mony ills Herod had dune,

20. Addit this till’t a’, that he cuist John in prison.

21. Noo, it was, that whan a’ the folk war bapteez’t, Jesus too was bapteez’t, and continued in prayer—and the heevens war unsteekit,

22. And the Holie Spirit cam doon in bodily form like a doo upon him; and a voice cam oot o’ the heevens, “Thou art my Son, the Beloved An; in Thee I delight!”

23. And Jesus was, at the first, aboot thirty years o’ age; bein son—as was believ’t—o’ Joseph, 1 o’ Heli,

24. O’ Matthath, o’ Levi, o’ Melchi, o’ Jannai, o’ Joseph,

25. O’ Mattathias, o’ Amos, o’ Nahum, o’ Esli, o’ Naggai,

26. O’ Maath, o’ Mattathias, o’ Semein, o’ Josech, o’ Joda,

27. O’ Joanan, o’ Rhesa, o’ Zerubbabel, o’ Shealtiel, o’ Neri,

28. O’ Melchi, o’ Addi, o’ Cosam, o’ Elmadam, o’ Er,

29. O’ Jesus, o’ Eliezer, o’ Jorim, o’ Matthath, o’ Levi,

30. O’ Symeon, o’ Judas, o’ Joseph, o’ Jonam, o’ Eliakim,

31. O’ Melea, o’ Menna, o’ Mattatha, o’ Nathan, o’ Dauvid,

32. O’ Jesse, o’ Obed, o’ Boaz, o’ Salmon, o’ Nahshon,

33. O’ Amminadab, o’ Arni, o’ Esrom, o’ Perez, o’ Judah,

34. O’ Jaucob, o’ Isaac, o’ Abra’m, o’ Terah, o’ Nahor,

35. O’ Serug, o’ Reu, o’ Peleg, o’ Eber, o’ Shelah,

36. O’ Cainan, o’ Arphaxad, o’ Shem, o’ Noah, o’ Lamech,

37. O’ Methusalah, o’ Enoch, o’ Jared, o’ Mahalaleel, o’ Cainan,

38. O’ Enos, o’ Seth, o’ Adam, o’ God.

1 V. 23 to the end. Gar a Jew to see that Jesus was a son o’ Dauvid, and born in Bethlehem, and he was gey-weel won ower! but ither folk lookit-na sae muckle at his pedigree. Tatian, i’ his Diatessaron, made aboot a.D. 160, lea’s it oot a’thegither.
CHAPTER FOUR.

Tempted by the ill ane.

LUKE, IV.

Jesus preachin in the kirk.

15. And he was teachin i' their kirks, bein mickle thocht o' by them a'.

16. And he cam intil Nazareth, whaur he had been brocht up; and gaed in, as he aye did, to the kirk, on the Sabbath day, and stude up to read;

17. And thar was gien to him the buik o' Essiah the Prophet; and openin the buik, he found whaur it was putten-doon,

18. "The Spirit o' the Lord is on me, for that he has anointit me to preach gude tidins to the puir; he has sent me to tell oat their release to the prisoners, and to the blin' receivin o' sight; to send awa free thae that war wrang'd.

19. "To soond oot the blessed day o' the Lord!"

20. And closin the buik, he gied it again to the beadle, and sat doon; and a' een i' the kirk war on him.

21. And he begude to say to them, "This day is this writin come to pass i' yere hearin!"

22. And a' war witnesses to him, and ferlyin at the words o' grace fa'in frae his mou'; and war sayin, "Is na this Joseph's son?"

23. And he says to them, "Ye wull, o' a surety say to me, 'Physician, heal yersel! As mony things as we heard o' bein dune at Capernaum, do here as weel, i' yere ain kintra-side!'

24. And quo' he, "Truly say I t'ye, nae prophet is honored in his ain kintra-side!"

25. "But truly I tell ye, thar war mony weedows in Isra' i' the days o' Elijah, when the heevens war steeikt thrie year and sax months; and a great dearth cam on a' the lan'.

26. "And to nae o' them was Elijah sent, but only Sarpepta o' Sidon, to a wumman, a weedow.

27. "And thar war mony lepers in Isra', i' the time o' Elisha the prophet; and no ane o' them was made clean but Naaman the Syrian."
28. And a' i' the kirk war fu' o' rage, when they heard thir things;
29. And they raise up to cuist him oot o' the citie; and they led him till the brow o' the hill on whilk their citie was biggit, that he might be cuist til oon heidlang.
30. But he, gangin oot throwe amang them, gaed his ways.
31. And he cam doon till Capernaum, a citie o' Galilee, and was teachin them on the Sabbath-days;
32. And they war astonish't at his teachin; for his word cam wi' poorer.
33. And i' the kirk was a man wi' a foul spirit; and he cry't oot wi' a great voice.
34. Sayin, "Let us be! What is thar atween us and thee, Jesus o' Nazareth? Are ye come to destroy us? I ken ye—the Holie Ane o' God!"
35. And Jesus challenged him, "Peace! And come ye oot o' him!" And whan the demon had thrown him doon, he cam oot o' him, doin him nae ill.
36. And an astonishment cam on them. And they war sayin ane to anither, "Whatna word is this, that wi' authority and power he gies orders to foul spirits, and they come oot?"
37. And thar was gaun forth a great clach anent him, intil ilka place o' the kintra-side.
38. And, risin frae the kirk, he entered intil Simon's hoose. Noo Simon's gude-mither was in sair pyne wi' a great fivver. And they spak to him for her.
39. And, staunin ower her, he rebukit the fivver, and it gaed frae her; and she raise, and waitit on them.
40. And when the sun was settin a' the folk, as mony as had sick anes wi' ony kind o' illness, brocht them till him, and he laid hauns on them, and healed them.
41. And the demons too war gaun forth o' mony—cryin oot and sayin, "Ye are the Son o' God!" And he rebukit them; and allow't-them-na to speak; for they kent he was the Messiah.
42. And whan it was day, he gaed oot and journey'd intil a desert bit; and the thrang cam eftir him, and held him back, that he soudna gang frae them.
43. But he said to them, "Till ither cities, as weel, maun I gie the Gude-tidins anent the Kingdom o' God, for for that was I sent."
44. And he was hauin forth i' the kirks o' Galilee.

CHAPITIR FYVE.

Fishes to the nets: and a man doon threwe the sippyin to the Healer!

Noo it cam aboot, as the folk panged aboot him to hear God's word, he stude by Gennesaret Loch.
2. And saw twa boats lying by the Loch; but the fishers war gane frae them, and war syndin their nets.
3. And gaun intil ane o' the boats—whilk was Simon's—he wad hae him pit aff a wee frae the lan'; and sittin doon, he was teachin the thrang oot o' the boat.
4. And whan he quast speakin, he says to Simon. "Pit oot intil the deep, and lat doon yere nets for a haul."
5. And answerin, Simon says to him, "Maister! though we toiled a' nicht, we tuik naething; yet at thy sayin I wull lat doon the nets!"
6. And whan they did this, they took an unco number o' fish; and their nets war gian way.
7. And they made signs to their pairtners i' the ither boat, to come and gie them a haun. And they cam; and they filled fu' baith the boats, sae that they war like to sink.
8. And Simon Peter, whan he saw, fell doon at Jesus' knees, cryin, "De-
LUKE, V.

21. And the Writers and the Pharisees begude to dispute, "Wha is this utterin profaneness? Wha can forgie sins but God allenar?"

22. But Jesus kennin their thotch, says to them, "Why are ye debatin i' yere hearts?"

23. "Whilk is easier to say, 'Ye're sins are forgien': or to say, 'Rise ye and walk'?

24. "But in order ye may ken that the Son o' Man has authoritie on the yirth to forgie sins," [he says to the paralytic], "Rise! and takin up yere couch, gang yere ways till yere hame!"

25. And at anse, afore them sae, risin, and liftin that whaur-on he lay, he gaed aff to his ain hoose, gian glorie to God.

26. And they war a' astoundit, and glorify't God; and war fu' o' dreed, sayin, "We hae seen unco things the day!"

27. And eftir thir things, he gaed forth and saw a tax-man, ca'd Levi, presidin at the tax-liftin; and said to him, "Be followin me!"

28. And forskin a', he raise and follow't him.

29. And Levi made a great feast for him in his hoose; and a great company o' tax-men and ither sat doon wi' him.

30. And the Pharisees and their Writers war yammerin at his disciplis, sayin, "Hoo is't that ye eat and drink wi' tax-men and reprobates?"

31. And Jesus answerin, says to them, "It's no the hale anes wha want the leech, but the ill anes!"

32. "I hae-na come to win richtous anes, but sinfu' anes to repentance."

33. And they say to him, "Hoo

---

1 V. 33. It gars ane feel dowie and wae, to see, a' throws this chapter, hoo the Pharisees and Doctors war hingin on him, and houndin him! aye seekin something to faut him wi'. Oh for the spirit that aye seeks something to commend and praise, rather than ban and flyte!
is't that John's disciples fast mickle, and mak prayers; and thee o' the Pharisees as weel; but yere ain are eatin and drinkin?"

34. And he said to them, "Wad ye hae the sons o' the bride-chaumer fast while the bridegroom is yet wi' them?"
35. "But the days wull come—e'en when the bridegroom is ta'en frae them—than wull they fast i' theae days."
36. And he spak a parable to them: "Nae man pits a clout frae a new mantle on an auld ane; else, than baith the new piece makes a rive, and the new piece 'grees-na wi' the auld.
37. "And nae man pits new wine intil auld wine-skins; else the new wine wull rive the wine-skins, and it wull be skail't, and the skins destroy't.
38. "But new wine maun be teemed intil new wine-skins, and baith are preserved.
39. "And nane, haein preed auld wine, seeks for the new; for, quo' he, 'The auld is better!'"

CHAPITIR SAX.

A wheen heids o' corn for the hung'ry. A pickle for ilk ane oot o' this graun field-

NOO it cam aboot that on the Sabbath-day he was gaun throwe the corn-fields; and his disciples pu'd the heids o'corn, and war eatin, rubbing them i' their loof.
2. But some o' the Pharisees said, "Why dae ye an unlawfu' thing on the Sabbath-day?"
3. And Jesus answerin them said, "Hae ye no e'en read this, what Dauid did, whan he was hunger't, he and thee wi' him?"
4. "Hoo he gaed intil God's hoose, and did tak and eat o' the Breid o' Presentation, and gied to thee that war wi' him; whilk wasna lawfu' for him to eat—but for the priests alane?"

5. And he said to them, "The Son o' Man is Lord e'en o' the Sabbath."
6. And it cam aboot that on anither Sabbath-day he gaed intil a kirk, and was teachin. And a man was thar, and his richt haun was dwined awa.
7. But the Writers and the Pharisees war lookin, gin he wad heal on the Sabbath-day, that they micht hae an accusation again him.
8. Noo he kent their thoughtis; naething he says to the man wi' his haun dwined awa, "Rise ye, and staun forth i' the mids!" And he raise, and stude forth.
9. And Jesus said to them, "I quaiser ye: is it lawfu' on the Sabbath to do gude, or to do ill t o save a life, or to destroy it?"
10. And he lookit roond aboot on them a', and said to the man, "Rax oot yere haun!" And he did sae, and his haun was restored, like as theither.
11. And they war fu' o' rage: and they coonseill't ane wi' anither what they wad do to Jesus?
12. And it cam aboot i' theae days, that he gaed oot intil a mountain for prayer; and was a' the nicht in prayer to God.
13. And when the dawn cam, he ca'd his disciples, and wailed oot frae them twal', whan eke he named "Apostles":
14. Simon, wham eke he named "Peter," and Andro his brither, James and John, Philip and Bartholomie,
15. And Matthew and Tammas, James o'Alpheus, and Simon o' the Zealots,
16. And Judas o' James, and Judas Iscariot, wha was the traitor.
17. And he cam doon wi' them, and stude on an even bit o' grun': and a great thrang o' his disciples, and an unco number o' folk frae a' Judea and Jerusalem, and the coast aboot Tyre and Sidon, wha cam to
Blessings and banns.  

LUKE, VI.  

Parables.

hear him, and to be healed o’ their ills.
18. And they that war sair fash’d wi’ foul spirite; and they war healed.
19. And a’ the thrang socht to touch him, for thar saed forth poorer frae him, and healed a’. 
20. And he liftit up his een on his disciples, and quo’ he, “Happy, ye destitute! for yours is God’s King-
dom.
21. “Happy, ye wha are hungerin noo! for ye sal be fill’d! Happy’, ye wha greet noo; for ye sal smile.
22. “Happy are ye, whan men sal hate ye, and whan they sal separate ye, and misc’a ye, and cast oot yere name as vileness, for the Son o Man’s sake.
23. “Blythe the be ye i’ that day, and lowp for joy! for lo! yere meed is great Aboon: for in sceilike main-
ner did their faithers to the prophets.
24. “But wae for you, ye rich anes! for ye are noo haein yere con-
solation.
25. “Wae for you wha hae been filled fu’ noo! for ye sal hung’er. Wae for you wha lauch noo! for ye sal greet.
26. “Alack! whan a’ folk speak weel o’ ye! for e’en sae did their faithers to the false prophets.
27. “But I say to you wha hear: lo’e1 yere faces! do gude to them wha hate ye.
28. “Be blessin them that ban ye; pray for them that ill-use ye.
29. “To him that clours ye on ae cheek, gie e’en the ither; and frae

b) him wha poinds yere coat, withhau’d-
na yere cloak as weel.
30. Bestow on ilk ane wha seeks frae ye; and frae him wha taks awa yere gudes, ask them no again.
31. “And as ye wad that men soud to do to yersels, do ye e’en the same to them likewise.
32. “Gin ye loe them that lo’e ye, whatna thanks are thar for ye? for e’en the ill-deedie lo’e thae that lo’e them.
33. “And gin aiblins ye do gude to them that do gude to yersels, whatna thanks hae ye? for e’en the ill-deedie do the same.
34. “And gin aiblins ye lend to thesa frae whom ye hope to receive, whatna thanks dae ye win? for the evil lend to the evil, to receive as muckle again.
35. “But lo’e ye’re enemies, and do them gude, and lend, lookin for naething back; and yere meed sal be great, and ye sal be bairns o’ the Maist Heigh; for he is kindlie to the ungratefu’ and the reprobate.
36. “Be ye than mercifu’, e’en as yere Faither is mercifu’.
37. “And judge-na, and ye’se be-na judged: condemn-na, and ye’se be-na condemned: release, and ye’se be released.
38. “Bestow, and it sal be bestown upon you: gude measur, pang’d doon and jous’l thegither, and skailin ower, sal they gie intil yere lap: for w’ yere ain measur that ye measur sal it be gien back to ye.”
39. And he spak a parable to them: “May the blin’ lead the blin’? Wull they no baith fa’ intil a sheugh? 
40. “A disciple is no aboon his Maister; but, whan perfetit, he sal be as his Maister.
41. “But why div ye tak tent o’ the mote i’ yere brither’s ee, but consider-na the baulk that’s i’ yere ain ee!”
42. “Or hoo can ye say till yere-brither, ’Brither, lat me pu’ oot the mote that is in yere ee,’ whan ye yersel see-na the baulk that is in yere.

V. 27. This rule is like gude seed sown i’ the yirth; and it’s aye growin! It brairdit langsyne, and it will ripen some day! wars sal cease, and hate be shamed o’itself! Div ye no think we can best undertaun the Sixth Commandment, by takin it as a commun again Hatred? Hate is the nation, but Murder is the king; and the declaration o’ war is again the king—but taks in a’ his subjects! See Matt. v. 21, 22. And sae wi’ a’ the Commains!
ain ee! Dissembler! cast oot first the baulk oot o’ yere ain ee, and than may ye see weel to pu’ oot the mote that is in yere brethren’s ee.

43. “For a soun’ tree brings-na forth feckless frute, nor dis a feckless tree bring forth gude frute.

44. “For ilka tree may be kent by its ain frute: for folk gaither-na figs o’ thistles, nor o’ a bramble gaither they grapes.

45. “The gude man, oot o’ the gude gear o’ his ain heart, brings oot what is gude; and the ill man, oot o’ the ill, what is ill; for, oot o’ the overcomen o’ his heart his mou’ speaks.

46. “But for why say ye to me, ‘Lord, Lord!’ and div-na what I say?

47. “Whassae comes to me, and hears my words, I wull schaw ye wham he is like :

48. “He is like to a man biggin a hoose, wha howkit deep, and laid a fundation on a rock; and, a spate comin, the torrent struck sair again that hoose, and cou’d-na ding it, for it was biggit on a rock.

49. “But he wha hears and dis-na, is like to a man that biggit a hoose on the yird, wantin a fundation; agane whilk cam doon the spate, and at ance it was dang in; and the fa’ o’ that hoose was great!”

CHAPITIR SEEVERN.
The weedow’s son gien back to her. John in d.-ot. Aue weshes Jesus’ feet.

N0O, eftir he had endit a’ his teachin i’ the hearin’ o’ the thrang, he gaed intil Capernaum.

2. And a Centurion’s servin-man, wha was unco thocht o’ by him, was ill, and ready to dee.

3. But, hearin aboot Jesus, he sent to him Elders o’ the Jews, wha besocht him that he wad come and save his servin-man.

4. And when they cam to Jesus, they besocht him sair, sayin, “He is wordie to wham ye wad grant this:

5. “For he lo’es oor nation, and has biggit us a kirk!”

6. And Jesus was gaun wi’ them. By this time he, no bein far frae the hoose, the Centurion sent freends to him, sayin “Lord, dinna faash yer sel; for I am-na wordie ye soud come under my roof.

7. “And sae naither thocht I mysel wordie to come till ye; but speak wi’ a word, and my servin-lad sal be hale.

8. “For e’en I mysel am ane set under authoritie, and inan under me sodgers; and I say to ane, ‘Gang,’ and he gangs; and to anither, ‘Come,’ and he comes; and to my servin-lad, ‘Do this,’ and he dis it.”

9. And whan Jesus heard thae words, he ferlied at him; and turnin to the thrang that follow’t him, said, “I say t’ye, I hae-na fund sic leal faith, na, no in Isra’l!”

10. And they that were sent, returnin to the hoose, faund the servin-lad weel.

11. And it cam to pass in order, that he was gaun intil a citie ca’d Nain; and mony disciples gaed wi’ him, and a great thrang.

12. Noo whan he cam to the yeet o’ the citie, lookt: thar was carry’t oot ane deid, the ae son o’ his mither, and she was a weedow: and a handle o’ folk o’ the citie war wi’ her.

13. And whan the Lord saw her, he had unco pitie on her, and says to her, “Dinna greet!”

14. And gaun forrit, he touched the bier; and the bearers stude still; and he said, “Laddie! I say to thee, Rise!”

15. And he that was deid sat up, and begude to speak. And he gied him ower to his mither.

16. And a giff fell on them a’; and they magnify’t God, cryin, “A great prophet has raise up amang us!” and “God has visitit his folk!”

17. And this word aboot him gaed oot intil the hail o’ Judea, and a’ throwe the paitrs round aboot.
18. And the disciples o' John tell't him a' thir things.

19. And ca'in to him twa certain anes o' his disciples, 1 John sent them to the Lord, sayin, "Are ye the Ane that soud come? or are we to look for another ane?"

20. And comin to him, the men said, "John Baptist has sent us to thee, sayin, 'Are ye the Ane that soud come? or are we to look for another ane?'"

21. At that 'oor he healed mony o' their ills and plagues, and foul spirits; and on mony blin' he bestowed sicht.

22. And Jesus anwerin, said to them, "Gang yere ways, and cairry word to John what ye saw and heard: hoo the blin' win their sicht, the lameters gang aboot, lepers are made clean, the deif hear, the deid are raised, and the needy hae the joyfu' message preached to them.

23. "And weel may he be, wha finds nae cause o' stumblin in me!"

24. And, the messengers o' John gaun awa, he begude to speak to a' the thrang anent John: "What gaed ye oot intil the waste to see? A reed, win'shaken?"

25. "But what wast ye gaed oot to see? A man clad in saft attire? But look! they who are fund in grand attire, and fend delicately, are in royal palaces.


27. "This is he o' whom it is putten-doon, 'Lo! I send out my messenger afore yere face, wha sal mak yer fit-road gangable afore ye!'"

28. "For I say t'ye, Amang a' that are born o' weemen, there isna a greater prophet than John the Baptist; yet he who is the less in God's Kingdom is greater nor he!"

29. And a' the folk whan they heard — and the tax-men — laudit God, bein baptizet in John's bap-tezin.

30. But the Pharisees and the Writers pat aside the consel o' God again their sels, no bein baptizet o' him.

31. "Unto what, than, sal I compare the men o'this generation? and until what are they like?"

32. "They are like bairns sittin' the merkit-place, and cryin ane to anither, and sayin, 'We piped to ye, and ye danced-na; we crooned a dirge to ye, and ye grat-na.'"

33. "For John the Baptist is come, naither eatin breid nor drinkin wine, and ye say, 'He has a demon.'"

34. "The Son o' Man is come, eatin and drinkin; and ye say, 'See! a man o' gluttony, and a wine-tippler; a freend o' tax-men and the ill-deedie!'

35. "And yet wisdom is justisfieet o' her bairns!"

36. And a certain ane o' the Pharisees wad bae him come and eat wi' him: and gaun intil the hoose o' the Pharisee, he sat doon to meat.

37. And see! a wumman o' the citie, wha was an ill-doorer, when she kent that he was sittin at meat i' the Pharisee's hoose, she gat her an alabaster cruse o' perfume,

38. And stauin' abint him, at his feet, she begude to weet his feet wi' her tears; and wiped the tears aff wi' her hair; and was kissin his feet, and crysttit them wi' the perfume.

39. But the Pharisee wha had bidden him, seein it, spak till his sel: "This ane, gin he war a prophet, wad hae taen tent wha and o'
whatna sort this wumman is that touches him — that she is a bad ane.”

40. And Jesus, answerin, says to him, “Simon, I hae a thing to say t’ye.” And he says, “Maister, say on!”

41. “Thar was a certain creditor wha had twa debtors; the ane was awn fyve-hunner siller-pennies, and the tither fifty.

42. “And whan they had nocht to pay wi’, he forga’e them baith. Whilk o’ them, noo, wull lo’e him maist?”

43. Answerin, quo’ Simon, “I wad think he to whom he forga’e the maist.” And he says to them, “Ye hae judged richt.”

44. And turnin him to the wumman he says to Simon, “See ye this wumman! I cam intil yere hoose: ye gied me nae watir for my feet; but she wat my feet wi’ her tears, and wiped them aff wi’ her hair.

45. “Nae kiss gied-ye-me: but she, sin’ I cam in, hasna left aff to kiss my feet.

46. “Wi’ nae ulyie did ye anoint my heid; but she, wi’ perfume, crystit my feet.

47. “Sae, say I t’ye, Her mony sins hae been forgi’en; for she lo’ed muckle; but to wham little is forgi’en, he lo’e little.”

48. And he said till her, “Yere sins are forgi’en.”

49. And they sittin at meat wi’ him, begude to say to their sela, “Wha is this, that is e’en forgi’en sins?”

50. But he said to the wumman, “Yere faith has saved ye! Gang in peace!”

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

The sawin o’ the seed. A storm laid.
A lassie raised.

AND it cam aboot that in due course he gaed throwe a’ cities and villages preachin, and bringin the

Gude-tidins o’ the Kingdom o’ God, and the Twal’ war wi’ him;

2. And certain weemen wha had been healed o’ foul spirits, and ills
nesse; Mary, ca’d the Magdalene,

3. And Joan, wife o’ Chuzu’a, Herod’s steward; and Susanna; and mony mair, wha war gian oot to them o’ their ain plenishin.

4. And whan a great thrang cam thegither, and they o’ the cities jour
ney’d till him, he spak throwe a parable:

5. “A sawer gaed oot to saw his seed; and as he sawed, some fell aside the fit-road, and was trampit doon, and the burdies o’ the air de
voort it.

6. “And ither fell on the rock;
and as sune as it brairdit it dwined awa; for it wanted moisture.

7. “And ither fell amang the thorns; and, growin up wit’, the thorns smoor’d it.

8. “And ither some fell intil the gude grun’; and brairdin, brocht forth frute, a hunner-fauld.” Thir things sayin, he cry’t alood, “He wha has lugs to hear, let him hear!”

9. But his disciples war speirin at him, “What may this parable be?”

10. And he said, “To you it is gi’en to win the knowledge o’ the mysteries o’ God’s Kingdom; but to the lave in parables: sae seein they see-na, and hearin they understaun
na.¹

11. “Noo the parable is this:—The Seed is the Word o’ God.
12. “And they by the fit-road are they wha hear; than comes Sautan, and cleeks awa the word frae their heart, least, believin, they sould be saved.

13. “And thir on the rock are they wha, whan they hear, wi’ joy welcome the word; but they hae nae rute—wha believe for a wee, and in time o’ trial fa’ away.

¹ V. 10. Wha winna see, canna see; and wha winna understaun, canna even hear! God mak gieg oor hearin and seein!
14. "And thir that fell amang the thorns, are they that hear; and as they gang on their way, are smoor'd wi' cark and care, and the gear and the joys o' this life, and bring nae frute to the ripinin.

15. "But that i' the gude grun are they wha, in an honest and leal heart, hear the word and grip it fast; and, tholin a', bring their frute to perfecteness.

16. "For nane, luntin a crusie, covers it ower wi' a dish, or pits it aneath a couch; but sets it on a stun, that they wha come in may see the licht.

17. "For thar is nac secret but sal be unfauldit; nor onything bidlins that sanna be kent.

18. "Tak tent, than, hoo ye hear! for to wha has sal rowth be gi'en; and wha has-na, frae him sal be ta'en awa o'en what he seems to hae!"

19. Noo thar cam seekin him his mither and his brethren; but they coudna win nar him for the thrang.

20. And it was said to him, "Yere mither and yere brethren are stauin oot-by, and wad see ye!"

21. But he answer't, and quo' he to them, "My mither and my brethren are thir—wha hear the Word o' God, an' do it!"

22. And it cam, that on ane o' the days, he gaed intil a boat, he and his disciples, and he said to them, "Let us gang ower to the other side o' the Loch!"

23. And they set oot. Noo, as they war sailin, he fell asleep. And thar cam doon an unco storm o' win' intil the Loch; and they were fillin, and war in danger.

24. And they cam till him, and waucken'd him, sayin, "Maister! Maister! we perish!" And he raise, and challenged the win' and the rabin' o' the watir; and they war lown, and it becam a calm.

25. And he said to them, "Whaur is yere faith?" But, struck wi' dreed, they ferled, sayin ane to anither, "Whatna man is this, that he orders the win's and watirs, and they obey him?"

26. And they cam till the kintra-side o' the Gerasenes, whilk, indeed, is ower fornt Galilee.

27. And whan they war come forth on the lan', a certain man met him, oot o' the citie, wha had demons, and for lang had worn nae claes; nor wad bide in ony house, but i' the tombs:

28. But seein Jesus, he cry't oot, and fell doon afore him, and wi' a soondin voice cry't, "What hae I to dae wi' thee, Jesus! Son o' God Maist Heigh! I entreat thee, torment-me-na!"

29. For he commandit the foul spirit to come oot o' the man: for aft it had grippit him; and he was keipt in ward, and bund wi' fetters and chains; and, rivin his bonds sindry, he was ca'd intil the deserts by the demons.

30. And Jesus demandit o' him, "What is yere name?" And he said, "Legion!" for that mony demons had enter't intil him.

31. And they entreatit him that he wadna command them to gang oot intil the abys.

32. Noo thar was a herd o' mony swine feedin on the mountain; and they entreatit him that he wad gie them leav to enter intil them. And he loot them.

33. And the demons, gaun forth frae the man, gaed intil the swine. And the hale herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch, and war drooned.

34. And whan they that herdit them saw what was dune, they fled, and tell't it i' the citie, and i' the kintra-side.

35. And they cam oot to see what had come to pass, and cam to Jesus and faund the man the demons had gane oot o', cleedit and in his richt senses, at the feet o' Jesus: and they fear't.
36. And they wha beheld, cauld hoo the ane possessit wi' demons was saved.
37. Than the hail o' the kintra-side o' the Gerasene entreatit him to depart frae them; for they war hauden wi' a great fear. And he, gaun intil a boat, returned again.
38. Noo the man the demons had gane oot o', was entreatin him that he might be wi' him; but he sent him awa, sayin,
39. "Gang yere ways to yere hoose, and schaw what great things God has wrocht for ye!" And he gaed aff, and tellt throwe the hail citie hoo great things Jesus had dune for him.
40. Noo as Jesus returned, a' the folk welcomed him back; for they war lookin for him.
41. And see! thar cam ane named Jairus, and the same was a ruler i' the kirk. And fa'n doon at Jesus' feet, he entreated him to come to his hoose.
42. For he had but ae dochter, about twal' year auld, and she lay deesin. But as he gaed, the thrang delay't him.
43. And a wumman haein a flowin for twal year—wha indeed had wared a' her gear on doctors, and wasna healed o' ony—
44. Cam shint him, and touched the fringe o' his mantle; and at ance her flowin o' blude stanch't.
45. And Jesus said, "Wha is't that touch'd me?" And, whan a' war denyin, Peter and they that war wi' him, replyt, "Maister! the multitudes hem thee in and thrang thee; and say's thou, 'Wha touched me?'"
46. But Jesus said, "Some ane touched me; for I tak tent o' poore gaun oot frae me!"
47. And the wumman, seein she hadna escapit kennin, cam trimlin; and loutin doon afore him, tell't afore a' the folk for why she had touched him, and hoo she was healed at ance.
48. And he said to her, "Dochter, yere faith has made ye hale; gang yere ways in peace!"
49. E'en whiles he was speakin, cam ane frae the kirk-ruler's hoose, sayin to him, "Yere dochter is deid; dinna fash the Maister ony mair!"
50. But Jesus, hearin', says, "Fear-na! only believe, and she sal be saved."
51. And comin to the hoose, he suffer't nae man to gang in wi' him but Peter and John and James, and the faither o' the lassie, and her mither.
52. And they war a' greetin and makin their maen owr her. But he said, "Wail na! for she dee't na, but is sleepin!"
53. And they made derision o' him, kennin she was deid.1
54. But he, takin her by the haun, spak alood, "Lassie! Rise!"
55. And her spirit returned, and she raise at ance: and he spak that she soud hae to eat.
56. And her parents war astoundit; but he charged them no to tell ony what had been dune.

CHAPITIR NINE.
Sendin oot the Twal. Feedin the thrang. Staumin in glorie. He'll be hame 'or lang.

AND, ca'in thegither the Twal, he gied them poore and authoritie ower a' the demons, and to heal diseases.
2. And he sent them oot to proclaim God's kingdom, and to heal the sick.
3. And quo' he till them, "Tak nocht for yere journey; naither staff nor wallet, nor braid nor siller; nor to hae twa coats.
4. "And intil whatna hoose ye

1 V. 53. Nevir mock onyane, till ye ken what he means. And whan ye ken his meanin, thar'll be naething to mock at! Thir folk wad be unco shamed o' their sels belyve!
The fyve thoosan' fed

LUKE, IX. on fyve bannocks an' twa speldrine.

may enter, bide ye in', and frae thar
gang yere ways again.

5. "And as mony as winna tak
ye in, whan ye gang frae that citie,
flafl aff the stour frae yere feet for
testimonie again them.

6. And gaun oot, they gaed throwe
a' the towns, proclaimin' the Joyfu' mes-sage,
and teacin' a'-gate.

7. Noo Herod the King-depute
heard o' a' that was dune; and he
swither't and was sair fashed: for
some said John had risen again frae
the deid;

8. And some that Elijah was come;
and ither's again that ane o' the auld
prophets had come to life.

9. But Herod said, "I beheidit
John; but wha is this I hear sic
things o'?
And he socht to see him.

10. And the Apostles, returnin,
tell't him a' things they had dune.
And he took them aside, and gaed
awa', unkent, to a city ca'ed Beth-
said.

11. But the folk, comin to ken,
follow't him. And he took them to
him, and spak to them o' the King-
dom o' God; and healed thae that
stude in need o' healin'.

12. Noo as the day begude to wear
awa, the Twal', comin nar, says to
him, "Send ye the folk awa, that
they may gang to the towns
and clachans roond to lodge and fend:
for we are here in a desert bit."

13. But he said to them, "Ye gie
them to eat!" But they said, "We
hae nae mair nor fyve bannocks,
and twa speldrins; unless we sood gang
and buy meat for a' thir folk!"

14. For thar war aboot fyve
thoosan' men. And he said to his
disciples, "Gar them sit doon in
companies o' aboot fifty.

15. And they did sae, and gar't
them, ane and a', sit doon.

16. And, takin the fyve bannocks

and the twa speldrins, he lookit up
Aboon, and bless'd them, and brak
them, and gied to the disciples, and
they to the folk.

17. And they did a' eat, and war
satisfy't; and what was left ower
was ta'en up, twal baskets o' broken
meat.

18. And it cam aboot than whan he
was alane, and prayin, the disciples
war wi' him. And he speir't at them,
sayin, "Wham say the folk I am?"

19. And they anser'it him, "John
the Baptist; ither' Elijah; and yet
ither's, that ane o' the auld prophets
is risen again!"

20. And quo' he to them, "But
wham div ye say I am?" And Peter,
answerin, said, "God's Christ!"

21. And he strickly admonished
them, and commandit them that they
soud tell this to none.

22. Sayin, "The Son o' Man maun
dree mony things, and be rejeckt o'
the Elders, the Heid-priests and the
Writers; and be slain; and on the
third day rise!"

23. And he said to them a', "Gin
ony man wad follow me, lat him deny
his sel, and tak up his cross ilka day,
and follow me!

24. "For whasae wad hain his life
sal time it; and whasae may tine his
life for my sake, that vera man sal
save it!

25. "For what sairs it a man, gie
he has gotten the hail warld, and
has tint his sel, or is cuisten oot?

26. "For, whasae has shame o' me
and o' my words, the Son o' Man sal
hae shame o' him, at what time he
comes in his glorie, and in the glorie
o' the Faither, and o' the holie
Angels.

1 V. 14. "Companies," or banquet-pairties;
ilk in thrie sides o' a square, or a hauf-
circle. See Mark, vi. 39, note.

2 V. 17. We kenna what they wad do wi'
the twal baskets o' mools and bits. Nae
doott they gied them to the puirest o' the
folk; for they, like oorsel's, ared had the
puir wi' them. We whiles speir "Hoo
Jaacob gied God the tenth o' a he had?"
(Gen. xxviii. 22). Nane need doott, by
bestowin it on the puir!
27. "But truly say I t'ye, Thar are some here stauin, wha in naegate sal ken death, to the time they see the glorie o' God!"

28. And it cam to pass, about an aught-days eftir thae sayins, that he took wi' him Peter and John and James, and gaed to pray, up intil a mountain.

29. And whiles he was prayin, the look o' his face was changed, and his cleedin became white and shinin.

30. And lo! twa men spak wi' him; wha war Moses and Elijah.

31. Wha schawed theirsels in glorie, and spak o' his depairtin, whilk he soud accomplish at Jerusalem.

32. But Peter and the lave wi' him war unco heavy wi' sleep: and whan they war wauken'd up, they saw his glorie, and the twa men stauin wi' him.

33. And as they war about to pass awa, Peter said to Jesus, "Maister! it is graun for us to be here! And lat us mak thrie bothies, ane for thee, and ane for Moses, and ane for Elijah"—no kennin richt what he was sayin.

34. And whiles he was yet speakin thir words, a clud cam and ower-shadit them, and they were strucken fu' o' fear, as the men enter't intil the clud.

35. And a voice cam oot' the clud. "This is my Son, the Chosen Ane! Hear ye him!"

36. And whan the voice had been heard, Jesus was thar his lane. And they keepit it to their sels; and tell't nae man i' thae days whatna things they had seen.

37. And it cam about, that on the neist day, as they war come doon frae the mountain, a great thrang o' folk met him.

38. And look! a man frae 'mang the folk cry't oot, sayin, "Maister, I entreat ye look ye on my son; for he is my ae-bairn!"

39. "And 'o! a spirit grips him, to sudden he skreighs oot; and it rives him; and dingin him, jimpily wull leave him.

40. "And I entreatit thy disciples to cast him oot; and they cuid-na!"

41. And answerin, Jesus said, "O fause and thrawart generation! to whatna time sal I bide w'ye? and thole ye! Bring here yere son!"

42. And while he was a-comin, the demon dang him doon, and mangl'd him. And Jesus challenged the foul spirit, and healed the laddie, and gied him ower to his father.

43. And they war a' strucken wi' amazement at the mighty power o' God. But while they ilka ane ferlaid at a' the things that Jesus had done, he says to his followers,

44. "Let thir words sink doon intil yere lugs: for the Son o' Man is sure to be deliver't intil the hauns o' men!"

45. But they kent-na this sayin; and it was keepit frae them, that they soud-na ken it; and they war fear't to speir at him anent the sayin.

46. And thar gat up an argle-bargle amang them, "Wha o' them soud be heighest?"

47. Noo Jesus, kennin what was in their hearts, took a wee bairn, and sat him by his side,

48. And said to them, "Whasae may mak welcome this bairn in my name, welcomes me! and whasae welcomes me, welcomes him that sent me: for he that is least amang ye, he sal be great!"

49. And John spak up, "Maister! we saw ane by wham demons were cuisten oot i' thyr name. And we challenged him, for he was-na followin wi' us?"

50. And Jesus said to him, "Fauthim-na! for wha isna contrar to ye is for ye!"

51. And it cam about, that when the days o' his takin-up war come, he siccarlie set his face to gang to Jerusalem.

52. And he sent oot rinners to gang
Whaur to lay his heid.

LUKE, X.

The Seventy.

afore him: and as they gaed, they cam intil a wee toun o’ the Samari-
tans, to mak ready for his comin.

53. And they wadna hae him come, for that his face was set to gang to
Jerusalem.

54. And whan James and John, disciples, saw that, they speir’t,
“Lord! wull ye hae us bid fire to come doon frae the lift and consume
them?”

55. But he turned aboot and re-
bukit them.

56. And they gaed on till anither
toun.

57. And as they journey’d on, ane said to him, “I’se follow thee
whaurseer thou may gang!”

58. And Jesus said to him, “The
tods hae dens, and the burdies o’ the
lilt hae nests; but the Son o’ Man
hasna whauron to lay his heid!”

59. And he said to a different
ane, “Follow ye me!” But, quo’
he, “Lord, let me gang first to the
burial o’ my faither!”

60. But he said to him, “Leave
ye the deid to kist their ain deid, but
gang ye and spread abreid the King-
dom o’ God!”

61. And yet anither said to him,
“I’se follow thee, Lord! but let me
first gang hame, and pairt wi’ thes i’
my ain hoose!”

62. But Jesus said to him, “Nae
man, takin haud o’ the pleuch, and
lookin back to the things anhint, is fit
for the Kingdom o’ God!”

CHAPTIR TEN.

The preaching o’ the Seventy. The man in
soir settle, and wha befrendit him.

AND, eftir thir things, the Lord
took seeventy mair, as weil, and
sent them oot, twa by twa, afore his
face, intil ilka toon and place whaur
he wad come his sel.

2. And he was sayin to them,
“The hairst is unco great, but the
work-folk are few: entreat ye than

o’ the Lord o’ the hairst, that he
may press work-folk intil his hairst.

3. “Gang ye! See, I am sendin
ye oot as lambs amang the wolves.

4. “Cairry-na purse, nor wallet,
nor shoon; and dinna be salutin ony
as ye gang.

5. “And intil whatsaae hose ye
gang, say ye first, ‘Peace be to this
hoose!’

6. “And gin the Son o’ peace bide
yonner, yere ain peace sal licht upon
it; but gin it be-na sae, ye’se hae
yere ain peace again!

7. “And bide ye i’ the same hoose,
eatin and drinkin what they hae by
them, for the laborer maun hae his
fee. Flit-na fress hoose to hoose.

8. “And whatna toon ye enter in,
and they mak ye welcome, eat what
is set afore ye,

9. “And heal the sick thar-in,
sayin till them, ‘The Kingdom o’
God is come nar t’ye!’

10. “But whaur’eer ye gang intil
a toon, and they winna tak ye in,
gang ye oot intil the highways o’
sayin,

11. “E’en the stour o’ yere toon
on oor shoon we dicht aff for ye!
but, tak tent! God’s kingdom has
come nar-haund ye!’

12. “I say t’ye, that for them o’
Sodom, i’ that day, it sal be better
than for yon toon!

13. “Wae for ye, Chorazin! Wae
for ye, Bethsaida! for gin Tyre and
Sidon had seen the warks o’ poorer
that had been dune in you, they wad
langayne repentit, sittin in tow-claith
and assis.

14. “But it sal be better for Tyre
and Sidon at the Judgment nor for
you!

15. “And ye, Capernaum! Are
ye heiz’t up to heaven! doon to hell
sal ye be cuisten!

16. “Wha is hearin you is hearin
me; and wha is gangin you by, is
gangin me by; and wha is gangin
me by, is gangin-bye him that sent
me oot.”

87
17. And the Seeventy blythely returned, sayin, "Lord! e’en the demons gie in to us, i’ thy name!"
18. And he said to them, "I was lookin at Sautin, as like a fire-flaucht he fell free Heeven!
19. "Behaule! I hae gien y’ye richt to tramp on serpents and scorpions, and on a’ the poore o’ the enemie; and naething sal in onygate skaithe ye.
20. "Yet, ba-na blythe for this, that the demons are giean-in to ye, but be ye blythe that yere names are putten doon Aboon!"
21. In that vera oor joy’d he i’ the Holie Spirit, and said, "I own to thee, Lord o’ Heeven and Yirth, that thou did hide thir things frae the wyss and the discernin, and did mak them plain to the bairn-like! E’en sae, my Faither! for sae it was weel i’ thy sight!
22. "To me are deliver’t up a’ things o’ my Faither; and nane comes to ken wha the Son is, only the Faither; and wha the Faither is, only the Son, and sic a ane as the Son may reveal him till.
23. And, turnin till his disciples, he says to them by their sels, "Happy the e’en that see what your e’en see!
24. "For, I say t’ye, Mony prophets and kings war fain to see what ye are seein, and did-na see; and to hae heard what ye hear, and heard na!"
25. And, now see! a Writer raise, tempin him, and sayin, "Maister! what maun I do that I may hae an everlastin inheritance?"
26. And he said to him, "What has been putten-doon i’ the law? Hoo read ye?"
27. And answerin, he said, "Ye sal lo’e the Lord yer God wi’ yere hail heart, and wi’ yere hail saul, and wi’ yere hail poorer, and wi’ a saefauld ettlin—and yere neebor like yersel!"
28. And he said to him, "Truly hae ye said: do ye as weel, and ye’se hae life!"
29. But he, fain to mak himsel oot to be richt, speir’t at Jesus, "Wha is my neebor?"
30. And, takin it up, Jesus said, "Thar was a man gaun doon frae Jerusalem till Jericho, wha fell in wi’ robbers; wha stripped him, and cloured and gashed him, and gaed their ways, lea’in him nar deid.
31. "And it cam aboot, that a certain priest cam doon that gate; and, lookin on him, gaed cannie by on the ither side.
32. "And in siclike manner a Levite as weel, comin doon till the place, and seein’t, slippit by on the far-away side.
33. "But a certain Samaria-man, gaun on his journey, cam doon till him; and, lookin on him, was fu’ o’ compassion;
34. "And comin nar, bund up his cloures, teemin in ulyie and wine; and pittin him on his ain beas’, fesh’t him till the inn, and tentit him.
35. "And on the morn, takin oot twa siller-pennies, he gae them to the guidman, sayin, ‘Tak tent o’ him weel! and whatna mair ye ware on him, when I come back I’se pay ye.’
36. "Noo, whilk ane oot o’ thae three, think ye, made his sel neebor till him that fell in wi’ the robbers?"
37. And he says, "The ane that deait in compassion wi’ him!" And Jesus says to him, "Gang ye, and be doin siclike!"
38. Noo, as they gaed on, he cam intil a certain toon; and a certain wumman named Martha bade him intil her hoose.
39. And she had a sister ca’d Mary, wha was aye sittin nar-by the feet o’ Jesus, hearin his words.
40. But Martha was unco pernickity aboot mickle service, and comin doon till him, quo’ she, "Lord,
div ye no heed that my sister lea's me to sere' by my lane? Bid her that she help me!"

41. But Jesus answers and says to her, "Martha! Martha! ye are pet-till't, and fashed wi' a hantle o' things.

42. "But thar is as thing aye needit; 1 and Mary wailed oot the gude pairt, and it isna to be taen awa frae her!"

CHAPITIR ELEENEV.
The words o' prayer, and the spirit o'it.
It wasna the demons wha opposed him noo, but the Pharisene.

And it cam aboot, whan he was in a particular place, prayin, as he endit ane o' his disciples said to him, "Lord! tell us hoo to pray; s'en as John tell't his disciples!"

2. And he said to them, "Whan ye are prayin, say, 'Faither! hal-lowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom come!

3. "Oor needfu' bred gie to us day by day!

4. "And forgie us oor sins, as we oorself forgie ilk ane behauden to us! And bring-us-na intil temptation!"

5. And he said to them, "Wha amang ye sal hae a freend, and sal gang to him at mirk midnight, and sal say to him, 'Freend! lat me hae three bannocks!

6. "For a freend o' mine has come to me on his way, and I hae nocht to set afore him."

7. "And he in-by sal say, 'Fash-me-na! the door has been steekit, and my weans are a' wi' me i' the bed; and I canna rise to gie ye!'

8. "I say to ye. E'en though he winna rise and gie him for that he is a freend o' his—for his fashousness he wull rise and gie him as mony as he needs!

9. "And I say t'ye, Ask ye, and it sal be dune to ye: seek ye, and ye sal hae: knock ye, and it sal be un-steekit for ye!

10. "For ilk a ane that asks oentees; and he that seeks, fin's; and to him that chaps, it sal be unsteekit.

11. "And whan na faither is amang ye, whan his son sal ask for a bannock, that wad gie him a stane? or for a fish, wha wad gie him a viper?

12. "Or, gin he sould ask for an egg, wha wad gie him a scorpion?"

13. "Gif, than, bein sinfu' to begin wi' ye ken hoo to be glean gude gifts to yere bairns, hoo muckle mair wull yere Faither wha is in Heeven gie the Holie Spirit to thae that ask him?"

14. And he was castin oot a demon; and it was a dumb ane. And it cam aboot that whan the demon was gane oot, the dumb spak; and a' the folk ferlied.

15. But a wheen o' them said, "'Tis by Beelzebul, the prince o' the demons, casts he oot demons!"

16. And ither o' them tempit him, seekin a ferlie frae Aboon.

17. But he, kennin their thocht, said to them, "Ilka kingdom set again ilter, is made waste; and a hoose set again a hoose, fa's.

18. "And gif Sautan is set up again his sel, hoo may his kingdom staun? for that ye are a' 2 sayin that I, in Beelzebul, cast oot demons.

19. "But gif I, in Beelzebul, am castin oot the demons, in whom are yere ain sons castin them oot? Sae sal they be yere doomsters.

20. "But gif wi' the finger o' God, I am castin oot the demons, than, incontinent, has the Kingdom o' God come upon ye!

1 V. 42. A clean heart is no to be trokit awa for a clean hoose; and Marthas, airlins, was in danger o't. Mary keepit the world's cares at airm's length; they warna her maister.

2 V. 15. They had been mutterin this aboot Beelzebul: but he kent their thocht, and brang them to the licht.
LUKE, XI.

The sterk and the sterkane ane.

21. "Whansae'er a sterk ane, ready for war, has ward ower his ain dwallin, his gear is safe.

22. "But whansae'er a sterk ane than his sel comes on him, and overcomes him, he taks awa his graithin on whilk he lippened, and divides his booty.

23. "He wha isna wi' me is again me; and he wha gaithers-na wi' me skails a-breed.

24. "At whatna time the foul spirit gangs oot o' a man, it gangs throwe drouthie pairts, lookin for rest. But, no obsteen, it says 'Ise e'en gae back to my hoose I left!'

25. "And sae comin, it fin's the hoose soopit oot and buskit braw.

26. "Than it gangs, and taks wi' itsel seeven mair spirits viler nor itsel; and gangin in, takes up its abode that; and the hinner-end o' that man is waurnor the beginnin!" 1

27. And it cam aboot while he was speakin thir things, a particular wumman, speakin up amang the thrang, cries to him, "Fair fa' the womb that burre thee, and the breists that thou did draw!"

28. But he said, "Aye, raither, 'Weel wi' thae that hear God's word, and nourice it!''

29. And, as the multitudes thrang thegither, he begude to say, "This race is an ill race; aye seekin a token; and nae token sal it hae, but the token o' Jonah.

30. "For as Jonah became a token to the folk o' a' Nineveh, sae sae the Son o' Man be to this generation!

31. "The Queen o' the Sooth sal rise up i' the judgment wi' the men o' this generation, and sal rebuke them; for she cam frae far-a-wa ends o' the yirth to hear Solomon's wisdom; and lo! mair nor Solomon is here!

32. "The folk o' Nineveh wull rise up i' the Judgment wi' this generation, and wull rebuke it; for they repentit at the warnin o' Jonah; and lo! mair nor Jonah is here!

33. "Nae man, lichtin a crusie, pits it anearth a cover, nor yet anearth a dish; but on the lamp-stead, that thae comin in may see the licht.

34. "The lamp o' the body is the ee; whan then yer ee is aseafuld, the hail body is in the licht: but whene'er it is evil, yere body is become mirk.

35. "Tak tent, thar-for, that the licht within ye be-na mirkness!

36. "Gif, than, yere hail body is lichtit up, wi' nae pairt mirk, a' sal be lichtit up, as when the lamp in its glintin is gian ye licht!"

37. Noo, whan he was dune speakin, a Pharissee gae him a bode to sit doon wi' him to denner. And, gangin in, he sat doon.

38. And the Pharissee, lookin on, feriled that he had-na first purify't his sel afore the denner.

39. But the Lord said to him, "Noo, ye Pharisees purify the oot-side o' the cup and the dish; but yere inner pairt is fu' o' extortion and sin.

40. "Silly anes! didna he wha made the ooter pairt, mak the inner as weil?"

41. "Gie noo yere substance as awmous; and a' things are pure t'ye.

42. "But wae for ye, Pharisees! for ye pit mint, and rue, and ilk gairden yerb under the tithe; and gang-by true judgment and the love o' God. Thir things, hoobeit, it was needfu' to do; no to be gaun-by thae!

43. "Wae for ye, Pharisees! for
that ye glaum at the heid-places i' the kirks, and compliments i' the merkits.

44. "Wae' for ye! for ye are like the hidlin tombe: e'en the men wha walk ower them are-na 'ware o' them!"

45. And aye o' the Writers, answerin', says to him, "Us, too, div ye lichtlie!"

46. And he said, "It is for you, as weel, ye Writers! for ye burden men wi' burdens ill to cairry; and ye, yersels, e'en wi' ae finger, touch-na the burdens!

47. "Wae for ye! for that ye bigg the monuments o' the prophets—and yere faithers slew them!

48. "Sae are ye witnesses; and are ayn wi' the deeds of yere faithers; for they slew, and 1'ye bigg!

49. "Than said the wisdom o' God, 'I wull send oot among them prophets and messengers; and some among them wull they slay, and some among them wull they persecute;'

50. "And sae sal a' the blude o' the prophets, shed frae the fundation o' the world, be socht oot again this generation.

51. "Frae the blude o' Abel to the blude o' Zechariah, he wha was destroy't atwixt the altar and the Hoose: yea, I say t'ye! it sal be socht oot frae this generation!

52. "Wae for ye, the Writers! for ye tak awa the key o' knowledge: ye gang-na in yersels, and ye keep back thae that wad gang in!"

53. And whan he gaed oot frae thar, the Writers and the Pharisees beguile desperately to beset him,

and to provoke him to speak aff' haun o' mony things:

54. Watchin' for him; seekein' to kep something oot' his mooth to accuse him wi'.

CHAPTIR TWAL'.

Fash-na mucklie about the body; it is but the clay-biggin we dwall in: but be ye wyes and cannie wi' the tenant in't, the saul!

AND at a time when the folk war that thiek thegither that they war trampin' ower ane anither, he begude to say to his disciples first—"Taik tent to yersels, and be ye 'ware o' the barm o' the Pharisees, whilk in sooth is pretence.

2. "But naething is happit ower, that sanna be uncover't—and hid awa, that sanna be brocht oot.

3. "For sic things as ye tell't i' the mirk, sal be heard i' the licht; and what to the secret hearin ye spak i' the chaumer, sal be cry't on the hoose-taps.

4. "But I say t'ye, my freends, be na fley't o' them wha kill the body, and efterhaun can dae nae unco thing.

5. "But I'se warn ye wham to dreid; ye soud dreid him wha can first kill, and than schute intill hell: aye, say I, him soud ye dreid!

6. "Are-na five sparrows sel't for twa bodles, in a 2 widdie? And no aane amang them but God keeps in mind!

7. "But the vera hairs o' yere heid are a' coontit. Be-na fear't; ye are better than a hantle o' sparrows!!

8. "And I say t'ye, Ilka aene that confesses me afore men, him wull the Son o' Man. too, own before the Angels o' God.

9. "But he that deny't me afore men, sal be clean disowned afore the Angels o' God.

10. "And ilka aene that says a word to wrang the Son o' Man, it sal

1 V. 48. It was nae wrang to bigg; but their sin was that they did effir the likeness o' their faithers: in a' things they war like them—e'en to the slayin o' God's messengers. And they thus testify't that they war bairns o' siclike faithers, and that they appruv't o' their deeds.

2 V. 6. Tatian's Diatessaron: "in a noose."
be forgi'en him; but to him wha speaks wickedly again the Holie Spirit, it sanna be forgi'en!

11. "But at sic times as they bring ye up afore the kirks, and the rulers, and the authorities, ye are na to be in a swither, as to what ye are to reply, nor what ye are to say.

12. "For the Holie Spirit sal shaw ye in that vera 'oor, what ye are to say."

13. And ane frae 'mang the folk spak to him, "Maister! bid my brither divide the heritage wi' me!"

14. But he said to him, "Man, wha made me a judge, or a portioner ower ye?"

15. And he said to them a', "Tak tent, and keep yersels frae being sellie; for a man's life disna bide in his haddin or his gair.

16. And he spak a parable to them, sayin, "A particular rich man's grunt' bure unco weel.

17. 'And he swither't within his sel, sayin, 'What maun I do? for I hae nae housin, whaur I may pit a' my craps."

18. "And he said, "I'll e'en do this: I'll throw doon the biggins o' my grange, and bigg lairger; and gaither in yonner a' my wheat, and the out come o' my grun',

19. 'And wull say to my saul, Saul, ye hae a hantle o' gude things lain b' for mony years to come! Tak yere ease, eat, drink, and be joyfu'!"

20. "But God says to him, 'Fule! on this vera nicht yere saul are they seekin frae ye! and what'sna things ye hae preap't, whase sal they be?'

21. "Sae wi' him that is layin-by gear for his sel, and isna rich to God."

22. And he says to his disciples, "Be na putten-to anent yere life—what ye may eat? nor yet for the body, what ye may be buskit wi'.

23. "For the life is mair than the meat; and the body than the cleedin.

24. "Think o' the craws—that they neither saw nor shear: for whilk thear is naither giral nor barn—and God feeds them! Are ye no a hantle better nor the fowis?"

25. "And wha amang ye, though he be e'er sae fain, could add to his measur as span?"

26. "Oft, than, ye canna do e'en a vera wee thing, why, anent the lave o' the things, soud ye be putten-till't?"

27. "Tent ye weel the lilies, hoo they spring: they naither toil nor spin; and yet I say t'ye, No e'en Solomon, i' the height o' his glorie, was brawlie buskit like aen o' thae!"

28. "Noo, gin the foggage (whilk grows the day i' the park, and is cuisten intil the oven the morn), God sae brawlie busks, hoo mickle mair you, ye o' ama' faith?"

29. "And be-na ye aye seekin eftir what ye are to eat, and what ye are to drink; naither staun in a swither.

30. "For eftir a' thae things the nations o' the world das seek; but yere Faither kens ye need hae thae things.

31. "But be ye seekin his Kingdom; and thir things sal be gien ower and aboon to ye.

32. "Be-na fear't, ye wee hirsel, mickle lov'd! for weel-pleased was yere Faither to gift ye the Kingdom.

33. "Sell yere plenisbin, and gie awmous: mak to ye wallets that dinna wax auld; gear nevir-failin aboon! whaur nae reiver comes nar, nor moth dis destroy!"

34. "For yer heart will be whaur yere best gear is!"

35. "Lat yere loins be girt, and yere crusties lowin.

36. "And yersels like servants lookin for their Maister, when he comes frae the bridal; that whan he
comes and tirls, straucht they may open to him.

37. "Weel fa' thae servants wham the Maister, whan he comes hame, sal fin' watchin'! Truly say I t'ye, he wull gird his sel, and gar them set-to, and comin nigh, sal ser' them.

38. "And gif aiblins he comes i' the second watch, or gif he comes i' the third watch, and fin' it sae, weel-
fa' thae servants!

39. "But tak ye weel tent o' this: Did the gudeman jalouse the 'oor the reiver wad come, he wad hae keepit watch, and no latten his hoose be howkit throwes.

40. "And ye too, be winnin ready! for in an 'oor ye're no thinkin o', the Son o' Man comes."

41. And Peter spak: "Lord: liv ye speak this parable to us, or to a' the folk?"

42. And the Lord says, "Wha than, is the true leal steward, the canny ane, whom his maister wull set owre his hame-servants, to gie them at due times the portion o' their meat?"

43. "Weel fa' that servant, wham his maister, gif he comes, sal fin' sae doin'!

44. "Truly say I t'ye, he wull set him owre a' that he has.

45. "But gin aiblins that servant soud say within his sel, 'My lord is lang i' the hame-comin!', and soud begin to clour the lads and the lasses, and to be eatin and drinkin, and makin his sel fou;"

46. "The lord o' that servant wull come hame in a day he looks-na for him, and in an 'oor when he isna takin tent; and wull out him sindy, and wull gie him his pairt wi' the fause anes!

47. "And the servant wha cam to ken his lord's wull, and naither gat his sel ready, nor wrocht oot his wull, sal be sair cloured.

48. "But he that didna come to ken, and did deeds ca' in for stripes, sal hae the sma' punishment. And

ilka ane that gat muckle, sal hae muckle required o' him; and frae him wha had muckle committit to him, wull they seek the mair.

49. "I am come to cast oot fire on the yirth; and what wull I, gin it be luntit e-noo?"

50. But a baptizin hae I to be baptizit's wi'; and hoo fain am I till the time it be a' endit!

51. "Think ye I cam to gie agreement on the yirth? Na, I tell ye; rather division!"

52. "For, frae this oot, thar sal be fyve i' a' hoose, dividit; thrie again the twa, and twa again the thrie.

53. "Faither sal be dividit again son, and son again faither; mither again dochter, and dochter again mither; gude-mither again gude-
dochter, and gude-dochter again gude-
mither."

54. And he said too, to a' the folk, "Whan ye see a clud come up frae the wast, draucht ye say, 'A rain is comin!'; and sae it comes aboot.

55. "And whan a sooth win' is blawin, ye are sayin', 'A het day wull there be!', and it is sae.

56. "Ye fause-anes! ye can scan the face a' the yirth and the scuam o' the sky; but hoo is it ye ken-na to jalouse this time?"

57. "And why, e'en frae amang yersels, judge-ye-na o' the richt?"

58. "For, as ye are gaun quately wi' yere adversary to the Judge, tak pains, on the road, to be deliver't frae him; sae that he harl-ye-na to the Judge, and the Judge gie ye ower tae the officer, and the officer hae ye cuisten until the prison.

59. "I tell ye, in naagate sal ye come oot frae yon, till the hinmaist plack ye hae paid!"

CHAPITIR THIRTEEN.

The Jews war unco siccar aboot the Sabbath: but they wad-na enter Christ's door: and they ken-na God was whethin his sword to desirce them.

AND thar war some thar, at yon time, tellin him o' the men o'
Galilee, whose blude Pilate had minglit wi’ their sacrificees.

2. And answerin, quoth he to them, “Think ye that these men o’ Galilee bude be sinners aboon the lave o’ Galilee, for that they dreid thir things?

3. “Na, I tell ye! but gin ye repent-na, in siclike mannya sal ye be destroy’t.

4. “Or, thae aughteen, the toor’ i’ Siloam fell on, and killed them—think ye they war ill-deede aines aboon a’ the men i’ Jerusalem?

5. “Na, I tell ye: but gin ye repent-na, in siclike mannya sal ye be destroy’t.”

6. And he spak this parable: “A particular man had a fig-tree plantit i’ his vine-yard; and he cam, lookin for frute on’t, and naething faund.

7. “Than he said to his vine-dresser, ‘Look! for thrie year hae I come, seekin for frute on this fig-tree, yet find I nane: lat it be cuttit doon! Why soud it tak up the grun’?’

8. “But he answerin, says till him, ‘Maister! lat it bide this ae year mair, till whatna time I can delve aboot it, and dung it.

9. ‘And gin it bear frute thereafter, weel; gif it disna, ye sal hae it cuttit-doone!’

10. And he was teachin in ane o’ the kirks, on the Sabbath-day.

11. And see! a wumman, haein a spirit o’ fecklessness, aughteen year; and she was cruppen-the gither, and coudna in onygate lift up hersel.

12. And seein, Jesus spak oot, and said to her, “Wumman! ye are lowsed frae yer fecklessness!”

13. And he laid his hauns on her;

and at ane she was strauchtit; and gied praesies to God.

14. But the kirk-ruler answerin (being angry that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath-day), said to the thrang, “There are sax days to work in; on them, than, come for healin, but no on the Sabbath-day!”

15. But the Lord answer’t him, and said, “Ye pretenders! disna ilk ane o’ ye louse his ox or his ass frae the tether on the Sabbath day, and lead it awa to drink?

16. “And soudna this wumman—she a dochter o’ Abra’m, bund o’ Sautan thir aughteen year—be lowsed frae this fetter on the Sabbath-day?”

17. And whan he was sauyin thir things, a’ wha war settin their sels again him were shamed, and a’ the folk rejoiced ower the glorious warke dune by him.

18. And sae he said, “Like to what is the Kingdom o’ God? and to what may I even it?

19. “It is like to a seed o’ the mustard, that a man took, and cuist intil his gairden; and it grew, and cam to be a great tree, and the burdies o’ the air beildit in its branches.”

20. And than too, he said, “To what sal I even the Kingdom o’ God?

21. “It is like the risin-dough a wumman took, and pat awa in thrie firlots o’ meal, till what time the hail o’t was risen.”

22. And he was gaun on his way, throwe citie by citie, and village by village, teachin and journeynin on to Jerusalem.

23. And ane says to him, “Lord! are thar but a wheen that wull be saved?”

24. But he said to him, “Be ye warl in to win in at the stret ye! for mony, I say t’ye, wull faint be gaun in, and winna be able.

25. “Frae the time the gudem an may rise and steek the door—and ye begin to staun withoot, and to chap at the door, cryin, ‘Lord! open ye
to us!’ and, answerin, he sal say, ‘I ken ye na, nor whaur ye are frae!’

26. “Thawull ye begin to say, ‘We did eat and drink afore ye; and on oor causeys did ye teach!’

27. “And he wull say, ‘I tell ye, I ken-na whaur ye are frae! depairt frae me a’ ye doers o’ unrighteousness!’

28. “Thar sal be maenin and girnin, whan ye see Abra’m and Isaac, and Jacob, and a’ the prophets, i’ the Kingdom o’ God, and ye yersels cuisten oot!

29. “Whan they sal hae come frae the east and frae the west, and frae the north and the sooth; and sit doon i’ the Kingdom o’ God!

30. “And tent ye! some are hinhaist that sal be foremost; and some are foremost that sal be hinhaist.

31. On that same day, Pharisees cam to him, sayin, “Gae-wa’, and journey on! for Herod wad fain kill ye!’

32. And he said to them, “Gang ye and tell that tod, ‘Mark ye! I cast oot demons, and mak an end o’ healins, the day and the morn; and the third day I’se be made perfete!’

33. “But I maun needs, the day, and the morn, and the day efter, be gaun on; for it bude-na be that a Prophet suffer but in Jerusalem!

34. “O Jerusalem! Jerusalem! that slays the prophets, and stanes them that are sent to thee! hoo aft hae I been fain to gaither in th Bairns, like as a hen her cleekin under her wings—and ye wadna!

35. “Behauld: yere hoose is yet left t’ye! But I say, ye canna see me till it is come aboot that ye say, ‘Blessed is he that comes i’ the name o’ the Lord!’”

CHAPTER FOURTEEN.

The great supper. Tak tent tae their excuses! Wha may follow the Maister?

A nd it cam aboot, whan he gaed intil the hoose o’ ane o’ the heid anes amang the Pharisees, on a Sabbath, to eat breid, that they war unco gleg watchin him.

2. And look! that was a particular man afore him, and he was dropsical.

3. And, answerin, Jesus spak to the Writers and the Pharisees, sayin, “Is it lawfu’, on the Sabbath, to heal, or no?” But they spak-na.

4. And takin hand o’ him, he heal’t him, and sent him awa:

5. And said to them, “Wha amang ye, haein a son, or een a stirk, faun intil a sheugh, wadna at ance pu’ him oot on the Sabbath day?”

6. And they warna able to answer him anent thir things.

7. And he spak a parable to the guests, markin hoow they war walin oot the reserved seats, sayin to them,

8. “Whansoever ye may be bidden by ony ane to a bridal, tak ye no up the bonniest place, laste ane better than ye hae been bidden by him.

9. “And he that bad ye and him, soud come and say, ‘Gie place to this ane!’ and than sal ye, wi’ shame, gang to tak up a laighter place.

10. “But whan ye are bidden, gang far’er on, and tak up the laighter place; that whan he that bad ye comes, he sal say to ye, ‘Freind! come ye up heigher!’ Than sal ye hae honor afore a’ wha are sittin w’ye.

11. “For, ilk ane that exalts his sel sal be brocht doon, and wha humbles his sel sal be exaltit.”

12. And he said too, to him wha bad him, “Whene’er ye mak a denner or a supper, bid-na yere freinds, nor yere brethren, nor yere kin, nor yere rich neebors; lcat they in turn bid you, and yere recompense come t’ye.

13. “But whan ye mak an entertainment, bring in the destitute, the silly anes, the lameters, and the blin’.

---

LUKE, XIV.

14. "And happy sal be yere fa', that they canna recompense ye; for ye'se hae yere recompense at the risin-again o' the just!"

15. And ane o' thae sittin wi' him, hearin thir things, said, "Weel fa' him that eats bried i' the Kingdom o' God!"

16. And he said to him, "A particular man was makin a great supper, and had bidden a hantle o' folk.

17. "And he sent oot his gillie, at the 'oor o' the supper, to say to them that had a bode, 'Come ye noo! for a' things are ready!'

18. "And they begude, ane and anither, to mak excuses: the first ane said, 'I hae coft a field, and need to gang oot and see it; I desire ye wad haud me excused.'

19. "And anither said, 'I hae coft fyve yoke o' owsen, and am just gaun to try them; I desire ye wad haud me excused.'

20. "And anither said, 'I hae mairry't a wife, and sae I canna come.'

21. 'Sae, returnin, the gillie tell't to his lord thir things. Than, bein vexed, the gudeman said to his gillie, 'Haste ye oot intil the throwe-gangis and closes o' the citie, and bring in the gangrels, and the silly, the blin' and the lameters!'

22. "And the gillie said, 'My lord! it has a' been dune as ye order't; and still there is room!'

23. "And the lord said to the gillie, 'Gang oot amang the roads and hedges, and gar them come, that my hose may be fu!'

24. "'For I say t'ye, No ane o' thae men wha hae a bode sal pree my supper!"

25. And thar war gaun wi' him an unco thrang o' folk; and, turnin, quo' he to them,

26. "Gin ony ane is for comin to me, and hates-na his faither and mither, and wife and weans, and brithers and sisters—a ye, and his ain life as weel—he canna become my disciple!

27. "And whasee carriess-na his ain cross, as he comes aifter me, canna be my disciple.

28. "For whatna man amang ye, ettin to bigg a toover, sita-na doon first to reckon the cost? gin aiblins he has eneuch to finish it?

29. "Least ane, aifter layin the fundation, and no bein able to finish it, a' wha see'st begin to jeer him,

30. "Sayin, 'This begude to bigg, and wasna able to finish!'

31. "Or whatna king, mairchin to meet anither king in battle, diana sit doon first and seek advice, whether he be able wi' his ten-thousands to meet him wha comes again wi' his twenty-thousands?

32. "And gin it canna be dune, o'en while yet far-awa, he sends an embassy, and seeks terms o' peace.

33. "In like manner, than, ilk ane amang ye, wha isna biddin adieu to a' his ain gear, canna be my disciple.

34. "Saut is gude; but gif aiblins the saut has turned waff and werash, what sal ye saut it wi'?

35. "It is neither fit for the field nor the midden; but it is cuisiten oot-by. Wha has hearin lat him hear!"

---

1 V. 18. It is easy seein what was boon-maist i' thir men's minds! And gin God hasna the first place i' the heart, He'll no tak the second! It is God in a', or God no ava'!

2 V. 24. We need-na doot Jesus gied his parables mony times ower. Why soud he no? Had we been followin him, ilka friend we forgather't wi' wad wuss to hear "Yon bonnie parable Jesus gied us a wheen days syne!" and we wad be craikin on him to gie them ower again! And whiles he wad pit in the sequel (Matt. xxii. 11), and whiles he wadna; just as it best suited the company he spak to. And Matthew wad pit it doon the way he likit it best; and Luke the way it was tell't to him. And wha's the "discrepancie?"
The lost sheep.

CHAPTIR FIFTEEN.
The sheep forwarde'r. The siller tint. The 
waastrel son comes hame. Tak ye tent o' 
the Lord's meeanin!

A ND thar war comin till him a' the 
tax men and the ill-deedie anes 
to hear him.

2. And baith the Writers and the 
Pharisees war yammerin at him, 
"This ane takes in ill-leevin folk, and 
eats meat wi' them!"

3. And he spak till them this par-
able, sayin,

4. "Whatna man amang ye, baein 
a hunner sheep, gin he tine ane frae 
among them, diena lea' the ninety-
and-nine i' the muirs, and gang awa 
aftir the forwarde'r ane, till he lichts 
on it?

5. "And, fa' in wi' t', he heizes it 
on his shouther, rejoincin;

6. "And, comin hame, he sen's for 
his freends and neebors; sayin to 
them, 'Be blythe wi' me! for I hae 
fun my sheep! the ane that forwar-
der'!

7. "I say t'ye, that in siclike sal 
than be joy in heeven ower ae sinner 
repentin, mair nor ower ninety-and-
nine gude o' the folk who needit nae 
repentance.

8. "Or whatna wumman, baein 
ten siller-pennies, gin aiblins she tine 
ane o' them, diena licht a crusie, and 
soop her hoose, and seek wi' tentie 
care, till whatna time she lichts on 
it?

9. "And, lichtin on't, she brings 
theither her freends and neebors, 
sayin, 'Be ye glad wi' me! for I fund 
The siller-penny I tint!'

10. "E'en sae, I say t'ye, sal thar 
be joy amang the Angels o' God 
ower ae sinner repentin."

11. He said, forby, "A particular 
man had twa sons;

12. "And the young son said till 
his father, 'Father! gie me my 
portion that wad fa' to me o' a' the 
gear!' And he portioned oot till 
them his leevin.

13. "And, a wheen days efter, the 
young son gaither't a' his gear the-
gither, and gaed awa frae hame till a 
far-awa lan'; and thar sperfit his 
gear in riotousness.

14. "But mair: when a' was gane 
thar cam up an awesome famine oot-
throwe yon lan'; and he begude to 
bé wantin.

15. "And he gaed awa, and was 
sornin on ane o' the men o' that lan': 
and he sent him oot-by to herd 
swine.

16. "And he fain wad fill't his sel 
wi' the bools the swine war satin; 
and nae ane gied them till him.

17. "But, comin till his richt 
min', quo' he, 'Hoo mony are the 
fee'd servants o' my father, wha hae 
rowth o' breid, and an over-come; 
while I, here, dee o' hung'er!

18. "'I will rise and gang tae my 
father, and wull say till him, My 
father! I hae dune wrang, again 
Heeven, and afore you;

19. "'Nae mair am I fit to be ca'd 
yere son; mak me like till ane o' the 
fee'd servants!' And, sae risin, he 
cam awa till his father.

20. "But, while he was yet haudin 
far-awa, his faither spy't him, and 
was fu' o' compassion; and rinnin, 
he fell on his neck, and begude 
missin him.

21. "And the son said till him, 
'My father! I did wrang again 
Heeven, and afore you: I am nae 
mair wordie to be ca'd yere son!'

22. "But the faither said to the 
serveants, 'Waste nae time! bring 
oot a robe—the first and best ane— 
and pit it on him; and gie a ring for 
his fing'er, and shoon for his feet;
23. "'And bring oot the stall'd cauf, and 1 kill it; that we may eat and be joyfu'!
24. "'For he my son, was deid, and cam to life again; he had been tint, and is fund again!' And they begude to be joyfu'.
25. "'But his auld brither was i' the field: and, as he cam in, he drew nar the house, and heard music and dancin.
26. "'And, beckonin till him ane o' the fee'd folk, he speir't what aiblins a' this might mean?'
27. "'And he said till him, 'Yere brither has come back again; and yere faither has kill't the stall'd cauf, for that he gat him hame again a' safe and sound.'
28. "'But be was fu' o' ang' er, and wadna gang in. His faither, tho', cam oot, and was entertainin him.
29. "'But he, answerin him, said till his faither, 'See! a' thir years hae I ser't ye; and never did I gang ayont yere commauns; and at nae time did-ye gie me e'en a kid, that I micht mak a feast for my freinds;'
30. "'But whane'er this yere son, wha has devoir' yere leevin wi' harlots, cam, ye killed the stall'd cauf!'
31. "'But he said till him, 'Bairn! thou art aye wi' me! and a' that is mine is thine!'
32. "'But it was richt we soud mak merry and rejoice; for he, thy brither, was deid, and cam back to life again; he had been tint, and was fund!'"

CHAPTR SAXEEN.
The pawkie griev. The rich man wha gat nocht, and the beggar wha gat a'!

1 V. 23. We may well believe that the cauf was fed i' the stall, to be ready for a sacrafecce. Tregelles, has it "sacrafecce," in v. 23 and 30. But whan a occasion o' sacrafecce coud marrow that o' gettin back his locht son 1

wha had a griev; and he was wytit wi' wastin his haddin.
2. "And hein him afore him, he said, 'Whatna clash aboot ye is this I hear! Gie in yere reckonin as griev; for ye'se be griev nae mair!'
3. "But the griev said till his sel, 'My lord tak's awa my office frae me: what sal I do? I am na fit to delve; I wad be shamm'd to beg!'
4. "'I ken what I wull do! sae that when I am putten-oot o' the griev's place, they may tak me into their hooses!'
5. "'And sae, biddin ilka ane o' his lord's debtors to come till him, he speirs at the first, 'Hoo muckle are ye awn to my lord?'
6. "'And he says, 'A hunner coogs o' ulyjie.' He says to him, 'Tak yere bill, and sit doon, and haste to mak it fitty!'
7. "'And he said to the neist ane, 'Hoo muckle are ye awn to my lord?' And he said, 'A hunner bows o' wheat.' He says to him 'Tak yere accounts, and write auchyty!'
8. "'And his lord commendit the fause griev for doin wysssie; for the bairns o' the world are, in their ain generation, wysser than the bairns o' the licht!
9. "'And I say t'ye, Mak to yersels frends o' unrichtous gear; that whansae'er it may fail ye, they sal tak ye in till everlastin bidin-places!
10. "'Ane faithfu' and leaf i' the least, is faithfu' in mickle!"
11. "'Gif, than, ye are-na faithfu' in unrichtous gear, who wad gie intil yere keepin the true riches.
12. "'And gif ye be-na faithfu' in what is anither's, wha sal gie you yere ain?'
13. "'Nae servant can be in service tae twa maisters; for aither the ane

2 V. 8. His maister miicht admire his skill and frankness, while detestin his dishonesty. The time and thocht that's wared on wickedness wad gang far to bless the world!
he hates, and the tither be lo'es; or to the one he wull hald, and lichtlie the tither: ye canna be in service baith to God and Mammon!"

14. Noo the Pharisees, wha war lovers o' gear, hearin thir things, geck't at him.

15. And he said to them, "Ye are thae wha pit their sels richt afore men, but God takes tent o' yere hearts; for the lofty amang men is an abomination in God's sicht.

16. "The Law and the Prophets war till John cam; frae that time on the Kingdom o' God is madeplain, and a' men are thrangin intil't.

17. "But it sal snuer be that heeven and earth sal pass awa, than for ae haet o' the Law to fail!

18. "Ilka ane pittin awa his wife, and weddin anither, is committin adultery; and wha weds a wumman putten-awa frae her husband, commits adultery.

19. "A particular man was rich, and cleedit his sel wi' purple and fine linen, and enjoy'd his sel uncolie, ilka day.

20. "And a particular beggar-man, ca'd Lazarus, was sitten doon by his yetts, fu' o' sairs.

21. "And he was sair wussin he micht eat the mools that fell frae the rich man's buird; aye! e'en the dowgs cam and licker his sairs.

22. "Noo, it cam aboot that the beggar-man dee'st, and was carry't awa by the Angels, and laid in Abra'm's bosom. And forby, the rich man, too, dee't and was bury't.

23. "And in hell he raised his een, bein noo in torments, and sees Abra'm far awa, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24. "And he, cryin oot, said 'Faither Abra'm! hae mercie on me, and send ye Lazarus, sae as he may pit the tip o' his fing'er in watir, and cule my tongue; for I am in anguish in this lowe!'

25. "But Abra'm said, 'Bairn! ca' ye to min' that ye gat a' yere gude things i' yere lifetime; and Lazarus the ill things: and noo he is at rest, and ye are in sair pyne.

26. "'And forby, atween us and ye an unco void has been set; that thae wha wad gang ower frae here to you, canna be able; nor thae frae you to us canna come ben!'

27. "Than he said, 'I entreat ye than, faither! that ye wad send him to my faither's hoose;'

28. "'For I hae fyve brethren; that he may bear testimonie to them, that they come-na intil this place o' dool!'

29. "Abra'm says till him, 'They hae Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them!'

30. "But he says, 'Na, faither Abra'm! but gin ane gaed to them frae the deid, they wull repent them!'

31. "But he said to him, 'Gif to Moses and the Prophets they tak nae tent, naither wull they be persuadit e'en by ane that raise frae the deid!'

CHAPITIR SEEVENTEEN.

Britherliness and humility. *Ane whose heart was made clean, as weel's his body! The Kingdom that's comin.*

AND he said to his disciples, "It maun e'en be that snares come; but wae for him throwe whom they come!

2. "Weel for him raither, gin a mill-stane war roond his neck, and he cuisten intil the sea, than that he soud ensare ane o' their weans!

3. "But tak ye tent to yersels! gin aiblins yere brither sins, rebuke him; and gin he repents, forgie him!

4. "And gin aiblins he sins again ye seeven times in a day, and seeven times turns to ye, sayin, 'I repent!' ye sal forgie him!"

5. And the Apostles said to the Lord, "Gie us mair faith!"

6. And the Lord said, "Gin ye had faith e'en as a grain o' the mustard seed, ye wad say to this syca-
more, 'Be ye liftit, and be plantit i' the deep!' and it soud obey ye.

7. "But wha o' ye wad ha' a servant pleughin or herdin sheep, and wull say to him as he comes in frae oot-by, 'Come awa, and dine!'

8. "But wull he no raither say to him, 'Mak ready, that I may dine; and gird yersel to wait on me till I eat and drink; and than sal ye eat and drink!'

9. "Dis he gie thanks to the servant, for that he did the things commandit?

10. "E'en sae, ye too, whan ye hae dune a' the things commandit ye, say, 'Unprofitable servants are we a', we hae but dune what it becam oor duty to do.'"

11. And it cam aboot, that whan he was gaun on toward Jerusalem, he passed on throwe the mids o' Samaria and Galilee.

12. And as he was enterin intil a particular village, ten leprous men met him; staunin far-awa;

13. And they cry't oot, sayin, "Jesus! Maister! hae pitie on us!"

14. And, lookin on them, he said, to them, "Gang yere ways, and schaw yersels to the priests!" And it cam aboot, that, as they war gaun on, they war made clean.

15. And ane o' them, whan he saw he was healed, cam back, wi' a lood voice giean glorie to God.

16. And he cuist his sel doon at his feet, giean thanks to him; and he was a Samaria man.

17. But Jesus answerin, said, "Warna a' the ten men made clean? but whaur are the nine?"

18. "Thar are na fund o' them returnin to gie glorie to God, save this frem'd ane!"

19. And he said to him, "Rise! and gang yere ways; yere faith has sav'd ye!"

20. And, bein speir't at by the Pharisrees as to whan God's Kingdom was comin, he answer't them and said, "God's Kingdom comes-na wi' close observin;

21. "Neither sal they say, 'Tak tent here!' or 'Tak tent thar!' for see! the Kingdom o' God is e'en amang ye.

22. But to his disciples he said, "The days wull come whan ye fain wad see ane-o' the days o' the Son o' Man, and sanna see!

23. "And to you they wull say, 'Look ye thar! Look here!' Gang ye na awa, nor pursuir eftir them.

24. "For like the fire-flaucht, whilk shines oot o' the as pairt under Heeven, to the ither pairt under Heeven, sae sal the Son o' Man be in his day!

25. "But first maun he dree mony things, and be rejeckit o' this generation.

26. "And e'en as it cam aboot in Noah's days, sae sal it e'en be i' the Son o' Man's days;

27. "They war feastin, they war drinkin, they war marryin, they war gien in mairriage; till the day Noah gaed intil the ark, and the flude cam and destroy't a'.

28. "And, siclike as it cam aboot in Lot's days; they war eatin, they war drinking, they war buyin, they war sellin; they war plantin, they war biggin;

29. "But on the day Lot gaed oot frae Sodom, it rained fire and brunstane frae the lift, and destroy't a'.

30. "E'en sae sal it be i' the day the Son o' Man is reveal't.

31. "I' that day, he wha is on the hoose-tap, and his plenishin i' the hoose—lat him no come doon to tak it awa; and he i' the field in siclike manner—lat him no turn aboot to the things ashint him!

32. "Mind ye Lot's wife!

33. "Whasae is fain to save his life sal tine it; and whasae sal tine his life sal hain it!
LUKE, XVIII.

The false judge.

34. "I tell ye, on yon nicht, twa
men sal be i' ae bed; ane sal be taen,
and the tither sal be left.

35. "Twa weemen sal be grindin
thegether; ane sal be taen, and the
tither left.

36. "Twa men sal be i' the field;
the ane sal be taen, and the tither
left!"

37. And they, answerin, say to
him, "Whaur, Lord?" And he says
to them, "Whaur the body is, the
eagles wull gaither thegither!"

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.
The false judge, and the cantin Pharisee.
The rich ruler wi' a sair want. The
blin' man o' Jericho.

AND he was speakin a parable to
them, as that men soud be aye
prayin, and never swarf.

2. Sayin, "A particular judge was
in a citie, wha cared-na for God, nor
had respect for man.

3. "An thar was a wee dowd i'
that citie; and she was aye comin
till him, cryin, 'Do me justice wi' my
adversary!'

4. "And he wadna for a time.
But aftir, he said to his sel, 'Tho' I
naither revere God, nor care for man,

5. "'Yet, for that this weeedow
dishes me, I wull do her justice; or
aiblins wi' her aye-comin she wull
wear me o'!''

6. And the Lord says, "Hear ye
what the false judge says!

7. "An sanna God still mair tak
the pair o' his ain, wha cry to him
day and nicht, and tho' he tholes 1
lang wi' them.

8. "I say t'ye, that he wull be gleg
do tham justice! Yet, when the
Son o' Man comes, wull he eftir a',
fin' this faith on the yirth?"

9. And he spak—anent some that
lippened to thair sels that they war

richtous, and lichtlied the lave—this
parable:

10. "Twa men gaed up intil the
Temple for prayer: the ane a Phari-
see, the tither a tax-man.

11. "The Pharisee, takin his staun,
prayed sae by his sel—'Lord! I
thank thee I am-na like the lave o'
men, extortioners, ill-deedie anes,
adulterers—or e'en as this tax-man!'

12. "'Twice in ilk week fast I;
I gie a tenth o' a' things I obteen!'

13. "But the tax-man, stauin far
yont, fear't to lift up sae mickle as
his een till Heeven, but strack his
breist, cryin, 'Lord! be mercifur
toward me, the sinner!'

14. "I tell ye, this ane gaed doon
till his hoose acceptit, raither than
that ane: for ilk ane that heizes up
his sel sal be humblit, but he that
louts his sel sal be raised up!"

15. And they war bringin till him
e'en the wee bairns, that he micht pit
his hauns on them: but his disciples,
seein', war challengin them.

16. And Jesus ca'd them nar, and
quo' he, "Latz the wee bairns come
to me, and hinner-them-na, for o' sic-
like is the Kingdom o' God!"

17. "Truly say I t'ye, Whasae
disana welcome the Kingdom o' God
as a bairn, enters in naegate intil!''

18. And ane speir't at him—a ruler
—sayin, "Gude Maister; by doin
what, may I hae life-eternal!''

19. And Jesus said to him, "Hoo
c'ye me Gude? Nane is Gude but
ane—God!

20. "The commauns ye ken, 'Ye
maunna commit adultery; ye maun-
na commit murder; Ye maunna
reive; Ye maunna bear fause-witness;
Honor yere faither and yere mither!'"

21. And he said, "'A' thir things
hae I dune frae my bairnheid!''

22. And, listenin to him, Jesus
said, "Ae thing, yet, dae ye want?
Sell ye a' things that ye hae, and
divide wi' the needy, and ye'ae hae
gude gear in Heeven! And come t'
follow ye me!"

1 V. 7. For that he is whiles lang in smitin
his face, his ain folk maunna think he is
slack in helpin his freends! tho' till oor
pair blin' e'en it whiles looks sae!
23. But he, hearin thir things, gaed awa dowie; for he was unco rich.

24. And Jesus, behauldin him, that he was unco dowie, said, "Wi' whatna strivin sal they that hae riches, enter intil God's Kingdom!

25. "For a camel suner coul gang throwe a needle's ee, than a rich man enter God's Kingdom!"

26. But they that heard it said, "Wha, than, can onywise be sav'd?"

27. And he said, "The things no possible wi' men are possible wi' God!"

28. And Peter spak: "Lo! we left a' and follow't thee!"

29. And he said to them, "Truly say I t'ye, Nae ane has left ahint hoose, or parents, or brithers, or wife, or weans, for sake o' the Kingdom o' God,

30. "Wha sanna win back to him mony-fauld mair i' this present time; and in the World that is comin, life for aye!"

31. And takin the Twal' aside by their sels, he said to them, "Tak' tent! we are gaun up till Jerusalem; and a' things wull come about that hae been putten-doone anent the Son o' Man."

32. "For he wull be gien up to the Gentiles, and be geck'd at, and insultit, and sputten on;

33. "And, first scourgin, they wull tak his life; and on the third day wull he rise."

34. And they didna comprehend ony o' thir things; and it was a' mirk to them: and they didna get to ken the things that war said.

35. And it cam about, that when he was comin nar till Jericho, a blin' man was putten-doone beside the road, beggin.

36. And hearin the trampin o' a great thrang gaun by, he speir't what aiblins a' this might be?

37. And they tell't him, "Jesus o' Nazareth passeth by!"

38. And he cry't oot, sayin,

39. And they that gaed afore flyted at him that he might be quate; but sae muckle the mair cry't he oot, "'Son o' Davud! hae pitie on me!"

40. Sae staunin still, Jesus order't him to be brocht forrit till him; and when he cam nar, he speir't at him,

41. Sayin, "What wast ye hae me to do for ye?" And he said, "Lord! that I may hae my sight!"

42. And Jesus said to him, "Win back yere sight! yere faith has saved ye!"

43. And at ance he gat his sight again; and follow't on, gian glorie to God; and a' the folk, seein't, praised God.

CHAPTER NINETEEN.

Zaccheus, unco rich afore, but unco richer noo! The punks to broke wi! The humble triumph, and the saut, saut tears!

AND enterin, he was gaun throwe Jericho.

2. And behauld! a man ca'd Zaccheus; and he was heid amang the tax-men; and had muckle gear.

3. And he was fain to see Jesus, wha he was? and he couldna for the thrang; for he was sma' in heich.

4. And he ran forrit, and speelt up intil a yecmomee tree, that he might see him; for he was comin that gate.

5. And whan he cam to the place, Jesus lookit up, and says to him, "Zaccheus! haste ye, and come awa doon; for I maun bide at yere hoose the day!"

6. And he hastit doon, and enter-teen'd him wi' unco joy.

7. And a' saw it; and they war mutterin, sayin, "He has gane wi' a sinner to bide!"

1 V. 39. The beggar kent he was Dauvid's Son! The Writers pretendit they didna ken! Ignorance itzel is no sae blin' as dourness!
8. But, staunin afore him, Zaccheus said, “Lord! I gie the hauf o' my gear to the pur; and gin frae ony ane I hae taen by fause dealin, I gie him back fowr-fauld!”

9. And Jesus says to him, “Salvation has come to this hous the day! forasmuckle as he too is a bairn o’ Abra’am!

10. “For the Son o’ Man cam to seek oot and save the anes that war forwander’t.”

11. And whilst they war listenin to thir things, he addit and spak a parable, forasmuckle as they war nar Jerusalem, and they expeckit the Kingdom o’ God was at ane to shine oot.

12. He said thar-for, “A particular nobleman gaed aff till a far-awa land, to obtain for his sel the poore o’ a king, and to return.

13. “And ca’in thegither ten servants o’ his ain, he gied till them ten pundis, and said to them, ‘Cairry on business till I come back!’

14. “But the burgesses hattit him, and sent an embassage eftir him, sayin, ‘We winna hae this ane to reign ower us!’

15. “And it cam aboot, that when he was back again, eftir receivin the kingly poore, he commandit thes servants to be ca’d, to whom he had gien the siller, that he micht tak tent o’ the trokin they hae dune.

16. “And the first cam sayin, ‘Lord! yere pund has gained ten pundis!’

17. “And he said to him, ‘Weel dune, gude servant! ye hae been leal in a sma’ matter; hae ye rule ower ten cities!’

18. “And the second cam, sayin, ‘Lord! yere pund has become fyve pundis!’

19. “And he said to him, as weel, ‘Hae ye rule ower fyve cities!’

20. “And the ither ane cam, and quo’ he, ‘Lord! tak tent o’ yere pund, what I hae keepit, lyin-by in a naipkin.

21. “‘For I was sleit o’ ye, for that ye are an exactin man; ye tak up whaur ye pat-na-dooin; and shear whaur ye dinna saw.’

22. “He says to him, ‘Oot o’ yere ain mou’ wull I judge ye; ill servant! Ye ken I was an exactin man, takin-up whaur I pat-na-dooin, and shearin whaur I didna saw!—

23. “And why gied-ye-na my siller to the trokers o’siller; that at my comin I cu’d hae demandit my ain, wi’ interest?’

24. “Than said he to them staunin by, ‘Tak awa the pund frae him, and gie till him that has the ten pundis!’

25. (And they say to him, “Lord! he has ten pundis!”)

26. “For I say t’ye, till ilk ane that has, sal be gien; but frae him wha hasna, e’en what he has sal be taen frae him.

27. “But they, my faes, wha wadna hae me to be made King ower them, feesh ye here, and slay them afore me!’

28. And when he had said thir things, he gaed on afore, gaun up to Jerusalem.

29. And it cam aboot, as he cam nar to Bethphage and Bethanie, to the mountain ca’d “The Mount o’ Olives,” he sent oot twa o’ his disciples,

30. Sayin, “Gang yere ways, to the clachan fornen ye; and as ye are enterin, ye sal fin’ a cowt tied, whauron nae man e’er sat; louse him and bring him.

31. “And, gin ony ane quaisten ye, ‘Why are ye lousin?’ ye sal say to him, ‘The Lord has need o’ him.’

32. And gaun their ways, they that war sent faund e’en as he tell’t them.
33. And as they war lowsin the cowt, his maister said to them, "Why lowse ye the cowt?"
34. And they said, "For that the Lord has need o' him!"
35. And they brocht him to Jesus; and, castin their mantees on the cowt, they sat Jesus thar-on.
36. And as he gaed on, they spread their mantees i' the way.
37. And as he was drawin nar, and was come intil the doon-gaun o' the Mount o' Olives, the hail multitude o' the disciples begude joyfully to praise God wi' a lood voice, for a' the great warks they had seen:
38. Sayin, "Blessed is the comin King, i' the name o' the Lord! In Heeven peace; and glorie i' the heighest height!"
39. And a wheen Pharisees oot o' the multitude said to him, "Maister! rebuke thy disciples!"
40. And answerin', quo' he to them, "I say t'ye, that gin aiblins thir be silent, the vera stanes wad cry oot!"
41. And when he drew nar, he lookit at the citie, and was greetin ower it, sayin,
42. "Had thou but ta'en tent, e'en thou, in this thy day, o' the things that are for thy peace! but e'noo they are hid frae thy e'en!"
43. "For the days wull come upon thee, that thy faes sall bigg bulwarks roond thee, and steek thee in, and rink thee roon on ilk a side;"
44. "And wull ding thee doon to the grun', and thy bairns within thee; for that thou wadna tak tent o' the time o' thy visitation!"
45. And, gaun intil the Temple, he begude to cast oot thae that trokit in't.
46. Sayin tae them, "It is puttondooon, 'My Hoose sall be a hoose o' prayer'; but ye mak it a howff o' ruivers!"
47. And he was teachin ilk a day i' the Temple: but the Heid-priests, and the Writers, and the heids o' the nation, socht to destroy him;
48. And coudna mak oot what they micht do; for the thrang, ane-and-a', war hegin on him, listenin.

CHAPTER TWENTY.
The ill-deedie gairdeners. "Whase wife is she?" Davi'd bent weel wha Christ was!

AND it cam aboot, on ane o' thae days, when he was giean leer to the folk i' the Temple, and tellin them the Gude-tidins, the Heid-priests, and the Writers, wi' their Elders, cam on him,
2. And quo' they to him, "Tell us whatna authoritie ye hae for thir things ye do; and wha is he that gied ye this authoritie?"
3. But he answ'er't them, "I too wull speir at you anent a thing; and tell me—
4. "The Bapteezin o' John, 1 was it frae Heeven or o' men?"
5. But they coonsell't thegither by their sels, and said, "Gin we sal say 'Frae Heeven,' he wull answer, 'Why believed-ye-na in him?'
6. "And gin aiblins we soud say, 'Frae men,' the folk ane-an-a' wull stane us to deid; for they are a persuadit that John was a Prophet."
7. And they answ'er't that they coudna tell whence he was.
8. And Jesus said to them, "Nae mair div I tell you by whatna authoritie I do thir things I am doin."
9. And he begude to speak to the folk this parable: "Thar was a man who plantit a vine-yaird, and gied some gairdeners the tack o'it, and syne gaed his ways frae hame for a lang time.
10. "And at the season he sent to the gairdeners a servant, that they soud gie to him of the frute o' the vine-yaird. But the gairdeners sent him awa wi' naething.

1 4. See Mark xi. 28—Note.
11. "And aftir, he sent another servant, but him too—clourin and ill-treatin—they sent awa wi' naething.
12. "And he persistit, and sent a third; but they, clourin this ane as weel, cuist him oot.
13. "And the laird o' the vine-yard said, 'What sal I do? I wull send my son, my beloved ane; aiblins they wull honor him.'
14. "But when they saw him, the gairdeners consell't ane wi' anither, sayin', 'Here is the heir! let us slay him, sae that the heritage may become oor ain!'
15. "And, castin him oot o' the vine-yard, they slew him! And what, noo, sal the laird o' the vine-yard do to them?
16. "He wull come, and mak an end o' thae gairdeners; and wull gie the vine-yard to ither's!" But when they heard it, they cryt, "Lat it no sae be!"
17. But he, lookin hard at them, said, "What, than, may this be that is putten-doone—'The stane rejeckit o' the builders, the same is made to be the copin o' the corner!'
18. "Ilka ane that fa's on that stane sal be sair clour'd; but on wham-sae'er it may fa', it will mak a clean end o' him!"
19. And the Writers and Heid-priests said fain hae grippit him in that vera 'oor; but they war fley't o' the people; for they saw he had spoken this parable again them.
20. And, watchin uncolie, they sent oot fause men, wha soud pretend to be just, that they micht tak haud o' his speech, sae as to deliver him up to the poer and authoritie o' the Governor.
21. And they speir't at him, "Maister! we a' ken ye speak and teach richtly, and accept nae man's face, but teach the way o' God truly.
22. "Is't richt for us to pay mail to Cesar, or no?"
23. But, kennin their guile, he said to them,
24. "Schaw me a siller penny! Whase heid and inscription has it?" And they answerin, said, "Cesar's."
25. And he said to them, "Weel, than! gie Cesar Cesar's things, and to God gie God's things!"
26. And they coudna lay haud ony sayin' o' his to the people; sae they ferlaid at his answer, and said nocht.
27. And thar cam to him a wheen o' the Sadducees, wha say thar is nae Risin-again; and they speir't at him, sayin',
28. "Maister! Moses pat doon for us: Gin aiblins a man's brother soud dee, baein a wife, and he be bairnless, that his brother soud tak the wife, and raise up seed to his brother."
29. "Noo, thar war seveen brethren; and the first, takin a wife, dee't bairnless.
30. "And the second; and he dee't bairnless.
31. "And the third had her; and, i' the same way the seveen—they left nae bairn, and dee't.
32. "And aftir, the wumman too dee't.
33. "And sae, i' the Risin-again, whase wife o' them sal she be? For the seven had her a wife."
34. And Jesus said to them, "The bairns o' this world mairry, and are gien in mairriage;
35. "But they that are coontit wordie that world to obteen, and the Risin-again frae the deid, naither mairry nor are gien in mairriage.
36. "Naither can they dee ony mair; for they are as the Angels; and are sons o' God, bein sons o' the Risin-again.
37. "But, that the deid are to be rai'st, e'en Moses schaws at 1 The Buss, when he ca's Jehovah, 'The

1 V. 37. Here, as weil as at Mark xii. 26, the reference isma to the bramble-buss at Sinai itsel', but to the name they had for the paragraph i' the Buiks o' Moses—that o' "The Buss."
God o' Abra'am, the God o' Isaac, and the God o' Jaucob.'

38. "Noo, he isna the God o' deid men, but o' leevin; for to him are a' to leeve!"

39. And some particular anes o' the Writers, answer', and quo' they, "Maister! weel hae ye spoken!"

40. For they daur-na speir at him ony mair quaistens.

41. But he said to them, "Hoo say they that the Messiah is Dauvid's son!

42. "For Dauvid his sel says, i' the Buik o' the Psalms, 'The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou on my richt haun,"

43. "Till sic time as I mak thy faes the fit-brod o' thy feet!'

44. "Dauvid, than, ca's him 'Lord'; and hoo is he than his son?"

45. And (a' the folk hearin), he said to his disciples,

46. "Haud awa frae the Writers, wha are fae to gang aboot in lang manteels, and lo'e compliments i' the merkits, and the boonmaist seats i' the kirks, and reserved places at feasts;

47. "Wha devoor weedows' hooses, and to blin' the een mak lang prayers: thir sal hae a greater male-diction!"

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.
The weedow at the Treasury. Jerusalem's weird.

AND, raisin his een, he saw the rich men drappin their gifts intil the Treasury.

2. And he saw a particular puir weedow, drappin in twa mites.

3. And he spak: "Truly say I t'ye, this puir weedow has cuisten in mair nor they a'!

4. "For ane-and-a' o' thir, oot o' their rowth o' gear drappit intil God's gifts; but she oot o' her poortith cuist in a' she had!"

5. And when some war tellin aboot the Temple, hoo it was buskit wi' bonnie stanes and offerans, he said,

6. "As to thir things ye look at, the days wull come when no ae stane sal be left on anither, that sal-na be dung doon."

7. And they speir't at him, "Maister; whan, than, sal thir things be? and whatna token sal be gien thir things are comin to pass?"

8. And he said, "Tak tent that ye be-na mislead! for a hantle wull come i' my name sayin, 'I am he!' and, 'The time has come!'—Gang-ye-na eftir them!

9. "And, whan ye may hear o' wars and tulzies, be-ye-na fleyt; for thir things maun come aboot; but the end is no belyve."

10. Than said he to them, "Nation wull rise again nation, and kingdom again kingdom;

11. "And eke great yirdine, and plagues, and famines wull thar be; unco things o' dreed, and great tokens i' the lift wull thar be.

12. "And, afore a' thae things, they wull lay haun's on ye; and wull persecute—giean ye up to kirks and dungeons—leadin awa afore kings and governors for my name's sake.

13. "But it sal a' be for you a testimoni.

14. "Sae, hae it siccac in yere hearts, no to be putten-oot afore haun aboot makin defence;

15. "For I wull gie ye a mooth and wyssheid that no ane o' thae settin their sels again ye sal be fit to staun up again!

16. "But ye'se be gien up, e'en by parents, and brither, and kin, and freends: and they'se pit some o' ye to deid;

17. "And ye'se be hatit by a' men, for my name's sake:

18. "But no a hair o' yere heid sal perish!


20. "Hoobeit, when ye'se see Jerusalem rinkit roond wi' sirmies, than tak tent that her desolation draws nar!
LUKE, XXII.

21. "Than, they in Judea, lat them flee to the mountains! and they i' the mids o' her, lat them escape! and they oot-by, lat them no come hame to her!"

22. "For thae are days o' vengeance, for a' that is putten-doone to be fulfilled!"

23. "But wae for weeman bearin, and for them giesan the breist i' thae days! For unco distress sal be on the land, and wrath to this folk!"

24. "And they sal fa' aneath the sword, and wull be taen aws captures 'mang a' nations; and Jerusalem sal be trampit-doone by the nations, to the time o' the nations come!"

25. "And thar sal be signs i' the mune and the starness; and on the yirth pangs and troubles i' the nations; sea and billows soondin:

26. "Men swarin for fear and drait o' the things owertakin a' the yirth! for the poore o' the heevens sal be cuisen doon.

27. "And than sal they see the Son o' Man comin in a clud, wi' a' his poore and glorie!

28. "And, whan thir things begin to come on, rise ye! lift up yere heads! for yere redemption comes apace!"

29. And he gied them a parable: "Look at the fig-tree, and a' the trees!

30. "At sicca a time as they bud, ye lookin on, o' yere ain sels ken that summer is comin.

31. "Sae e'en ye, whan ye see thir things comin aboot, tak tent that the Kingdom o' God is nar-haun!"

32. "Truly say I t'ye, In naegate sal this race fail, till a' thir things sal come!

33. "The heevens and the yirth

The sorrowfu' supper.

sal gang, but my words sal in naegate fail!

34. "But tak ye tent to yere sels! that yere hearts be-na overcome wi' debauch and drinkenness, and fash about this life, and that day come on ye a' at ance, as a snare.

35. "For in siclike sal it come on them wha dwell on a' the face o' the yirth.

36. "But watch ye, at a' times, makin supplication that ye may hae strenth to escape a' thae things that are comin to pass, and to staun afore the Son o' Man.

37. And he was ilka day teachin i' the Temple; but at nicht he gaed oot, and bade i' the mount that is ca'd "The Mount o' Olives."

38. And a' the folk war comin at the dawin to him i' the Temple, to hear him.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWA.

The sorrowfu' Supper—the last and tender-est! The Son o' Man enters intill the mirk.

A ND the Feast o' the Sad Breid, ca'd the "Pasche," was comin on.

2. And the Heid-priests and the Writers war coonsellin hoo to get him oot o' the way: for they were feart o' the people.

3. And Sautan enter't into Judas, the ane ca'd "Iscariot," bein ane o' the Twal'.

4. And, gaun his gate, he coonsell't wi' the Heid-priests and Captaines, in whanthe way he micht gie him up to them?

5. And they war blith, and trokit wi' him to gie him ailler.

6. And he made a paction wi' them, and waitit for a gude openin to gie him up to them, when the crood wadna be aboot.

7. Noo the Day o' the Sad Breid cam, whan the Pasche wad hae to be sacrifec't.

8. And Jesus sent oot Peter and John, sayin, "Gang forrit, and mak
23. And they begude to speir amang their sels, “What ane it was, amang them, that wad do this thing?”
24. And thar was a heart-burnin amang them, as to whilk o’ them sould be heighest?
25. And he said to them, “The kings o’ the nations hae rule ower their folk, and thae that hae poore ower them are ca’d Benefactors:
26. “But it isna sae wi’ you; but he that is the greatest amang ye, lat him be as a younger ane; and he that rules, as gin he ser’t.
27. “For wha is greater, he sittin at meat, or he that ser’s? Is’t no he that sits at meat? But I am wi’ ye as ane that ser’s.
28. “Hoobeit, ye are thae that hae bidden wi’ me in my temptations;
29. “And I gie to you, e’en as my Father gies to me, a Kingdom.
30. “That ye may eat and drink at my buird, in my Kingdom: and ye sal be on throns, wi’ poore ower the twal’ tribes o’ Isra’il.”
31. And the Lord says, “Simon! Simon! Lo, Sautan seeks ye, to riddle ye as wheat!
32. “But I hae besocht for ye, that yere faith disna fail: whan ye hae turned again, lift up yere brethren!”
33. But he said to him, “Lord! I am ready to gang wi’ ye to dungeon and to death!”
34. But he said, “I tell ye, Peter, the cock winna craw this day, till ye thrice deny that ye ken me!”
35. And he said to them, “What time I sent ye oot, wantin purse, and wallet, and shoon—failed ye o’ any-thing?” And they said, “O’ naething!”
36. And he said, “But noo, wha has a purse, lat him tak it: and sae wi’ a wallet. And wha hasna ane, lat him troke his mantle for a sword.
37. “For I say t’ye, that what is putten-doone maun e’en be fulfilled in
me: 'And wi' law-brecker was he coontit! for s'en what is said o' me is made true.'

38. And they said, 'Lord! twa swords are here!' And he said to them, 'It is eneuch!'

39. And gaun oot, he gaed ower as he ait did, to the Mount o' Olives; and the discipils cam eftir him.

40. And comin to the place, he says to them, 'Be ye prayin, that ye come-na intil temptation!'

41. And he was pairrít frae them about a stane's cast; and he loutit doon on his knees, and prayed,

42. And said, 'Faither! gif thou be willin, pit this cup frae me! Yet, no my wull, but thine be dune!'

43. And ther appear't till him an Angel frae Heeven, gien him strenth.

44. And comin intil an agony, yet mair earnestly he prayed; and he swat as it had been mickle draps o' blude, fa'in doon to the grin'.

45. And risin up frae prayin, and comin to the discipils, he faund them faun asleep wi' sorrow:

46. And says to them, 'Hoo soud ye be sleepin? Rise ye! and be in prayer, that ye enter-na intil tempta'tion.'

47. And e'en as he was speakin, see i' crood; and the ane ca'd Judas, ane o' the Twal', comin afore them; and cam nar to Jesus to gie him a kiss.

48. And Jesus says to him, "Judas! wi' a kiss wad ye deliver-up the Son o' Man?"

49. And thae about him, seein what was comin, said, "Lord! sal we smite wi' the sword?"

50. And a particular ane amang them, strack the Heigh-priest's servin-man, and sned aff his lug.

51. And Jesus said, "Thole ye as lang as this!" And, touchin the lug, he healed him.

52. And, Jesus said to the Heigh-priests and Captains o' the Temple, and the Elders, wha had come on

him, "Cam ye oot as again a reiver, wi' swords and runge?"

53. "Tho' I was wi' ye i' the Temple, day by day, ye raex oot nae hauns again me. But this is yere 'oor, and the poorer o' darkness."

54. And they gippit him, and led him awa, and feath him intil the hoose o' the Heigh-priest. Noo, Peter was comin eftir, far abint.

55. And they lichtit a fire i' the coort, and sat thegither; and Peter was for sittin among them.

56. But a particular servin-maid, seein him sittin fornet the lowe, and glowerin on him said, "This ane too, was wi' him."

57. But he¹ deny't, saying, "Wummun, I ken-him-na!"

58. And syne, anither ane lookin at him, said, "Ye as weel, are frae amang them!" But Peter said, "Man, I am no!"

59. And about an 'oor's time eftir, anither ane insistit and threepit, sayin, "O' a sooth, this ane was wi' him; for he is a Galilean!"

60. But Peter said, "Man, I kenna what it is ye are sayin!" And noo, while yet he was speakin, the cock crew.

61. And turnin his sel, the Lord lookit on Peter. And Peter mindit the word o' the Lord, hoo he said to him, "Or the cock craw this day, ye sal thrice utterly deny me!"

62. And gaun oot-by, he blirtit and grat.

63. And the men that had Jesus bund, war mockin and ill-treatin him;

64. And, blindin his een, they war demanding o' him, "Propheay! whilk ane clourit ye?"

65. And mony things, in blasphe'mous speech, war they sayin to him.

66. And when it cam the dawin, a' the Elders war gaitter't thegither, baith Heigh-priests and Scribes; and

¹ V. 57. Gin Peter failed, ony o'us may weel tak tent! Let us learn no to boast.
Luke, XXIII.

And they took him to their Council, sayin, "Gin ye are the Anointit, tell us!"

67. But he said, "Gin I soud tell ye, ye wad in naegate believe;

68. "And gin I soud speir quais- tens, in naegate wad ye answer me, nor free me.

69. "But frae this oot, sal the Son o' Man be sittin on the richt haun o' the poore o' God."

70. And they a' said, "Ye, than, are the Son o' God?" And he said, to them, "Sae ye say; for I am!"

71. And they said, "Whata need hae we o' mair testimonie? for we oorselfs heard o' his ain mood!"

CHAPTER TWENTY-THRIE.

Jesus afore Pilate and Herod. Hoo they micht hae played the man and dune the richt, but faild! The Lord's death and burial.

And they, aine and a', raise, and led him to Pilate.

2. And they begude to wyte him, sayin, "This aine we faund pervertin the nation, and challengin the gian o' tribute to Caesar; makin his sel oot to be a king."

3. And Pilate spairt at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?" And he, answerin him, says "Ye say it."

4. And Pilate says to the Heid-priests and the croodes o' folk, "I find naething wrang i' this man!"

5. But they made an unco bruilzie, sayin, "He is steerin up a' the folk, teachin a' ower Judea, e'en frae Galilee to Jerusalem."

6. Noo Pilate, hearin o' Galilee, spairt "Gin the man was a Galilean?"

7. And whan he faund he was frae oot the authoritie o' Herod, he sent him back to Herod; he bein in Jerusalem at that time.

8. And Herod, seen Jesus, was unco blythe; for he had ait been fain to see him, frae hearin aboot him; and he coonit that he micht see some ferlie wrought by him.

9. And he quaised him in mony words; but he answer't nocht.

10. And the Heid-priests and the Scribes war staunin, and desperatly wyttin him.

11. And Herod, wi' his men-at-arms, geekin at him and flytin him, cuist aboot him a braw manteel, and sent him back to Pilate.

12. And they war made gude freends—Herod and Pilate—on that very day, wi' ane anither; for afore they had cuisten oot.

13. And Pilate, ca' in thegither the Heid-priests, and the Rulers, and a' the folk,

14. Said till them, "Ye broocht this man to me as ane that sair fashed the nation; and lo! I, takin him to task, hae fund naething in him to wyte, as to the things ye wyitit him wi'.

15. "Na, nor yet Herod; for I sent ye to him; and lo! naething wordie o' death has been seen in him.

16. "Sae, then, haein beat him, I wull let him gang!"

17. For it behoved him to lowse ane to them at the feast.

18. But they cryt oot—and the bailt crood—sayin, "Awa' wi' him! and gie to us Barabbas!"

19. Wha for treason i' the citie, and blood-sheddin, had been cuisten into prison.

20. But again Pilate,1 wantin to release Jesus, spak to them.

21. But they war demandin, sayin, "Crucify! crucify him!"

22. But he, a third time said to them, "Why, whata ill has he dune? I faund naething wordie o' death in him! Wi' a chastisement, thar-for, I wull release him!"

23. But they war yammerin wi'
lood voices, demandin to hae him crucify't. And their voices, and o' the Heid-priests, overcam.
24. And Pilate loot their demand be dune.
25. And lat him free, wha for treason and murder had been cuisten intil prison; but Jesus he gied ower to their wull.
26. And as they led him awa, they laid hand on a particular man, Simon, a Cyrenian, comin frae oot-by, and laid the cross on him, to curry it eftir Jesus. And Jesus¹ gaed on, wi' his cross abhint him.
27. And a great crood follow't him; and weemen, wha war makin their maen and lamentin him.
28. But, turnin him aboot, Jesus said, "Dochters o' Jerusalem! greet-ye-na for me; but greet sair for yer-sels and for yere weans!"
29. "For lo! the days are comin when they wull say, 'Happy the barren! the wombe that bare-na, and the breists that nouriced-na!'
30. "Than wull they begin to cry to the mountains, 'Fa' on us!' and to the hills, 'Hap us up!'
31. "For gin sic things as thir are dune i' the green tree, what maun come to pass i' the dry?"
32. And thar war ta'en oot twa mair, ill-doers, wi' him, to be crucify't.
33. And whan they cam to the place they ca'd "The Skull," thar they crucify't him; the ill-doers as weel; ane, indeed, on his richt haun and the ither on the left.
34. But Jesus was sayin, "Father forgive them; for they see-na what they are doin!" And, pairtin his cleddin, they cuist the lot.
35. And the folk war staunin, lookin on. And the Rulers war jeerin, sayin, "He rescued ither; lat him rescue his sel!" gin he be the Anointit, God's chosen Ane!"

36. And the sodgers, too, war geckin at him, comin and profferin him vinegar,
37. And sayin, "Gin ye be King o' the Jews, rescue yere sel!"
38. And forby, thar was a writin inscribit aboon his heid, "This is the King o' the Jews!"
39. And ane o' the crucify't ill-doers was bannin him, sayin, "Are na ye the Anointit? Rescue yere sel' and us!"
40. But the ither ane rebukit him, sayin, "Hae ye nae fear o' God, seein ye are i' the like condemnation?"
41. "To us, richt eneuch; for we are e'en winnin oor deservins; but this Ane did naething wrang!"
42. And he said, "Lord, hae mind o' me whan ye come intil yere Kingdom!"
43. And Jesus says to him, "Truly say I t'eye, this day sal ye be wi' me in Paradise!"
44. And it was aboot twal o'clock; and a mirk cam ower a' the lan't till thrie o'clock.
45. And the sun was hid i' the mirk; and the curtain o' the Temple was rived i' the mids.
46. An' cryin' wi' a loud voice, Jesus said, "Father! intil thy hauns I commend my spirit!" And whan he had sae said, he dee't.
47. And the Captain, seein a' that had come aboot, was gian God glorie, sayin, "In vera truth, this man was richtous!"
48. And a' the folk that had gaither't to that sicht, seein a' the things that war dune, gaed awa beatin their breists.
49. And a' his acquaintance war staunin thar, far awa; and the weemen that follow'it him frae Galilee, behauldin thir things.
50. And see! a man by name Joseph, a Coonsellor, a gudd and upricht man;
51. (The same wasna wi' them i' their ill-deed) o' Arimathæa, a Jewish

¹ V. 26. Sae in Tatian's Diatessaron [li. 18], A.D. cir. 160.
LUKE, XXIV.

On the way to Emmaus.

cite, wha his sel was waitin for the Kingdom o' God—
52. The same, gaun till Pilate, craved the body o' Jesus.
53. And takin it doon, he row't it in linen, and laid it intil a tomb that was cuttit i' the rock, whaurin was nae man yet laid.
54. And it was the Preparation-day; and the Sabbath was comin on.
55. And the weemen wha had come frae Galilee follow'd eftir, and saw the tomb, and how the corp was laid.
56. And, gaun back, they gat ready spices and ointment: and war quate on the Sabbath, accordin to the Commandment.

CHAPTR. TWENTY-FOUR.
The tomb cou'd-na hand him! The forgatherin on the road to Emmaus. His counsell, and his woe'gaun.

Noo, on the first o' the week, at the dawin, they cam to the tomb, feshin the spices they had gotten ready.
2. And they faund the stane to be row't awa' frae the tomb.
3. And gaun in, they found-na the body o' the Lord Jesus.
4. And it was, as they war unco putten aboot at it, lo! twa men stood nar-by them, cleedit in glintin robes!
5. And, as they war fley't, and joutit doon their faces to the yird, they said to them, "Why sud ye seek the leevin amang the deid?"
6. "He iesa here! he raise! Mind-ye-na hoo ho spak to ye, whan he was still in Galilee?"
7. "Sayin, 'The Son o' Man bude be deliver't intil the hands o' sinfu' men; and be crucify't, and the third day rise again!'''
8. And they ca'd to mind his words.
9. And cam back frae the tomb, and reportit a' thir things to the Eleven, and till a' the lave.
10. Noo, it was Mary o' Magdala, and Joanna, and Mary o' James, and the lave wi' them, that war tellin thir things to the Apostles.
11. And their reports war to them like idle clashes, and they didna lippin them.
12. But Peter raise, and ran to the tomb; and loutin doon, he saw but the linen class; and gaed awa, debatin in himsel as to what had come to pass!
13. And mark! twa frae'mang them war gaun on their journey, that vera day, till a village seeven or aucht mile frae Jerusalem, ca'd Emmaus.
14. And they spak thegither o' a' thae things that had happened.
15. And it cam aboot, as they war speakin and reasonin thegither, Jesus his sel cam nar, and gaed wi' them.
16. But their sicht was haudin, that they soudna ken him.
17. And he says to them, "What-na words are thae that ye hae ane to anither, as ye gang on?" And they stude still, wi' a sorrowfu' look.
18. But ane, by name Cleopas, answer't, "Div ye bide by yere lane in Jerusalem, and hae-na kent a' the things that hae cam aboot i' thir days?"
19. And he said, "Whatna things?" And they said to him, "Aenent Jesus o' Nazareth, that was a prophet, a man michty in deed and word, in God's sicht, and o' a' the folk.
20. "And in whatna way oor Heid-priests and Rulers deliver't him up to deid, and hae crucify't him.
21. "But we lipped it wad hae been he that was to deliver Isra'il; and forby a' this, the day is the third day sin' thae things war dune.
22. "Aye! and a wheen weemen o' oor ain gar't us be astonish't— gaun ear' to the tomb.
23. "And no findin his corp, they

¹ V. 17. Sae Tregelles. The Sinai MS. has, "cam till a staun."
cam sayin they had seen a vision o' angels, that said he was leevin!

24. "And some that war o' us gaed to the tomb; and faund it e'en as the weemen had said; but they saw-na him."

25. And he says to them, "Oh, glai-kit anes! and dour in yere hearts to lipp'en to the things the Prophets haesaid.

26. "Was't no for the Christ to suffer thae vera things? and to enter intil his glorie?"

27. And, beginnin frae Moses, and frae a' the Prophets, he made plain to them in a' the Scriptures the things anent himsel.

28. And they cam nar to the village they war gaun till; and he lookit as gin he was gaun on.

29. But they pressed him, sayin, "Bide ye wi' us! the day is far gane, and the nicht is comin!" And he gaed in to stop wi' them.

30. And it cam aboot, when he war suttin doon wi' them to meat, he took the laif, and bles'd; and breikin it, gied till them.

31. And their e'en war unseekit; and they kent him! and he dis-appear't frae them.

32. And they said ane to the ither, "Did oor heart no lowe within us, while he was speakin to us on the way, and expoin to us the word!"

33. And they raise up that vera oor, and gaed back till Jerusalem, and faund foregather't the Eleeven, and thae wi' them, sayin, "The Lord did rise! and appear't to Simon!"

34. "And they war tellin the things by the road; and hoo he was made kent to them i' the breikin o' breid.

35. And as they war thus tellin, he his sel stude i' the mids, and says, "Peace be till ye!"

36. But they war sair putten-aboot, and fley't, thinkin they saw an apparition.

37. And he said to them, "What for are ye putten-aboot? and why soud doots be in yere hearts?"

39. "See ye my hauns and my feet, that it is I mysel! Touch me, and see; for a spirit hasna flesh and banes as ye see me hae!"

40. And when he had sae said, he airtit them till his hauns and his feet.

41. And while they coudna yet believe for joy, and ferlied, he said to them, "Hae ye here anthing to eat?"

42. And they gied him a piece o' a brander't speldrin, and o' a hinny-kaim.

43. And, raxin oot afore them, he did eat.

44. And he said to them, "Thir are the words I spak t'ye, bein yet wi' ye; that they maun needs be fulfilled—a' things putten-dooin i' the law o' Moses, and the Prophets, and Psalms, anent me."

45. Than gar't he their minds open, that they soud comprehend the Scripture:

46. And said to them, "Sae is it putten doon, and sae it behov'd the Messiah to dee, and to rise frae the deid on the third day.

47. "And that repentance and the pittin awa o' sins soud be proclaimed in his name till a' nations; beginnin at Jerusalem.

48. "Ye are witnesses o' thir things.

49. "And lo! I send oot the promise o' my Father upon ye; but bide ye i' the citie, till ye be cleedit wi' poorer frae Aboon!"

50. And he led them oot, the lenth o' Bethanie; and, hauedin up his hauns, he bless'd them.

51. And it cam aboot, that e'en while he was blessin them, he pairtit frae them, and was ta'en up to Heeven.

52. And they paid worship to him; and gaed back till Jerusalem, wi' mickle joy.

53. And war aye i' the Temple, laudin and blessin God.

1 V. 42. Thir to kitchen the breid; for thar wad be breid; tho' its na said; un- less the breid itsel was ca'd "hinny-kaim;" bein bannocks stamp'd wi' a hinny-kaim pattern—as is aften, e'en at this day, seen (and sae ca'd) in Syria.
At the first o' a' things was The Word, and The Word was wi' God, and The Word was God his sel.

2. The vera same was at the first wi' God.

3. A' things war o' his makin; and but for him was naething made that was made ava.

4. Life was in him: and the life was man's licht.

5. And the licht glintit throwe the mirk! but the mirk failed to tak hau'd o't.

6. God sent a man o' the name o' John.

7. He cam for a witness, to gie witness o' the Licht, that a' men by him sou'd believe.

8. He wasna the Licht his sel, but it was his pairt to gie witness o' the Licht.

9. E'en the true Licht, beamin for ilka man that comes intil the world.

10. And he was here in this world, and the world was o' his makin, and the world kent-him-na.

11. He cam till his ain haddin, and his ain folk war fremd to him.

12. But as mony as took him to them, to them gied he richt to be God's bairns, e'en to them wha lippen to him.

13. Born, no o' blude, nor e'en o' the wull o' the flesh, nor o' man, but o' God his sel.

14. And the Word becam flesh, and forgather't wi' us, (and we e'en saw his glorie, as o' the only begotten o' the Faither!) fu' o' tenderness and truth.

15. John bure witness to him, and cry't oot, “This was He I spak o', when I tell't ye, ‘He that comes aftir me is afore me!’ for he was ay e afore me!

16. “And o' his rowth and plenty has we a' gotten, and tenderness wi'booth end!

17. “For Moses gied the Law; but tenderness and truth war brocht to us by Jesus Christ.

18. “Nae man's sel has e'er seen God! The only begotten Son, lyin in his Faither's bosom, schaws him to us.”

19. And this is what John spak, whan the Jews sent priests and Levites frae Jerusalem to speir at him “Wha he was?”

20. And he owned, and deny't-na, but owned he wasna the “Anointit.”


22. Than they said, “Wha are ye! for we maun gie an answer to them that sent us oot. What div ye say o' yersel?”

23. Quo' he, “I am but the sough o' a voice cryin i' the wilderness, Straughten oot God's road!’ just as Esaias the Prophet said.”

24. And the men that war sent war Pharisees.

25. And they still speir't at him, and said, “Why are ye baptizein, than, gin ye are naither the Anointit Ane, nor Elijah, nor yet The Prophet?”

26. John tell' them, “I baptizee wi' watir; but that is Ane i' yere mids ye kenna;

27. “It is He wha comes ahint me, but is set aboon me: the whang o' whasehsoon I am-na wordie to lowse!”


29. On the morn, John saw Jesus comin till him, and he coudna help
John's witness.

JOHN, II.
A wheen disciples.

sayin, "See God's Lamb, wha taks awa the world's sin!"
30. "This is he I spak o', 'A man comes eftir me wha was afore me!' For he was aye afore me!
31. "And I kent him-na; but was lookin for him to be made kent till Isra'el; see I am here, watir-bap-teezin."
32. And John testify't, sayin, "I hae seen the Spirit comin doon frae the lift, like as a doo, and it bade on him.
33. "And I kent-him-na; but he wha sent me oot to bapteez wi' watir, s'en he tellt me, 'On wham ye see the Spirit comin doon, and bidin on him, he bapteezes wi' the Holy Spirit.'
34. "And I saw't, and testify't that this is God's Son!"
35. Again, on the neist day, John was staunin, and twa o' his disciples:
36. And lookin on Jesus as he gaed by, he cry't oot again, "See God's Lamb!"
37. And the twa disciples heard him speak, and they 1 follow't eftir Jesus.
38. And Jesus turned him about, and saw them comin, and quo' he, "What are ye seekin?" And they said "Rabbi (meainin Maister) whaur dwell ye?"
39. Quo' he, "Come ye and see!" They cam, and saw whaur he dwalt, and bade wi' him the lave o' that day; for it was nar haun' fowr o'clock.
40. Ane o' the twa wha heard John speak, and follow't Jesus, was Andro, Simon Peter's brither.
41. He first o' a' seeks his ain brither Simon; and quo' he to him, "We ha' fund the Messiah!"
(meainin the Anointit.)
42. And he brocht him to Jesus. And whan Jesus saw him, he said to him, "Ye are Simon, John's son; ye sal be ca'd Cephas" (meainin "a stane").
43. And the day eftir, Jesus wad gang oot intil Galilee, and lichts on Philip, and says to him, "Follow ye me!"
44. Philip was o' Bethsaida, the town o' Andro and Peter.
45. Philip than seeks Nathaniel, and quo' he to him, "We ha' fund him Moses wrate o' i' the Laws—as weel's the prophets—Jesus o' Nazareth, Joseph's son!"
46. But Nathaniel says, "Can ony gude come oot o' Nazareth?" Philip says to him, "Juist come and see!"
47. Jesus lookit up at Nathaniel comin till him, and quo' he, "Thar's a leal-heartit Isra'ite, wi' nae guile in him!"
48. Nathaniel spak, "Hoo dae ye ken me?" Jesus said to him, "Afore Philip cry't t'ye, whan ye war aneath the fig-tree, I saw ye!"
49. Nathaniel cry't oot, "Maister, Ye are God's Son! Ye are Isra'il's King!"
50. Quo' Jesus to him, "On account o' my sayin, 'I saw ye aneath the fig-tree,' dae ye lippen me? Ye sal see mair mighty works than thir!"
51. And he said too, "Truly, truly, say I t'ye, Ye sal yet see Heeven unsteekit, and God's Angels comin doon, and gaun up, frae the Son o' Man!"

CHAPTIR TWA.

Wine frae the watir jars. The brokers' nou'te ca'd oot.

On the third day was a bridal at Galilee-Cana, and Jesus' mither was thar;
2. And baith Jesus and his disciples had a bode to the bridal.
3. And whan the wine ran dune, Jesus' mither said to him, "The wine's a' dune!"
4. Quo' Jesus, "Eh, wumman,
At Galilee-Cana.

JOHN, III.

The takers i the Temple.

what hae I to do wi' ye s'noo? My 'oor will be here belive!"
5. But his mither counsellit wi'
the servants, "Whatsae he bids ye,
gang and do it."
6. And thar war staunin sax stane
jars, according as the Jews purify't
theirseels; and ilk wad haud twa-thrie
firkins.
7. And Jesus had them fill the
watir-jars wi' watir. And they
teemed them lippin-fou.
8. And he spak till them, "Dip
oot noo, and tak to the Maister o'
the feast!" And they gaed wi't.
9. As sune as the Maister o' the
feast had pree'd the watir-wine (and
kent-na whaur it cam frae; but the
servants kent), he cry't to the bride-
groom.
10. "Ilka man wales oot his best
wine to hansel the feast; and when
folk are weel slacken't, than feshes
the second-wale; but ye hae hained
the best wine till noo!"
11. Sae Jesus begude to do his
wunner-works in Galilee-Cana, and
schawed forth his glorie: and the
disciples lippened on him.
12. And syne he gaed doon to
Capernaum, wi' his mither, and his
ain folk, and the disciples; and they
stoppit thar a wheen days.
13. And the Jewish Pasche was
nar-haun, and Jesus syne gaed up to
Jerusalem.
14. And thar i' the Temple he
cam on the trokers o' nowte, and
sheep and doos, and the nifferers o'
siller sittin.
15. And he made a tawse o' sma'
cords, and ca'd them a' oot, and the
sheep and the nowte beass; and
teeded out the trokers' siller, and
coupit their tables.
16. And tell't them that trokit wi'
doos, "Tak thae things awa; ye'se
17. And the disciples mindit hoo
it was putten doon, "Thy Hosee's
zeal devoors me!"
18. Than uespak the Jews to him,
"What ferlies hae ye to schaw us,
gin ye put oot yere haun to siclike
wark?"
19. Jesus said till them, "Mak an
end o' this temple, and in thrie days
I'll restore it!"
20. Than cryt the Jews, "Sax
and forty year gaed by afore this
Temple was a' biggit, and are ye gaun
to bigg it in thrie days?"
21. But it was the holie temple o'
his ain body he spak o'.
22. And sae belive, when he was
risen frae the deid, the disciples ca'd
to mind that he had said this to
them; and they lippened the word, and a' that Jesus said.
23. And whan he was at the Pasche
in Jerusalem, as the Feast gaed on,
mony begude to believe on his name,
whan they saw the ferlies dune
aneath his haun.
24. But Jesus didna lippen and
gie his sel ower to them, for he kent
men,
25. And needit-na that ony soud
tell him aboot a man, for he kent a'
that was in man.

CHAPITR THRIE.

The man that cam i' the mirk, and gaed awa
i' the licht. Christ maunn wax, John maunn
wane.

THAR was ane o' the Pharisees, by
name Nicodemus; and in author-
ifie amang the Jews.
2. And he cam i' the mirk o'
the night to Jesus, and quo' he,
"Maister! we a' ken ye are a
Teacher frae God; for nane could
do sic wunner-works as ye do, gin
God warna wi' him!"
3. Jesus said to him, "Truly say
I'tye, gin a man be-na born again,
his e'en sal never see God's King-
dom!"

1V. 8. We ken-na gin the hail o' the watir
was made wine. Aiblins but the pairt
they dippit oot. It war be a' the greater
ferlie—dippin intill watir, and cairryin
awa' wine!"
4. Quo’ Nicodemus, “But hoo’s a man to be born in eild? Man he return till his mither’s womb, and be born ower again?”

5. But Jesus spak: “Truly, truly say I t’ye, Gin a man be-na watir-born and Spirit-born, he’s no come intil God’s Kingdom!

6. “And aye that whilk is born o’ the flesh is itsel flesh, and that whilk is born o’ the Spirit is spirit.

7. “Mak nae ferlie o’ my words, ‘Ye maun be born again!’

8. “The wind blaws whaur it will, and ye bear the sough o’ t, but canna ken whaur it comes frae, nor whaur it gans tae: sae is it wi’ a’ne born o’ the Spirit.”

9. Nicodemus says to him, “Hoo can siccan a thing be?”

10. Quo’ Jesus to him, “Can ye be a Maister o’ Isra’l, and ken-na thir things?

11. “Truly, truly say I t’ye,1 we speak what we ken, and bear witness o’ oor ain een; and ye winna hear us.

12. “Gin I hae tauld ye things o’ the yirth, and ye winna hae them, wull ye lippin my word anent things o’ Heeven?

13. “And nae man has e’er gane up Aboon, but he that cam doon frae Aboon—the Son o’ Man, wha bides Aboon.

14. “And like as Moses i’ the wilderness heizd up the serpent, sae maun the Son o’ Man be liftit heigh.

15. “That a’ wha lippin till him soudna dee, but hae Life for aye!

16. “For God sae loved the world as to gie his Son, the Only-Begotten Ane, that ilk ane wha lippin till him soudna dee, but hae Life for aye.

17. “For God sent-na his Son intil the world to bring condemnation on’t,

18. “And ane that lippens him isna hauden guilty; but ane wha winna lippin him is judged guilty e’en no; for he hasna lippin to the Son o’ God, the only-begotten Ane.

19. “And here is the sentence he drees: that licht beams on the world, and men lo’e the mirk and no the licht; for that their deeds are wrang.

20. “For ilk ane that follows ill hates the licht, and comes na till’t; jalouisin that his ill deeds will be seen.

21. “But the man wha has the truth seeks the licht, that a’ his deeds may be plainly seen, that they are dune i’ the poore o’ God.”

22. Eftir thae things, Jesus and the disciples cam intil Judea; and he bade wi’ them, baptizein.

23. And John his sel was in Enon, nar-by Salem, baptizein; for thar was rowth o’ watir thar-aboot; and the folk cam to he baptize’t.

24. For John wasna yet cuisten intil prison.

25. And noo thar cam a quaisten atween John’s disciples and a Jew anent purification.

26. And till John they cam, sayin, “Maister! the Ane that was ayont Jordan wi’ ye, the Ane ye bune witness till—d’ye ken he’s baptizein, and a’ the folk come till Him?”

27. John says to them, “Ane can hae naething gien him, gin it be na frae Heeven.

28. “Ye mind yersels that I said, ‘I am no the Messiah, but ane sent afore him.’

29. “The ane that has the bride, he is the bridegroom; but the bridegroom’s gude freend staunin by, and hearin his word, joys i’ the voice o’ the bridegroom. This is my joy fulfilled!

30. “He maun wax, but I maun wane.
31. "He that comes frae Aboon, is aboon a’ folk; he wha is o’ the yirth is yirth-like, and speaks o’ the yirth; but he wha is frae Aboon is aboon a’.

32. "And he speaks o’ the siecht o’ his ain e’en; and thar is na a man to tak him at his word!

33. "But ony ane that takes his word, he has set his seal to the truth o’ God, and made it his ain.

34. "For the Ane sent frae God speaks God’s word; for he has sent the Spirit ayont a’ measure.

35. "The Faither lo’es His Son; and gies a’ things ichtil his hauns.

36. "The man wha lippens on the Son has Life for Aye, and he wha winna believe the Son sal see life nevir; but the ban o’ God on him sal bide!"

CHAPITIR FOWR.
Jaucob’s waal, and the watir for the soul’s drotch. The great man’s bairn.

NOO, whan the Lord kent the Pharisees had word that he gaither’t in and bapteez’t mair folk than John did—

2. (But it was the disciples, and no Jesus’ sel wha bapteez’t)—

3. He quat the Jews’ kintra-side, and gaed awa again ichtil Galilee:

4. And he behoved to gang a’thort Samaria.

5. And he lichtit on a Samaria citie ca’d Sychar; nar-haun the bit grun’ Jacob g’ed to Joseph.

6. And Jacob’s waal was thar-at. And Jesus, forfouchten wi’ the way, cuist his sel doon on the waal: and it was aboot the denner-time.

7. Thar thar cam a Samaria-wumman forrit, to draw watir. Quo’ Jesus, “Let me have a scowp o’ watir!”

8. (His disciples had a’ gane to the citie for meat.)

9. Quo’ the Samaria-wumman, "Hoo is’t that ye, bein a Jew, are seekin drink frae me, a Samaria-wumman?" (For the Jews hae nae trokin nor neeborliness wi’ the Samaria-folk.)

10. Quo’ Jesus, "Gin ye kent God’s Gift, and wha it soud be that said ‘Gie me a scowp o’ watir,’ ye wad hae socht frae him the Leevin’ Watir—and gotten’t too!"

11. Said the wumman to him, "Sir, ye hae naething to lat doon the waal, and the waal’s unco deep; whaur fin’ ye the Leevin Watir?

12. "Ye canna be greater nor oor forebear Jacoob, wha gied us the waal, and slockened his ain drotch wi’, and the drotch o’ his bairns—and his beasts!"

13. Jesus said to her, "Wha may drink this watir wull be drotchie syne;"

14. "But wha drinks o’ the watir I gie him, sal be drotchie nevirmair; for the watir I gie him sal be in him an unseen waal, springin up ichtil Life Eternal!"

15. The wumman cry’t oot, "Sir, lat me hae this watir! no to be drotchie, and ne’er to faesh to come to the waal again!"

16. Quo’ Jesus, "Gang awa, and ca’ yere gudeman, and come again belyve!"

17. But the wumman said to him, "I haena a gudeman!" Quo’ Jesus, "Ye hae dune richt to say ye haena a gudeman;"

18. "For ye hae had fyve; and the ane ye hae e-noo is no yere sin gudeman; ye spak truth thar.

19. Quo’ the wumman, "Sir, I jalous ye maun be a Prophet!"

20. "Oor forebears worshipped i’ this vera mountain; but yere folk say Jerusalem’s the place whaur folk sould worship—"

21. Jesus pat in, "Wumman, lippens to me! the ‘oor’s at haun, whan naither here, nor yet thar, sal they worship the Faither!"

1 V. 6. "They biggit better than they kent" (Emerson). Jacob didna ken he was howkin a waal for his Lord to drink oot o’!
22. "Ye ken-na what ye ser' ; but we ken what we worship ; and salvation comes frae among the Jews.

23. "But the oor is at haun, and e'en noo it comes, when God's ain worshippers sal worship the Faither in the truth and wi' the Spirit—for the Faither wad hae siclike to seek him.

24. "God is a spirit ; and wha worship him maun e'en do see i' the spirit and wi' the truth."

25. The wumman says, "I ken Messiah's comin, that folk ca' 'The Christ'; when he comes, he'll tell us a'."

26. Jesus spak—"I that's noo speakin t'ye am 1 'The Christ!' "

27. On the back o' this cam the disciples, and ferled that he soud be speakin wi' the wumman; but nane o' them speir't, "What are ye seekin?" nor, "Hoo is't that ye talk wi' the wumman?"

28. Than the wumman, leavin her watir-stoup, gaed awa to the citie, and cry't oot to the men,

29. "Co' way! and see a man that tell't me a' that evir I did! Is he no the Messiah?"

30. Then they gaed oot o' the citie to come till him.

31. But atween times his disciples war ask-askin him, "Maister! wull ye no eat?"

32. But quo' he to them, "I hae meat that ye ken-na!"

33. And see they speir't ane o' anither, "Think ye ony ane brocht him ocht to eat?"

34. Quo' Jesus, "It's meat to me to do his wull that sent me, and finish his wark!"

35. "Div ye no say, 'Four months, and than the hairst'? But unseek yere een and see the fields—they're whitinin till the hairst e'en noo!"

36. "And the shearer wins his fee, and gaithers till him an eternal hairst; and the sawer and shearer are bairt by the thegither!

37. "And the auld proverb comes true ower again, 'Ane saws, and syne anither shears!'

38. "I bade ye to a hairst whauron ye hadnna toiled: ither men toiled, and ye are entered on their reward."

39. And mony o' the Samaria-folk lippened on him for the wumman's sake, wha aye threepit, "He tell't me a' that evir I did!"

40. Sae when they cam till him they besocht him to bide wi' them; and he stoppit twa-thrie days thar.

41. And a hantle mair believed when they heard his ain word;

42. And quo' they to the wumman, "Noo we believe—no for yere report—for oor ain lugs hae heard him; and noo we ken that he is the Anointit Ane, the world's Saviour!"

43. And twa days aftir he gaed forth again intil some o' the pairts o' Galilee.

44. For Jesus his sel testify't that "a Prophet had nae repute in his ain kintra-side."

45. Syne he cam intil the pairts o' Galilee, and the folk thar acceptit him, for they had seen a' that he did at the Feast in Jerusalem; (for they as weel gaed up till the Feast).

46. And ance mair he cam up till Galilee-Cana, whaur he made the watir wine. And there was a certain his officer, whose son was ill at Capernaum.

47. As sune as he got a sough o' Jesus comin oot o' Judea intil Galilee, he gaed till him, and besocht him to come doon and heal his son; for he was in extremitie.

48. Jesus answer't him, "Gin ye see-na signs and ferlies, ye're set again believin."

49. The great man says to him, "Sir, come awa doon, 'or my bairn dee!"

50. Quo' Jesus to him, "Gang yere gate; yere son leaves!" The
man lippened the word o' Jesus to him, and took the gate.

51. And as he was e'en noo gang-in doon, his-servants met him wi', "Yere son's leevin!"

52. Syne he speir't at them the 'oor the illness took a turn? and quo' they, "Yestreen, at ane o'clock o' the day, the fiver gaed awa."

53. Sae the faither kent it was at that 'oor Jesus said to him, "Yere son leaves!" and he his sel believed and his hale hoose.

54. This is the second wuner-wark Jesus did, bein come oot o' Judea intil Galilee.

CHAPTIR FVYE.

Jesus at Bethesda. The Jews would naither ha' him heal nor preach: "Is't no the Sabbath? quo' they."

EFTIR thir things thar cam a Feast o' the Jews; and Jesus gaed up till Jerusalem.

2. Noo, in Jerusalem, by the shear-port is a pool ca'd (i' the Hebrew) Bethesda, and beside it fyve porticoes.

3. In thae lay a handle o' folk; sick, blin', lameters, and dwined-awa anes, waitin for the steerin o' the watir.

4. For an angel (quo' they) gaed doon whiles intil the pool, and set the watir asteer; thairver first stappit in was made hale o' his compleent.

5. And a particular man thar had been helpless for aucht-and-thretty year.

6. And Jesus seein him lynin, and kennin he had lang been sae, says to him, "Wad ye be made hale?"

7. The feckless ane answert, "Sir, I hae nae ane to pit me in; but whan I'm estlin to hirple doon, some ither ane staps in fore me!"

8. Quo' Jesus to him, "Up! tak up yere couch, and gang!"

9. And at ane the man was made hale, and took up his couch, and walkit; and that vera day was the Sabbath-day.

10. Sae said the Jews to him wha was made hale, "This is the Sabbath-day! it's no alloosed for ye to be carryin yere couch!"

11. He answert them, "The ane that made me hale, he order't me, 'Tak up yere couch, and gang!'"

12. Than speir't they at him, "Wha was't that said t'ye, 'Tak up yere couch and gang'?"

13. And he wha was made hale kent-na wha it was; for Jesus had withdrawn his sel, a great thrang bein aboot.

14. Syne Jesus, lichtin on him i' the Temple, says to him, "See, ye are made hale; sin nae mair, that something waur come-na t'ye!"

15. The man gaed awa, and tell't the Jews it was Jesus wha made him hale.

16. Sae the Jews persecutit Jesus, and wad fain hae killit him, for doin thir things on the Sabbath-day.

17. But Jesus answert them, "My Faither works e'en till noo, and I too work."

18. Sae the Jews estlit mair and mair to kill him: for he hadna only broken the Sabbath (quo' they) but mair—had said that God was his Faither, makien his sel God's marrow.

19. Than said Jesus to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye. The Son dis naething o' his sel allemarie, but sic as he sees the Faither do: for siclike things the Faither dis, theae also dis the Son as well."

20. "For the Faither lo'es the Son, and schaws till him a' things he dis his sel: and greater warks than thir wull he schaw him, that ye may ferlie."

21. "For e'en as the Faither feshes up the deid, and gies life to them, sae sal the Son gie life to wham he wull."

22. "For the Faither judges nae
man, but has gien ower a’ Judgment to the Son;
23. “Sae that a’ men soud gie honor to the Son, e’en as they gie honor to the Faither.
24. “Truly, truly say I t’ye, The man wha hears my word, and lippens on him wha sent me, has Life for Aye, and comes-na intil condemna
tion; but he is come out o’ death intil Life.
25. “Truly, truly say I t’ye, The oor is comin, and e’en noo is, whan the deid sal hear the voice o’ the Son o’ God, and they wha hear sal leeve!
26. “For e’en as the faither has life within his sel, sae has he gittit to the Son to bae life within HIS SEL!
27. “And has gien to him pother to gie judgment as weel, for that he is the Son o’ Man.
28. “Mak nae ferlie o’ this; for the oor is comin whan a’ in their graves sal hear his voice.
29. “And sal come forrit; thae wha hae weil dune, to the up-risin’ Life: and they wha hae ill dune, to the up-risin’ o’ condemnation.
30. “I can o’ my ain sel, alten-lie, do naethin; like as I hear, sae I judge; and my judgment is richt-
ous; seein I seek-na my ain wull, but the Faither’s wull wha sent me.
31. “Gin I gie witness o’ mysel, my witness needna be te’en.
32. “Thar is anither wha witnesses o’ me; and I ken the witness he bears o’ me is true.
33. “Ye sent till John, and he burre witness to the Truth.
34. “But I hae need o’ man’s testimonie; but thir things I say, that ye might be saved.
35. “He was a licht that lowed and glintit; and ye war fain for a wee to glorie in his licht.
36. “But I hae greater witness than the like o’ John; for the warks the Faither has gien me to do—the vera warks I do—bear me witness that the Faither has sent me.
37. “And the Faither his sel wha sent me, has gien witness o’ me. Ye nevir heard his voice, nor saw his form!
38. “Naither hae ye his word abidin ye; for the Ane he has sent, him ye lippen-na.
39. “Ye seek in the Scripturs; for in them ye think ye hae Life for Aye: and it is e’en thae that testify o’me.
40. “And ye winna come to me that ye micht hae Life.
42. “But I ken ye weel, that the love o’ God is wantin in ye.
43. “Here am I, come in my Faither’s name, and ye winna receive me: gin some ither soul come in his ain name, ye’ll receive him.
44. “Hoo can ye believe, receivin glorie ane frae anither? and the glorie that comes frae the only God ye seek-na!
45. “Think-na I’ll wyte ye afore the Faither: thar’s ane accusin ye, e’en Moses, on wham ye lippen yers-
ells.
46. “For gin he had lippened Moses’ word, ye wad hae lippened me; for he wrate o’ me.
47. “But gin ye lippen-na his words penned, hoo sal ye lippen my words spoken?”

CHAPTIR SAX.

SYNE a’ thae things war by, Jesus gaed ower till the ither side o’ the Loch o’ Galilee, ca’d the Loch o’ Tiberias.

2. And great thrangs cam aftir him, for that they saw the ferlies he wrocht on sick folk.
3. And Jesus gaed up intil a mountain, and sat doon thar amang his disciple.
4. And the Pasche was nar-haun, a Feast o’ the Jews.
5. When Jesus had liftit up his een, and had seen sic a great com-
pany come till him, he says to Philip, "Hoo sal we buy breid, that a' thae may eat?"

6. And this he said to try him: for he kent his sel what he wad do.

7. Quo' Philip, "Twa hunder siller pennies in breid wadna be eneuch for them a', that ilka ane sou'd hae a wee."

8. And ane o' the disciples, Andro, Simon Peter's brither, says to him, "Thar's a callant here, who has fyve barley-bannocks, and twa wee speldrins; but what wad thae be amang sae mony?"

9. "Quo' Jesus, "Mak the men sit doon!" Noo thar was a rowth o' gersa i' the place. Sae the men sat a' doon, aboot fyve thousand o' them.

11. And Jesus took the bannocks, and when he had gien thanks, he gied to the disciples, and the disciples to them that war sitten doon; and eke o' the speldrins, as mickel as they wad.

12. Whan they war a' satisfyt, quo' he to his disciples, "Gaither up the mools and bits that are ower, sae that thar be naething wastit."

13. Sae they gather't them up, and filled twa creels wi' the broken bits o' the fyve barley-bannocks, remainin ower to them wha had eaten.

14. Thae men, whan they had seen the ferlie wrocht by Jesus, cryt a', "This is, o' a certaintie, yon Prophet that was to come intil the world!"

15. Whan Jesus kent that they wad come, and tak him wi' the strang haun to mak him a King, he withdrew again intil a mountain, by his sel alone.

16. And when the gloamin was come, his disciples gaed doon till the loch,

17. And enter't intil a smack, and gaed ower the loch, airtin for Capernaum. And it was noo mirk, and Jesus wasna come to them.

18. And the sea raise wi' a great wun' blawin.

19. And whan they had row't thrie or four mile, they see Jesus walkin on the loch, and comin nar-haun till the smack; and they war frighten't.

20. And he speak up to them, "It is I! be-na frighten't!"

21. Than they war fain to receive him intil the boat; and belyve the boat was to land, whoaur they had airtit.

22. The day efter, when the folk staunin on the ither shore saw thar was nae boat thar-aboot but the ane the disciples gaed intil, and that Jesus gaed-na wi' them intil the smack, but that the disciples had gane awa by their sels:

23. (Hoossever thar cam ither boats frae Tiberias, nar-haun the bit whoaur they had breid, efter that the Lord had gied thanks:)

24. The folk tharfor, seein that naither Jesus nor his disciples war thar-aboots, took boat, and cam till Capernaum seekin for Jesus.

25. And whan they had fund him on the ither side o' the sea, quo' they to him, "Rabbi, whan cam ye here?"

26. Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, ye seek me, no sae muckle that ye saw wunner-warks, but that ye did eat o' the bannocks, and filled yersels.

27. "Seek-na for perishin meat, but for that meat that bides until Eternal Life, whilk the Son o' Man sal gie ye: for him has the Faither, e'en God, sealed."

28. quo' thay to him, "And what maun we do, to work the warks o' God?"

29. Jesus answer't them and said, "This is God's wark, that ye lippen on him God has sent."

30. Syne they said to him, "What ferlie div ye schaw, that we could see and lippen? What div ye?"

31. "Oor forbears did eat manna i' the waste; as it is putten doon, 'He gied them breid oot o' Heeven to eat.'"

32. Than said Jesus to them,
"Truly, truly say I t'ye, It wasna Moses gied ye the breid oot o' Heveen; but my Faither he gies ye the raal Breid frae Heveen!

33. "For God's Breid is he wha comes doon oot o' Heveen, and gies Life to the world."

34. Than said they to him, "Lord! aye gie us sic breid!"

35. Quo' Jesus to them, "I am the Breid o' Life! wha come to me sal hunger nae mair: and wha lippens on me sal be drouthie nevir!

36. "But say I t'ye, ye'hae seen me, and yet ye believe na.

37. "They a' come to me that the Faither gies me; and wha comes to me, nevir in onygate wull I ca' him awa'!

38. "For I hae come doon frae Heveen, no to do the wull o' my ain, but the wull o' him that sent me.

39. "And here is the Faither's wull wha sent me:-That oot o' a' he has gien me I soud tine nane, but sound raise a' up again at the Last Day.

40. "And this is his wull wha sent me:-That ilk ane seein the Son, and lippin on him, may win Life for Aye; and I sal raise him up at the Last Day."

41. Than the Jews yammer't at him, for that he said to them, "I am the Breid that cam doon frae Heveen."

42. Quo' they, "Iana this Jesus, Joseph's son? Hoo is't than that he says he cam doon frae Heveen?"

43. Sae Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "Cavil-na amang yersels.

44. "Nae man comes to me, gin the 1 Faither who sent me dinna draw him: and I wull raise him again at the Last Day.

45. "The Prophets pat doon,

V. 44. 1t iana that some men are nevir drawn o' the Faither; but rather that (as the Jews a' profess to believe i' the Faither) they war to believe that the that cam to Christ, cam wi' the gude-wull and drawin o' the Faither.

46. "And God sal teach them a'." And sae ilk man wha hears, and has taen in the lear o' the Faither, comes to me.

47. "No that ony man has e'er set een on the Faither, only he wha is o' God—He has seen the Faither!"

48. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha believes me has Life for Aye!

49. "That Breid o' Life am I!

50. "Yere forebears did eat manna i' the wilderness, and dee'st.

51. "But here is the Breid that cam doon frae Heveen, that a man may eat o' it, and no dee's!

52. "The Leevin Breid that cam doon frae Heveen is mysel; gin ony man eat this Breid, he leeve for Aye; and the breid I sal gie is my flesh, that I wull gie for the world's life.

53. But the Jews had an unco bruilzie anent it, amang theirsels, and cry't oot, "Hoo can this man gie us his flesh to eat?"

54. Than quo' Jesus to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Gin ye eatt na the flesh o' the Son o' Man, and drink his blude, thar is nae Life in ye!

55. "Wha eats my flesh, and drinks my blude, wins Life Eternal; and him wull I raise again at the Last Day.

56. "For my flesh is vera meat, and my blude is vera drink.

57. "And wha eats my flesh and drinks my blude, bides in me, and I in him.

58. "E'en as the Evir-leevin Faither sends me, and I leeve by him, sae he who eats o' me, sae e'en leeve by me!

V. 52. The Jews schawed an unco want o' thocht, in no seein at ance that "the flesh" and "the blude" was a parable. In place o' speirin the meanin o't, they focht again it. The warld is swerir to own its dourness.
59. Thir things said he i’ the Synagogue, teachin in Capernaum.
60. But a haunte o’ his followers, when they heard that, said: “Thae things are unco hard; wha can bide the listen till them?”
61. Jesus, kennin in himself what his followers war mutterin aboot it, says to them, “Are ye anger’t at this?
62. “What, than, gin ye see the Son o’ Man gang awa up whaur he was afore!”
63. “The Spirit gies folk life: the flesh is nae profit: my words that I gie ye are spirit and are life.
64. “But thar are some o’ ye wha dinna lippen me.” For Jesus kent frae the vera first wha was unbelievin, and wha wad betray him.
65. And quo’ he, “Sae it was I said t’ye, that nae man comes to me gin it warra gien him o’ my Faither.”
66. Frae that time o’t, a haunte o’ his followers reistit on him, and gaed nae mair wi’ him.
67. Than quo’ Jesus to the Twal’, “Are ye gaun awa, too?”
68. Quo’ Simon Peter, “Wham sound we gang till? It is ye wha hae the words o’ Eternal Life!”
69. “And we lippen and ken that ye are The Anointit Ane, the Son o’ the Leevin God!”
70. But quo’ Jesus, “Hae I no waled oot ye twal’, and yet ane is a deevil?”
71. He spak o’ Judas Iscariot, Simon’s son; for he it was that wad betray him, bein ane o’ the Twal’.

CHAPTR SEEVEN.
The Feast o’ the Bothies. Waitir for drouth: the Jews wadna hae it.

EFTIR thae things, Jesus gaed up and doon a’ Galilee; for he wadna gang i’ the land o’ Judiea, for the Jews settled to kill him.

2. Noo the Jews’ Feast o’ the Bothies was nar-haun.

3. Sae said his brethren to him, “Gang awa aff to Judiea, sae that yere disciples may see yere warks that ye do!”

4. “For nae man dis siclike warks unkent, gin he etties to be kent his sel. Gin ye do sic things, lat the world see ye!”

5. (For his brethren theirselves believed-na in him).

6. But quo’ Jesus to them, “It’s no my time yet; your time is aye at haunn!”

7. “The world canna hate you: but it hates me, for I gie testimonie again it that its warks are ill.

8. “Gang ye awa to this Feast: I’m no gaun e-noo, for my time’s no here yet.”

9. And syne, aftir thae words, he bade yet in Galilee.

10. But aftir his brethren had gane up, he gaed up to the Feast as weel; no afore a’ the folk, but like as it war bidlins.

11. And the Jews war seekin him at the Feast; and quo’ they, “Whaur is he?”

12. And thar was an unco tulzie amang the folk anent him; for, quo’ some, “He’s a gude man!” thers said, “Na, he’s but castin glamor ower the folk!”

13. Hoosever, nane spak oot openly aboot him; for they war fley’t o’ the Jews.

14. Noo, aboot the mide o’ the Feast-time, Jesus gaed up intil the Temple to teach.

15. And the Jews ferlied, and quo’ they, “Hoo kens this man lear, yet he ne’er learned?”

16. Jesus answered them, and quo’ he, “The rede I redd isna mine, but his wha sent me.

17. “Gin ony man do God’s wull, he sal ken aboot the rede, gin it be frae God, or gin I speak mysel, allenarlie.

18. “Wha speaks allenar, o’ his sel, seeks but his ain glorie; but wha seeks the glorie o’ him that sent him, yon same man is leal and true; and nae fauseness in him.”
19. "Was't no Moeso that gied ye the law; and yet nane o' ye is keepin'. Hoo is't ye gang aboot to kill me?"

20. The folk answer't, and quo' they, "Ye hae a demon; wha gang aboot to kill ye?"

21. Quo' Jesus to them, "I hae dune ae wark, and ye a' ferlie.

22. "Moses gied ye circumference (no that it is o' Moses, but rather o' the faithers), and on the Sabbath-day ye circumference ane.

23. "Gin, than, ye on the Sabbath-day circumference a man, sae that Moses' law be-na broken, are ye anger't at me for makin' a man ilka haet hale on the Sabbath-day?

24. "Judge-na o' things as they seem to the se, but judge richt judgment."

25. Than quo' some o' them o' Jerusalem, "Is this no he they seek to kill?

26. "But look! he speaks out baudlly, and they say naething to him. Hae the rulers come to ken that this is the Anointit Ane?

27. "But than we ken this man, and hoo he comes; but when the Anointit Ane sal come, nae man kens hoo he comes!"

28. Than cry't oot Jesus, teachin' i' the Temple, "Ye baith ken me, and ye ken whaur I come frae. I am-na come o' myself; but he wha sent me is true—he wham ye ken-na!"

29. "But I ken him; for I am frae him, and he sent me."

30. Than they socht to grip him; but as yet nae man pat hauns on him, for his ain 'oor wasna yet come.

31. And mony o' the folk lippen'd on him; and quo' they, "When the Anointit comes, will he do mair wunner-warks than thae this man dis?"

32. The Pharisees heard o' the folk mutterin' sic things aboot him; and the Pharisees and the Heid-priests sent oot officers to tak him.

33. But Jesus gaed on—"Yet a wee while, and I am w'y'e, afore I gang till him that sent me.

34. "Ye may seek me, but ye winna fin' me; and whaur I bide ye canna come!"

35. Than quo' the Jews amang theirsels, "Whaur wull he gang that we canna fin' him? Wull he gang awa to the here-awa there-awa tribes amang the Gentiles, teachin the Gentiles?

36. "Whatna saying is this that he said, 'Ye sal seek me, an' no fin' me;' and, 'Whaur I bide ye canna come!'

37. I' the himmaist day, that great day o' the Feast, Jesus stude and cry't oot, "Gin ony man be drouthie, lat him e'en come to me and drink!

38. "He wha lippens on me, as it is putten doon i' the Scriptur, 'Oot frae him sal flow rivers o' Leevin Watir!'

39. But this spak he o' the Spirit, that they sal see wha lippens on him; for the Holie Spirit wasna yet gien; for Jesus wasna yet glorifyt.

40. And a hantle o' the folk, when they heard a' this, said, "Surely this maun be the Prophet!"

41. Ither wheen—"This is the Messiah!" But quo' some, "Sal the Messiah come oot o' Galilee?"

42. "Has the Scriptur no said, oot o' the toon o' Bethlehem, whaur Davuid was?"

43. Sae they war sindry i' their minds amang theirsels about him.

44. And a wheen o' them wad fain hae laid hand o' him; but nae man pat haun on him.

45. Than cam the officers back to the Heid-priests and Pharisees, and quo' they to them, "Why hae ye no broocht him?"

46. Quo' the officers, "Ne'er man spak like this man!"
47. Quo' the Pharisees to them, "Are ye glamor'd as weel?"
48. "Hae ony o' the Priests or the Pharisees lippened on him?"
49. "But a curse bides on this folk, wha ken-na the law!"
50. But quo' Nicodemus to them (the ane that cam till Jesus by richt, and ane o' their sel's),
51. "Dis oor law condemn a man 'or it hear him, and ken what he dis?"
52. But they flang back at him, "Are ye o' Galilee too? Seek ye, and look—for oot o' Galilee comes nae Prophet!"
53. And ilka man gaed till his ain hoose.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.
The ill-derdie wumman (no the only sinner). Jesus tells the folk o' Jerusalem the truth, but they wadna hear: 'or lang it was wrath, and they bude hear.

JESUS gaed oot-by till the Mount o' Olives.
2. And on the morn, early, he cam again till the Temple, and the folk a' gaithered about him; and he sat doon to teach them.
3. And the Scribes and Pharisees brocht till him a wumman ta'en in adultery; and when they had Sutton her i' the mids,
4. Quo' they to him, "Maister! this wumman was ta'en i' the vera act o' adultery.
5. "Noo Moses, i' the Law, gied comman to stane siclike; but what say ye?"
6. This said they for temptation, to hae something to wyte him wi'. But Jesus loutit doon, and gaed on writin in the yird wi' his fing'ir.
7. Sae when they gaed on, aak-sakin him, he straughtit his sel, and quo' he to them, "The ane that's wantin sin amang ye, lat him cast the first stane at her!"
8. And ance mair he loutit his sel doon, writin on the grun'.
9. And they that heard him slippit cannillie oot, frae the suldest e'en to the last ane; and Jesus was left alone, wi' the wumman staunin i' the mids.
10. When Jesus straughtit his sel up, and saw nane but the wumman, he says to her, "Whaur are they that wytit ye? Has nae man gien judgment on ye?"
11. And she says, "Nae man, my Lord!" And quo' Jesus, "Nae mair div I pass judgment on ye; gang yere ways, and sin nae mair!"
12. Than again spak Jesus to them, and said, "I am the world's Licht! the man wha follows me walks-na i' the mirk, but sal hae the light o' Life!"
13. The Pharisees then replied to him, "Ye gie witness o' yersel; yere ain witnesses, alleynar, is nae prufe!"
14. Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "E'en gin I bear witness for mysel, my witness is leal and true; for I ken whaur I cam frae, and whaur I gang till: but ye ken-na whaur I cam frae, and whaur I gang.
15. Ye judge effir the flesh; I judge nane.
16. "Aye, and gin I did judge, my judgment wad be true; for it isna I mylane, but I and the Faither wha sent me.
17. "And e'en i' yere ain Law it's putten-doone, 'The witness o' twa witnesses is prufe.'
18. "I am ane, gian witness o' mysel; and the Faither wha sent me gies witness o' me.
19. Than said they to him, "Whaur is yere Faither?" Quo' Jesus, "Ye ken-na me, nor ken ye my Faither; gin ye kent me, ye soud hae kent my Faither as weel!"
20. Thir words spak Jesus i' the Treasury, as he was teachin i' the Temple; and nae man put hauns on him, for his o'or wasna yet.
21. Than again Jesus says to them, "I gang my ways; and ye sal seek for me, and sal dee i' yere sins; and whaur I gang, ye canna come!"
"The truth makes ye free."

JOHN, VIII.

22. Than quo' the Jews, "Wull he mak awa wi' his sel' for he says, 'Whaer I gang, ye canna come.'"

23. And he said to them, "Ye are frae aneath; I am frae Aboo; ye are but o' this world; I am-na o' this world.

24. "Sae said I t'ye, 'I' yere sins ye sal dee!' for gin ye believe-na that I am the Ane, ye sal dee i' yere sins!"

25. Than speir't they at him, "Wha are ye?" And Jesus says to them, "E'en just as I said to ye at the first.

26. "Mony things hae I to say, and mony things hae I to judge o' ye; nathless, he wha sent me is true; and I gie to the world what I hae heard o' him."

27. They kent-na that he spak to them o' the Faither.

28. Than said Jesus to them, "Whan ye hae up-liftit the Son o' Man, ye sal ken I am he, and do naething o' mysel'; but o' the lear o' my Faither, sae speak I thae things.

29. "And he is aye wi' me wha sent me: the Faither leaves-me-na alane; for I aye dae the things that please him."

30. And speakin thir words, mony believed on him.

31. Than said Jesus to thae Jews wha had lippened him, "Gin ye bide in my word, than are ye my followers truly.

32. "And the truth sal ye ken, and the truth makes ye free."

33. But they answered him, "Abra'm's seed are we, and nar war slaves to ony: hoo say ye than, 'Ye sal be made free!'"

34. Jesus says to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha works sin, is sin's servant!

35. "And the servin-man bides-na i' the hoose for aye; but the Son bides for aye.

36. "Gin than the Son makes ye free, truly ye'se be free!

37. "I ken ye are o' the seed o' Abra'm; but ye are seekin to mak awa wi' me, for that my word bides-na in ye.

38. "What I hae seen wi' my Faither I speak; and what ye hae heard frae ye faither ye do!"

39. They answered, and quo' they to him, "Abra'm is oor Faither!" Jesus says to them, "Gin ye war Abra'm's bairns, ye wad do Abra'm's warks.

40. "But noo ye wad mak' awa wi' me, a man wha tells ye the truth, whilk I hae heard o' God: Abra'm did-na sae!

41. "Ye dae yere faither's warks!" Than said they to him, "We be-na o' fornication; we hae ae Faither, God!"

42. Jesus said to them, "Gin God war yere Faither, ye wad e'en lo'e me: for I cam forth and cam frae God; and I cam-na o' mysel', but he sent me.

43. "Why dae ye no ken my sayin? e'en for that ye canna hear my word?"

44. "Ye are o' yere faither the deevil; and his wull dae ye. A murderer was he frae the first, and bade-na i' the truth. And when he speaks a lee, he speaks o' his ain; for he is a leear, and the faither o' a leears.

45. "And for that I tell ye the truth, ye lippen-na on me.

46. "Wha o' ye fastens sin on me? And, gin I say the truth, why is't ye lippen-na on me?"

47. "He that is o' God, hears God's words: ye dinna hear them, tharfor, for ye are-na o' God!"

48. Than answer't the Jews, and quo' they, "Dae we no say weel that ye are a Samaritan, and hae a deevil!"

49. Jesus answer't, "I hae nae deevil: but I honor my Faither, and ye wad dishonour me.

50. "And I seek-na for my ain glory; thar is Ane that seeks and judges.
"Abra'm saw my day."  

JOHN, IX.  

The blin' beggar.

51. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Gin a man keep my sayin, he sal ne'er see death!"
52. Than said the Jews to him, "Noo ken we ye hae a deevil; for Abr'am is deid, and the Prophets are deid; and ye say, 'Gin a man keep my sayin, he sal ne'er pree o' death.'
53. "Are ye greater nor oor faither Abr'a'm, wha is deid? and the Prophets that are deid; wham wad ye mak yersel?"
54. Jesus answer't, "Gin I glorify't mysel, my glorie is but naethin; it is my Faither wha glorifies me; wham ye ca' yere God.
55. "Yet hae ye no kent him; but I ken him; and gin I soud say, 'I dinna ken him,' I soud be a leear, like as ye are yersels: but I ken him, and keep his word.
56. "Yere faither Abr'a'm was fain to see my day; and he saw it, and it blythened him!"
57. Than said the Jews to him, "Ye are-na 1 fifty year auld yet, and hae ye seen Abr'a'm?"
58. Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Afore Abr'am was, am I!"
59. Than grippit they stanies to hurls at him; but Jesus hid his sel, and gaed oot o' the Temple, throwe amang them a', awa.

CHAPTER NINE.

Are that gets his sicht weel, and gies his testimone weel.

AND as he gaed by he saw a man who was blin' frae he was born.
2. And his disciples speir't at him, "Maister! whose sin wass't? the man's ain sin, or his faither and mither's, that he was born blin'?
3. Jesus answer't, "Neither his ain sin, nor his faither's and mither's; but for that the warks o' God soud be seen in him.
4. "I maun do the warks o' him that sent me, while it is day: the nicht comes on, when man canna work.
5. "While I am in the world, I am the world's licht."
6. When he had said this, he spat on the grun', and made clay o' the spittle, and pat the clay on the blin' man's een.
7. And bad him "Gang awa, wesh ye in the pool o' Siloam" (whilk means "Sent"). He gaed his gate tharfor, and wesh't, and cam back seein.
8. Than the neebors, and the folk that afore had seen him, and kent the beggar, said, "Isna this the ane that sat and beggit?"
9. Some again, "It is he!" Ithers, "It's like him!" Quo' he, "I am he!"
10. Sae they speir't at him, "Hoo than are yere een unsteekit?"
11. He answer't, and quo' he, "The man they ca' Jesus made clay, and pat it on my een, and tellt me, 'Gang yere ways to the Pool o' Siloam, and wesh ye!' And I gaed and I wesh't, and I gat my sicht."
12. And quo' they to him, "Whaur is he?" He said, "I ken-na."
13. They feath till the Pharisees the man that o'auld time was blin'.
14. Noo it was the Sabbath, the day that Jesus wrocht the clay, and unsteekit the man's een.
15. Ance mair the Pharisees speir't at him, hoo he had gotten his sicht? Quo' he, "He pat clay on my een, and I wesh't—and I see!"
16. Sae quo' some o' the Pharisees, "This man is no o' God, for he keeps-na the Sabbath!" Quo' ither's, "Hoo can a man fu' o' sin do sic wunner-warks?" And thar was contention amang them.
17. Than they said again to the man that was blin', "What say ye

1 V. 57. What ga't them say "fifty"? He was jimpily past thretty. Wast't the gray hair, afore it's time, stealin on his temples? or wast the wearied look o' a man bearin sins no his ain, that misleared them? Aiblin we ken-na.
aboot him, sin' he has open'd yere e'en?" Quo' he. "He is a Prophet!"
18. But the Jews wadna believe—anent the man's bein blin', and winnin to his sicht—till they ca'd the parents o' him that had gotten his sicht.
19. And they speir't at them, "Is this yere son, wha, as ye say, was born blin'? Hoo than is he noo seen?"
20. His parents answer't, and quo' they, "We ken weel that this is oor son; and that he was born blin'.
21. "But hoo he noo sees, or wha has unsteekit his een, we kenna: he is come to age; speir at him: he his ain sel wull tell ye."
22. Thir things spak the parents, for that they war fey't o' the Jews; for the Jews ha bod plottit amang theirsels, that gin ony man sowd own him to be the Christ, he soud be putten oot o' the kirk.
23. And sae said his parents, "He is come to age; speir at him!"
24. Sae they ca'd back again the man that had been blin', and quo' they to him, "Gie the praise to God! we a' kena that this man is no a gude man."
25. But quo' he to them, "Gin he be a gude man or an ill man, I kenna; ae thing I dae ken, that ance I was blin', and noo I see!"
26. And than again they said to him, "What was't he did till ye? Hoo did he unsteek yere een?"
27. He answer't, "I tell't ye juist e-noo, and ye didna hear me! Why wad ye hear it ower again? wull ye be his disciples?"
28. And they misca't him, and said, "Ye are his disciple! but we are Moses' disciples!"
29. "We ken that God has spoken to Moses; as for this aine, we kenna whaur he is frae!"
30. The man answer't, and quo' he, "Why, here is an unco ferlie; that ye kenna whaur he is come frae, and yet he has unsteekit my een!
31. "We ken that God hears-na ill men; but gin ane worships God, and dis his wull, him he hears.
32. "Sin' the world begude was it ne'er heard that ony ane unsteekit the een o' a man born blin'!
33. "Gin this man 1 warna o' God, he could do naething!"
34. They answer't, and quo' they to him, "Ye war born in sin, oot and oot; and wad ye teach us?" And they cuist him oot.
35. Jesus was tell't that they had cuist him oot; and as sune as he faund him he says to him, "Dae ye believe on the Son o' God?"
36. He answerin said, "And wha is he, Lord? sae as I may believe on him?"
37. Jesus says to him, "Ye hae baith seen him, and it is he wha is speakin w'ye!"
38. And he cry't oot, "Lord, I believe!" and he worshipp't him.
39. And quo' Jesus, "For judgment cam I tae this world; that the blin' may see, and the seein be made blin'."
40. And thae o' the Pharisees that war wi' him heard thir words, and quo' they to him, "Are we blin', as weel?"
41. Jesus says to them, "Gin ye war blin', the sin wadna be on ye; but noo ye say, 'We see!' yere sin is whaur it was!"

CHAPTER TEN.
Jesus is a leal Shepherd: his flock is o' mony hirseis. The Jews wad fa'en hae taen his life.

TRULY, truly say I t'ye, He wha comes-na ben by the door intil the fauld, but speels up by some gate o' his ain, is but a thief and a reiver.
2. "But he wha comes ben by the door is the herd o' the sheep.
3. "To him the keeper unsteeks
the fauld; and the sheep hear his voice; and he ca's by name his ain sheep, and takes them oot.

4. "And when he has letten oot his ain, he gangs afoir them, and the sheep follow him, for they ken his voice.

5. "But nae fremd-ane wull they follow; for they kenna the voice o' fremd folk."

6. This parable spak Jesus to them; but they kent-na what he spak to them aboot.

7. Then Jesus spak to them again, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, I am the door o' the sheep!

8. "A' that e'er cam afoir me are but thieves and reivers; but the sheep heard-them-na.

9. "I am the door; gin ony man come ben by me, he sal be saved, and sal gang oot and in, and fend weil.

10. "The reiver comes-na but for to steal, and kill, and ding doon. I come that they may hae life, and mair rowth o't.

11. "I am the Gude Shepherd; the gude shepherd gies his ain life for his sheep.

12. "But the orra man for a fee, wha isna the herd, and auchts-na the sheep, whan he sees the wolf comin doon, lea's them and flees; and the wolf grips them, and skails them abreid.

13. "The orra man flees, for that he is but for a fee, and lo'ees-na the sheep.

14. "I am the Gude Shepherd, and ken my ain, and my ain ken me.

15. "And the Faither kens me, and I ken the Faither; and I gie my ain life for the sheep.

16. "And ither sheep hae I, no o' this fauld: them too maun I bring hame, and they sal ken my voice; and they sal win to be as flock, wi' a' Shepherd!

17. "And for this dis my Faither lo'e me, for that I lay doon my life, that I micht tak it again.

18. "Nae man rives it frea me, but I lay it doon o' mysel. I hae strenth to lay it doon, and strenth to tak it up again. This commaun hae I o' my Faither."

19. Ther was a bruilkie ance mair amang the Jews at thir sayins.

20. And a hantle o' them said, "He has a demon, and is wud; why listen ye to him?"

21. Ither some—"Thir are-na the words o' ane wi' a demon! Can a demon unseek the een o' the blin'?"

22. And it was at the Feast o' The Dedication, in Jerusalem: it was winter;

23. And Jesus was gaun in Solomon's Porch, i' the Temple.

24. Than the Jews cam aboot him, sayin, "Hoo lang dae ye keep us in a swither? Gin ye be the Christ, lat us ken plainly!"

25. Jesus answer't, "I tell ye, and ye wadna believe; the ferlies that I dae in my Faither's name, bear witness o' me.

26. "But ye believe-na, for that ye arena o' my sheep.

27. "My sheep hear my voice, and I ken them, and they follow me.

28. "And I wull gie Eternal Life to them, and nane sal rive them oot o' my haun.

29. "My Faither, wha has gien them to me, is michtier nor I, and nane is fit to rive them oot o' my Faither's haun.

30. "I and my Faither are ane."

31. The Jews gather't up stanes to stane him.

32. Jesus answer't them, "Mony are the gude warks I hae schawed ye frea my Faither; for whilk o' thae dae ye stane me?"

33. The Jews answer't, and quo'

---

1V. 25. The great warks that he did—mair nor ony man ever did—either pruved that he was mair favor't o' God than ony man afore him, or that he was Divine. In eithor case, they soud hae believed the words o' ane sae plainly up-hauden o' God! Gin ye tak in ae truth aboot Christ, it wull lead ye to mair!
they, "For nae gude wark div we stane ye! but for blaspemin; and for that ye, a man, are makin yersel God!"

34. Jesus answer't, "Is't no putten doon i' yer Law, 'I said ye are gods?"

35. "Gin he ca'd them gods, till wham the word o' God cam—and the Scripture isna to be broken—

36. "Say ye o' him the Faither consecrates, and sends into the world, 'Ye blasphee!' for that I said, 'I am the Son o' God?'

37. "Gin I div na the works o' my Faither, diuna believe me!

38. "But gin I div them—e'en gin ye believe na me, believe the works! sae ye may ken and may believe that the Faither is in me, and I am in the Faither!"

39. Than they settled again to grip him; but he gaed forth oot o' their haun,

40. And gaed awa again ayont the Jordon, to the place whaur John was at first baptizzin: and he bade thar.

41. And mony folk cam till him; and quo' they, "John schawed nae ferlies; but a' things that John spak aboot this man war true!"

42. And mony believed on him thar.

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.
The kindly folk o' Bethanie. Death, and death's Maister.

NOO, a particular ane was ill; Lazarus, o' Bethanie; Mary's toon, and her sister Martha's toon.

2. It was the same Mary wha anointit the Lord wi' the ointment, and dightit his feet wi' her hair, whase brither Lazarus was ill.

3. Sae his sisters sent word to him, "Lord, see! the lad ye lo'e is sick!"

4. Whan Jesus heard it, he said, "This illness is no to bring death, but the glorie o' God; sae as God's Son micht be glorify't."

5. Noo Jesus had tender love for Mary, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6. Whan, than, he heard he was ill, he ye bade thar twa days i' the bit whaur he was.

7. Eftir that, quo' he to his discipies, "Let us gang into Judea again!"

8. The discipies say to him, "Maister! the Jews e'en noo settled to stane ye, and wull ye gang thar-awa again?"

9. Jesus answer't, "Are thar no twal' oors to a day? Gin ony man gang i' the day, he stoiters-na, for that he sees the licht o' this word.

10. "But gin ane walk i' the nicht, he stoiters, for that the licht iana in him."

11. Thir things quo' he; and eftir he said to them, "Oor freind Lazarus is faun on sleep; but I gang that I may wauken him oot o' sleep!"

12. Than quo' the discipies, "Lord, gin he sleep, he maunn be on the mend!"

13. But Jesus spak o' his deein; while they thoicht he had spoken o' his takin rest in sleep.

14. Than said Jesus plainly to them, "Lazarus is deid!"

15. "And I am weel pleased, for yere sakes, I wasna yonner, sae as ye may believe; nane-the-less, lat us gang to him!"

16. Than Tammas (he wha was ca'd "The Twin") says to his neibors, "Let us a' gang, too, that we may 'dee wi' him!"

17. Than, when Jesus cam, he faund he had been i' the tomb for fowr days.

18. Noo, Bethanie was nar-haun Jerusalem, no twa mile awa.

19. And mony folk o' the Jews had come oot to Martha and Mary to console them ower their brither.

1 V. 16. I wuss we ken mair o' Tammas! It was in deid earnest he said this. In fact, Christ was just gaun till his deid, when he airtit his gate to Jerusalem!
20. Than Martha, as sure as she kent Jesus was comin, gaed oot and met him; but Mary sat yet i' the hoose.
21. Sae says Martha to Jesus, "Lord! gin thou had been here, my brither hadna deet!"
22. "And e'en yet, I ken that whate'er thou may ask o' God, God wull gie it thee!"
23. Quo' Jesus to her, "Yere brither sal rise again!"
24. Martha says to him, "I ken he sal rise again, i' the Risin at the Last Day!"
25. Jesus said to her, "I am the Risin-again and the Life! Wha lippen on me, e'en gin he dee, yet sal he leave!
26. "And whasee leeves, lippenin on me, sal dee nae mair! Dae ye believe this?"
27. Quo' she to him, "Aye, Lord! I believe thou art God's Son, wha was to come intil the world!"
28. And when she had said this, she gaed her ways, and ca'd Mary her sister; unkent, sayin, "The Maister is come, and is seekin' ye!"
29. And as sure as she kent it, she raise quickly, and gaed till him.
30. Noo Jesus wasna yet come to the toon, but was i' the place whaur Martha met him.
31. Sae the Jews wha war i' the hoose to console her, when they saw Mary rise up o' a suddainie and gang oot, follow'd her, sayin amang theirsels, "She gangs to the tomb, to wail thar!"
32. Than Mary, bein come whaur Jesus was, fell doon at his feet, sayin to him, "Lord! gin thou had been here, my brither hadna deet!"
33. When Jesus saw her sabbie, and the Jews a' greetin that cam wi' her, he was unco touched at the heart, and was wrocht-on.
34. And quo' he, "Whaur hae ye laid him doon?" They say to him, "Lord, come awa and see!"
35. Jesus grat.
36. The Jews than said, "See hoo he lo'ed him!"
37. But a wheen o' them said, "Coud-na this man, wha unseekit the een o' the blin', hae caused e'en this man to leeve?"
38. Jesus,1 groanin at this within his sel, comes to the tomb. Noo it was a cave, and a stane was putten ower it.
39. Jesus said, "Tak ye awa the stane!" Martha, the sister o' the deid man, says, "Lord! by noo the corp wull be rank, for he has been four days deid!"
40. Jesus says to her, "Did I no say t'ye, that gin ye wad believe, ye soud see the glorie o' God?"
41. Than took they awa the stane. And Jesus liftit up his een, and said, "Faither! I thank thee that thou did hear me.
42. "And I ken that thou aye hears me; but for the sake o' a' the folk staunin here I said it, that they may ken that thou did send me."
43. And when he had sae said, he cry't wi' a soondin voice, "Lazarus! hither! Come!"
44. And the deid cam forth, bund haun and fit wi' deid-claes; and his heid bund roond wi' a naipkin. Jesus says to them, "Lowe' him, and lat him gang!"
45. Than a hantle o' the Jews wha cam to Mary, and saw a' that he did, believed on him;
46. But a wheen o' them gaed their gate to the Pharisees, and tell't them what Jesus had dune.
47. The Heigh-priests and the Pharisees than gaither't a Cooncil; and quo' they, "What are we to do? for this man dis mony wunner-warks.
48. "Gin we lat him thus be, a' folk wull lippen to him; and the

---

1 V. 38. Here war a wheen o' the Jews yammerin amang their sela, at his no doun eneuch michty warks afore theu. It was ill to dree; and Jesus groused inwardly at the hardness o' their hearts.
Romans wull come, and tak' awa oor place and oor kintra frae us!"
49. But ane o' them, Caiphas, he bein Heigh-priest that year, said to them, "Ye ken naething ava!"
50. "Nor tak intil account, that it is better for us that ae man soud dee for the nation, and no that the hail nation soud be cuttit aff!"
51. Noo thie spak, no o' him sae sel; but bein Heigh-priest that year, he foestauld that Jesus sould dee for the nation:
52. And no for that nation allenarlie; but that he soud gather thegither in ane a' God's bairns scatter't abroad.
53. Sae, frae that day forrit, they plottit thegither to mak awa wi' him.
54. Sae Jesus gaed nae mair freely amang the Jews; but gaed awa intil the kintra-side nar-haun the wilderness, intil a city ca'd Ephraim; and bade thar, wi' his disciples.
55. Noo the Jews' Pasche was nar-baun; and mony gaed, up frae a' the kintra-side to Jerusalem afore the Pasche, to purify their sels.
56. Than socht they for Jesus; and quo' they amang their sels, as they stude i' the Temple, "What think ye? wull he no come up to the Feast?"
57. Noo baith the Heigh-priests and the Pharisees had gien a comman, that gin ony ane kent whaur he was, he soud schaw it, that they micht grip him.

CHAPITIR TWAL'.

Mary ancint mair at Jesus' feet. He rides intil Jerusalem. The licht gaun to lea' them.

THAN Jesus, six days afore the Pasche, cam to Bethanie, whaur was Lazarus, that he had raised frae the deid.
2. And they made him a supper; and Martha ser't at the table; but Lazarus sat wi' him, amang the guests.

3. Than Mary took a pund o' ointment, the raal nard, unco precious, and anointit Jesus' feet; and dichtit his feet wi' her hair; and the hail house was fu' o' the perfume o' the ointment.
4. But ane o' his disciples, Judas, says (he wha wad betray him),
5. "Hoo is't this ointment wasna rather sellit for thrie hunder siller pennies, and gien to the puir?"
6. Noo thie said he, no that he cared ocht for the puir, but for that he was a thief, and bure the wallet, and made awa wi' what gaed intil'.
7. Than said Jesus, "Dinna pit her about! has she no been hainin it for my buriin day?"
8. "For ye hae aye the puir w'ye; but ye baena me aye w'ye!"
9. The feck o' the folk amang the Jews kent he was thar; and they cam oot, no for Jesus' sake allenarlie; but e'en to see Lazarus as weel, whan he had raised frae the deid.
10. But the Heigh-priests socht hoo they micht mak awa wi' Lazarus as weel;
11. For that by reason o' him, a hantle o' the Jews gaed awa, believin on Jesus.
12. On the morn, a great company o' folk, wha had come to the Feast, whan they heard say that Jesus was comin to Jerusalem,
13. Taik branches o' the palm-trees, and gaed oot to meet him, and cry't oot, "Hosannah! Blessin on him wha comes i' the name o' the Lord! the King o' Israel!"
14. And Jesus, whan he had ta'en a young ass, set himsel on't; as it is putten doon,
15. "Fear-na, O dochter o' Zion! for see, yere King comes, sittin on an ass's cowt."
16. Thir things did-na his disciples think o' at the first; but whan Jesus was glorify't, than mindit thay that thir things war putten-doone anent him, and that thay had done thir things to him.
17. Sae the thrang o' folk that war wi' him when he ca'd Lazarus frae the tomb, and raised him frae the dead, bune witness.

18. And for this cause the hail multitude gaed oot to meet him, for they had heard tell that he had dune this great ferlie.

19. Than the Pharisees said amang their sels, “See ye hoo ye mak nae heidway! Look! the world is gane eftir him!”

20. Noo, thar war certain Greeks amang the folk that cam up to worship at the Feast.

21. And thir men cam to Philip, wha was o' Bethsaida o' Galilee, sayin to him, “Sir, we wad fain see Jesus!”

22. Philip cam and tell't Andro; and than Andro and Philip tell't Jesus.

23. And Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, “The 'oor is come for the Son o' Man to be glorify't.

24. “Truly, truly say I t'ye, gin a pickle o' wheat fa'na into the yirth and dee, it bides allearn; but gin it dee, it brings muckle increase.

25. “Wha lo'es his life, sal tine his life; and wha hains-na his life i' this world sal hain it for Eternity!

26. “Gin ony man wad ser' me, lat him follow me; and whaur I bide, thar sal my servant bide; gin ony man ser' me, my Father wull gie him honor.

27. “And noo is my saul unco wanrestie; and what sal I say? Faither! save me frae this 'oor! But e'en for this cam I intil this 'oor!

28. “Faither, glorify thy name!” Than cam thar a sough o' a voice oot o' the lift, sayin, “I hae bairth glorify't it, and wull again glorify it!”

29. A' the folk, tharfor, that stude by, said it thunner't. But ithar some, that “An Angel spak to him!”

30. Jesus answer't, and said to them, “This voice cam-na for my sake, but for yours.

31. “Noo is the turn'in-point for this world: noo sal this world's prince be cuisten oot!

32. “And I, gin I be liftit up frae the yirth, wull wyle a' men to me!”

33. This said he, meanin whatna kind o' death he wad dee.

34. And a' the folk answer't him, “We hae heard oot o' the Law that the Anointit Ane bides for aye; and hoo say ye, 'The Son o' Man's to be upliftit?' Wha is this Son o' Man?"

35. Than cry't Jesus to them, “Yet for a wee while is the licht wi' ye. Walk ye while ye hae the licht, that the mirk fa'na on ye; for wha gangs i' the mirk kens-na whaur he is gaun.

36. “Whilst ye hae the licht, believe i' the licht; sae sal ye be bairns o' the licht!” Thir things spak Jesus, and ga'ed awa, and keepit his sel hidlins frae them.

37. But eftir doin sae mony great warks amang them, yet believed-theyn-a on him;

38. That the saying o' Esaiah the Prophet micht come genie whan he said, “Lord, wha has lippened to oor word? And by whom has Jehovah's airm been seen?”

39. Tharfor, they didna believe, for that Esaiah said again,

40. “Their e'en are blindit, and their heart made hard; that they soudna see wi' their e'en, nor understand wi' their heart, and be turned, and I sou'd heal them!”

41. Thir things quo' Esaiah whan he saw his glorie, and spak o' him.

42. None-the-less, e'en amang the Heigh-priests, a blante believed on him; but being fey't o' the Pharisees, they didna own him, for fear they sould be putten oot o' the Kirk.

43. For they lo'ed to be roos'd o'
The himaist Supper.  

JOHN, XIII.

The fit-weshin.

ciples' feet, and to dight them wi' the tooeel about him.
6. And belyve he cam to Simon Peter: he says to him, “Lord I wad ye wesh my feet?”
7. Jesus answer't to him, “Ye kenna e-noo what I dae, but ye sal ken aftir.”
8. Peter says, “Nevir, and in nagegate, sal ye wesh my feet!” Jesus answer't him, “Gin I wesh-ye-na, ye hae nae pairst wi' me!”
9. Simon Peter says to him, “Lord! no my feet, allenar, but my hauns and my heid as weel!”
10. Jesus says to him, “Wha is clean, needs na but his feet wesh't to be a' clean; and ye are clean—but no a'!”
11. For he kent wha wad betray him; sae said he, “Ye arena a' clean.”
12. Sae whan he had wesh't their feet, and ta'en his robe to him, and ta'en his place again, he said to them, “Ken ye what I hae dune to ye?”
13. “Ye ca' me ‘Maister’ and ‘Lord’; and ye say weel; for sae I am.
14. “Gin I than, the Lord and the Maister, hae mysel wesh't yere feet, ye soud be weshin anither's feet.
15. “For I hae satten ye an example, to do as I hae dune t'ye.
16. “Truly, truly say I t'ye, a servant isna aboon his maister, nor the ane that is sent oot as great as as the ane wha sends him.
17. “Gin ye ken thir things, happy are ye to be doin them!
18. “I speak-na aboot ye a’; I ken wham I hae waled oot; but that the word soud come to pass, 'He wha ects my braid lifts up his heel again me!'
19. “And frae noo I am tellin ye aforehaun; sae whan it is come to pass, ye may believe I am he.
20. “Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha welcomes ony ane I send, welcomes me; and wha welcomes me, welcomes him that sent me.”

135
21. Sayin thir things, Jesus was wrocht-on in his spirit, and quo' he, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Ane frae 'mang yere sels sal betray me!"
22. Than the disciples gloweret at ane anither, dootsome about wham he might be speakin.
23. Noo, leavin on Jesus' bosom, was ane o' his disciples, ane that Jesus lo'ed.
24. Simon Peter than raxxes ower to him, and says, "Tell us wham he is speakin o'."
25. He, leavin back on Jesus' braist, says to him, "Lord! wha is't?"
26. Jesus answer't him, "It is he to wham I sal dip the morsel, and gie it." And he dippit the morsel, and gied it to Judas Iscariot, Simon's Son.
27. And eftir the morsel, Sautan cam intil his heart. Than Jesus says to him, "Whate'er ye dae, haste w'it."
28. Noo, nae man at the Supper kent what-for he spak this to him.
29. For some thocht, seein Judas bure the wallet, that Jesus had tell't him, "Buy what we need anent the Feast"; or that he was to gie to the puir.
30. He than, receivin the morsel, syne gaed oot; and it was nicht.
31. Sae, noo he was gane oot, Jesus says, "Noo the Son o' Man is glorify't, and God glorify't in him.
32. "Gin God be glorify't in him, God sal s'en glorify him in himself, and sal noo glorify him.
33. "Bairns, I am wi' you but for a wee. Ye sal seek me, and, like as I tell't the Jews, sae speak I noo—Whaur I gang, ye canna com e!
34. "I gie ye a new commaun, 'Ye sal lo'e ane-anither; s'en 1 as I hae loe'd you, that ye soud lo'e ane-anither!"
35. "Sae sal a' folk ken ye are followers o' me, gin ye hae love to ane-anither."

36. Simon Peter says to him, "Lord! whaur dae ye gang to?" Jesus answer't to him, "Whaur-awa I gang, ye canna follow me e-noo; but ye sal follow me eftir."
37. Quo' Peter to him, "Hoo is't I canna follow ye e-noo? T'se lay doon my life for ye!"
38. But Jesus answer't, "Wull ye lay doon yere life for me? Truly, truly say I t'ye, the cock crowaws-na, till ye hae thrice disowned me!"

CHAPTR FOURTEEN.
The Disciples in amaze; willin to be led, but unco blin'. Tender as a mither wi' her bairns, the Spirit will airt them.

BE ye-na cuisten-doone in heart; ye lippen on God; lippen on me as weel.
2. "My Faither's House has mony bowers; if no, I wad hae tell't ye. I gang to busk a place for ye.
3. "And gin I gang to busk a place for ye, sae come I again, and tak ye to mysel; that whaur I bide, ye may bide.
4. "And whaur I gang, ye ken; and the gate ye ken."
5. Quo' Tammas to him, "Lord! we dinna ken whaur ye're gaun, and hoo can we ken the gate?"
6. Quo' Jesus to him, "I am the gate, the Truth, and the Life! ilka man wha comes to the Faither, comes throwe me.
7. "Gin ye had kent me, ye soud hae kent my Faither as weel; and frae this forrit ye ken him, and hae seen him."
8. Quo' Philip to him, "Lord, schaw us the Faither, and we sal be content!"
9. Jesus says to him, "Hae I been sae lang w'ye, and s'en yet ye haena kent me, Philip? Wha 1 sees

1 V. 34. The newness o' the comman was, to lo'e ane anither as Christ had lo'e'd them! The Maister's example is the strausteet road we can tak to perfection! See his teechin o' humilitie, i' the fit-weshin; v. 4-15.
me, sees the Faither. And hoo d’ye say, ‘Schaw us the Faither?’

10. “Canna ye lippin me, that I am in the Faither, and the Faither in me? And the words I speak t’ye, I speak no allenarie and o’ mysel; but the Faither, wha bides in me, e’en he dis the warks.

11. “Lippin me—I am in the Faither, and the Faither is in me; or e’en lippin me for the warks their sels!

12. “Truly, truly say I t’ye, Wha believes on me sal do my warks, and e’en greater; for I gang awa tae my Faither.

13. “And a’ that ye ask in my name, e’en that wull I do, that the Faither micht be glorify’t i’ the Son.

14. “Gin ye ask ocht in my name, that wull I do.

15. “Gin ye lo’e me, keep my commauns!

16. “And I sal pray to the Faither, and he sal gie ye anither Guide, that he may be wi’ ye for aye—

17. “The Spirit o’ a’ Truth—wham the world receives-na, for it sees him-na, nor yet kens him. Ye kens him, for he bides w’ye, and sal be in ye.


19. “Yet a wee, and the world sees me nae mair; but ye see me: seein I leewe, ye sal leewe.

20. “At that day ye sal kens that I am in the Faither—ye in me, and I in you!

21. “The man wha kens my commauns, and has keepit them, is the aene that lo’es me; and my Faither lo’es him that lo’es me—and I wull lo’e him, and schaw mysel to him.”

22. Judas says to him (no Iscariot), “Lord! hoo is’t ye are to schaw yersel to us, and no to the world?”

23. Quo’ Jesus to them, “Gin a man lo’es me, he keeps my words, and my Faither wull lo’e him; and we wull come to him, and bide wi’ him.

24. “Wha lo’e-me-na keeps-na my words; and the word ye hear is no allenarie mine, but the Faither’s wha sent me.

25. “A’ thir things I hae spoken t’ye, while I forgather’t wi’ ye.

26. “But the Guide, the Holie Spirit, wham the Faither sends in my name, he sal e’en learn ye a’ things, and fesh a’ things up to yere mind, whatsoe’er I hae said to ye.

27. “Peace I les’ wi’ye; my peace I gie ye; no as the world wad gie, gie I t’ye. Dinna lat yere heart be dowie, nor be ye fley’t.

28. “Ye hae heard tell hoo I said t’ye, ‘I gang awa, and come again!’ Gin ye lo’ed me, ye wad be blythe to hear me say, ‘I gang to the Faither!’ for my Faither is mair nor I.

29. “Sae noo I hae tell’t ye, afore it is come, that when it is come ye soud believe.

30. “And frae this on, I’ll no say muckle to ye: for this world’s Prince comes; but has nae haud o’ me!

31. “But I speak, that the world may come to ken that I lo’e the Faither; and as the Faither commandit, e’en sae I dae. Come, lat us gang awa!”

CHAPTIR FYFTEENE.

The Vine-stock and the branches. But lat ilka man tak tent, that the Vine-stock looks mair for frute nor for leavis, on the branches!

“T AM the richt Vine-stock, and my Faither is the Dresser o’ the Vine-yard.

2. “Ilka branch in me that bears-naw frute he taks awa; and ilka ane bearin frute he prunes it, sae as it soud produce the mair.

3. “Noo ye hae been sae pruned, by the word I hae spoken t’ye.

4. “Bide in me, as I bide in you. The branch canna bear frute allenarie; it maun bide in the Vine-stock: nae mair may ye, gin ye bide-na in me.

5. “I am the Vine-stock; ye are
the Branches. He wha bides in me, and I bide in him, that man brings forth rowth o' frute: for wantin me ye naething can do.

6. "Gin ony man bide-na in me, he is cuisten oot as a fusionless branch, and dwines awa; and folk soop them thegither, and set them awhile, and they are brunt.

7. "But gin ye bide in me, and my words bide in you, ask ye what ye wad hae, and it sal be dune t'ye! 8. "And this gate is my Father made glorious—that ye dae bear rowth o' frute: sae are ye my disciples!

9. "E'en as the Father has lo'ed me, sae e'en hae I lo'ed you: bide ye in my love.

10. "And gin ye keep my commauns, ye sal bide in my love; e'en as I, keepin my Father's commauns, bide aye in his love.

11. "Thir things hae I said t'ye, sae as my joy sal bide wi' ye, and yere joy be fu' and skailin ower.

12. "Here is my commaun—That ye lo'e ilk ithar, e'en as I lo'ed you.

13. "Nae man has evir mair love than this—to lay doon his life for his freends.

14. "Noo ye are my freends, gin ye do my commauns.

15. "And frae this oot, I diuna ca' ye servants, for the servant kens-na what the master dis: but I hae ca'd ye 'freends'; for a' that I hae heard frae my Father I hae tell't you.

16. "Ye hae-na made wale o' me, but I hae-made wale o' you, and made ye sterk; sae as ye soul gang and bring forth frute, and frute that sal bide: that a' things ye seek frae the Father i' my name, he may gie ye.

17. "O' thir things I gie commaun—that ye lo'e ane anither.

18. "And gin the world be bitter again me, ye ken it hatit me first, afore you.

19. "Gin ye war o' the world's ain, the world wad lo'e its ain; but—for that ye are-na o' the world, but waaled by me oot o' the world—sae the world has ill-wull t'ye.

20. "Keep mind o' the word I gied ye, 'The servant isna aboon the Master!' Gin they hae persecut me, they wull e'en persecute you; gin they mind my sayin, they wull mind yours.

21. "But a' sic things wull they do t'ye for sake o' my name, e'en for that they ken-na him wha sent me.

22. "And gin I hadna come and spoken to them, this sin haddna lain at their door: but noo they hae nae hap for their sin!

23. "He wha ill-wulls me, ill-wulls my Father as weel.

24. "Gin I hadna dune i' their mids sic warks as nae ither man e'er did, this sin haddna been their's; but noo hae they baith seen and ill-wulled me and my Father.

25. "But the word is come to pass whilk is putten doon i' their Law, 'They ill-wulled me, wantin a cause!'

26. "But when the Dear Fren' is come—him I send ye frae the Father, the Spirit o' Truth, wha comes frae the Father—e'en he sal gie witness o' me.

27. "And ye, as weel, sal gie witness; for that ye hae been wi' me frae the first."

CHAPTIR SAXTEEN.

Tenderness in sorrow. Many things to be said, but they war slow in the uptak.

The en drawn on.

"THIR things hae I tell't ye, that ye soundna stoter, and be dazed.

2. "Ye sall be putten oot o' the Kirk: aye, the time is at haun that gin ony ane sheds yere blude, he wull fancy he sers God!

3. "And a' thae things wull they
do t'ye, for that they hae naither kent my Faither nor me.

4. "But I hae telt' ye thae things, sae whan the time comes, ye sal ca' to mind I telt' ye o' them. And thir things I gied-ye-na at the first, for I was w'ye.

5. "But noo I gang my gate to him wha sent me; and nane o' ye speir at me, 'What gang ye?'

6. "But, for that I hae said thir things t'ye yere hearts are fu' o' dool.

7. "Natherless, I tell ye true; better for you that I gang awa; for till I gang awa, the Dear Freen' winna come t'ye; but gin I gang, him wull I send t'ye.

8. "And whan he is come he wull convince the 1 world o' sin, and o' rightness, and o' judgment.

9. "O' sin—for they lippen-na on me.

10. "O' rightness—for I gang to the Faither, and ye see me nae mair.

11. "O' judgment—for this world's Prince is judged.

12. "Mony are the things I hae to say t'ye, but ye canna thole them noo.

13. "But whan he is come, the Spirit o' a' truth, he wull airt ye intil a' the truth: for he speaks-na o' his sel allenarie; but what he hears he sal speak: and he sal open t'ye things no yet come.

14. "He sal glorify me: for he sal tak o' mine, and schaw to you.

15. "A' that the Faither has is mine; and sae said I, 'He sal tak o' mine, and schaw to you.'

16. "A wee while, and ye see-mena, and than again, a wee while, and ye sal see me—for I gang to the Faither.

17. Than amang their sels the disciples said, 'What is't he says to us? 'A wee while, and ye see-mena; and than a wee while and ye sal see me?' and, 'For I gang to the Faither?'"

18. Sae they speir't, "What is't he says, 'A wee while?' We canna ken what he says!"

19. Noo Jesus kent they war fain to speir at him; and said to them, "D'ye seek amang yersels to ken o' what I said, 'A wee while ye see-mena, and than a wee while and ye sal see me?'

20. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, ye sal greet and maen, but the world sal be blythe; and ye sal hae dool, but yere dool sal come to be blytheness.

21. "A wumman in her bearin-pang has dool, for that her 'oor is on her; but as sure as she has borne the bairn, she minds nae mair the pang, for blytheness that a man is born intil the world.

22. "A' ye hae dool and sorrow e-noo; but I wull be w'ye again, and yere heart sal be blythe; and yere blytheness nae sal tak awa frae ye.

23. "And i' that day ye sal need to seek to me for nocht. Truly, truly say I t'ye, anything ye sal seek o' my Faither in my name, he wull gie ye.

24. "Till this time hae ye socht for 2 naething in my name: seek, and ye sal hae; that ye may hae rowth o' joy.

25. "Thir things hae I gien ye, as it war, in parables; but the time is at haun that I speak nae mair to ye in parables, but sal schaw ye plainly o' the Faither.

26. "Than sal ye seek in my name; and I say-na I wull pray to the Faither for ye—

27. "For the Faither his ain sel lo'es ye, for that ye hae lo'ed me, and hae lippened that I cam oot frae God.

1 V. 8. Tak ye tent here, hoo the Spirit labors wi' every man in the world! Nae ane can say, "The Spirit nevir spak to me;" nae mair than a man can say, "Jesus didna dee for me!"

2 V. 24. Hoo dour to learn that it was throwe him they were to look for a' things! Eftirhaun, they, nae mair nor corses, ever thocht o' askin for any-thing, unless throwe him!
28. "I cam frae the Faither, and am come to the warld; again, I lea' the warld, and gang to the Faither."
29. Quo' the disciples to him, "Aye, noo ye speak to us plain, and divna' speak to us in parables!"
30. "Noo see we weel that ye ken a' things, and need-nà ony ane to spair at ye: by this token we ken ye 'cam forth frae God!"
31. Jesus answer't, "Dae ye noo believe?"
32. "Tak tent! the 'oor is at haun—aye, is e'en noo here—that ye sal be a'skail't, ilka man awa to his ain, and sal lea' me alone: and yet I am no'er alone, for the Faither is aye wi' me.
33. "But thir things hae I said t'ye, that ye micht hae peace. I' the warld ye hae dool and sorrow eneuch; but blythely haut yersels; I hae grippit the warld, and putten it doon."

CHAPTR SEEVENTEEN.
The prayer to tak wi' us when we wad prevail. O to he ane wi' him, as he wad hae us!
SAE spak Jesus, and than liftit up his eën aboon, and said, "Faither, the 'oor is here! Glorify thy Son, sae that thy Son soud e'en glorify thee;"
2. "E'en as thou hast gien him authoritie ower a' leevin, that he micht gie Life-for-Aye till as mony as thou hast gien him.
3. "And here is Life-for-Aye, that they soud ken thee, wha art the true God aboon, and Jesus the Christ, sent by thee.
4. "Thee hae I glorify't on the yirth; I hae wrocht the wark thou gied me to do.
5. "And noo, O my Faither! glorify me Aboon wi' thysel', e'en wi' the glorie I bure wi' thee afore a' warlds!"
6. "I hae schawn forth thy name to the men thou did gie me oot frae the warld: they war thine, and o' thine ain thou did gie me: and they hae keepit thy word.
7. "And they hae come to ken that a' things thou hast gien me are o' thysel'.
8. "For I hae gien them the words thou gied me; and they hae taen them ben to them, and stievely ken that I cam forth frae thee; and they hae lippened that thou sent me.
9. "For them I pray; no for the warld, but for them thou g'ist me; for they are thy ain.
10. "And a' things mine are thine; and a' things thine are mine; and I in them am glorify't!"
11. "And now I am nae mair i' the warld; I come ben to thee! but thir bide i' the warld. Faither aye holie! keep by thy ain name's micht a' thou g'ist me, that they may be ane, e'en as we are ane!
12. "The time I was wi' them i' the warld, I keepit them i' thy name; thae thou gied me I keepit, and nae o' them is tint, savin only the son o' the pit: that the Scriptur micht be carry't oot.
13. "And noo, hame to thee come I! And a' thir things I speak i' the warld, sae as my joy micht come to pass in them.
14. "Thy word hae I gien them; and the warld has ill-wulled them, for that they 1 arena o' the world's ain: e'en as I am-na o' the world's ain.
15. "I pray na they soud be taen oot o' the warld, but that thou keep them frae the ill o't.
16. "For they are-na o' the warld's ain, e'en as I am-na o' the warld's ain.
17. "Consecrate them throwe thy truth; thy word is truth.
18. "As thou did pit me intil the warld, e'en sae hae I putten them intil the warld.
19. "And for them I consecrate

1 V. 14. The warld has aye ill-wulled and despised thee that warna like iesel! To be misca'd by the warld, is gey aften a token o' grace.
myself, that eke they sould be conse-
crate i' the truth.
20. "Noo for thir, allernarie, dae
I pray; but eke for them wha sal
lippin me throwe their tellin.
21. "That a' they may be ane;
e'en as thou, Faither, in me, and I in
them, that they may be ane in us;
sae as the world may ken that thou
sent me.
22. "And the glorie thou gied me,
I hae e'en gien them; sae as they
may indeed be ane, e'en as we are
but ane.
23. "I in them, and thou in me;
that they may be perfite in ane; and
that a' the world may ken that thou
sent me, and has love to them, e'en
as thou hast love to me.
24. "Faither, I wad mair, that
they wham thou gies me, soud be wi'
me whaur I bide; that they may set
seen on my glorie whilk thou has gien
me; for thou lo'ed me 'or the funda-
ton o' the yirth.
25. "O Faither o' a' Richt! the
world hasna kent thee; but I hae
kent thee; and thir hae come to ken
that thou sent me outh.
26. "And I hae deponed to them
thy word, and well depon; sae as
the love—e'en like sic as thou has
for me—may be within them, and I
myself within them."

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.
Betrayed by Judas; disowned by Peter;
and forsaken o' the lave. Jesus, strang
in his ain innocence, staunds afore Pilate.

THIR things bein said, Jesus gaed
oot wi' his disciples, ower the
burn Kedron, whaur was a gairden,
intil whilk he enter't, wi' his disciples.
2. But Judas as weil, wha was
betrayin him, kent the place; for
Jesus aft forgather't thar wi' his
disciples.
3. Sae Judas, ha'in a band o' men
gien to him, wi' officers frae mang the
Heigh-priests and Pharisees, comes
yonder, wi' bowets and wapins.

4. But Jesus, kennis a' things that
sould come to him, gands forrit and
says to them, "Wham seek ye?"
5. They answer't him, "Jesus, the
Nazarene." He says to them, "I
am he!" Noo, Judas, wha was
betrayin him, stude amang them.
6. Whan, than, he had said to
them, "I am he!" they stoot'er
backline, and fell to the grun.
7. Than again he speir't at them,
"Wham seek ye?" And they said,
"Jesus the Nazarene."
8. Jesus answer't, "I hae tauld ye
I am he; gin tharfor ye seek me, lat
thir gang their ways."
9. That the word might come to
pass whilk he said, "Thae thou gied
me I hae keepit, and nane o' them is
tint."
10. Simon Peter, ha'in than a
sword, drew it, and strack the Heigh-
priest's servin-man, and sned aff his
richt lug. The servin-man's name
was Malchus.
11. Than cry't Jesus to Peter,
"Sheath the sword! The cup my
Faither has gien me, sal I no
drink it?"
12. Than the band, and the
Captain, and the officers o' the Jews,
grippit Jesus, and bund him;
13. And cairry't him to Annas at
first, for he was gude-faither to Cai-
aphas, wha was Heigh-priest that year.
14. Noo it was Caiaphas wha gied
counsel to the Jews, that it was
profitable that ane sould dee for the
lave o' the nation.
15. Noo Simon Peter and the ither
disciple war followin Jesus; that dis-
ciple was kent o' the Heigh-priest,
and gaed in wi' Jesus intil the Coort
o' the Heigh-priest.
16. But Peter was at the door, oot-
by. Than gaed oot the ither dis-
ciple, and spak to the porteress, and
brocht in Peter.
17. Than said the maid (the
porteress) to Peter, "Are ye, too, o' this man's disciples?" Quo' Peter,
"I am no!"
18. And the servin-men and officers stude thar, ha' in made an ingle wi' coals, for it was cauld; and they warmed their sel's; and Peter, as wee, was wi' them, and stude and warmed his sel.

19. The Heigh-priest than speir't at Jesus, anent his disciples, and anent his teachin.

20. Jesus answer't him, "Wi' a' plainness o' speech I spak to the world. I was aye teacin' i' the kirk and i' the temple, whaur a' the folk aye gang; and hidlines I hae said naething.

21. "Why dae ye speir at me? Speir at tha' that heard me, what I tell't them? They a' ken what I said!"

22. And syne whan he had sae said, ane o' the officers staunin by, gied Jesus a daud wi' his loof, sayin, "Dae ye answer sae the Heigh-priest?"

23. Jesus answer't to him, "Gin I hae said ill, bear ye witness o' the ill; but if no, why dae ye clour me?"

24. Noo Annas sent him bun' to Caiaphas the Heigh-priest.

25. But Simon Peter stood warmin his sel. They said to him, "Are na ye a' o' his disciples?" He denied, sayin, "I am no!"

26. Ane o' the Heigh-priest's servants, a freend o' him whase lug Peter sned aff, says, "Did I no see ye i' the gairden wi' him?"

27. Than Peter denied again; and at ance the cock craw'd.

28. Than took they Jesus frae Caiaphas intill the Judgment-ha'; and it was early: and they their sel's gaed-na intill the Judgment-ha', that they soudna be desfiled—saec as they could eat the Pasche.

29. Pilate then gaed oot to them, and says, "What dae ye wyte this man wi'?"

30. They answer't, and quo' they, "Gin he war-na an ill-doer, we wad-na hae gien him ower to ye."
CHAPTER NINETEEN.

His croon the thorns; his thron the cross; his couch the tomb—but none the less a King! A when weel-wishers come forrit.

THAN Pilate took Jesus, and had him scourged.

2. And the sodgers wrocht a croon oot o' thorns, to pit on his heid; and they cleidit him in a purple robe.

3. And quo' they, "Hail, King o' the Jews!" And they daudit him wi' their hauns.

4. Sae Pilate gangs forth again, and quo' he to them, "Look, I feech him forth t'ye, sae as ye may ken I find nae faut in him!"

5. Than Jesus cam forth, wearin the croon o' thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate cry't to them, "Look at the man!"

6. Whan the Heigh-priests and the officers saw him, they cry't oot, "Crucify! Crucify!" Pilate says to them, "Tak ye him to crucify; for I find nae faut in him!"

7. The Jews answer't, "We hae oor ain law, and aneath oor law he soud dee, for that he makes his sel God's Son!"

8. Whan Pilate heard that sayin, he was a' the mair fley't.

9. And gaed again intil the Judgment ha', and says to Jesus, "Whaur are ye frae?" But Jesus answer't-him-na.

10. Than quo' Pilate to him, "Dae ye no speak tae me? Dae ye no ken I hae poer to crucify ye, and poer to lat ye gang?"

11. Jesus answer't, "Ye coul hae nae poer ava again me, gin it warne gien ye frae Aboon: sae he wha deliver't me to ye has the chief sin."

12. And frae that oot, Pilate wad fain louswed him; but the Jews cry't oot, "Gin ye lat this man gang, ye arena Cesar's freend; ilka ane that mak oot his sel a king, speaks contrar to Cesar!"

13. When Pilate heard that, he brocht Jesus forth, and sat his sel doon in the Judgment-seat, in a place ca'd "The Plainstanes," but i' the Hebrew, "Gabbatha."

14. And it was the preparation-day o' the Pasche, and aboot the steadfast oor o' the day; and quo' he to the Jews, "Look at yere King!"

15. But they cry't oot, "Awa, awa wi' him! Crucify him!" Quo' Pilate to them, "Wad I crucify yere King?" The Heigh-priests reply't, "We hae nae King but Cesar!"

16. Than he gied him up to them to be crucify't. And they took Jesus, and led him awa.

17. And he, cairryin his cross, gaed forth intil a place ca'd "The Skull," whilk same is ca'd i' the Hebrew, "Golgotha."

18. Whaur they crucify't him; and wi' him ither twa, here and yonder, and Jesus atween.

19. And forby, Pilate wraite a title, and pat it on the cross. Noo thar was putten on't, "Jesus the Nazarene, the King o' the Jews."

20. And it was sae that a bantle o' the Jews read this title; for the bit whaur Jesus was crucify't was nar-haun the citie; and it was written i' the Hebrew, and eke i' the Latin and Greek.

21. Than quo' the Heigh-priests o' the Jews to Pilate, "Dinna write 'King o' the Jews,' but 'He said, 'I'm King o' the Jews!'"

22. Pilate answer't, "What I hae written, I hae written!"

23. Than the sodgers, whan they had crucify't Jesus, took his cledin, and made it a' intil fowr pairs, to ilka ane, ane—and his inner coat as weel. Noo the inner coat was wantin ony seam; a' wrocht in ae piece frae the tap doon.

24. They said ane till anither,

1 V. 14. The feck o' the MSS. say "saxt"; a wee whem o' them only, say "third." But we canna help thinkin it was nine o'clock o' oor time, and that a wee bit error has cruppen intil the text. See the ither Evangelists.
"It is finished!"

JOHN, XX.

35. And he wha beheld it, has gien witness; and his witness is truth; that ye might believe.

36. For these things came about that the Scripture should be fulfilled, "No a bane o' his sal be broken!"

37. And ance mair, anither Scripture, "They sal look on him they hae pierced!"

38. And efter thir things, Joseph o' Arimathea (himsel a disciple o' Jesus), craved Pilate that he micht tak a' Jesus' body; and Pilate loot him sae dae. Syne he cam, and took a' the corp.

39. And eke cam Nicodemus (he wha at the first cam to him by nicht), bringin a hantle o' myrrh and aloes, throwe-ither; aboot a hunner-wecht.

40. Sae they took the body o' Jesus, and row't it i' the linen wi' the spices; as is the maimer o' the Jews wi' the deid.

41. Noo at the bit whaur he was crucify't was a gairden; and i' the gairden a new-made tomb, in whilk man was ne'er yet laid.

42. Thar, than, laid they Jesus, on accoont o' the Preparation o' the Jews; for the tomb was nar-by.

CHAPTER TWENTY.

"Joy comes i' the mornin!" Mary Magdalene, Peter, and Tammes; but Tammes was doun aboot believin.

BUT on the first day o' the week, Mary o' Magdala comes ear'—for it was yet mirk—to the tomb; and she sees the stane taen awa frae the tomb.

2. Than she rins, and gaes to Simon Peter, and to the ither disciple wham Jesus lo'ed, and says to them, "They hae ta'en awa my Lord oot o' the tomb, and we kenna whaur they hae laid him!"

3. Sae Peter gaed oot, and the ither disciple, to gang to the tomb.

4. And they ran baith thegither; and the ither ane ootran Peter, and cam first to the tomb.

1 V. 34. Gin the pericardium was fu' o' clottit blude and watir, the heart maun has been burs'n. And gin he has t' o' a literal broken heart, and no the ordinar lingerin death o' the crucifixion, gat-he-na his prayer aboot the "cup passin frae him"! (Mark xiv. 36, and note); and "fell-he-na intil the hauns o' the Lord, and no intil the hauns o' men"? (II. Sam. xxiv. 14).
5. And he, loutin doon, saw the linen claihys lyin; but he gaed-na in.
6. Than Peter comes, aftir him, and gaed intil the tomb, and saw the linen claihys lyin;
7. And the naipkin that was rowt aboot his heid, no lyin wi' the linen claihys, but rowt up in a place by itself.
8. And than gaed in the ither disciple wha cam first to the tomb; and he saw, and believ't.
9. Fur till noo they kent-na' the Scripture, that he soud rise frae'mang the deid.
10. The disciples than gaed awa again to their ain hame.
11. But Mary stood oot-by, at the tomb, and gretin; and as she grat, she loutit doon, and peer't intil the tomb.
12. And saw twa Angels in white, sittin, ane at the heid, and the tither at the fit, whaur the corp o' Jesus had been laid.
13. And they say to her, "Wumman, why gretin sae?" She says to them, "For that they hae taen awa my Lord, and I kenna whaur they hae laid him!"
14. Sayin this, she turned aboot, and saw Jesus staunin, and kent-na that it was Jesus.
15. Jesus spak to her, "Wumman, why gretin sae? Wham dae ye seek?" She, takin him to be the gair'dener, says to him, "Sir, gin ye hae cairry't him awa, tell me whaur ye hae laid him, and I'll tak him awa."
16. Jesus says to her, "Mary!"
17. She turned hersel, and cries oot, "Rabboni!" as muckle as to say, "Maister!"
18. Jesus says to her, "Stay-men! for I am-na yet gane up to the Faither; but gang ye to my brethren, and tell them, 'I gang up to my Faither and yere Faither, and to my God and yere God!'

18. Mary Magdalene cam and tell't the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had said thir things to her.
19. Than, the same day at e'en—the first day o' the week—whan the doors war steekit whar they war gaither't, for dreed o' the Jews, cam Jesus, and stude i' the mids, and said to them, "Peace be t'ye!"
20. And whan he had said this, he schawed them his hauns and his side. Than the disciples rejoiced, seein the Lord.
21. Than said Jesus to them again, "Peace be t'ye! As the Faither has sent me, e'en sae send I you!"
22. And whan he had sae said, he breathed-ooot on them, and says to them, "Receive ye the Holf Spirit!"
23. "Whase sins ye forgie, they sal be forg'i'en to them! and whase sins ye retain, they are retained to them."
24. But Tammas, ane o' the Twal', the ane ca'd "The Twin," wasna wi' them when Jesus cam.
25. The ither disciples than said to him, "We hae seen the Lord!" But he said to them, "Gin I see-na in his hauns the prent o' the nails, and gin I pit-na my fing'er intil his side, I canna believe!"
26. And aftir an aucht-days again, his disciples war in, and Tammas wi' them, Jesus comes—the doors being steekit—and stude i' the mids, and says, "Peace be t'ye!"
27. Than says he to Tammas, "Rax oot yere finger, and see my hauns; and rax here yere haun, and pit it intil my side; and be-na dootin, but believin!"
28. And Tammas, answerin, said to him, "My Lord! and my God!"

\[V. 11. Like a rainbow throwes the rain, Mary saw in her tears what Peter and John saw-na wi' plain vision!\]
The disciples gang fishin.

29. Jesus says to him, "Tammas! for that ye hae seen me, ye believe; happy they wha haena seen me, and yet believe!"

30. And mony ither ferlies maist truly did Jesus afores his disciples, whilk arena putten doon i' this buik.

31. But thir are putten doon, that ye sould believe that Jesus is the Christ; and believin, ye micht hae life in his name.

CHAPITIR TWENTY-ANE.

Peter, Tammas, and a wher-n mair, at the Loch o' Tiberias. Jesus eats meat wi' them; and sets Peter richt again.

EFTIR thir things, Jesus schawed his sel' again to the disciples at the Loch o' Tiberias; and he schawed his sel' thos.—

2. Thar war thegither Simon Peter, and Tammas, ca'd "The Twin," and Nathaniel o' Galilee-Cana, and they o' Zebedee, and twa ither o' the disciples.

3. Simon Peter says to them, "I gang to the fishin!" Quo' they to him, "We, too, gang wye!" They gaed oot, and enter't intil the boat; and that night they tuik naething.

4. But whan the morn was dawin, Jesus stood on the strand; but his disciples kent-na that it was Jesus.

5. Than said Jesus to them, "Bairns, hae ye aiblins ocht to eat?" They answer't him "Na!"

6. He said to them, "Cast ye the net on the richt side o' the boat, and ye sal fin'!" Sae they cuist, and noo they couldna draw't for the rowth o' fish.

7. Noo that disciple whom Jesus lo'ed says to Peter, "It is the Lord!" As sune as Peter heard it was the Lord, he bund his coat aboot him—for he was strippit—and cuist his sel' intil the sea.

8. And the ither disciples cam wi' the wee boat (for they warra far frae lan', but some fifty faddoms aff), trailin the net o' fish.

9. As sune as they cam to the lan', they see an ingle o' coals thar, and fish ower it; and breid.

10. Jesus says to them, "Bring some o' the fish ye hae noo ta'en!"

11. Simon Peter gaed up, and fesh't the net to lan'; fu' o' muckle fish, a hunner and fifty-thrie; and yet for a' they war sae mony, the net wasna riven.

12. Jesus says to them, "Come awa and eat!" And no ane o' them ventur't to speir at him, "Wha are ye?" kennis it was the Lord.

13. Jesus comes, and takes the breid, and gies them; and the fish as weil.

14. This is e'en the third time Jesus shawed his sel' to his disciples, eftir he was risen frae the dead.

15. Sae whan they had eaten, Jesus says to Simon Peter, "Simon, son o' John! Love ye mair than thir do?" He says to him, "Aye, Lord! thou kens I treasur thee!" He says to him, "Feed my wee lambs!"

16. He says to him again, a second time, "Simon, son o' John! Love ye me?" He says to him, "Aye, Lord! thou kens I treasur thee!" He says to him, "Herd my sheep!"

17. He says to him the third time, "Simon, son o' John! treasur ye me?" Peter was wae that he said to him the third time, "Treasur ye me?" And he said to him, "Lord! thou kens a' things; thou weel kens I treasur thee?" Jesus says to him, "Feed my purr sheep!"

18. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Whan ye war young, ye girt yersel, and stappit oot whaur ye wad; but whan ye sal be auld, ye sal rax oot yere hauns, and anither sal gird ye, and cairry ye whaur ye wad-na."

19. Thus spak he, to signify by whatna 1 death he sould glorify God.

---

1 V. 19. John, it is maist like, wurt his Gospel eftir Peter's death; and the tale o' his crucifixion that has come doon to us, may be fecklie true; it evens weel wi' verse 18.
And when he had said this, he says to him, "Follow ye me!"

20. Peter, turnin aboot, sees the disciple whom Jesus lo'ed followin, the ane wha leant again his breist at supper, and said, "Lord! wha is't that betrays thee?"

21. Peter, seein him, says to Jesus, "Lord! and this man, what o' him?"

22. Jesus says to him, "Gin I wull that he wait till I come, what is't to you? Ye follow me!"

23. This sayin then gaed oot amang the brethren, that that disciple was na to dee. But Jesus said-nà, "He sanna dee!" but "Gin I wull that he wait till I come, what is't to you?"

24. This is the disciple that testifies o' thir things, and penned thir things, and we ken that his testimonie is true.

25. And mony ither things are thar that Jesus did; sae that gin aiblins they war to be penned every ane, I tak it that e'en the warld itsel wadna haud the buiks that wad needs be penned.
CHAPTIR ANE.

Luke dedicates a second buik to his friend.

Peter and the lave wad pit ane in Judas' place.

THE first historie I made, O Theophilus, anent a' that Jesus be-
gude baih to do and to teach,

2. Till whatna day he was taen up, eftr that he had by the Holie Spirit
gien commando to the Apostles he
had wailed oot;

3. And to whom be shawed his
sel leevin eftr his sufferers, by mony
sure and certain tokens, appearin to
them throwe forty days, and speakin
o' the things anent the kingdom o' God.

4. And companyin wi' them,
chaired them no to gang awa frae
Jerusalem, but to bide for the promise
o' the Faither, "Whilk," quo' he, "ye
hae heard o' me.

5. "For in sooth John bapteez't
wi' watir, but ye sal be bapteez't in
Holie Spirit no mony days frae noo!"

6. And sae they, when they cam
thegether, speir't at him, "Lord, do
thou at this time bring back the king-
dom to Isral?"

7. And he said to them, "It isna
for you to ken times and seasons,
whilk the Faither has keepit in his
ain haun.

8. "But ye sal hae streth, eftr
the Holie Spirit is come to ye; and
ye sal be witnesses for me baih in
Jerusalem, and in a' Judea and
Samaria, and to the far-aews' ends o'
the yirth."

9. And when he had said thir
things, while they war lookin on,
he was liftit up; and a clud happit
him oot o' their sicht.

10. And while they lookit, peerin
intil the heevens, as he gaed up, twa
men stude by them in white cleedin;

11. Wha said, "Ye men frae Gal-
ilee! why staun ye peerin intil the
lift? The same Jesus, wha has been
ta'en frae you intil Heevens, sal come
in like manner as ye hae seen him
gang intil Heevens."

12. Than to Jerusalem they re-
turned frae the Mount Olivet, whilk
is narn-aun Jerusalem—a Sabbath-
day's journey aff.

13. And when they enter't, they
gaed up intil the laft, whaur they
bade; baih Peter, and John, and
James, and Andro, Philip and Tam-
mas, Bartholomie and Matthew,
James (he o' Alpheus), and Simon
the Zealot, and Judas o' James.

14. Thae a' bade wi' as mind in
prayer; wi' certain weemen; and
Mary, Jesus' mither, and wi' his
brothers.

15. And i' thae days stude Peter
up i' the mids o' the brethren, and
said (thar war a hantle o' folk the-
gither—about sax score),

16. "Men, brethren! the Scriptur
needit to be brocht to pass, whilk the
Holie Spirit i' Danvid spak afore,
aneat Judas, wha airtit thae that
grippit Jesus.

17. "For he was countit wi' us,
and had gien to him a part in this
service.

18. ("Noo this ane gaither't to
him a field oot o' the reward o'
iniquity; and fa'in heidlang, he brak
throwe i' the mids, and a' his inwarts
teeemed oot.

19. "And it was kent till a' the
folk o' Jerusalem; sae that yon field
they ca'd 'Aceldama,' or The Field
o' Blude.)

20. "For it is putten doon i' the
buik o' the Psalms, 'Lat his dwellin
be desolate, and nae man bide therein;
and his overseein lat anither ane
tak.'
21. "Sae, oot o’ the men wha hae cuisten in their lot wi’ us, a’ the days the Lord Jesus was ower us—gaun in and oot—
22. "Beginnin at the Bapteezin’ o’ John, to the day he was taen up frae us, ane o’ thae bude be a witness wi’ us o’ his Risin."
23. And they pat twa forrit; Joseph, ca’d Barsabas, and wha was forenamed “Justus”—and Matthias.
24. And prayin, they said, “Lord, thou wha kens the hearts o’ a’, lat it be kent whilk ane o’ thir twa thou dost wale oot,
25. “To tak the place in this service and apostleship, frae whilk Judas gaed agley, that he might gang to his ain place.”
26. And they gied oot their lots for them; and the fa’ was for Matthias; and he was coontit in ane wi’ the Eleeven.

CHAPTIR TWA.
The wondrous day o’ Pentecost. A’ folk hear the word o’ their ain tongue. Many brocht in; and they a’ bide thegither in love.

AND whan the day o’ Pentecost was come aboot, they were a’ thegither in as place.
2. And a’ of a suddent cam’ the sough o’ a mighty rushin’ wun’, and it filled a’ the place whaur they sat;
3. And thar was seen amang them like dividit tongues o’ fire, on ilka ane o’ them.
4. And they war a’ fu’ o’ the 2 Holie Spirit, and spak wi’ ither tongues, as the Spirit gied them words.
5. Noo thar war bidin at Jerusalem gude men oot o’ a’ kintries ‘neath the skies.
6. And whan the sough o’ this gat oot, the thrang cam a’ thegither, and kent-na what to think, when they heard them spreak, ilka man in his ain tongue.

7. And they war sair amazed, and ferlied, sayin, “Arena a’ thae that speak folk o’ Galilee!"
8. “And hoo is’t we hear ilk in oor ain tongue in whilk we war born?”
9. “Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the folk wha bide in Messapotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia,
10. “In Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and frae Lyibia aboot Cyrene, and visitors frae Rome, and eke Jews, and proselytes,
11. “Cretans and Arabians—we hear them speakin in oor ain tongues o’ God’s wunner-warks!"
12. And they war a’ amazed, and in a swither, sayin ane to anither, “What maun a’ this be?”
13. But some, jeerin, said, “Thir men hae been made fu’ wi’ new wine!”
14. But Peter, staunin up, wi’ the Eleeven, lift up his voice, and quo’ be, “Men, Jews! and a’ ye wha dwall at Jerusalem! be this kent t’ye a’: and gie ye hearin to my words!”
15. “For thir arena drucken, as ye jalouse, it bein but nine o’clock.
16. “But this is what was spoken by Joel the prophet:
17. “‘And it sal be i’ the hinnemast days, says God, I teem oot my Spirit on a’ flesh; and yere sons and yere dochters sal prophesie, and yere young men sal see visions, and yere auld men sal dream their dreams.
18. “‘And e’en on my servitors and my handmaids i’ thae days sal I teem oot o’ my Spirit; and they sal prophesie.
19. “‘And I sal gie ferlies i’ the lift aboon, and tokens i’ the yirth under; blude and fire-flauchts, and blindin reek.

V. 21. This gars us see thar was a bantle o’ followers and weel-wishers forby the Twal! Folk whiles mak the Elijah, thinkin thar are few or nane o’ the godly to the fore (1. Kings, xix. 10).
V. 4. Jesus promis’t that when he gaed awa hame, he wad send them the Holie Spirit. And noo they wad ken the Maister had gotten his ain, and was safe at hame, when the promise cam!
20. "The sun salt turn to mirkness, and the mune to blude, afore the comin' o' the day o' the Lord— the great and notable day!
21. "And it salt be, that ilka ane wha sal ca' on the name o' the Lord sal be saved!"
22. "Ye men o' Israel! hear thir words! Jesus the Nazarene, a man sullen apairt amang ye by wunner-warks, and ferlies and tokens, whilk God wrocht by him amang ye; as ye ken yer sels,
23. "Him, bein' (i' the marked-oot coonsel and fore-kennin o' God) deliver't up, ye by the bauns o' lawless ahes haes crucify't and slain.
24. "Wham God raised up, lowsin the stoun's o' death; for it coudna be possible he soud be hauden o't.
25. "For Dauvid spak anent him: 'I saw the Lord, aye forntent me; for he is at my richt haun that I soudna trimle:
26. "'Sae was my heart blythe, and my tongue rejoic't; aye, and maer, my flesh sal eke bide in hope:
27. "'For thou winna desert my saul i' the place o' spirits, nor will thou gie thy Holie Ane to see corruption.
28. "'Thou did mak me to ken the paths o' life; thou shalt mak me fu' o' joy i' thy presence.'
29. "Men! Brethren! may I no speak freely t'ye o' the patriarch Dauvid, that he, his sel, baith deet and was bur't, and his tomb is amang us to this day!
30. "But bein' a prophet, and kennin that God had sworn wi' an aith to him, that amang his bairns Ane soud sit on his thron;
31. "He, forseen this, spak o' the Risin-Again o' Christ; that naither his saul was desertit i' the place o' spirits, nor his flesh saw corruption.
32. "This Jesus has God raised up; and we are a' witnesses o't.
33. "Sae, bein' by God's richt haun up-liftit, and winnin frae the Faither the promise o' the Holie Spirit, he has shed forth this whilk ye noo see and hear.
34. "For Dauvid ascendit-na intil the Heevens; but his sel said, 'The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou at my richt haun,
35. "'Till I mak a fit-brod o' thy face!'
36. "Noo than, lat a' Israel's house ken for a certaintie, that God has made him baith Maister and Anointit—this Jesus, wham ye crucify't.'
37. And when they heard this, they war struck to the heart, and said to Peter and the lave o' the Apostles, "Men! Brethren! what are we to do?"
38. And Peter said, "Repent ye, and be bapteez't i' the name o' Jesus Christ—for the pittin-awa' o' yere sins; and ye sal win the gift o' the Holie Spirit.
39. "For the promise is to you, and your bairns, and to a' thae farawa; e'en to as mony as the Lord oor God may ca' to him.'
40. And wi' mony mair words testif'y't he, sayin, "Deliver yersels frae this thrawart generation!"
41. Than they that welcomed his word till them war bapteez't; and that day war addit aboot three thousand sauls.
42. And they bade steive i' the teachin' o' the Apostles, and in fellowship, in the breckin o' breid, and i' the prayers.
43. And fear fell on ilka ane; and mony war the wunner-warks and tokens throwe the Apostles.
44. And a'the believin anes war the-gither, and had a' things throwe-ither.
45. And they sell't their mailins and baddins, and portioned a' oot, as ony ane had need.
46. And day by day, bidin aye the-gither i'the Temple, and breckin breid frae house to house they did tak their meat wi' blythe and aseafuld hearts;
47. Laudin God, and haein gude-wull o' a' the folk. And the Lord addit daily o' the saved.
CHAPITIR THRIE.
The lameter at the "Bonnie" yet. The fearless preachin o' Peter. Nae mair denials noo.
Noo Peter and John war gaun into the Temple for the 'oor o' prayer: thrie o'clock.
2. And a lameter, feckless frae his mither's womb, was 'en noo carryt; whom they set doon daily at the yet that is ca'd "Bonnie"; to seek awmous frae thae gaun until the Temple;
3. Wha, seein Peter and John gaun forrit to the Temple, socht frae them an awmous.
4. And Peter, settin his een on him—and sae did John—said to him, "Look ye on us!"
5. But he was mindin them, as lookin for something frae them.
6. Than Peter said, "Siller-and-gowd bide-na wi' me; but what I hae gie I t'ye! In the name o' Jesus Christ o' Nazareth, rise ye, and gang!"
7. And he took him by the richt haun, and strauchtit him up; and strenth com intil his feet and cuitbanes.
8. And lowpin up, he stude, and gaed. And he gaed wi' them intil the Temple; gangin, and lowpin, and gian praise to God.
9. And a' the folk saw him, gangin, and laudin God.
10. And they saw and kent that it was he that sat at the "Bonnie" yet o' the Temple; and they war a' fu' o' wunner and misdoot at what had be-faun him.
11. And as the lameter that was made bale gippit Peter and John, a' the folk panged thegither about them in the porch ca'd "Solomon's Porch," unco fu' o' wunner.
12. And whan Peter saw this, he spak: "Ye men o' Isra'il! whafor ferlie ye at this man? or glower sae at us as gin by some poorer or holiness o' oor ain we had gar't this man to gang!"
24. "Aye, and a' the prophets, frae Samu'al and a' that follow't, as mony as spak, tell't o' thir days.

25. "Ye are the beirns o' the prophets, and o' the covenant that God covenanit wi' oor faitheris, sayin to Abr'm, 'And in yere ain seed sal a' the hoosehaults o' the yirth be bless'd!'

26. "To ye first, God, raisin up his Son, sent him blessin ye, in yere turnin awa, ilk ane o' ye, frae yere sins!"

CHAPITIR FOUR.

The Apostles afore the Council. They pray, no for safety, but for faith and bravery; and the very yirth trimies as God says, "Aye!"

AND, as they war speakin to the folk, thar cam on them the priests, and the Captain o' the Temple, and the Sadducees;

2. Bein sair put-aboot that they sould be teachin the folk, and preachin throwe Jesus the Risin-Again frae the deid.

3. And they grippit them, and pat them in ward till the morn; for it was noo the gloamin.

4. But mony o' thae that heard the word believed; and the number o' the men cam to be aboot fyve thousand.

5. And, it cam, on the morn, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6. Wi' Annas the Heigh-priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and a' the lave o' the Heigh-priest's kin, war gaither't thegither in Jerusalem.

7. And when they had putten them i' the mids, they speir't, "By whatna poore, or whatna name, bae ye dune this?"

8. Than Peter, fu' o' the Holie Spirit, answert, "Ye rulers o' the nation, and elders!

9. "Gin we be this day taen to task anent the gude deed dune to the feckless man, by whose hauns he is made hale,

10. "Be it kent till ye a', and till a' the nation o' Isra'el, that i' the name o' Jesus Christ o' Nazareth, that ye crucify't, wham God raised frae the deid, e'ien by him this man stauns afore ye hale.

11. "Here is the stane lichtlied by ye that bigg, and it is made the copin o' the corner.

12. "And thar is salvation in nae ither; for thar isna anither name 'neath the skies gien to men, whaurby we maun' be saved."

13. Noo, whan they saw the boldness o' Peter and John, and detectit that they wantit lear, and war common folk, they ferlied at them; and they took tent that they had been wi' Jesus.

14. And seein the man that was made hale staunin wi' them, they could say nae mair again it.

15. But, ordering them oot o' the Court, they coonsell't amang their sels,

16. Sayin, "What are we to do wi' thir men? for indeed that a great wunner-wark has been dune by them, is noo weel kent to a' the folk o' Jerusalem; and we canna lichtli it;

17. "But sae as it spreads abroad nae far'er amang the folk, let us stricklie chaireg them to speak to nae man i' this name, frae this oot."

18. And they ca'd them in, and gied them the sweeping chaireg no to speak ava, nor to teach, i' the name o' Jesus.

19. But Peter and John, answerin said, "Gin it be richt for us to list to you, mair than to God, judge yersells!"

20. "For we canna forbear speakin oot the things we hae seen and heard!"

21. And whan they had gien them mair warnin, they loot them gang, no seein hoo they cou'd punish them, on account o' the folk; for a' glorify't God for what was dune.

22. For the man on whom this ferlie o' healin was wrought, was mair nor forty year auld.

23. And bein let gang, they cam to
their ain folk, and gaed ower a’ that the Heigh-priests and the elders had said.

24. And they, when they heard it, risit up their voice to God wi’ a heart, sayin, “Soveran Ane! thou that did mak the heven and the yirth, and the sea, and a’ things in the same,

25. “Wha, by the Holie Spirit, by the mou’ o’ Dauvid 1 thy servant, said, ‘Why raged the nations? and the folk wi’ their minds fu’ o’ feckless things?’

26. “The kings o’ the yirth stude up, and the rulers forgather’t, again the Lord, and again his Anointit Ane.’

27. “For o’ a truth they war gaither’t in this citie, again thy Holy Ane Jesus, that thou did anoint, baith Herod and Pontius Pilate, wi’ Gentiles and folk o’ Isral;

28. “To do what thy haun and thy mind had markit-oot aforehaun to come to pass.

29. “And as to things e-noo, Lord, look hoo they wis daunton us! and gie to thy servants a bauldness to speak thy word;

30. “E’en while thou sae rax oot thy haun to heal; and that tokens and ferlies may be dune i’ the name o’ thy Holie Ane, Jesus.”

31. And when they had prayed, the hoose trimlit’ thaur they war gaither’t; and ane-and-a’ o’ them war fu’ o’ the Holie Spirit; and they spak the word o’ God wi’ a’ bravery.

32. And a’ the thrang o’ them wha believed war o’ ae heart and ae saul; and nae man said ocht o’ his haddin or his plenshin, was his ain; but they had a’ things throwe-ither.

33. And the Apostles, wi’ great poorer, gae witness o’ the Risin-Again

o’ the Lord Jesus; and muckle love was bidin on them.

34. Neither was thar ony amang them that wantit; for as mony as aucht hooses or grund sell’t them, and brocht the prices o’ what they sell’t,

35. And pat them doon afore the Apostles’ feet; and a proportion was gien to every ane, as ilk ane had want.

36. And Joseph, wha was ca’d Barnabas (that is, the Son o’ Gude-Guidin), a Levite, a man o’ Cyprus,

37. Haein a bit grund, sell’t it, and brocht the siller, and pat it doon at the Apostle’s feet.

CHAPTER FYVE.

Ananias and Sapphira: wha could hae gien as little or as muckle as they liket, but lee’t about the siller.

NOO a certain man, Ananias, wi’ Sapphira his wife, sell’t a propriety.

2. And keepit some o’ the siller hidlins, his wife kennin o’t, and brocht some o’it, and pat it doon at the Apostles’ feet.

3. And Peter said, “Ananias! Whaurfor has Santan fill’t yer heart, to play fause to the Holie Spirit, and to keep hidlins some o’ the siller frae the grund?

4. “Whiles ye had it, was’t no yere ain? And whan ye sell’t it, was’t no i’ yere ain haun? Hoo hae ye imagin’ thir things in yere heart? for ye didna deal fause-hearrit wi’ men, but wi’ God!”

5. And Ananias, hearin thir words, fell doon and dee’t; and muckle fear fell on a’ that heard.

6. And the young men raise, and row’t him up, and bura him oot, and bury’t him.

7. And aftir aboot thrie o’or, his wife cam in—no kennin oicht that was dune—

8. And Peter speir’t at her, “Tell me, sell’t ye the grund for sae and sae?” And she said, “Aye; for sae and sae.”
Great thrangs gather.

ACTS, V.

In the to'booth.

9. Than said Peter, “Hoo is't ye hae coonseil't thegither to temp the Spirit o' the Lord? See! the feet o' them that hae bury't yere gudeman are at the door, and sal cairry ye oot!”

10. And she fell juist doon at his feet, and dee's; and the young men cam in and faund her deid, and bured her oot, and bury't her by her gudeman.

11. And great fear cam on a' the Kirk, and on a' that heard thir things.

12. And mair: by the hauns o' the Apostles war mony tokens and ferlies wrocht amang the folk: and they war a', wi' se mind, in Solomon's Porch.

13. But o' the lave, thar war nane o' them venturin to come in wi' them; but the folk a' laudit them.

14. And believers mair war addit to the Lord, thrangs baith o' men and weemens:

15. Sae muckle, that they e'en cairry't oot the sick folk till the causey, and pat them doon on beds and couches, that (gin nae mair), the shadow o' Peter, as he cam by, micht fa' on a wheen o' them!

16. And thar war comin thegither, the vera thrang frae ither cities roond Jerusalem, feisin sick anes, and that war fashed wi' unclean spirits; and they war healed ilka ane.

17. Than raise up the Heigh-priest, and a' they that war wi' him (they o' the sect of the Sadducees), and war fu' o' anger,

18. And gripit the Apostles, and pat them i' the to'booth.

19. But the Angel o' the Lord, by nicht, cam and unsteekit the doors o' the to'booth, and fesh't them oot, and said,

20. “Gang ye, and tak yere staun i' the Temple, and tell the folk a' the words o' this life!”

21. And when they heard this, they ent in't i' the dawin to the Temple, and spak. But the Heigh-priest cam, and thes that war wi' him, and order't the Cooncil thegither, and a' the men o' eild o' Isra'il, and sent to the to'booth to hae them brocht.

22. But the officers that cam faund-them-na i' the prison, and gaed back again, and tell't,

23. And quo' they, “The to'booth faund we steekit, and a' safe; and the keepers staunin at the doors; but when we had open't, we faund nae man within.”

24. And when the Heigh-priest and the Temple-captain, and the boonmaist o' the priests, heard thir things, they dootit i' their sel's aboot them—what a' this wad come till?

25. But thar cam ane and tell't them, “Look! The men ye pat i' the to'booth are staunin i' the Temple, and teachin the folk!”

26. Than gaed the Captain, wi' the officers, and fesh't them wi' a' courtesie—for they war fley'd o' the folk, least they micht ha'e been stane.

27. And when they had brocht them, they set them fornent the Heigh-Cooncil. And the Heigh-priest speir't at them, sayin,

28. “Did we no chairege ye stricklie no to be teachin i' this name? And see! ye hae fill't a' Jerusalem wi' yere teachin, and ette to bring this man's blude on us!”

29. Than awer't Peter and the Apostles, “It behoves us to mind God, mair nor mind man!

30. “The God o' oor faithers raised-again Jesus, that ye slew, hingin him on a tree!

31. “Him has God upliftit at his richt haun, to be a Prince and a Saviour, to gie repentance to Isra'il, and remission o' sins.

32. “And we are his witnesses o' thae things; and see too is the Holie Spirit, that God has gien to them that obey him.”

33. When they heard that, they war cut to the heart, and coonseil't thegither to kill them.

34. But thar raise ane o' the Heigh-Cooncil, a Pharisee, Gamaliel, a doctor o' the Law, hauden in honor
o'a the folk, and gae orders to pit the men oot for a wee.

35. And quo'he to them, 1 "Men o' Isra'il; tak tent to yersels, what ye ettle do wi' thir men!

36. "For langayne raise Theudas, makin his sel oot to be somebody; aboot whom a hantle o' men gaithe't, aboot four hunder: wha was kill't; and as mony as war perswadit o' him war skail't, and cam to nocht.

37. "Eftir him raise Judas o' Galilee, i' the days o' the enrollin; and dréw awa' muickle folk eftir him: he too perish't; and a' as mony as follow't him, war cuisten abreid.

38. "And anent thir things I say, lat bide thir men! for, aiblins gin this coosel or this wark be o' men, it wull fa'!

39. "But gin aiblins it be o' God, ye canna ding it doon; leasst ye e'en be fund fechtin again God."

40. And to him they gree'd; and, bringin forrit the Apostles, they bade them be cloured and chaired them no to be speakin' i' the name o' Jesus; and loot them gang.

41. And they gaed oot frae the face o' the Heigh-Council, blythe that they war coontit wordie o' dreen ill for Jesus' sake.

42. And day-by-day i' the Temple, and i' the hooses, they war aye teachin, and preachin Jesus Christ.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Deacons to tak tent o' the neely. Stephen taen haud o'.

NOO, i' thae days, thar gat up a murrumir amang the Grecian Jews again the Hebrew anes, aboot the weedows bein overlookit i' the gian-oot o' the daily breid.

2. And the Twal' brocht the thrang o' the disciples thegither, and quo' they, "It's no bonnie that we soud

lea' the service o' the Word o' God, and ser' tables.

3. "Sae, brethren, look ye oot frae'mang yersels seeven men o' gude name, wyss men, fu' o' the Spirit, that we may set ower this maitter.

4. "But we wull mainteine oorsels aye in prayer, and i' the service o' the Word."

5. And the word was weel thocht o' o'a' the thrang; and they named Stephen, ane fu' o' faith and the Holie Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proseyte frae Antioch.

6. Wham they set forment the Apostles; and whan they had prayed they set their hauns on them.

7. And the word o' God grew uncolie; and the feck o' the disciples multiply't in Jerusalem; and an unco thrang o' the priests follow't the faith.

8. And Stephen, fu' o' love and poorer, wrocht great warks and ferlies amang the folk.

9. But certain anes raise up, o' the Synagogue ca'd "O' the Freemen," baith Cyrenians and Alexandrians, and thae frae Cilicia and Asia, arguin wi' Stephen.

10. And they warra fit to staun again the wisdom and the Spirit he spak wi'.

11. And they set on men, wha said, "We hae heard him lichtlie Moses, and lichtlie God!"

12. And they made a stegr amang the folk, and elders, and scribes, and cam on him, and grippit him, and harl't him to the Cooncil.

13. And set up witnesses forsworn, wha said, "This man is aye speakin ill o' the Holie Place, and the Law;" 14. "For we hae heard him threep that this Jesus o' Nazareth sah whamme ower this place, and sal do awa' the orderin that Moses gied us."

15. And a' that war i' the Cooncil, glowerin at him, saw his face o'en like an Angel's face !

---

1 V. 35. The pawkie, waurldly-wyse advice o' Gamaliel, is no to be follow't by us. Gin we waitit to see whilk side cam oot best, wha wad mak the onset? The warldling asks, "Wull it succeed?" The Christian speirs, "Is it richt?"
Stephen discourses to the Heigh-Council. Ill men (gin they hae nae ither reply), can aye hurle stanes.

THAN quo the Heigh-priest, "Are thae thins sae?"

2. And he said, "Men! Brethren and faithers, hear! The God o' Glorie schawed his sel to oor faither Abra'm, whan he was in Mesopotamia, afore he bade in Haran;

3. "And said to him, 'Come ye oot frae yere ain lan', and frae yere ain kin, and come to sic a lan' as I sal airt ye!'

4. "Than cam he oot o' the Chaldean's kintra, and dwalt in Haran; and frae thar, eftir his faither was deid, he cam to this lan', whaur ye noo dwalt.

5. "And he gied him nae portion in't; no, no sae muckle as to set his fit on; yet he promised he wad gie it him in possession, and to his seed eftir him, whan as yet he had nae bairn.

6. "And God spak thus—that his seed sould tarry in a fremd lan'; and they sould mak them bondmen, and misuse them forr-hunner year.

7. "And the folk that hae them in thrall wull I judge,' said God; "and synne sal they come and serv me i' this vera place.'

8. "And he gied him a Covenant o' circumcision; and Abra'm begat Isaac, and circumcised him at the auchtth day; and Isaac, Jaucob; and Jaucob the twal' patriarchs.

9. "And the patriarchs, fu' o' envie, sell't Joseph awa to Egypt; but God wis' him.

10. "And deliver'm him oot o' a' his sairs, and gied to him favor and leare afore Pharaoh the king o'Egypt;

and he made him to be governor ower a' Egypt, and ower a' his hoose.

11. "Noo thar cam a death ower a' Egypt and Canaan; and oor faithers faund nae mainteinance.

12. "But when Jaucob kent thar was corn in Egypt, he sent oot oor faithers ance;

13. "And at the second sending-oot, Joseph was kent o' his brethren; and Joseph's freends war kent o' Pharaoh.

14. "Than sent Joseph, and took to him his faither Jaucob, and a' his kin, seventy-five sauls.

15. "And Jaucob gaed doon to Egypt. And he dees't thar, and oor faithers,

16. "And war carry'r ower to Shechem, and laid doon i' the tomb that Abra'm bocht wi' siller frae the son's o' Hamor o' Shechem.

17. "But when the time promised cam nar, the time God gied to Abra'm, the folk grew to be mony, and war multiply't in Egypt.

18. "Till a new king cam up, wha kent naething o' Joseph.

19. "And the same wrought in a guilefu' way wi' oor faithers, and misused them, sae that their young bairns sould be cuisten oot, to the end they sould dee.

20. "I' the whilk time Moses was born, and he was bonnie to God; and he was nouriced thrie month i' the hoose o' his faither.

21. "And when he was cuisten oot, Pharaoh's dochter took him, and nouriced him for her ain son.

22. "And Moses was instruckit in a' the lear o' the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and deeds.

23. "And when he cam to be forty year auld, it cam intil his heart to gang and see his brethren, the sons o' Isra'.

24. "And seein a' them wranged, he took his pairt, and deliver't him that dreed the wrang, and strack doon the Egyptian.

25. "For he thocht his brethren"
soud has kent hoo God by his haun wad bring them deliverance: but they understand-na.

26. "And on the morn he schawed his sel to them as they tulsied the-gither, and wad has putten them at ane again, sayin, 'Men! ye are brotherr; why dae ye do wrang, ane to anither?'

27. "But the ane that did his neebor wrang, shovved him awa', sayin, 'Wha made ye a maister or a judge ower us?"

28. "'Wad ye kill me, as ye kill't the Egyptian yestreen?'

29. "And Moses fled awa' at this sayin, and tarry't i' the land o' Midian; whaur he begat twa sons.

30. "And whan forty year had gane ower, thar schawed himsel to him i' the wilderness o' Mount Sinai an Angel, in a lowin fire, in a buss.

31. "And Moses, lookin on, ferled uncolie at the sicht; and as he cam nar to see't, the Lord's voice cam to him.

32. "'I am the God o' thy faithers, the God o' Abra'm, Isaac and Jaucob.' Than Moses quaked, and daurna look on.

33. "And the Lord said to him, 'Lowse the shoon o' yere feet, for the place ye staun on is holie grun!'"

34. "'I hae seen, I hae seen, the ill-doin to my folk that are in Egypt, and hae heard their maen; and I am comedoon to richt them. And noo co'way! I'll send ye to Egypt!'"

35. "This same Moses, whom they cuist aside, sayin, 'Wha made ye a maister and a judge?' the same God sent baith for a maister and a deliverer wi' the haun o' the Angel that appear't to him i' the buss.

36. "The same led them out, eftir he had schawn ferlies and tokens i' the land o' Egypt, and i' the Reid Sea, and i' the wilderness forty year.

37. "This is yon Moses, wha said to the children o' Israel', 'A Prophet

1 V. 31. "It lowed and lowed, and was none the waur!"

sal the Lord yere God raise up to ye o' yere brethren, like to me.'

38. "This was he wha was wi' the Kirk i' the wilderness, wi' the Angel that spak to him in Mount Sinai, and wi' oor faithers; wha had gien to them leevin testimonies to gie to us.

39. "To wham oor faithers wadna gie heed; but cuist him oot frae them, and turned back again, i' their hearts, to Egypt.

40. "Saying to Aaron. 'Mak us gods to gang afore us! As for this Moses, wha brocht us oot o' Egypt's lan', we kenna what has come o' him!'

41. "And they made a cauf i' thes dayas, and brocht a sacrifice to the eidal, and joyed i' the wark i' their ain hauns.

42. "But God turned, and gied them up to worship the host o' the sky, as it is putten doon i' the prophet's book, 'Did ye offer to me slain beass and sacrifieces forty year i' the wilderness, O hoose o' Israel?'

43. "'And ye liftit the tent o' Moloch, and Remphan's star, yere god—images that ye made to worship them—and I wull tak ye awa' ayont Babylon.'

44. "Oor faithers had the Tent o' Witness i' the wilderness, e'en as he appointit wha spak to Moses, that he soud mak it conform to the pattern he had seen.

45. "'Whilk eke oor faithers that follow't, brocht in wi' Joshua, whan they cam intil the possession o' the nations, wham God pat oot frae before oor faithers' faces to the days o' Dauvid.

46. "Wha faund favour forrent God's face, and wad fain provide a dwallin-place for the God o' Jaucob.

47. "But Solomon biggit him a hoose.

48. "But yet the MAist High dwalls-na in hooses made wi' hauns; conform to what the prophet says,—

49. "'The Heeven's my thron,
and the yirth's my fit-brod; whatna hoose wad ye bigg me, quoy the Lord; or whaur's the place o' my rest?

50. "'Was't-na my ain haun made a' thae things?'

51. "Stiff-neckit and thrawn! uncircumceesed in heart and luik! ye aye hae a plea wi' the Holie Spirit! as yere faithers, sae div ye.

52. "Wham o' the prophets didna yere faithers persecute? And they kill't them who schawed aforehaun o' the comin o' the Righteous-Ane, o' wham, e'en noo, ye hae been the betrayers and murderers!

53. "Ye wha had the law by ordinance o' Angels, and haena keepit it!"

54. Noo, as they heard thae things, they war stricken to the heart, and they gnash't them at him wi' their teeth.

55. But he, fu' o' the Holie Spirit, lookit up aye to heaven and saw the glorie o' God, and Jesus stauin on God's richt haun!

56. And said, "Look! I see the heevens unsteekit, and the Son o' Man stauin on God's richt haun!"

57. But they cry't oot wi' a lood voice, and happit their lugs, and ran on him a' thegither;

58. And cuist him oot o' the citie, and staned him; and the witnesses pat doon their claes at the feet o' a young man ca'd Saul.

59. And they staned Stephen, be-seechin', and sayin', "Lord Jesus! tak ye my spirit!"

60. And he kneel'd doon, and cry't wi' a soondin voice, "Lord, set-na doon to them this sin!" And whan he hae sae said, he fell asleep.

CHAPTER AUCHT.

The fause man o' Samaria; and the leal man frae Ethioip.

AND Saul was ane wi' them, in his death. And thar gat up, that day, an unco persecution again the Kirk-folk o' Jerusalem; and a', except the Apostles, war scattered abraid throwe a' the kintra-side o' Judea and Samaria.

2. And godly men bure Stephen awa', and made sair lamentin' ower him.

3. But as for Saul, he made waste o' the kirk, gangin' intil a' hooses, and harlin aff men and weemen to prison.

4. Sae they war a' scattered abroad; and gaed everygate preachin' the Word.

5. And Philip gaed doon to Samaria-citie, and preached the Word to them.

6. And a' the folk wi' ae mind gied gude tent to the things Philip spak; seein' and hearin' a' the wunner-warks he wrought.

7. For foul spirites, skirlin' wi' rage and pain, cam oot o' a hantle possess'd anes; and mony wi' palsies, and that war lameters, war made hale.

8. And thar was unco joy i' that citie.

9. But thar was ane ca'd Simon, wha his sel i' that citie carry't on witchery, and glam'rt the folk o' Samaria, lettin' on that his ain sel was some great ane.

10. And to him they a' gied heed, frae the least o' them to the beichest, for quo' they, "This man is God's great poorer!"

11. And they gied tent to him; for that he had lang glam'rt them wi' witcheries.

12. But whan they lippened to Philip, preachin' the Gude-word o' the Kingdom o' God, and the name o' Jesus Christ, they war bapteez't, baith men and weemen.

13. Than Simon his sel believed wi' the lave; and, bein' bapteez'd, he marrowed wi' Philip, wunneran at the great warks and tokens that war wrought.

14. Noo, whan the Apostles at Jerusalem heard tell that Samaria had received God's word, they sent to them Peter and John:
15. Wha, when they cam doon, prayed for them that they might hae the Holie Spirit.
16. For till this time he hadn's faun on ony o' them: only they had been bapteez't i' the name o' the Lord Jesus.
17. Then laid they their hauns on them, and they received the Holie Spirit.
18. And whan Simon saw that the Holie Spirit was gien throwe the layin-on o' the Apostles' hauns, he wad hae gien them siller;
19. And quo' he, "Gie me as weil this poore, that on whom I lay hauns, he may hae the Holie Spirit!"
20. But Peter says to him, "Perish yere siller wi' yerseil! for thinkin' to troke for the gift o' God wi' siller!
21. "Ye hae naither airt nor pairst here; for yere heart isna aesauld afore God!
22. "Sae repent ye o' this yere wickedness; and pray God gin aiblins the thocht o' yere heart may be forgien t'ye.
23. "For I can see ye are i' the bitterness o' gall, and the shackles o' sin!"
24. Quo' Simon, "Pray ye the Lord for me, that nane o' thae things ye hae said bafa me."
25. And they, when they had tes-tifyt and gien oot the word o' the Lord, gaed back to Jerusalem, preachin' the Gude-word in a bantle o' the wee touns o' the Samaritans.
26. But an angel o' the Lord spak to Philip, "Awa to the South! to the road frae Jerusalem to Gaza; i' the desert!"
27. And he raise, and gaed awa; and mark! a man o' Ethiop, an officer heigh in authority under Queen Candace o' the Ethiopians, the chaumerlain o' her treasure, had come till Jerusalem for to worship;
28. And was gaun hame again, and was sittin in his chariot, readin the Prophet Esaiab.
29. Than the Spirit says to Philip, "Gang nar, and join in wi' this chariot."
30. And Philip ran till him, and heard him readin the Prophet Esaiab; and quo' he, "Are ye un'nerstaunin' what ye're readin?"
31. And quo' he, "Hoo can I, gin some ane dinna airt me?" And he besocht Philip to sit up beside him.
32. The bit o' the Scripture he was readin was, "He was taen oot as a sheep till the slaughter; and as a lown lamb afore his shearer, sae was he quate;
33. "In his lowliness justice was denyt him; and wha sal speak o' his seed? for his life is cuttit aff frae the yirth."
34. And the officer says to Philip, "I pray ye, wham speaks the Prophet o' I o' his sel, or o' some ither ane?"
35. And Philip open't his mou'; and beginnin at that same word, declar't till him Jesus.
36. And as they gaed on their way, they cam till a certain watir; and the officer says, "See, here is watir! what is to hinner me bein bap-teez't?"
37. And Philip said, "Gin ye believe wi' a' yere heart, ye may!" And he answer't, "I believe that Jesus Christ is God's Son!"
38. And he order't the chariot to stop, and they gaed doon baith intil the watir, Philip and the officer; and he bapteez't him.
39. And whan they cam oot o' the watir, the Spirit o' the Lord cairryt awa Philip, and the officer saw him nae mair; and he gaed on his way blythe and joyfu'.
40. But Philip was seen at Azotus; and gaun on, he preached the Gude-word in a' the cities, till he cam to Cesarea.

1 V. 37. This verse isna fund in a bantle o' the MSS. But nae doot he did confess, in words as weel as deeds, his belief in Jesus.
CHAPTER NINE.

Saul, ragin like a wild beast, is lain haud o' by the Lord. Peter dia some o' the great works o' Christ.

And Saul, yet belchin oot threat-enins and blude again the Lord's folk, gaed to the Heigh-priest,

2. And craved frae him letters to Damascus, to the kirkas sae as gin they faund ony o' "The Way," aither men or weemen, he soud fesh them in thrall to Jerusalem.

3. But, as he gaed on, he cam nar-by Damascus; and a' o' a suddainie, thar lowed about him a licht frae the lift.

4. And, fa'in to the yirth, he heard a voice sayin to him, "Saul! Saul! why are ye pursuin me?"

5. And he said, "Wha, my Lord, are ye?" While he answert, "I am Jesus, that ye are pursuin!

6. "But rise ye, and gang ye intil the citie, and it sal be tell' ye what ye are to do."

7. And the men wha war wi' him stude speechless, hearin a voice, but seein nae man.

8. And Saul gat him up frae the grund, and when he openet his een he saw nane; sae, takin him by the haun, they airtit him intil Damascus.

9. And he was 1 thrie days wantin sicht, and naither did eat nor drink.

10. Noo there was a disciple at Damascus, by name Ananias; and the Lord, in a vision, said to him, "Ananias!" And quo' he, "See! here am I, Lord!"

11. And the Lord said to him:

"Aris, and gang awa to the street ca'd 'Straucht,' and speir in Judas' hoose for ane Saul by name—o' Tarsus; for ken! he is prayin;"

12. "And he has seen in vision ane Ananias comin in, and pittin his

1V. 9. Like till Ezekiel, wha sat doon astonish't seveen days (Ezek. iii. 15), we needna ferlie aboot Saul (ilka thing he had leved for whammit' ower and destroyed), bein thrie days in amaze! It's an awfu' wark to pu' a' doon, and bigg a' ower again! hauns on him, that he soud win back his sicht."

13. But said Ananias, "Lord! by a hantle o' folk hear I o' this man; and hoo muckle skaithe he has dune to thy saunts at Jerusalem.

14. "And i' this vera place he has poorer frae the Heigh-priests to bind a' thae that seek thy name."

15. But the Lord says to him, "Gang yere ways; for a favored vessel is this ane to me, for the bearin o' my name afore nations, and kings, and the sons o' Isra'il."

16. "For I wull schaw to him what unco things he maun dree for the sake o' my name."

17. And Ananias gaed his ways, and cam intil the hoose; and layin hauns on him, says, "Saul! Brithe! The Lord—Jesus, that thou saw on the way heretill—has bid me come, that ye might hae yere sicht, and be fu' o' the Holie Spirit."

18. And at ane fell frae his een as it war scales; and he get sicht, and raise, and was bapteet."

19. And whan he had meat, he was revived. Than was Saul a wheen days wi' the believers that war at Damascus.

20. And at ane, i' the kirkas, he proclaimed Jesus, that he was God's Son.

21. But they ferlie that heard him: and quo' they, "Isa this the ane that made havoc o' them that socht this name in Jerusalem? And cam here, ettlin the same, that he might tak them in bonds to the Heigh-priest?"

22. But Saul gather't strenth the mair, and silenced the Jews that dwalt at Damascus, demonstratin that "This Ane is the Messiah!"

23. But, whan mair days war come and gane, the Jews collegued the-gither to slay him.

24. Hoobeit, their colleeguain was made kent to Saul. And they gair-dit the ports day and nicht to kill him.
25. Than the disciples took him at
nicht, and loutit him doon ower the
wa' in a creel.
26. And when he was come the
lenth o' Jerusalem, he settle to join
his sel' to the disciples; but they
war a' flay't o' him, and jaloused that
he was a fause ane.
27. But Barnabas took him, and
brocht him to the Apostles, and tell't
them hoo, gaun his gate, he saw the
Lord, and that he spek to him; and
hoo Saul had spoken baudily at
Damascus, in Jesus' name.
28. And he was ane wi' them:
vaun in and oot at Jerusalem.
29. And he spak baudily i' the
name o' the Lord Jesus; and he was
haein speech wi' the Hellenists, and
reasonin wi' them; but they war
seekin hoo to kill him.
30. The brethren, hoobeit, cam to
ken o't, and brocht him doon to
Cesarea, and sent him awa till Tarsus.
31. Sie than the Kirk, a' throwe
Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, had
rest, and was biggit-up, and was gaun
on i' the fear o' the Lord; and by
the airtin o' the Holie Spirit was
increased.
32. Noo it cam aboot that Peter,
gaun throwe a' the assemblies, eke
cam doon to the saunta that dwalt
at Lydda.
33. And that helichtit on a man
by name Eneas, wha was bedridden
for aucht year; a paralytic.
34. And Peter says to him,
"Eneas! Jesus the Christ heals ye!
Rise, and mak yere bed!" And he
raise at ance.
35. And a' that dwalt in Lydda
and Sharon saw him; and they
turned to the Lord.
36. Noo in Joppa was a wumman,
a disciple, Tabitha (ca'd Dorcas, that
is "Gazelle"); this ane was fu' o'
gude warks and amounse that she
did.
37. And it cam aboot i' thae
days that she took ill, and dees't.
And weshin her, they laid her i' the laft.
38. And bein that Lydda was nar-
haun Joppa, the disciples, bein tell't
that Peter was thar, sent twa men
to him, entreatin him to mak nae
delay in comin to them.
39. And Peter raise, and gaed wi'
them; and when he was come, they
led him intil the laft; and thar stude
by a' the weedows, gretin, and
schawin the coats and manteels that
Dorcas made, while she was wi' them.
40. But Peter pat them a' oot,
and, fa'in on his knees, pray'd; and
turning roond to the corp, cry't
"Tabitha! Rise!" And she opened
her een; and seein Peter, sut up.
41. And giein her a baun, he
raised her up; and cryin in the
saunta and weedows, he presentit
her leevin.
42. Noo, it cam to be kent a'
throwe Joppa; and a hantle believed
on the Lord.
43. And it cam aboot that he bade
a gude wheen days in Joppa, wi' ane
Simon, a tanner.

CHAPITIR TEN.
Cornelius followt, conform to the licht he
had; and the Lord sent him mair licht.

THAR was a man in Cesarea, ca'd
Cornelius, officer in a core ca'd
"The Italian."

2. Devout, and fearin God, wi' a' his hoose; giean aumous to the folk
and prayin to God aye.
3. He saw in plain vision, about
thrie o'clock i' the day, an Angel o'
God comin in to him, and sayin to
him, "Cornelius!"

4. Noo he, settin his een on him,
and bein unco flay't, said, "What
is't, my Lord?" And he said to
him, "Yere prayers and aumous
are come up to be keepit in mind
afore God.
5. "And noo, send aff men to
Joppa, and fesh ane Simon, ca'd
Peter;
6. "He bides wi' ane Simon, a
tanner, that has his hoose by the
sea."
7. And when the Angel that spak to him was gane, he ca'd twa servin-
men, and a godlie sodger, o' thae waitin on him;
8. And when he had tell't them a' things, he sent them awa' to Joppa.
9. Noo, on the morn, as they gaed on their way, and cam nar to the citie, Peter gaed up to the house-tap to pray, aboot the denner-time.
10. And he grew unco hung'ry, and wad fain eaten a wee; but whiles they war preparin, he fell intil a dwaum;
11. And saw the lift unseekit, and a kind o' veschel comin doon, as a great sheet loutit doon by the fowr corners;
12. In whilk war a' the beasts and creatures o' the yirth, and birds o' the air.
13. And a voice cam to him, "Arise, Peter, kill and eat!"
14. But Peter said, "No sae, Lord! for at nae time did I eat ocht that was common or unclean."
15. And a voice the second time cam to him, "Whatna things God has made pure, ca' thou no common!"
16. Noo this was dune thrice, and than the veschel was taken up again intil the lift.
17. But as Peter was in a swither, what aiblins this vision he saw micht mean, see! the men sent by Cornelius, haein speirt oot the hoose o' Simon, stude fornt the yett,
18. And spak, and speirt "gin Simon, ca'd Peter, was enterteened thar!"
19. And while Peter consider't the vision, the Spirit said to him, "See! thrie meen seek ye.
20. "Arisin, gang doon, and gae wi' them, haein nae fears; for I hae sent them."
21. Than Peter, gaun doon to the men, said, "Tak tent! I am he that ye are seekin; what is the cause o' yere comin?"
22. And they said, "Cornelius, an officer, a gude man, and fearin God, well-thocht o' by a' the folk o' the Jews, was tell't by a Holie Angel, to send for ye to his hoose, and to hear words frae ye."
23. Bringing them in than, he enterteened them. And on the morn he gaed awa' wi' them; and a wheen o' the brethren frae Joppa gaed wi' him.
24. And the day aftir he cam intil Cesarea. Noo Cornelius was lookin for them, and had brocht thegither his kin and bosom-friendis.
25. And it cam about, that as Cornelius met him, he loutit doon at his feet, and did reverence to him.
26. But Peter raised him, sayin, "Staun up! for I, too, mysel, am but a man!"
27. And sae, talkin' wi' him, he gaed in; and faund mony that had come thegither.
28. And said to them, "Ye weel ken hoo it is na an alloed thing for a man—a Jew—to join himself, or come to ane o' anither nation; and God has shawn me that I'se to ca' nae man common or unclean.
29. "And sae, wi' nae argl-bargl, I cam when I was sent for; I ask, than, for wha ye sent for me?"
30. And Cornelius said, "Fowr days syne, I was praying at the thrie-o'clock in my hoose 1; and behaald! a man stude afore me in bright cleedin,
31. "And said, 'Cornelius! yere prayer is heard' 2; and yere aumousies are keepit in mind o' God.
32. "Send than to Joppa, and ca' hither Simon, ca'd Peter; bidin' i' the hoose o' ane Simon, a tanner, by the sea.'
33. "And sae at ance I sent for

---

1 V. 30. It looks as gin "the thrie-o'clock," the 'oor o' prayer i' the Temple (chap. 3, 1) was keepit by mony godlie folk i' the auld days.
2 V. 31. Aiblins Cornelius was, e'en noo, ane o' God's bairns; but God wad hae him to be acquaint wi' the new revelation o' Jesus as the Sin-Bearer.
Peter preaches.

ACTS, XI.

Peter justifies his daceins.

ye; and eke ye did weel to come. Noo than, we are a' here i' the sicht o' God, to hear a' the things that God has gien ye for us.

34. And Peter begude to speak, and said, "I see that God is nae chooser o' faces:

35. "But amang a' nations, he that fears him, and dis richt, is acceptable to him.

36. "As to the word he sent oot to the sons o' Isra'il, proclaimin the Gude-word o' peace throwe Jesus the Christ (the same is Lord o' a').

37. "Ye ken what already has taen place, throwe the hail o' Judea, beginnin frae Galilee, etfir the baptizethin that John preached.

38. "E'en aboot Jesus o' Nazareth; hoo God anointit him wi' Holie Spirit and poore; wha gaed aboot doin gude, and healin a' that war in thrall tae Sautan; for God was wi' him.

39. "And we are ee-witnesses o' a' things he did, baith i' the land o' the Jews, and at Jerusalem: wham they slew, hingin him o' a tree.

40. "Him did God raise on the third day, and gied him to be seen—

41. "No to a' the folk, but to ee-witnesses waled oot afore God; by us, wha did in fact eat and drink wi' him etfir his risin frae amang the dead.

42. "And he chaired us to preach to a' folk, and to testifie that this is he who was ordein'd by God, as the Judge o' the leevin and the dead!

43. "To him gie a' the prophets witness, that throwe his name ilk ane wha lippens him-obteens remision o' sins."

44. While as Peter was yet speakin thir words, the Holie Spirit fell on a' that war hearin the word.

45. And the believin anes o' the circumcession war astoundit—they that cam wi' Peter—than e'en to fremd-folk the free gift o' the Holie Spirit was gien.

46. For they listened to him speakin wi' ither tongues, and laudin God. Than said Peter,

47. "Can onyane, noo, forbid the watir, that thir soudna be baptize't, wha hae had the Holie Spirit gien them, e'en as we?"

48. And he order't that they soud be baptize't. Than entreatit they him tae bide some wheen days.

CHAPTER ELEVEN.

Peter taen to task about Cornelius. The saulin o' the Kirk at Jerusalem, was the sawin o' the seed for the Nations!

NOO the Apostles and brethen—they that war in Judea—heard tell that e'en the Gentiles received the word o' God.

2. And when Peter gaed up to Jerusalem, they oot o' the circumceesin war 'challengin him,

3. Sayin, "Ye gaed in to men no circumcees'e, and did eat meat wi' them."

4. But Peter, beginnin, set the maitter in order afore them, sayin,

5. "I was in the citie o' Joppa, prayin; and in a dwaum I saw a vision—a veschel comin doon, as it had been a great sheit, by fowr corners loutit doon frae the lift: and it cam to me.

6. "Intil whilk narrowlie lookin, I took tent, and saw fowr-fittit beass o' the yirth, and wild beass, and crawlin things, and birdies o' the lift.

7. "Forby I heard a voice sayin to me, 'Arise, Peter, kill and eat!'

8. "But I answer't, 'No sae, Lord! for naething common nor unclean at ony time has gane intil my mouth!'

9. "But the voice spak the second time frae aboon, 'Whatna things God has made pure, ca' thou no common!'

10. "Noo this was dune thrice; and it was a' taen up again aboon.

1 V. 2. It took a vision frae Aboon to set Peter richt; and we needed ferlie at the ither sae dour. But it is wae to think hoo men will fa' oot ower sae wee a thing as eatin wi "sic-and-sic" folk!
11. "And tak tent! e'en than war thrie men haltin at the hoose whaur I was—sent frae Cesarea to me.
12. "And the spirit bade me gang wi' them, switherin nane. And thar gaed wi' me thir sax brethren as weel; and we enter't intil the man's hoose.
13. "And he tell't us hoo he saw the Angel in his hoose, staunin and sayin to him, 'Send awa to Joppa, and feath Simon, ca'd Peter,'
14. "'Wha sal speak words t'ye, in whilk ye sal be saved—ye and yere hoose.'
15. "And when I begude to speak, the Holie Spirit fell on 'them, as on us at the first.
16. "Than brocht I to mind the words o' the Lord—hoo he wad say, 'John bapteez't indeed, wi' watir; but ye sal be bapteez't wi' Holie Spirit.'
17. "And forasmuckle as God gied them the like free gift e'en as to us wha believed i' the Lord Jesus Christ, wha was I that I sould be able to hinner God?"
18. And when they heard these things they war quate, and laudit God; sayin, "Noo has God gien repentance until life, e'en to the Gentiles!"
19. Noo they that war scatter't abreid by the persecution that raise anent Stephen, gaed the length o' Phenicia, and Cyprus, and Antioch; speakin the word allenar to the Jews.
20. But thar war a wheen men o' them—Cyprians and Cyrenians—wha, gaun intil Antioch, spak e'en to the Greeks; gien them the Blythe-message pertainin to the Lord Jesus.
21. And the Lord's haun was wi' them; and an unco hauntle o' them believin, turned them to the Lord.
22. And the sough o' a' this cam to the lug o' the Kirk at Jerusalem; and they sent oot Barnabas, that he soud gang the length o' Antioch.

23. Wha comin, and seein hoo gracious was God, rejoic't; and besocht a', that wi' their hail heart they soud wait upon God.
24. For he was a godlie man, and fu' o' the Holie Spirit and faith. And a hauntle o' folk war won for the Lord.
25. And he gaed on to Tarsus, for to seek Saul;
26. And, lightin on him, he feath him to Antioch: and it cam aboot, that they met wi' the Kirk, and instruckit mony; and the believers, first in Antioch, war named "Christians."
27. And i' thae days, thar cam prophets doon frae Jerusalem to Antioch;
28. And ane o' them, ca'd Agabus, gied an intimation, throwing the Spirit, that an unco famine was to come on the hail warld: whilk a' cam aboot under Claudius.
29. Than the disciples, ilka ane as he had ability, was mindit to send charitie to the brethren dwellin in Judea.
30. Whilk thing they did, sendin to the Elders, throwe the hauns o' Barnabas and Saul.

CHAPTER TWAL'.

Herod smilis James, and wad smite Peter; but is smitten his sel! Gin kings war wyne, they wad smile less.

NOO, it was thar-aboot, that Herod the King rax't oot his hauns to do ill to some o' the Kirk.
2. And he slew James, John's brither, wi' the sword.
3. And seein it flatter't the Jews, he gaed on mair, and grippit Peter as weel (thae war the days o' the Sad Breid).
4. And thow he had grippit him, he laid him in thrall; gien him ower to fourf fowrsome sets o' sodgers, to keep him; settin, eftir the Pasche, to feast him oot to the people.
5. Sae Peter was keepit i' the dun-
geon; but earnest prayer was made a' the time to God for him.

6. And whan Herod wad hae fesh't him oot, at nicht Peter was sleepin atween twa sodgers, fast wi' twa chains; and gairds afore the door tentit the prison.

7. And see! an Angel o' the Lord stude by him, and a licht glintit i' the dungeon; and giean Peter a dunt on the side, he raised him up, sayin, "Rise up! Haste!" and the chains slypt aff frae his hauns.

8. And the Angel said, "Mak yer-sel snod, and tie on yere shoon!" And he did sae. And he says to him, "Cast yere manteel aboot ye, and follow me."

9. And, gaun oot, he follow't; and kent-na it was true what the Angel did, but thocht he dreamed a dream.

10. And gaun throwe a firstward, and than a second, they cam to the ain yett that led oot to the citie; whilk unseekt o' its ain sel to them; and gaun oot, they gaed on throwe a street; and the Angel left him.

11. And Peter, comin to his sel, said, "Noo ken I o' a certaintie, that the Lord sent oot his Angel, and deliver't me frae Herod's haun, and frae a' the expectation o' the Jewish folk."

12. And thinkin a wee, he cam to the house o' Mary, John's mither—the ane ca'd Mark; whaur mony war forgather't, and prayin.

13. Noo as he chappit at the doore o' the porch, thar cam oot a lass to hearken, named Rhoda.

14. And, kenin Peter's voice, for joy she unseekt-na the yett, but rinnin in, she tellt "that Peter was staunin fornt the yett." But they said to her, "Ye are wud!"

15. But she, on her side, threepit that it was even sae! But they said, "It is his wraith!"

16. But Peter, a' this time, was chappin; and openin, they war astonish't.

17. But, motionin to them wi' the baun to be whisht, he tell't them a' hoo the Lord had led him frae the prison; and said as wel, "Tell thir things to James and the brethren!" And, gaun on, he cam intil anither place.

18. Noo whan it was day, thar was an unco steer amang the sodgers, "What has become o' Peter?"

19. And whan Herod had socht for him, and faund him no, pittin the keepers to the test, order't them to be putten to deid; and gaun doon frae Judea intil Cesarea, he bade thar.

20. Noo he was unco vexed wi' the folk o' Tyre and Sidon; but wi' ae mind they war comin to him; and, makin a freend o' Blastus the king's chamerlain, they socht for peace, for that their pairts were mainteened by the king's kintra.

21. And, on a day appointit, Herod, buskit in royal robes, and sittin on a thron, made a set speech tae them.

22. And the folk made a shout, cryin, "A god's voice, and no a man's voice!"

23. And at ance the Angel o' the Lord dang him, for that he gied-na God the glorie; and he was devoor't o' worms, and dees't.

24. But the word o' God grew mair and mair.

25. And Barnabas and Saul cam back frae Jerusalem, when they had dune their message; takin' wi' them John, ca'd Mark.

---

1 V. 14. Had their faith the birr o' Peter's ain, they wadna hae sae misdootit the Lord's answer to their ain prayers! The lassie had mair faith than a' the lave!

2 V. 17. This James wad be the ane ca'd "The Lord's Brither." Whether he was the son o' Mary, I kenna; maist like he was.
CHAPTR THIRTEEN.

Noo that war i' the assembly at Antioch, baith prophets and teachers; sic like as Barnabas, and Simon (him ca'd Niger), Lucius o' Cyrene, and Manaen, wha was foster-brother to Herod, the king-depute, and Saul. 2. And, as they ser't the Lord, and war fastin, the Holie Spirit said, "Set apairt to me Barnabas and Saul, for the wark to whilk I hae bidden them." 3. Sae, fastin and prayin, and layin their hauns on them, they sent them aff. 4. They, thus sent oot by the Holie Spirit, gaed doon to Seleucia; and frae thair sailed the lenth o' Cyprus. 5. And, gaun forrit to Salamis, they proclaimed the word o' God i' the kirks o' the Jews; and they hae John to attend them. 6. And gaun throwe the hail Isle the lenth o' Paphos, they cam on a particular man, a magician, a fause-prophet, a Jew, by name Bar-jesus. 7. Wha wis wi' the governor-depute, Sergius Paulus, a man o' discernment. He, ca' in for Barnabas and Saul, desir't to hear the word o' God. 8. But Elymas the magician (for sae is translatit his name), withstude them, seekin to turn the governor-depute frae the faith. 9. But Saul—wha cam to be ca'd Paul, as weel—fu' o' the Holie Spirit, lookin sternly at him, says, 10. "O fu' o' a' guile and a' wrang—son o' the Enemy—wull ye no hand frae makin gley'd the straucht ways o' the Lord? 11. "And noo, see! the Lord's haun is on ye! And ye'se be blin', no seein the sun till the time come!" And at ance thair fell on him a misty

mirkness; and, gaun aboot, he was seekin for some ane to airt him by the haun.

12. Than the governor-depute, seeing what had come about, believed; being made to ferlie at the word o' the Lord.

13. Noo, settin their sails frae Paphos, Paul's company cam to Perga o' Pamphylia. But John, lea'in them, ga'ed back to Jerusalem.

14. Hoobeit they, lea' in Perga, cam till Antioch in Pisidia; and gaun intil the kirk on the Sabbath-day, sat doon.

15. And, the law being read—and the prophets—the kirk-rulers sent to them, and quo' they, "Men, brethren! gin ye hae ony word o' gude-coonsel for the folk, say on!" 16. And Paul, staunin up, and motioning wi' his haun, said, "Men, wha are Israel'ites, and ye that fear God, hearken! 17. "The God o' this nation Israel', waled oot oor forbears, and raised up the folk whan they bade in Egypt's lan'; and wi' a lofty airm he led them oot o't.

18. "And for aboot forty years' time tholed he their behavior i' the wilderness.


20. "And eftir thae things, gied he them Judges, till Samuel, a prophet.

21. "And eftir they socht for a king, and God gied them Saul, son o' Kish, a man o' Benjamin's tribe, for forty years.

22. "And when he had putten him aside, he raised up Dauid for their king. O' him, he said, bearin witness, 'I found Dauid, o' Jesse,
a man eftir my ain heart, wha sal do a' my wull.'
23. "O' this man's seed, has God, conform to his own promise, brocht to Isra'el, a Saviour, Jesus.
24. "John haein preached afore his comin the baptizein' o' Repentance, to a' Isra'el's folk;
25. "And as John performed his task, he said, 'Wha tak ye me to be? I am-na he! But, tent ye! ane is comin eftir me, the shoon o' whose feet I am-na fit to lowse!'
26. "Men! brethren! bairns o' Abra'm's race! and whasse amang ye fears God! to you the word o' this salvation is sent out!
27. "For they o' Jerusalem, and their rulers, kennin neither him nor the words o' the prophets that are read ilka Sabbath-day, they hae e'en fulfill't them in condemn him.
28. "And e'en though they faund nae cause o' death in him, yet demandit they o' Pilate that he sould be slain.
29. "And whan they had finish't a' things anent him whilk had been putten doon, they took him doon frae the tree, and laid him in a tomb.
30. "But God waukened him frae 'mang the deid.
31. "And he was seen for a gay wheen days, to thea who cam up wi' him frae Galilee to Jerusalem; wha, at this present, are his ee-witnesses to the people.
32. "And to you we are giean the Blythe-message, as to the promise made to the faithers,
33. "That God has fulfill't the same to our bairns, by raisin up Jesus; as it is putten doon i' the first Psalm, 'My Son art thou! This day hae I begotten Thee!'
34. "And, in that he hain him frae 'mang the deid, noo nae mair to fa' back to corruption, he thus says,

'I wull gie you the faithfu' lovin-kindnesses o' Dauvid!'
35. "Sae as in anither place he says, 'Thou winna gie thy Holy Ane to see corruption!'
36. "For Dauvid his sel, eftir he had ser'd God in his ain life-time, fell sleepin, and was laid wi' his faither, and saw corruption:
37. "But he that God waukened up saw corruption nane!
38. "Sae be it kent to you, men! brethren! that throwe this man is proclaimed to you the lowsin' o' sin!
39. "And throwe him', a' wha believe are justifit frae a' things, no possible by Moses' law to be justifit frae.
40. "Tak tent, than! sae that come-na on ye spoken o' in the prophets:
41. "'Tak tent, ye that geck! and ferlie ye, and dwine awa! For I work a wark i' your days, a wark ye'ese no believe though ane set it plain afore ye!'"
42. "And whan they skail't frae the kirk, they desir't that thir words sould be tell't them the neist Sabbath.
43. "Noo, whan the kirk brak up, thar follow't mony o' the Jews, and o' the godlie seekers, wi' Paul and Barnabas; wha, speakin till them, heartit them up to continue in God's love.
44. But on the comin Sabbath, narnhaun the hail citie cam thegither to hear the word o' the Lord.
45. But the Jews, seein the thranges, war fu' o' jealousie, and spak again thae things that Paul said, mis-cain' them.
46. And Paul and Barnabas, wi' great freedom o' speech, said, "It was necessar that the word o' God sould first be spoken to you: seein ye hae cuisten it frae ye, and adjudge yersels no wordie o' eternal life—than, turn we to the Gentiles!"  
47. "For sae has the Lord bidden us: 'I hae set thee up for a licht to the Gentiles, that thou may be for

\[1\] V. 33. Sae mony o' the best MSS. The "first" and the "second," as we hae them, the Jews aft read as ane.
salvation to the far-awa ends o' the yirth!"

48. And as the Gentiles heard this, they war pleased, and glorify't the word o' the Lord; and as mony as had come to be disposed to eternal life, believed.

49. And the word o' the Lord was spread abreid in a' that kintra-side.

50. But the Jews steered up the godlie weemen o' gude-standin, and the heid men o' the citie, and raised up a feud again Paul and Barnabas, and cuist them oot o' their borders.

51. But they, flaying the stoor aff their shoon again them, cam to Iconium.

52. And the disciples war filled wi' joy and wi' the Holie Spirit.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

Had ony o' Christ's disciples sic ups and doons as Paul? Gaun to be worshipped; and than clourd wi' stanes, and left for deuld! But it's a' weel wi' him, lang-syne!

NOO, it cam aboot in Iconium, that they gaed intil the Jews' kirk, and sae spak, that thar believed—baith o' Jews and Greeks—an unco thrang.

2. But the misbelievin Jews steered up and misleared the sauls o' the Gentiles, and gar't them be turned again the brethren.

3. Sae, a gey while they bade, speakin oot freely i' the Lord, wha burs witness to the word o' his love, grantin tokens and ferlies to be dun by their hauns.

4. But the bouk o' the citie was dividit; and some war wi' the Jews, and some wi' the Apostles.

5. And whan thar was an onset, baith o' the Gentiles and Jews, wi' the rulers, to dishonor them and stane them.

6. They kent o't, and fled oot-by intil the cities o' Lycaonia, to Lystra and Derbe, and the kintra thar-aboot.

7. And thar they proclaimed the Joyfu'-message.

8. And at Lystra, thar was sittin a man, feckless in his feet, a lameter frae his mither's womb, wha never gaed.

9. The same man heard Paul speak; wha, strickly observin him, and perceivin that he had faith to be saved,

10. Cry't oot wi' a soondin voice, "Staun ye up on yere feet!" And he lap up, and walkit aboot.

11. And whan the thrang saw what Paul had done, they cryt oot i' the tongue o' Lycaonia, "The gods, appearin like men, hae come doon to us!"

12. And they war ca'in Barnabas, "Jupiter"; but Paul, "Mercurie," seein he was the main speaker.

13. And the priest o' Jupiter, whose shrine was forment the citie, brocht owsen and garlands tae the ports, along wi' a' the thrang, and wad hae dune sacrifecce.

14. But, hearin o't, the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul, rivin their man-teels, ran forrit amang the folk, cryin oot,

15. And sayin, "Men! why are ye doin sic things? We are but men, o' like natur wi' you; deliverin to ye the Joyfu'-message, that ye sould turn awa frae sic witless things, to the leevin God, wha made heeven and yirth, and the sea, and a' things in them.

16. "Wha, in bygane time hindered-na the nations to gang their ain gate;

17. "Though he left-na his sel wantin testimonio—doin gude frae aboon, gien us rain and frutefu' seasons; fillin fu' o' joy yer hearts."

18. And e'en wi' thir sayins, jimpily restrained thay the thrang, that they saudna sacrifecce to them.

19. But thar cam Jews frae Antioch and Iconium; and, pereswadin the thrang, and stanin Paul, they

1 V. 19. Tak tent, hoo as day they war adored, and again in a handclap staned! The praise o' the world is to be as little heedit as its spite!
harled him oat-by frae the citie; judgin him to be deid.

20. The disciples stanin roon, hoobeit, he, risin up, cam intil the citie; and neist day gaed forth wi’ Barnabas to Derbe.

21. Deliverin the Blythe-message to that citie as weel; and, makin mony disciples, they returned to Lystra and Iconium, and to Antioch.

22. Makin steive the sauls o’ the disciples, entreatin them to bide i’ the faith; sayin, “Throwe a hantle o’ afflicctions maun we win to the Kingdom o’ God.”

23. And, appointin for them elders in ilka assembly, an wi’ prayer and fastin—they gied them ower to the Lord in wham they put their trust.

24. And gaun throwe Pisidia, they cam intil Pamphylia;

25. And, proclaimin the word in Perga, they cam doon the lenth o’ Attalia;

26. And frae that they sailed for Antioch, frae whaur they had been gien ower to the favor o’ God for the wark they performed.

27. Sae, heisin come, they convened thegither the assembly, and gaed ower a’ things that God did wi’ them; and hoo that he had unsteekit a door o’ faith for the Gentiles.

28. And they bade a gey while wi’ the disciples.

CHAPTIR FYTEEN.
A great plea over circumcessem. Freedom carries the day. Paul an’ Barnabas sinder.

AND some, comin frae Judea, war instructin the brethren, “Gin ye be-na circumcesse, conform to Moses’ law, ye canna be sa’d!”

2. But eftir thar was nae sma’ disputin an quaisten wi’ them, by Paul and Barnabas, they settled for Paul and Barnabas, and ithers frae amang them, to gang up to the Apostles and Elders, at Jerusalem, anent this quaisten.

3. Sae they, bein set forrit by the Kirk, an gaun throwe baith Phencia an Samaria, declared the turnin-aboot o’ the Gentiles; an gar’t the brethren hae great joy.

4. And, comin to Jerusalem, they war welcomed by the Kirk, an the Apostles, an the Elders; an gaed ower a’ the things God hae dune by them.

5. But thar stude forrit some o’ the sect o’ the Pharisees, wha believed, threepin: “It is necessar to circumcesse them, an chairge them to keep Moses’ law!”

6. And the Apostles an Elders war gotten thegither to consider this mattr.

7. But eftir a hantle o’ quaistenin, Peter, staunin up, says to them: “Men! brethren! Ye a’ ken weel, that, a gey while syne, God made wale amang us, that the Gentiles frae my mooth soud hear the Blythe-message, an believe.

8. “And God—wha takes tant o’ the heart—bure testimonie; gian them the Holie Spirit, e’en as to us:

9. “And made nae differ ava atwixt us an them; purifyin their hearts by faith.

10. “And noo, hoo are ye tempin God? wi’ layin a yoke on the disciples that naither oor faithers nor we war steive eneuch to carry.

11. “But still we hae faith, throwe the Lord Jesus Christ, that we’re be saved; e’en in like mainner as they.”

12. And a’ the folk keepit whusht; an they hearkened to Paul an Barnabas, narratin a’ the tokens an wunner-warks God did amang the Gentiles by them.

13. But eftir they had dune, James answer’t, sayin, “Men! brethren! hearken to me!

14. “Simon has narrated hoo God at first did come to wale oot o’ the Gentiles a folk for his name.

15. “And to this is conform the words o’ the prophet, e’en as it is putten doon:

16. “Eftir thir things wull I
What the Councl wrote.

ACTS, XV.

Paul and Barnabas sinder.

return, and heize up again the tent o' Dauid that is fain doon; and its ruins wull I raise and set up again.

17. "'That the lave o' men may seek eftir the Lord; e'en a' the Gentiles on whom has been invoked my name,

18. "'Says the Lord, wha makes a' thir things kent frae the beginnin o' the world.'

19. "Sae my judgment is, that we souha fash thea wha 'mang the Gentiles are turnin to God;

20. "But that we soud send letters to them that they keep awa frae the pollutions o' eidols, and frae lecherie, and frae things strang't, and frae blude.

21. "For Moses, o' auld time, citie by citie, has thea proclamation him, being read i' the kirks ilka Sabbath-day."

22. Than seemed it to be weel to the Apostles and the Elders, wi the hail Kirk, to send waled oot men frae 'mang them to Antioch, wi' Paul and Barnabas; Judas, ca'd Barsabas, and Silas; foremait men amang the breithren.

23. And wrate by tham: "The Apostles and the elder brethren, to the breithren throws Antioch and Syria, and Cilicia, that are frae oot the Gentiles—greetin!"

24. "Forasmuckle as we hear that some gaun oot frae us, hae putten-ye-aboot wi' teachin, unsettlin yer sauls; to wham we gied nae sic instructions;

25. "It seems gude to us assembled, bein o'ae mind, that, walin oot men, we soud send them to ye, wi' oor weel-lo'ed Barnabas and Paul.

26. "Men wha hae putten their lives in pawn for the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

27. "We hae sent, than, Judas and Silas, and them, that by word o' mooth they may report the same things.

28. "For it seemed weel to the Holie Spirit and to us, no to be layin ony mair burden on ye, save thir necessar things:

29. "To keep awa frae eild sacrifeeces, and frae blude, and frae things strang't, and frae lecherie: oot o' whilk keepin yersels clear, ye sal do weel. Fare-yel weel!"

30. Sae they, bein sent awa, gaed doon to Antioch; and, gaitherin the thrang thegither, deliver't the letter.

31. And they, readin it, rejoiced ower the consolation.

32. And Judas and Silas, theirsel bein prophets, wi' mony words com-fortit and upbeggit the breithren.

33. And eftir makin a delay, they war sent awa in peace frae the breithren to them wha sent them oot.

34. Nane-the-les, it pleased Silas to bide still thar.

35. But Paul and Barnabas bade in Antioch, teachin and proclaimin the Blythe-message o' the word o' the Lord; wi' mony ithers.

36. But eftir a gey wheen days, Paul says to Barnabas, "Lat us turn again, and look in on the breithren, in ilka city whaur we proclaimed the word o' the Lord; and see hoo they fare!"

37. Noo Barnabas was min't to tak wi' them John, wha was ca'd "Mark."

38. Whauras Paul thocht best no to tak him wi' them wha turned awa frae Pamphylia, and gaed-na wi' them to the wark.

39. And thar raise a shairp contention atwixt them, see that they sindered the ane frae the ither; and Barnabas, takin wi' him Mark, sailed oot for Cyprus.

1 V. 21. Moses, and the morals o' the Auld Testament, James thocht, war weil kent amang the Jews; but the Gentiles wantit a wee airtin in gude morals.

2 V. 34. This verse is no in the best MSS.

3 V. 39. We kenna wha was richt and wha was wrang, anent the maitter o' Mark; but we jalousie that a wee mair forbearance on ilka side micht hae hindered this rupture—or sune southered it up!
40. But Paul, walin Silas, gaed oot, being putten ower intil the Lord's favor by the brethren.
41. And he gaed throwe Syria and Cilicia, strenthenin the kirks.

CHAPTR I. SAXTEEN.
The Blythe-message intil Europe, wi' pain and travail.

And he cam intil Derbe and Lystra, and behauld! a particular disciple was ther, named Timothy, son o' a believin Jewess, but o' a Greek father;

2. Wha was weel-spoken o' by the brethren at Lystra and Iconium.

3. This ane Paul wad hae to gang oot wi' him. And he took and circumceased him, on account o' the Jews i' thae paits—for they a' kent that his father was a Greek.
4. And as they gaed throwe the cities, they deliver'd intil their keepin the word that had been gien oot by the Apostles and Elders in Jerusalem.
5. Sae war the assemblies made strang i' the faith, and increased in numbers day by day.
6. And they gaed by the Phrygian and Galatian kintra, haein been forbidden by the Holie Spirit to proclaim the word i' the Province o' Asia;
7. And comin alang Mysia, they settleld to gang intil Bythinia; but the Spirit o' Jesus didna alloo them:
8. And, gaun by Mysia, they cam doon to the Troad.
9. And a vision appear'd to Paul i' the nicht: thar stude a Macedonia-man, and entreatit him, sayin, "Come ye ower intil Macedonia, and bring us help!"
10. Noo, seein the vision, at ane we socht to gang oot intil Macedonia; conclusin that God had bidden us proclaim the Blythe-message to them.
11. Settin sail, than, frae the Troad, we held straucht to Samothracia; and on the morn to Neapolis;
12. And frae thar to Philippi, whilk is a chief citie o' that paity o' Macedonia—a "Colony." And we war in yon citie a wheen days.
13. And on the Sabbath we gaed oot o' the port by a watir-side, whaur we thocht thar wad be a place for prayer; and, sittin doon, we war speakin to the weemen that cam the-gither.
14. And a particular wumman, by name Lydia, a purple-seller, o' the citie o' Thyatira, ane devout toward God, heard us; whose heart the Lord open't, that she soud tak gude tent to what Paul spak.
15. Noo, when she was baptezz't, and her housebauld, she besocht us, sayin, "Gin ye hae judged me to be leal to the Lord, come awa to my hoose, and bide thar!" And she gar'd us sae do.
16. And it cam aboot, as we war gaun to the place o' prayer, a lass wi' a spirit o' magic met us, wha brochit her maisters muckle siller by her soothsayin.
17. This ane, followin Paul and us, was aye crying oot, "Thir men are servants o' the Maist Heigh God; wha are airtin ye i' the way o' salvation!"
18. And this she was doin a gey wheen days. But Paul, sair putten-aboot, turned and said to the spirit, "I chaire ye, i' the name o' Jesus Christ, to come oot o' her!" And it cam oot that vera oor.
19. But her owners, seein that she the hope o' their gains was thus farawa', laid hau'd on Paul and Silas, and harl't them intil the merkit-place to the rulers,
20. And bringin them afore the magistrates, quo' they, "Thir men are an unco pest to oor citie—they bein Jews—
21. "And are settin forth customs that are naither to be acceptit nor dune—we bein Romans."
22. And a' the thrang raise up again them: and the magistrates strippin aff their clas, gae orders to clour them wi' rods.

23 And, layin on them mony stripes, they cuist them intil the To'booth, chairgin the jailer to keep them siccar.

24. Wha, on siccan a chairge as this, cuist them intil the benmaist dungeon, and stall'd their feet siccar i' the stocks.

25. And aboot the midstnicht, Paul and Silas war prayin, and hymnin God; and the prisoners war hearin them.

26. And a' at ance cam a great yirdin, sae that the fundations o' the prison trimlt; and at ance a' doors unsteekit, and a' bonds war lowsed.

27. Noo the jailer, rais'd oot o' his sleep, and seein a' the prison-doors unsteekit, drawin his blade, wad hae made awa wi' bis sel, thinkin the prisoners a' fled.

28. But Paul cry't oot wi' a lood voice, "Lat nae saith come t'ye! for we are a' here!"

29. And he ca'd for a light, and rushed in; and trimlt, and fell doon afore Paul and Silas.

30. And bringin them oot, said, "My Lords, what maun I be doin, that I may be sav'd?"

31. And they said, "Hae faith in the Lord Jesus, and ye sal be sav'd; yersel and yere hoose!"

32. And they spak to him the word o' the Lord, and to a' that war in his hoose.

33. And, takin them wi' him, in that 'oor o' the nicht, he wesh'd their stripes, and was bapteez't, 'he and a' his, on the spot.

34. And fisbin them intil his apartments, he set a table afore them, and had unco rejoicin, wi' a' his hosebauld—believin in God.

35. But whan day cam, the magistrates sent to the officers, sayin, "Let gang thee men!"

36. And sae the jailer tell't the words to Paul, "The magistrates hae sent that ye micht gang; sae noo, gaun forth, depairt in peace!"

37. But Paul said, "They hae cloured us in public—and uncondemned—men that are Romans, and they hae cuisten us intil a dungeon; and noo dae they send us oot hildins? No sae! but lat them come their sels and lead us oot!"

38. Noo the officers took back to the magistrates thir declarations; and they war taen wi' fear, hearin they war Romans;

39. And, comin, they besocht them; and, leadin them oot, they entertain them to gang awa frae the citie.

40. And they, comin oot o' the To'booth, gaed to Lydia; and, seein the brethren, they consoled them; and gaed awa.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN.

Paul brings the wyse men o' Athens a wisdom that was mair nor their ain! But only a wee when o' them wad ha'e it!

SAE, gaun on throwe Amphipolis and Apollonia, they cam intil Thessalonica, whaur the Jews had a kirk.

2. And Paul, e'en as he aye did, gaed in to them; and for thrie Sabbaths reasoned wi' them frae the word,

3. Openin up and makin plain, that it was necessar for the Anointit Ane to suffer, and to rise frae among the deid, and that "This vera Ane is

\[ V. 23. The gude way is no aye as even as a green loanin: Paul ne'er dootit his commission, for a' the ill that cam wi't. Nae mair sound we! \]

172
ACTS, XVII.

and Timothy to come to him as sune as they might, they returned.

16. But while Paul, in Athens, was looking for them, his heart lowed within him, perceivin that the citie was a' gien ower to eidola.

17. Sae he was reasonin 'i the kirk wi' the Jews and the devout anes; and i' the merkits ilka day wi' thae he met wi'.

18. And some, e'en amang the wyse anes o' the Stoics and Epicureans, stude up again him: and a wheen war sayin, "What, aiblin, micht this 'gaberlunzie-man be wantin to say?" Ithers spak, "He maun be a settar-up o' foreign eidols;" for that he has gien oot the Blythe-message o' Jesus and the Risin-Again.

19. And sae, layin haud o' him, they had him up to the Areopagus, sayin, "Can we no get to ken what this new teachin is that ye are speakin?"

20. "For ye are feshin in fremd things to our hearing; we wad ken, than, whatna things thir are?"

21. Noo, a' Athenians, and the fremd folk biding thar, had leisure for nocht els, but to hear or to tell o' some new ferlie.

22. And Paul, staunin in the mids o' the Areopagus, said, "Men! Athenians! In a' things how unco mindfu' ye are in 2 worship, I perceive.

23. For as I gaed by, and took tent o' the objects o' yere worship, I lichtit on a shrine wi' this legend, 'To a God no kent.' What, than, ye adore unkennin, I mak plain to ye.

24. "The God that made the warld, and a' things in't—he wha is

---

1 V. 18. "Gaberlunzie-man": they spak o' Paul as gin he had been but a gatherer-up o' mools aneath the table o' Wisdom. "He a philosopher indeed!"

2 V. 22. Paul didnae gook at their worship; but he wad hae them seek the God o' a' things.
Maister o' Heeven and yirht—no in haun-made temples dwalls, as tho' he wantit ocht;
25. "Nor wi' human hauns needs waitin on, sin he his sel gies a' their life and breath, and a' things.
26. "He has made a' ane—ilka nation o' men—to bide on the face o' the yirht; spannin oot the seasons, and the limits o' their dwellin:
27. "That they micht be seekin God; gin aiblins they micht graip etfir him, and fin' him; tho' he be-na far-aws frae ony o' us.
28. "For in him we leeve, act and exist; as e'en thee amang yere ain bards hae said, 'For his offspring, too, are we!'
29. "Bein than, God's offspring, we souldna think that that whilk is Divine is like to gowd, or siller, or stane—carved wi' skill and device o' man.
30. "The times o' ignorance God heedit-na; noo, he chairges a' men, in a' places, to repent:
31. "Inasmuckle as he has set a day, in whilk he sal judge the hail yirht in equity, by a Man that he has appointit; o' whom he has gien surety to a' men, in that he has raised him frae the deid."
32. But whan they heard o' the Risin-frae-the-deid, a wheen geck't at him; but ither some, "We will hear ye again anent this."
33. Sae Paul gaed forth oot o' their mids.
34. But some men wha joined theirseels to him, believed; amang them, e'en Dionysius the Areopagite Judge, and a wumman by name Damaris, and ither wi' them.

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEEN.
The Jews at Corinth. Gallio wadna listen to them. Paul lea's Europe.

EFTIR thir things, lea'in Athens, he cam to Corinth.
2. And, lichtin on a particular Jew, by name Aquila, a Pontus man by nativity, late come frae Italy, and his wife Priscilla—for Claudius had gien orders for a' Jews to lee' Rome—be cam to them.
3. And for that he was o' the same trade, he bade wi' them, and wrocht; for they war tent-makers by trade.
4. And he was reasonin i' the kirk ilka Sabbath; and perskawdit Jews and Greeks.
5. Than, whan baith Silas and Timothy cam dcon frae Macedonia, Paul was led on in his preachin, demonstratin to the Jews that Jesus was the Anointit Ane.
6. But as they set theirsels to oppose and revile, shakin oot his raiment, he said to them, "Yere blude be on yere ain heid; I am clear! Frae this oot I gang to the Gentiles!"
7. And, flittin frae thence, he cam intil the hoose o' a man by name Titus Justus, devout toward God; whase hoose was neibor to the kirk.
8. But Crispus, the kirk-ruler, believed i' the Lord, wi' his hail hoosebauld. And a hantle o' the Corinthians, hearin, war believin, and war bapteez't.
9. And the Lord said by nicht to Paul, in a vision, "Be-na sley't; and spare-na to speak!"
10. "For I am wi' ye; and nane sal set upon ye, to do ye ill; for I hae a hantle o' folk i' this citie."
11. And he bade a year and sax month; teaching amang them God's word.
12. But when Gallio was Proconsul o' Achaia, the Jews made an onset on Paul, and had him up for trial.
13. Sayin, "This ane is perskawdin men to worship God, contrar to the law!"
14. Noo, whan Paul was aboot to open his mou', Gallio says to the Jews, "Gin it indeed had been a maitter o' stour and strife, and ill-deedie wickedness, O Jews! I wad hae reason to thole w'ye:
15. "But gin they be quastens anent words, and names, and laws o'
Sails to Syria.

ACTS, XIX.

ye re ain—ye sal see to that yersels! Nae judge o' siccan things sal I be!"
16. And he cuist them oot frae the coort.
17. And they a', grippin hand o' Sosthenes, the kirk-ruler, cloured him i' the presence o' the coort. And Gallio took nae heed o' thir things.
18. But Paul, still bidin a gey wheen days wi' the brethren, than bade them fareweel, and sailed awa to Syria; and wi' him Aquila and Priscilla; he shavin his heid in Cenchrea, for he had made a vow:
19. And than cam ower intil Ephesus; and he left them abint thar; but he, his sel, gaed intil the kirk, and reasoned wi' the Jews.
20. And tho' they war seekin to hae him bide langer, he didna consent:
21. But bad them fareweel, sayin, "I wull come back t'ye, gin God wull!" and set sail frae Ephesus;
22. And landin at Cesarea, and gaun up and saluting the kirk, he gaed doon to Antioch;
23. And, takin some time, he gaed forth, gaun throwe a' theae pairts in order—Galatia and Phrygia—puttin heart intil the disciples.
24. Noo, a Jew, Apollos by name, an Alexandrian born, a man o' leair, cam doon to Ephesus, bein michtie i' the word.
25. The same had been instrueckit by hearin the way o' the Lord: and bein warm-heartit, was speakin and teachin eidentlie aboot Jesus, kennis but the baptism o' John.
26. He, too, begude to speak freely i' the Jews' kirk. But Priscilla and Aquila, haein heard him, took him to them, and mair carefully exposin to him the way o' God.

27. And he being ready to gang throwe intil Greece, the brethren wrate to the disciples to tak him in joyfully; wha, comin thar, holspit weel thae who believed, wi' his gifts.
28. For, wi' unco vigor, he publicly confoundit the Jews oot and oot, makin plain by the Word that Jesus was the Anointit Ane.

CHAPTRIR NINETEEN.

Paul at Ephesus. An unco tullie i' the theatre.

A ND it cam aboot while Apollos was in Corinth, that Paul, gaun throwe the heigher pairts, cam intil Ephesus; and found a wheen disciples,
2. And to them quo' he, "Gat ye the Holie Spirit when ye believed?" But they said, "On the contrar, we wanna fellt thar was ony Holie Spirit!"
3. And he said, "What, than, war ye bapteez't intil?" And quo' they, "Intil John's baptism."
4. And Paul said, "John bapteez't a bapteezin o' Repentance, sayin to the folk comin to him, that they soud pit faith in him comin eftir him, e'en in Jesus."
5. Noo, hearin this, they war bapteez't intil the name o' the Lord Jesus.
6. And Paul, pitten his hauns on them, the Holie Spirit cam doon on them, and they spak wi' tongues, and prophesye'it.
7. And they war aboot twal; 1 a' men.
8. And he gaed intil the kirk, and spak openly for aboot thrie month; reasonin and persuadin anent God's kingdom.
9. But as a hantle o' them hard-ened theirsels, and wadna be persuadit, speakin ill o' "The Way." afore a' the folk—he left them, and

1 V. 17. Gallio, his brither Seneca says, was a cannie, weel-behav't man. He had nae patience wi' sic a thrawn, unco set as thae Jews war: and reck't-us what was dune sae lang as the general peace o' the toon was naa interfer't wi'. He is no to be taen as a type o' dour insensitivity.

1 V. 7. Thir disciples war a' men; nae weemen among them. Oor English is no perfetely plain on that point.

175
set the disciples apairt, day by day
discoorsin in the schule o' Tyrrnus.
10. Noo this ga'ed on for twa year;
see that a' folk dwallin i' the Pro-
vince o' Asia heard the Lord's word;
Jews and Greeks.
11. And God did warks o' poore,
ayont the ordinair, by the hauns o'
Paul.
12. Sae that frae his body to the
sick anes war carry't naipkins and
aprons, and the illnesses gaed frae
them: foul spirites eke gaed oot.
13. But particular anes o' the
gangrel Jews, excorsists, took on
them to ca' ower tha haein' foul
spirits, the name o' the Lord Jesus,
sayin, "I depone t'ye by Jesus,
priestished o' Paul!"
14. Noo, thar war seven sons o'
anee Scov, a Jewish heigh-priest, wha
did sae.
15. And the man wi' the foul
spirit cry't, "Jesus I ken, and Paul
I weel ken; but wha may ye be?"
16. And the man the foul spirit
was in, lap on them, and over-
cam them; sae tat, disjaskit and
cloored, they escapit frae that hoose.
17. And this cam to be kent by a',
baith Jews and Greeks dwallin in
Ephesus; and thar cam a fear on
them, and the name o' the Lord
Jesus was exaltit.
18. And mony o' theae that believ'd
cam, confessin openly, and turnin
awa frae their practeeses.
19. A gey wheen, too, o' theae that
trok't in magical secrets feeb'th
their buiks, and brutn them afoor them a';
and they recknit up what they cam
to, and faund it fifty thousand'siller-
pieces.
20. Sae, in sic poore, was the word
waxin and prevailin.
21. Noo, aftir a' theae things, Paul
had it in his heart, whan he had
gane throwe Macedonia and Greece,
to gang forrit tp Jerusalem; and
quo' he, "Ance I hae been thar, it is
necessar for me to see Rome as
weel!"

22. And, sendin aff into Macedonia
twa o' theae waitin on him, Timothy
and Erasmus, he bade for a wee in
Asia.
23. But thar raise, at that time, an
unco stour anent "The Way."
24. For ane, Demetrius by name,
a siller-smith, makin siller shrines for
Diana, was winnin for the tradesmen
nae sma' patronage.
25. Wham, bringin thegither, and
them wha wrocht amang sic thigns,
hed to them, "Men! ye ken weel
that oot o' this trade we win oor.
gear.
26. "And noo ye see and hear
that no ony at Ephesus, but nar-
haun in a' Asia, this Paul, perswadin,
hed turned awa' mony folk, sayin,
'They bude be nae gods that are
made wi' hauns.'
27. "And no only is thar danger
that this oor trade may be ill spoken
o' ; but e'en that the temple o' the
great goddess Diana may be lichtit,
and a' her dignity pu'd down: till
wham the hail o' Asia, and a' the
world gie worship!"
28. Noo, hearin this, and bein fu'
ou' wrath, they made an unco cry,
sayin, "Michtie is Diana o' the
Ephesians!"
29. And the citie was fu' o' the
stour; and they panged theirsels wi'
ase mind into the theatre, layin hau'd
o' Gaiss and Aristarchus, Mace-
donians, fellow-travellers o' Paul's.
30. And Paul was mindit to gang
in amang the thrang; but the
disciples wadna lat him:
31. And a wheen o' the Asiiarchs
also, freunds o' his, sent to him,
entretaining him no to gang into the
theatre.
32. And see some cri't oot as
thing, and some anither; for the
gatherin had come to be a' throwe-

1 V. 31. Thir war local rulers i' the Pro-
vince. The Romans war wyse i' their
generation; i' the mair civilizz'd lands,
leas'in muckle local poore wi' the folk's
sels.
ither, and the maist pairt kent- na why they had forgather't.

33. And they heisaid up Alexander frae the mids o' the folk; the Jews puttin' him forrit; and Alexander, wavin his haun, wad hae made his defence to the folk.

34. But whan they cam to Ken 
he was a Jew, wi' an voice they a' cry't oot, for the lenth o' twa 'coors, "Michty is Diana o' the Ephesians!"

35. But the Toon-clerk, quatin doon the folk, said, "Men! Ephesians! wha o' men is thar that diana own that the Ephesian city is shrinkeeper o' the great Diana, and o' that whilk fell doon frae Jupiter!"

36. "Thir bein things no to be gainsayed, it is needfu' that ye be quate, to begin wi'; and to do naething rash.

37. "For ye brocht thir men—naither harryin temples, nor misca'in yere goddess.

38. "Sae, gin Demetrius and the tradesmen wi' him, hae ony plea wi' ony ane, the Coort-days are keepit, and thar are advocats; lat them implead ane anither.

39. "But gin something mair ye seek, lat it be settled i' the lawfu' assembly.

40. "For we are in danger o' bein wyttit wi' riot and revolt, anent this day; seein we hae no a single cause to plead in gian an account o' this concourse."

41. And whan thir things war said, he skail't the assembly.

CHAPTIR TWENTY.

The sleeperie lad at Troas. The Elders o' Ephesus instruckit.

And whan the tulzie was ower, Paul sent for the disciples, and chairin them, he quat them, and gaed oot till Macedonia.

2. Gaun throwe thai pairts, and gian them muckle coonel, he cam intil Greece.

3. And haein spent thrie months, whan the Jews laid plots for him as he was gaun to sail awa till Syria, he made up his mind to gang back throwe Macedonia.

4. And thar gaed wi' him the lenth o' Asia, Sopater o' Pyrrhus, a Berean; and Thesalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius free Derbe; and Timothy; and o' Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5. Thir, gaun afore, war stoppin for us in Troas;

6. While we sailed awa, aftir the days o' the Sad Breid, frae Philippi; and cam till them at Troas in fyve days, biding thar sev'n days.

7. And on the first day o' the week, whan we a' cam thegither to brek breid, Paul was discoursin to them, bein ready to gang awa i' the morn, and spak on till midnight.

8. And thar war mony lights i' the laft whaur we had forgather't.

9. Noo thar sat a lad, by name Eutychus, i' the winnock; and, as Paul was lang preachin, bein owercome wi' sleep, he fell frae the third laft, and was liftit up deid.

10. But gaun doon, Paul fell on him, and pat his arms aboot him; and quo' he, "Be-na makin a steer; for his life is in him!"

11. And sae, gaun up, and brekin breid, and eatin a wee, he spak a gey while, e'en till the dawin; and sae gaed on.

12. And they brocht the lad leevin, and war muckle comfortit.

13. Noo we, gaun forrit till the ship, sailed till Assos, frae thar to tak up Paul; for sae had it been trystit; he gaun on on fit.

14. And sae whan we forgather't wi' him at Assos, we took him up, and cam to Mitylene.

15. And frae thar, sailin awa on the morn, we cam forrent Chios; and on the neist day we edged intil Samos; and on the neist again, we cam to Miletus.

16. For Paul was mindit to gang by Ephesus, that he soudna abblins spend time in Asia; for he hastit, gin
it war possible for him, to be at Jerusalem again the Pentecost.

17. Yet frae Mileitus he sent to Ephesus, and socht to hae the Elders o’ the Kirk.

18. And when they war come to him, he said to them, “Ye weel ken, frae the first day I set fit in Asia, hoo I was w’ye, the hail time ;

19. “Wi’ service to the Lord in a’ humbleness, and tears and toils, whilk cam on me by the doobleness o’ the Jews ;

20. “And hoo I keepit naething hiddin, o’ the things that war gude ; tellin it ower t’ye, and teachin it in public, and frae ae hoose to anither.

21. “Bearing witness baith to Jews and Greeks, anent repentance to God, and faith to oor Maister, Jesus Christ.

22. “And noo, mark! I gang in bonds to the Spirit, journeyin to Jerusalem—kennin-na what aiblins sal befa’ me yonner ;

23. “But only this, that the Holy Spirit bears me witness, frae ae citie to anither, that shackles and sorrows are waitin for me.

24. “Yet, on nae accoont, dae I haud my life lo’esome to mysel, gin sae I may end weel my coarse, and the darg gien me by the Lord Jesus; to testify to the Blythe-message o’ God’s favor !

25. “And noo, tak tent! I ken that nae mair dae ye see my face! ye ’mang wham I hae gane, proclaim the Kingdom.

26. “Sae, tak I yersels to witness, this vera day, that I am free frae the blude o’ a’ men.

27. “For I keepit-na back ocht, but spak a’ God’s coonsel t’ye.

28. “Tak tent, than, to yersels, and to a’ the ’hirsel, in whilk the Holie Spirit has set ye for bishops; to shepherd the Kirk o’ the Lord, whilk he cfoot for his sel wi’ his ain blude.

29. “I ken, that when I am gane, unco wolves sal come intil yere mids, devoirin the flock.

30. “And frae amang yersels sal men rise up, speakin thrown doctrines, sae as to wyle awa followers efter them.

31. “Sae tak ye gude tent; mindin, that for thir three year, by nicht and day, I gied mysel nae rest, admonishin ilka ane, wi’ tears.

32. “And noo, I gie ye ower to God, and to the word o’ his gude favor; wha is strang to bigg ye up, and to gie you yer portion amang a’ that are sanctify’t.

33. “Frae nae ane wad I fain hae had siller, or gowd, or raiment.

34. “Ye ken yersels, that thir vera hauns wrocht sair for my ain necessities, and for them that wad wi’ me.

35. “In a’ things I gied ye to ken that sae workin it behoves us to gie strenth to the feckless; and to keep in mind the words o’ the Lord Jesus, when he said, ‘Happy, rather, to gie than to get!’”

36. And sayin thir things, he bow’t his knees, wi’ a’ o’ them, and prayed.

37. And they a’ grat sair, and fa’in on Paul’s neck, they tenderly kiss’d him.

38. Carin maist o’ a’ for what he had said, “Nae mair dae ye see my face!” And they set him on, the lenth o’ the ship.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.
Paul, huntit by the Jews, fa’s intil the hauns o’ the Romans.

NOO, rivin oorsels awa frae them, we set sail; and rinnin straucht on, we cam to Cos; and on the morn to Rhodes; and frae thar to Patara.

2. And findin a ship gaun ower to Phenicia, we gaed on board and set sail.

3. Comin in sicht o’ Cyprus, and lea’in it on oor left, we sailed to Syria, and pat intil Tyre; for thar was the ship to unlade.

1 V. 28. Tregelles has it, “wee flock.”
178
4. And, lightin on disciples, we bade thar seven days: wha war giean Paul warnin, by the Spirit, no to be gaun up till Jerusalem.

5. And when we had passed the days, gaun forth, we war takin up oor voyage; and they a', wi' wives and weans, convoyed us as far as oot o' the citie; and we loutit doon on oor knees on the sands in prayer;

6. And tore oorsels asunder: and we gaed intil the ship, and they turned back again tae the hames.

7. And finisshin oor voyage frae Tyre, we cam alang to Ptolemais; and saluting the brethren, we bade wi' them as day.

8. And on the morn, gaun on, we cam till Cesarea; and finid the hoose o' Philip the Evangelist, ane o' the Seeven, we bade wi' him.

9. The same had fowr dochters, maidens, wha prophesye't.

10. And still bidin a wheen days, ane cam doon frae Judaea, a prophet, by name Agabus.

11. And comin till us, he liftit Paul's girdle, and fankit his ain feet and hauns, and quo' he, "Thir things says the Holie Spirit, 'The man whase aucht this girdle, sal the Jews sae bin' in Jerusalem, and gie him intil Gentile hauns.'"

12. And when we heard thir words, we entreatit him—baith we and thae o' that same place—no to gang up till Jerusalem!

13. Than answer't Paul, and quo' he, "Why wad ye be greetin, and brek my heart? for I staun ready no only to be bun', but e'en to dee, at Jerusalem, for the Lord Jesus Christ!"

14. And sae—as he waasna to be pereswadit—we quat, sayin, "The Lord's wull be done!"

15. And, aftir thae days, we packed oor luggage, and gaed up till Jerusalem.

16. And thar gaed up wi us some o' the disciples o' Cesarea, and brocht us till ane Mnason, o' Cyprus, an auld disciple; whaur we war to lodge.

17. And when we cam till Jerusalem, the brethren war joyfu' to welcome us.

18. And on the morn Paul wad gang in till James; and a' the Elders cam in.

19. And, salutin them, he tell't them a' the things—aney ane—that God had dune by him amang the Gentiles.

20. And they, hearin, magnify't God. And quo' they to him, "Ye see, brither, hoo mony myriads war amang the Jews wha believe; and they a'—to begin wi'—unco fu' o' zeal for the Law.

21. "Noo, they hae been tell't aboot ye, that ye teuch a forsakin' Moses, to a' the Jews that are 'mang the Gentiles; sayin no to circumcise their baisns, nor walk by the auld customs.

22. "What than wull it be? for they bude hear that ye are come.

23. "Sae, do this we say: Fowr men are wi' us, wi' a vow on them.

24. "Tak ye thir wi' ye, and be purify't wi' them, and gie something wi' them, and they sal shave their heids: and a' sal come to ken that the clash they heard aboot ye was naething; but that ye are keepin i' the ranks; mindin wel the Law.

25. "But anent the Gentiles that believe, we haie gien oot and affirmed that they sou'd gaird their seil anent eirdol-sacrifice, and blude, and frae stranglit, and frae lecherie."

26. Than Paul, takin wi' him the men the neist day, and beiin purify't wi' them, was gaun intil the Temple to signifie the endin o' the days o' purification, till siccan a time as an offeran sowd be offer't for ilka ane o' them.

1 V. 23. We kenna gin Paul did weel to tak this advisement. We cam see ony gude that was to come o'. It is a kittle point; and aiblins we are wyse no to answer, but juist to think!
27. When than the seeven days war nar-haun endt, the Jews frae Asia, seein him i' the Temple, made a tazlie amang the folk, and grippit him.

28. Cryin oot, "Men! Isra'ites! co'way and help! This is the man wha is speakin again the people, and the law, and this place everygate! Aye, and has e'en brocht Greeks intil the Temple, and has profaned this holie place!"

29. For afore this they had seen Trophimus the Ephesian, i' the citie wi' him; and they jalousied he had brocht him intil the Temple.

30. And the hail citie was in a steer; and a' the folk ran thegither, and they harled Paul oot frae the Temple; and a' the doors war steekit fast.

31. And as they ettled to slay him, news gaed to the chief officer that a' Jerusalem was in a tazlie.

32. Wha at ance takin to him sodgers and captains, ran doon on them. And they, seein the officer and the sodgers, quat clourin Paul.

33. Sae, comin on, the officer laid hau'd wi' him, and order't him to be bund wi' twa chains; and speir't wha he micht be? and what he had done?

34. But ane and anither was aye shoutin oot something els i' the thrang. Sae, seein he couldna get to ken for certain, on accoont o' the din, he order't him intil the Castle.

35. But when they cam to the stairs, it behov' him to be heizit up by the sodgers, sae sair was the onset o' the folk.

36. For a' the thrang war comin eftir, and cryin oot, "Awa' wi' him!"

37. And when he was nou gaun intil the Castle, Paul says to the officer, "May I say something t'ye?" And he said, "Dae ye ken Greek?"

38. "Ye are na, thon, yon Egyptian, that afore noo raise a revolt, and took intil the wilderness the fowr thousand men that war manslayers?"

39. Paul said, "I am a man wha am a Jew, ane o' Tarsus in Cilicia; a citizen o' nae mean citie: and mair, I beg o' ye to let me speak to the folk."

40. And whan he had gien him leeness, Paul, stauin on the stairs, waved his haun to the thrang; and whan a' was quate, he spak to them i' the Hebrew tongue, sayin:

**CHAPTER TWENTY-TWA.**

Paul's speech: they hear him till he touches their prejudices; and than, nae mair!

It is unco like our ain time!

"MEN, brethren and faithers! Wull ye hear my defence afore ye, at this present?"

2. And whan they heard that he spak to them i' the Hebrew speech, they keepit the mair whusht; and he said,

3. "I am a man, a Jew, born in Tarsus o' Cilicia; but brocht up i' this citie, at Gamaliel's feet, stricklie trained in a' the auld ways: bein frae the first fu' o' zeal for God, as a' ye are this day.


5. "As e'en the Heigh-priest can witness for me, and a' the Elders: frae whom I get letters to oor brethren, and journe'yt to Damascus, ettlin to feah thae wha had gane thar, to Jerusalem, that they soud be dealt wi'.

6. "And it cam aboot as I gaed on, and cam nar to Damascus, aboot noon, on a suddaintie, oot o' the lift, cam an unco licht a' aboot me.

7. "And I fell to the yird; and heard a voice sayin to me, 'Saul! Saul! why soud ye be pursuin me?'"

8. "And I answer't, 'Wha art thou, my 1Lord? And he said to

1 V. 8. "Lord" here is a term o' great respect: no that Paul, at the time, kent God was speakin to him. He kent that eftir.
His conversion.

ACTS, XXIII.  "Awa wi' him!"

me, 'I am Jesus o' Nazareth, that ye are pursuin!'
9. "And thae wi' me saw in fact the licht, but they ken-nah the words o' him speakin to me.
10. "And I speir't, 'What maun I do, my Lord?' But the Lord said to me, 'Up! and gae intil Damascus; and thar ye sae be tell't a' things ye hae to do!'
11. "And as I cou'dna see, for the glorie o' that licht, bein airtit by the haun o' thae that war wi' me, I gaed intil Damascus.
12. "And ane Ananias, a worshippin man conform to the Law, weel-spoken o' by a' the Jews bidin thar,
13. "Comin in to me, and stauin ower me, says to me, 'Saul! brither! look up!' And I, that vera oor, lookit up on him.
14. "And he said, 'Oor faithers' God appointit ye that ye mich ken his wull, and see the Righteous Ane, and hear words frae his mouth.
15. "'For ye sae be a witness for him, to a' men, o' the things ye hae seen, and did hear.
16. "'And noo why are ye delayin? Rise; be bpateez't, and wash awa yere sins, prayin to his name!'
17. "And it cam aboot again, when I cam back to Jerusalem, that I fell in a dwaum;
18. "And he was sayin to me, 'Haste ye, and gang oot frae Jerusalem; for they winna tak yere witness o' me!'
19. "And I said, 'Lord, they ken that I pat in dungeons, and cloured i' the kirks, thae believin on thee!'
20. "'And whan Stephen thy martyr's blude was shed, e'en I mysel was stauin by, and approvin; and took chairge o' their cledin wha slew him.
21. "But he said to me, 'Awa! for I wull send ye oot far awa, to the nations!'
22. Noo they hearkened as far as this word; and than cry't a' oot, sayin, "Awa wi' siccan a ane frae the yirth! for it isna fit he soud leeve!"
23. And as they made an ootcry, and rived their manteels, and cuist stoor intil the air,
24. The officer gied orders to fesh him intil the castle; sayin he was to be put to the test wi' rodes, that he mich ken why they war in siclike shoutin again him.
25. And as they war tyin him wi' the tows, Paul says to the captain that studie by, "Is it alloed to ye to clour a man, a Roman, and no condemned?"
26. And whan the captain heard that, he gaed till the chief officer, sayin, "What are ye about? For this man is a Roman!"
27. And the officer cam, and quo' he, "Tell me, are ye a Roman?"
And he said, "Aye."
28. And the officer said, "I, wi' spendin muckle siller, gat this citizenship." But Paul said, "I was born till't."
29. Than at ance they gaed aff wha soud hae putten him to the test: and the officer was fley't when he faund he was a Roman, and that he had tied him up.
30. And on the morn, wantin to ken till a certainie why he was wytt by the Jews, he lowst him frae his bonds; and orderin a' the Heigh-priests, and a' their Cooncil, to come thegither, he fesh't Paul doon, and set him in their mids.

CHAPTR TWENTY-THRIE.
The Cooncil ends in a tussie. Plottin again Paul: wha is sent on to the Governor.

AND lookin siccarlie at the Cooncil, Paul says, "Men! brethren! I, in a gude conscience, hae leevd on afore God, till this day!"
2. And Ananias, the Heigh-priest, gae orders to them stauin by, to clour him on the mou'.

181
3. Than Paul said to him, "God sal clour you, ye whitit wa'! For sit ye thar to judge me by the Law, and gar clour me, contrar to the Law?"

4. But they staunin by said, "Dae ye speak ill o' God's Heigh-priest?"

5. And Paul said, "I kent-na, brethren, that this was the Heigh-priest; for it is putten doon, 'O' the Ruler o' yere nation ye are-na to speak ill.'"

6. But whan Paul cam to ken that the ae pairt war Sadducees, and the tither pairt war Pharisees, he cry't oot i' the Cooncil, "Men! brethren! I am a Pharisee, and a bairn o' Pharisees! Anent the hope and Risin-again o' the deid am I quais-tent'd this day!"

7. Noo, whan he had said this, thar was a great fa'in-oot atwixt the Pharisees and Sadducees; and the thrang was sinder't in twa.

8. For the Sadducees say, "Thar is nae Risin-again, nor ony Angel nor spirit;" but the Pharisees haud to baith.

9. And thar raise a great cry: and a wheen o' the Writers o' the Pharisees' pairt raise, and contendit, sayin, "We fin' naething wrang wi' this man: aiblins a spirit spak to him; or an Angel!"

10. And whan a great thrivin took place, the chief officer, fley't lest Paul soud haes been rived in blads wi' them, order't the sodgers to gae doon and tak him wi' the strang haun, and fesh him intil the castle.

11. But that nicht the Lord stude ower him, and said, "Be o' gude heart, Paul! for as ye did gie gude witness o' me in Jerusalem, sae maun ye in Rome testifie for me!"

12. And whan day cam, the Jews made a plot, and colleagues thegither under a ban, sayin they wed eat-na and drink-na till siccan a time as they had slain Paul.

13. And thar war mair nor forty wha war trystit i' this plot.

14. Wha, comin' to the Heigh-priests and Elders, said, "We haes putten ooursels under a great ban, that we wed eat-na nor drink-na till we bae slain Paul.

15. "Noo, than, mak ye it appear to the chief officer—he bringin him doon to ye—that ye are wantin to speir oot some mair anent him: and we, or evir he comes nar, are waitin to kill him."

16. But Paul's nevoy heard o' their plot, and gaed, and cam intil the castle, and tell't it to Paul.

17. And Paul, ca'in in ane o' the captains to him, said, "Tak ye this lad to the chief officer; for he has a thing to report to him."

18. He, than, takin him wi' him, led him intil the chief officer, and says, "Paul, the prisoner, ca'in me to him, wad hae me fesh this young lad to ye, as haein something to say t'ye."

19. And the chief officer, took him by the haun, and gaed aside, and speir't at him, "What is't that ye hae to report to me?"

20. And he said, "The Jews seek that on the morn ye wed bring Paul doon to the Cooncil, as gin they wed speir oot some mair anent him.

21. "But gie ye no in tae them! for thar are waitin o' them mair nor forty men, wha haes putten their sels under a great ban, to eat-na and drink-na till they hae kill't him: and e'en noo are they waitin, lookin for a promise frae ye."

22. The chief officer than demittit the lad, giean him chairge, "Lat nae man ken that ye hae tell't thir things to me!"

23. And ca'in to him twa o' the captains, he said "Mak ready twa

---

1. V. 14. We needna ferlie at the Heigh-priests colloquing wi' murderers, when a hantle o' the same men wed be the anes that fee'd Judas to betray his Lord! But what an awfu' state o' public morals! Nae wonder the wrath fell!
hunner sodgers, that they may gang
the lenth o’ Cesarea; and seeventy
horsemen: and twa hunner spear-
men—by nine o’clock.
24. “And provide beasts, that,
pittin Paul tharon, they may bring
him till Felix the Governor.”
25. And he wrou a letter thus:
26. “Claudius Lysias, to the maist
excellent Governor Felix: gude
wishes!
27. “This man was grippt by
the Jews; and wad hae been slain by
them; than cam I doon wi’ a force
and rescued him, comin to ken that
he was a Roman.
28. “And, desairin to ken for what
they war wytin him, I led him doon
to their Heigh-Cooncil:
29. “And perceiv’t him to be
wytit wi’ things o’ their ain law, but
acuss’t o’ naething wordie o’ death or
bonds.
30. “And whan it was tell’t me
that thar was a plot again the man,
to be cairry’t oot by them, I sent him
to you; telling his accusers that they
micht speak afore you again him.”
31. Sae the sodgers, as it was
order’t them, took Paul, and brocht
him i’ the nicht till Antipatras.
32. But on the morn, they gaed
back to the castle, and loot the
horsemen gang on wi’ him.
33. Wha, comin till Cesarea, and
gian the letter to the Governor,
presentit Paul to him.
34. And he, haesin read the letter,
and speir’ t’ o’ what Province he was,
whan he kent he was o’ Gallia.
35. “I wull hear ye,” quo’ he,
“whan yere accusers sal come”;
gian orders he souhd be keepit i’ the
palace o’ Herod, under gaird.

CHAPTR TWENTY-FOWR.

Paul afor Felix.

AND, fyve days aftir, the Heigh-
post o’ Cam doon, wi’ a wheen o’
the Elders; and a spokesman, ane
Tertullus; and deponed again Paul
afore the Governor.

2. And whan he was ca’d, Tertul-
lus begude to mak accusation, sayin,
“Insamuckle as by you we obteem
great peace, and gude comes to this
nation throwe yere wisdom,
3. “We receive it aye, and in ilka
place, maist excellent Felix, wi’ a
thanks.
4. “But, that I be-na wearsome
t’ye, I entertain ye to hear us, i’ yere
courtesie, for a weew wheen words.
5. “For, findin this man a pest,
and teachin treason amang a’ the
Jews i’ the hale inhabiteid-wurld, and
a heid ane o’ the sect o’ the
Nazarenes;
6. “Wha settled to pollut e’en the
Temple: him we grippt, and wad
hae tried conform to oor Law;
7. “But the chief officer Lysias
cam wi’ muckle poorer, and tuik him
oot o’ oor hauns;
8. “Orderin his accusers to come
to you; frae wham ye yersel wull be
able, on speirin anent a’ thir things,
to establish wi’ accuracy, a’ that we
wyte him wi’.”
9. And the Jews a’ joined i’ the
chairge, threepin that thir things war
sae.
10. And whan the Governor had
signed for him to speak, Paul answer’d,
“Insamuckle as I ken ye hae been
thir mony year judgin this nation, I
dae wi’ gude heart mak my defence,
11. “Seein that ye may mak oot
clearly, that nae mair days are gane
nor twal’, sin’ I gaed up till Jerusalem
to worship,
12. “And naither faund thay me
i’ the Temple argle-barglin wi’ ony
ane, or gaiterin a thrang, nor yet i’
the kirsks, nor i’ the citie.
13. “Nor can thay lead prufe o’
what they noo wyte me wi’.
14. “But this muckle I confess
t’ye, that, conform to ‘The Way’,
whilk they ca’a Schism, sae dae I ser
my father’s God; haudin fast a
thaie things that are putten doon i’
the Law and i’ the Prophets.
15. “Haein a hope wi’ God, whilk
they theirsels hand, that thar sal be a Risin-again bairth o' the gude and the ill.

16. "And o' this I am makin a task, to haes a gude conscience aye; baith toward God and man.

17. "Noo, eftir a gude wheen years, I cam to fesh aumous to my nation, and offerans:

18. "Amang whilk they found me, purify't i' the Temple; no wi' a' thrang, nor wi' ony steer;

19. "But a wheen Jews frae Asia made the steer: wha sud hae been here, and makin accusation, gin they had ocht again me.

20. "Or lat thir here tell what ill they faund in me, as I stude afore the Cooncil;

21. "Gin it be-na for this ae thing, when I cryt oot, stauin amang them, 'Anent the Risin-frae the deid am I wytit afores ye this day!'

22. But Felix delay't them, to haes mair certain knowledge o' "The Way"; sayin, "Whan Lysias the chief officer sal come doon, I wull determine yere maitter."

23. Gian orders to the captain to keep him, and allo proper freedom, and hinder nane o' his ain acquaintance frae comin to him.

24. And eftir a wheen days, Felix cam wi' Druailla his ain wife, a Jewess; and sent for Paul, and listened to him anent the faith in Christ.

25. Noo, as he was reasonin o' justness, and self-guidin, and a Judgment to come, Felix was terrifyt, and quo' he, "Gae yere ways eno; but when I fin a fit time, I wull send for ye."

26. And he was lookin that siller micht haes been gien him by Paul:

sae he sent for him aftener, and had converse wi' him.

27. But whan twa year had gane by, Felix was succeedit by Portius Festus; and, to gain favor wi' the Jews, Felix left Paul a prisoner.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FYVE.

Paul appeals frae Jerusalem to Rome. Better Nero, whase mind had yet to be made up, than the Jewish Cooncil, a' determined on his death!

AND whan Festus was come intil the Province, eftir thrie days, he gied up to Jerusalem.

2. Than the Heigh-priest, and the heid-men o' the Jews, deponed again Paul, and entreatit him,

3. And socht for thirsels a favor again him; seekin that he wad send for him to Jerusalem; haein a plot to kill him on the way.

4. But Festus answer't, that on the ae haun, Paul was keepit in ward in Cesarea; and on theither haun, that he himself was guan doon shortly.

5. "Lat them, than," quo' he, "wha hae poore amang ye, gae doon wi' me, and wyte this man, gin thar be ony wrang in him."

6. And eftir he bade amang them no mair than acht or ten days, he gaed doon to Cesarea; and on the morn, sittin in judgment, ord'er Paul to be brocht.

7. And whan he cam, the Jews that had come doon frae Jerusalem stude roond aboot, and led mony and sair chaiges again Paul, that they coudna mak gude.

8. While Paul defendit himsel: "Naither again the Jews' Law, nor again the Temple, nor again Cesar, hae I dune wrang ava!"

9. But Festus, willin to do the Jews a favor, answer't Paul, "Are ye ready to gang up to Jerusalem? thar, anent thir things, to be judged afore me?"

10. But Paul said, "I am stauin foment Cesar's judgment-seat, whaur I sooud staun; to the Jews I hae

1 V. 25. Felix's "fit time" nevir cam, that we ken o'. He heard Paul aft (v. 26) but repentit-na. His name o' blythe import ("happy") was but a mockery; oot o' the tws, Paul, shak'it wi' airs, and forfouchten wi'labor, was the happy aye!
dune nae wrang; e’en as ye canna but perceive.

11. “For gin—on the ae haun—I be a wrang-doer, or hae dune ocht wordie o’ death, I am ready to dee: or—on the ither haun—gin the things they wyte me wi’ are naething, nae man can grant me as a favor to them! I appeal tae Cesar!”

12. Than Festus, when he had speech wi’ his Coonsellers, answert, “To Cesar ye hae appeal’d; to Cesar ye sal gang!”

13. And after a wheen days had gane by, Agrippa the King, and Bernice, cam doon to Cesarea, and salutit Festus.

14. And as they bade ther a gude wheen days, Festus laid Paul’s case afore the King; and quo’ he, “Thar is a particular man left in ward by Felix;”

15. “Anent wham, when I was at Jerusalem, the Heigh-priests and Elders o’ the Jews laid information;”

16. “To wham I made answer, ‘It isna the way o’ the Romans to gie up a man as a favor, afore the accused hae the accusers face to face, and hae liberty to mak his defence for his sel, anent the wrang he is wynit wi’.’

17. “And sae, when they war come here, wi’ nae delay I sat on the tribunal, and order’t the man to be brocht.

18. “Anent wham, when his accusers stude up, they brocht forrit nae sic ill things as I was lookin for:

19. “But some quaistens anent their ain worship; and o’ ane Jesus, wha is deid; but wham Paul threepit was leavin.

20. “And, seein I was dubious aboot sic quaistens, I speir’t at him, ‘Gin he wad gang to Jerusalem, and thar be tried concernin the things?’

21. “But as Paul appeal’d to the hearin o’ the Emperor, I commandit him to be keepit till sic time as I micht send him up to Cesar.”

22. And 1 Agrippa says to Festus, “I am mindit to hear the man myself!” “The morn,” quo’ he, “ye sal hear him.”

23. Sae, on the morn, whan Agrippa was come, and Bernice, wi’ unco display, and war enter’t intil the place o’ hearin, wi’ baith captains o’ thoosands, and the heid men o’ the citie, at Festus’ orders Paul was brocht oot.

24. And Festus says, “King Agrippa, and a’ men here convened, ye see this man, anent wham ane and a’ o’ the Jews made a plea wi’ me, baith in Jerusalem and here, cryin oot that he soudna be alloot’d to leevie ony langer.

25. “But I gaither’t that naething wordie o’ death had he done. But as this man himsel appealed to the Emperor, I determined to send him.

26. “Anent wham I hae naething certain to write to my lord. Sae I hae brocht him afore you, and mair particularly afore thee, King Agrippa, to the end that frae the examination had, I micht hae something I could write:

27. “For it disna seem reasonable to me, to send a prisoner, and no wi’ him the chairges laid again him.”

CHAPTER TWENTY-SAX.
Paul tells hoo he became a Christian. It affects Agrippa a wee.

THAN Agrippa said, “It is permittit ye to speak anent yersel. And Paul waved his haun, and answer’t for his sel.

2. “I coont mysel happy, King Agrippa, for that I may mak my defence afore you this day anent the things 2 Jews wyte me wi’.

1 V. 22. This Agrippa had some gude things about him: but he had made his wale, and taen the world for his portion, and wadna turn again. There are mony like him!

2 V. 2. Afore Agrippa, and mair than ane, Paul says “Jews” (no “the Jews,” as tho’ his hail nation war again him). Mony thoosands believed (xxi. 20), and mony thocht fu’ anes war seekin for licht.
3. "And the mair, as I ken ye are weel-acquaint wi' a' things belangin to the Jews, baith o' customs and o' quaisstens. Thus I entreat ye to hear me patiently.

4. "The way o' my life, frae youth, whilk was at first amang my ain folk at Jerusalem, ken a' Jews.

5. "Inasmuckle as they war takin tent to me frae the first—gin aiblins they war able to testify—that, accordin to the straitest sect o' oor religion, I leevd a Pharisee.

6. "And noo' for a hope o' the promise God made to oor faither, I am staunin to be judged.

7. "To whilk promise, oor nation o' twal tribes, wi' intensite o' service, nicht and day, hope to attain: anent whilk promise, O King, I am wytit by Jews.

8. "What! is it no to be believd wi' you, that God raises the deid?

9. "I indeed thocht within myself that I sould do unco mony things contrar to the name o' Jesus o' Nazareth.

10. "Whilk I did in Jerusalem; and mony o' the saunta barred I in dungeons, receivin authoritie frae the Heigh-priestis; and whan they war putten to deid, I gied my vote again them.

11. "And, takin vengeance on them aften, in a' the kirks, I strave to mak them blasphem; and bein uncolie enragd again them, I pursued them the lenth o' foreign cities.

12. "And inasmuckle as I was gaun to Damascus, wi' authoritie and orders frae the Heigh-priest,

13. "At midday, on the road, I saw, O King, frae the lift, aboon the splendor o' the sun, a licht that lowed roound aboot me, and them that gaod wi' me;

14. "And whan we had a' faun to the yird, I heard a voice speakin to me in' the Hebrew tongue, 'Saul! Saul! why are ye pursuin me? It is ill for ye to kick again the prods!'

15. "And I said, 'Wha are you, my Lord?' And he says, 'I am Jesus, wham ye are pursuing!'

16. "'But rise ye, and staun on yere feet; for to this end hae I appear't to ye; to fit ye to be a helper and a witness, baith o' what ye hae seen, and i' thae things I sal appear t'ye:

17. "'Deliverin ye frae amang the folk, and frae the nations, amang whom I am sendin ye forth.

18. "'To unsteek their een, that they may turn them aboot frae the mirk intil the licht, and frae Sautan's rule to God; that they may hae their sins forgiv'en, and hae their lot amang them wha are sanctify't by faith in me.'

19. "Wharfor, King Agrippa, I wasna dour anent the heevenlie vision:

20. "But made kent to a' thae in Damascus first, and in Jerusalem, and to a' the pairs o' Judea as weel, and to a' the nations, that they sould repent and turn to God, doin warks wordie o' their repentance.

21. "On accoont o' thir things, Jews, grippin me i' the Temple, ett'l t' slay me wi' their ain hauns.

22. "Sae than, haein help o' God, to this day I staun, bearin witness baith to am'a' and great; sayin nae ither word than thae things that baith the prophets and Moses said soud come;

23. "That the Christ bude suffer, gin he (foremaist o' thae that soud rise frae the deid!) was declare licht baith to the folk and to the nations!'

24. "But while he was sayin thir thing in his defence, Festus, cryin oot, says, 'Ye are wud, Paul! Yere leiar is garrin ye be dementit!'

25. "But quo' Paul, 'I am-na wud, maist noble Festus! but declarations o' truth and o' a sound mind am I settin forth!"

26. "For weel kens the King about thir things; afore wham e'en wi' a' freedom am I speakin: for I
am no persawadit that ony o' thes things hae escapit him; for this wasna dune hidlins.

27. "Hae ye faith, King Agrippa, in the prophets? I ken ye hae faith!"

28. And Agrippa says to Paul, "Wi' a wee fleecchin think ye to mak me a Christian?"

29. And Paul: "I wad pray to God, that wi' little or muckle, no only yersel, but a' that hear me this day, might come to be sic sort as I am—barrin thir shackles!"

30. And the King raise, and the governor, and Bernice as weel, and they that sat wi' them.

31. And haein withdrawn, they spek among their sels, sayin, "This man dis naethin wordie o' shackles or dungeon!"

32. And Agrippa said to Festus, "This man hae been set free, gin he hadna appealed to Cesar!"

CHAPITIR TWENTY-SEEVEN.

Paul, and the ship, and the sea; a' i the houe o' God's loof! But the storm ends; and what God ettes comes to pass.

And when it was settl't that we war to sail to Italy, thay gied ower Paul and a wheel other pris-oners to a captain by name Julius, o' Augustus' band.

2. And, gaun on board a ship o' Adramyttium, aboot to be sailin for the seaports o' Asia, we pat to sea; Aristarchus, a Macedonian o' Thessa-lonica bein wi' us.

3. And on the morn we pat into Sidon; and Julius courteouslie treatin Paul, gied him liberty to gang to his freends and be entertain'd.

4. And frae thar we pat oot to sea, and sailed to the lee o' Cyprus, for that the win' was contrar.

5. And, sailin ower the sea aff Cilicia and Pamphylia, we cam to Myra, o' Lycia.

6. And thar, the captain fin'in an Alexandrian ship gaun to Italy, pat us on board her.

7. But, for a gude wheen days, gaun cannille, and wi' some fash winnert fornent CNidus—the win' no allooin us to reach thar—we sailed aneath the lee o' Crete, ower fornent Sal-mone.

8. And wi' muckle wark coa'stin on, we cam till a particular place ca'd "Fair Havens," nar whilk was a citie, Lassea.

9. But a gude space o' time bein tae na up, and sailin bein noo dangerous—for the Fast was e'en noo gane by—Paul gied them advisement.

10. Saying to them, "Sirs, I see that the voyage wull be wi' skaith and muckle loss, no alane to the lade and the ship, but eke o' our lives."

11. But the captain took mair tent to what the ship-master and the owner said, than to the things spoken by Paul.

12. And mair: the harbor no bein safe to winter in, the feck o' them gied advice to set sail oot, gin by oys means they micht aiblins mak Pheneice; thar to winter: whilk is a harb-our o' Crete, as ane looks 1 Sou-wast and Nor-wast.

13. Noo, a south win saftly blawin, thinkin they had gotten what they wantit, weighin the anchor, they sailed alang Crete, nar to the shore.

14. But no lang eftir, thar struck her a win', a tornado, ca'd "The East-Nor-Easter";

15. And the ship, bein fauchtit awa, and no bein able to look the win i' the face, we gied her up, and war carryt alang.

16. And rinnin aneath the lee o' a sma' island ca'd Clauda, we war jimpily able to secure the boat.

17. Whilk haein taen up, they war usin helps, frappin the ship: and jalousin they micht be cuisten on the Great Quicksand, they loot the veschel gang; sae thar war carryt alang.

1V 12. The harbor is really open to the East, and beidit frae the Wast: but the sailors look to "the Sou'-wast and Nor'-wast" as they come intil.
18. But, bein uncolie tossed wi' the tempest, on the morn they begude to fling the ladin overboard;

19. And on the third, the tacklin o' the ship.

20. But naither sun nor starins blinkin on us for mony days, and an unco storm lyin on us, at the end a' hope o' bein deliver't was gane.

21. But when they had been lang wantin meat, Paul, staunin amang them said, "Sirs, ye soud hae listen't tae me, and no hae been settin sail frae Crete, to win this skaith and loss.

22. "And, at this present, I coon-sel ye to be o' gude heart; for loss o' life thar sal be nane amang ye; but the loss o' the ship.

23. "For ane stude by me this nicht, an Angel o' God, whase I am, and to whom I pay service,

24. "Sayin, 'Fear ye na, Paul! Afore Cesar ye sal staun: and be-haund! God has gien to ye a' them that sail w'ye.'

25. "Sae, be o' gude heart, Sirs! for I hae faith in God that sae it sal be—i' the way tell't to me:

26. "Tho' on a particular island we man be wreck't."

27. But when the fourteenth nicht was noo come, as we war driven aboot in Adria, aboot the midnight the sailors jawesed that some kintra was drawn nar-haun.

28. And soondin, they faund it twenty faddoms; and gaun a wee on, and soondin again, they faund fifteen faddoms.

29. And, dreidin they might aibilins be wreck't in some rocky bit, they cuist fourw anchors oot o' the stern, and wish't for the day.

30. But when the sailors war seekin to escape oot the ship, and had loutit doon the boat intil the sea, as gin they wad tak oot anchors frae the bow,

31. Paul says to the captain, and to the sodgers, "Gin thae bide-na i' the ship, ye canna be deliver't!"

32. Than the sodgers cast awa the tows o' the boat, and loot her fa' aff.

33. And till siccan a time as the dawin cam, Paul was entreatin them a' to tak meat, sayin, "A fourteenth day, this day, are ye makin, wantin meat, and gien yersels naething;"

34. "Sae, I entreat ye, tak some meat; for this is for yere gude; for no a hair o' the heid o' ony o' ye sal perish!"

35. And haein said thir things, he took a laif, and gied thanks to God afore them a', and breckin it, begude to eat.

36. And sae, takin up gude heart, they theirsels took meat.

37. Noo we war—the hail number o' sauls i' the ship—twu hunner and seeventy-six.

38. And when they had eaten eneuch, they eased the ship, thravin oot the wheat intil the sea.

39. And when the day cam, they didna ken the lan', but takin tent o' a particular cove, wi' a strand, they war ettlin, gin it war possible, to drive the ship in.

40. And, cuttin awa the anchors, they loot them gang intil the sea; and lowsin the lashin o' the rudders, and heizin up the foresail to the gale, they held for the strand.

41. But, fa'in intil a place whaur twu currents met, they ran the ship a-grun': the bow remained fast, and was immovable; but the stern brak intil pieces wi' the onset o' the waves.

42. Noo, the sodgers settled to slay the prisoners, sae that nane o' them soud soom oot and get awa.

43. But the captain, wha desir't to deliver Paul, keepit them frae their intention, and direkkit thae that cou'd soon—pittin aff first—to get to the lan';

44. And the lave, some on deals, and some on ither things o' the ship. And sae it cam aboot, that a' war brocht safely throwe to the lan'.
CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT.

Paul lands at Malta: and at the end, wins to the citie o' the Emperor: (and believet to the citie o' the great King!)

And when we had gotten safely throwe, than we kent that the island was ca'd Melita.

2. And the barbaric folk schawed us unco kindness; for they luntit a fire, and took us in, on acount o' the rain that set in, and the cauld.

3. But when Paul had gaither't some eldin, and had putten it on the fire, a viper cam oot wi' the heat, and grippit on his baun.

4. And when the folk saw the beas' hingin frae his baun, they said ane to anither, "To a certaintie this man is a murderer; and tho' he has escapit the sea, yet Justice suffers na to leevie!"

5. Nateless, he sheuk aff the beas' intil the lowe, and gat nae skaith:

6. Tho' they war lookin that he wad hae swalled, or faun doon deid. But when they had waitit a lang time, and naething gaed wrang wi' him, they changed their minds, and quo' they, "He is a god!"

7. Noo, i' thae pairts was the estate o' the heid man o' the isle, by name Publius; wha made us welcome, and enterneed us thrie days wi' a' courtesie.

8. But sae it was, that Publius' faither was ill o' a fivver and a bludie lax; and Paul, comin in, laid his bauns on him and prayed, and healed him.

9. And when this had taen place, the ither wha i' the isle had illnesses, cam forrit, and war healed;

10. Wha, too, wi' mony kindnesses favor't us; and when we sailed awa, they press't on us sic things as we micht need:

11. And eftir thrie months we set sail in a ship that had been winterin i' the isle, an Alexandrian ship, wi' an ensign, "The Twin-Brothers."

12. And ca'in in at Syracuse, we staid thar thrie days;

13. And frae thar, wi' a sweep we cam roond to Rhegium; and efter ae day a South win raise, and on the second day we wan to Puteoli;

14. Whaur we faund brethren, and war entreatit o' them to bide sev'n days; and sae toward Rome we gae.

15. And when frae thar the brethren heard tell o' us, they cam oot to meet us the length o' "Appii Forum" and "Thrie Taverns"; and seein them Paul bless'd God, and took heart.

16. And when we war enter't Rome, Paul had leasance to bide by himsel, wi' a sodger wha had ward o' him.

17. And it cam aboot, efter thrie days, he ca'd theither to him the heid men o' the Jews; and when they had forgather't, he said to them. "Men! brethren! I, hae'in dune naething contrar to oor folk, or the customs o' oor faithers, was gien up oot o' Jerusalem to the Romans.

18. "Wha, examinin me, wad hae releas't me, for that thar was no a cause o' death in me.

19. "But as the Jews protestit, I bude to appeal to Cesar—no as gin I had ocht again my ain nation.

20. "And sae I hae sent for ye, to see and speak wi' ye; for it is for the Hope o' Isra'il this chain dae I bear!"

21. But they said to him, "We oorsels naither had letters aboot ye frae Judea, nor did ony o' the brethren come and report ony ill o' ye.

22. "But we wad ye soud gie us yere mind; for anent this Sect, it is kent to us that it is on every-baun condemned."

23. Sae, haein set a day, a hantle o' them cam to him at his lodgin; and to them be exponed, testifeyin o' the kingdom o' God, and perswadin them anent Jesus, baith frae Moses and the prophets, frae the dawin to the gloamin.
24. And some war persuadeit o' the things he spak; and ither war dour.
25. And 'greein-na amang their sels, they retir't; Paul giean them ane word: "Weel said the Holie Spirit by Esaiah the Prophet to yere faithers, sayin:
26. "'Gang yere ways to this folk, and say, Wi' hearin ye sal hear, and no comprehend; and seein, sal ye see, and no behauld;
27. "'For gross has this folk's heart become; and wi' dour lugs they hear-na; and their een hae they steekit; least they soud see wi' their een, and hear wi' their lugs, and wi' their heart understaan, and soud turn again, and I soud heal them.'
28. "Be it kent to ye, than, that this salvation o' God is offer't to the nations; and they wull hear it!"
29. And when he had said this, the Jews gaed awa, and had unco argle-barglin amang their sels.
30. And he was a hail 1 twa-year in his ain hired dwellin, and welcome s' that cam in to him.
31. Settin forth the kingdom o' God, and exponin the things anent the Lord Jesus Christ, wi' a' freedom o' speech, nane hinderin him.

1 V. 30. Luke breks aff the history sud-dainlie: nae doot he carry't it on till the day he quat writin; tho' he disna tell us what cam o' Paul.
ROMANS.

CHAPITIR ANE.

The heathen sow d'en mair o' God than they div. Their unco wileness and thraw-arnewness.

PAUL, a servitor o' Christ Jesus, a bidden Apostle, sotten apropair to God's Joyfu'-message,

2. Whilk he promised afore, throwe his prophets i' the holie writins,

3. Anent his Son, wha cam o' Daudio's seed by the flesh,

4. Wha was owned to be God's Son wi' micht, s'en as to the Spirit o' Holiness, by a Risin-frae-the-deid —Jesus Christ oor Lord:

5. By whom we had gien till us tender love and Apostleship, toward leauness o' faith in a' nations, for his name's sake:

6. O' wham are ye, as weel; bidden anes o' Jesus Christ;

7. To a' thae that are in Rome, God's beloved, bidden saunts; tender love till ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ!

8. First, I am gian thanks to my God, by Jesus Christ, anent ye a' for that yere faith is made mention o' in a' the world.

9. For God is witness for me, him that I ser' in my spirit, i' the Joyfu'-message o' his Son, hoo constantly I am speakin o' ye;

10. Aye in my prayers makin request, gin that by some means, s'en noo at ony time I soud see a gate to gang, wi' the wull o' God, till ye.

11. For I am fain to see you, that I may gie some spirit-gift t'ye, that ye may be made siccar;

12. That is, that we may hae a comfortin thegither by oor common faith—yours and mine.

13. But I wadna ye war misedarred, brethren, hoo that a' I settled to come t'ye—but was hinder't, s'en till noo—that I micht hae some frute amang you, s'en as amang the lave o' the nations.

14. Baith to Greeks and barbarians, baith to wyss and simple, am I debtor:

15. Thus am I sae fain to gie oot the Joyfu'-message, s'en to you, that are in Rome.

16. For I am-na blate anent the Joyfu'-message; for it is God's poorer to save ilka ane wha lippens; first to the Jew, and eke to the Greek.

17. For the richounness o' God, throwe faith, to thae that hae faith, is thus made plain, s'en as it is putten doon, "The just sal leve by faith."

18. For God's wrath is made kent frae Heeven, again a' ungodliness and wickedness o' men, wha in wickedness hand the truth under:

19. Inasmuckle as that whilk may be kent o' God is made plain amang them; for God has made it ken-speckle.

20. For the invisible things o' him, s'en frae the world's creation, are made plain to be seen by the things that are creatit—s'en his eternal poorer and Godheid; that they micht hae nae excuse:

21. For, comin to ken God, they magnify't him-na as God, nor gied him thanks; but their reasons war feckless, and their dottit heart was mirk.

22. Settin-up to be wyss, they becam fules;

23. And changin, they tint the glorie o' the incorruptible God in the form o' an image o' corruptible man,
and birds, and four-footed beasts, and
crawlin things.

24. Sae God e'en gied them ower
to vileness, i' the uncleanness o' their
hearts; sae as e'en to dishonour their
ain bodys among theirsels:

25. Wha trokit awa God's truth
for a lee, and gied worship and ser-
vice to what is made, rather than to
the Maker—wha is blessed for aye;
Amen!

26. Sae for this, God gied them
up to vile passions; for e'en their
weemen did change the nat'ral use
for what is contrar to natur;

27. And e'en sae the men, quattin
the wumman, burned wi' desire ane
to anither; men wi' men actin un-
seemly, and receivin in theirsels the
reward o' their error as was due.

28. And e'en as they didna seek to
keep God i' their mind, God gied
them ower to a reprobate heart, to
do things no fittin:

29. Bein fu' o' a' unholiness,
wickedness, selliness, malignity; fu'
o' envie, blude, strike; twa-faced;
spitefu'; tale-pytets;

30. Backbiters, haters o' God, in-
solent, liftit-up, boastin, inventors
o' ill, risin up again parents,

31. Wantin' sense, breckers o'
covenants, wantin nat'ral affection,
wantin kindness;

32. Wha, kennin the holie sentence
o' God, that they wha dae sic things
are wordie o' death, no alane dae
them, but are colleguain wi' thae that
sae practeese.

CHAP'TIR TW'A.

God's even-handit justice, to Jew and Gentile
alike: ae law and ae judgment for a'.

Sae, ye are e'en wantin a' excuse,
O man! whassever ye may be,
that are condemnin; for whaur ye
are condemnin anither, ye are con-
demnin yersel; for ye wha are wytin
are siclike doun.

2. But we ken that the judgment
o' God is true, on thae practeesin sic
things as thir.

3. And are ye lippenin to this, O
man! wha are condemnin thae that
practees thir sic things as thir, and yet
are doun them, that ye sal escape the
judgment o' God?

4. Or, dae ye licthlie the unco
kindness, and forbearin, and lang-
tholin o' God; no takin tent that
God's gudeness wad fain lead ye to
repentance?

5. But, wi' yere dour and unre-
pentin heart, ye are heapin up for
yersel wrath in wrath's day, and the
schawin-forth o' God's richtous con-
demnation:

6. Wha will gie to ilk ane e'en as
his wurks sal be;

7. To thae, on the ae-haun, wha
by patient continuin in gude wurks,
seek for glorie, honor, and immor-
tality—life eternal:

8. To thae, on the iether haun, wha
contend, and follow-na the truth,
but follow ill—anger and wrath.

9. Dool and pain on ilka man's
saul wha works oot ocht that is ill,
baith to the Jew first, and eke to the
Greek:

10. But glorie, and honor, and
peace, to ilka ane wha dis that whilk
is gude; baith to the Jews first, and
eke to the Greek.

11. For thar is nae walin-oot o' faces wi' God!

12. For as mony as hae sinned,
wantin the law, sal eke perish wantin
the law; and as mony as hae sinned
aneath the law, sal be condemned
aneath the law.

13. For it isna thae that hear the
law that stau right wi' God; but
thae wha do the law sal be appruv'd.

14. For whan frem'd folk, thae hae
nae law, do by natur the wurks
o' the law—thir, wantin the law, are
to thirsels a law:

15. Wha in vera deed gie prufe o' the law's wurk, whilk is graven on
their hearts; their conscience giean
testimio in their thochtis, by ex-
cusin or else wytin them,

16. In the day whan God sal judge
is the circumcision o' the heart—in spirit, no in name, whose acceptance isna o' men, but o' God.

CHAPTER THREE.
The Law that condemns; and the Gospel that saves.

WHAT way, than, is the Jew heigher? or what gets he oot o' his circumcision?

2. Muckle a' ways; first this, that they war gien the word o' God.

3. For what gin some o' them had doots? Sal their doots mak in vain lippenin to God?

4. Never! But lat God be true and ilka man a leer; s'en as it is putten doon. "To the end thy words sould be uphauden, and thou sould prevail whan thou contends."

5. But gin oor wrang makks God's truth shine, what sal we say? Is God wrang wba punishes?—I am speakin as a man:

6. Far frae it! Or hoo soud God judge the warld?

7. But gin God's truth appeared greater, to his glorie, by reason o' my leean, am I ony mair, as a sinner, to be condemned?

8. And why no? Juist as some slander us, and report us as sayin, "Lat us do ill, that gude may come!" whase condemnation is richt.

9. Weel, what than? Are we beildin oorsels? No the least! for we hae already chaired baith Jews and Greeks o' bein aneath sin;

10. E'en as it is putten doon: "Thar is nane holie; na, no ane!"

11. "Thar is nane wyss; thar is nane seekin oot God.

12. "They are a' gane a-gley; they are a'theither feckless; thar is nane schawin love, no sae muckle as ane.

13. "Their hauss is like an open sheugh; wi' their tongues they hae used doobleness; the venom o' the asp is aneath their lips.

14. "Whase mou' is fu' o' bannin and bitterness.
ROMANS, IV.

15. "Glegg are their feet to spill blude;
16. "Destroyin and sorrowin are i' their way-gaun;
17. "And a way-gaun o' peace hae they nevir kent.
18. "Nae fear o' God is afore their een."
19. Noo we ken that whatsoe'er the Law says, it says it to tae that are aneath the Law; sae that ilka mou' may be stoppit, and the hail world may come aneath the judgments o' God.
20. Inasmuckle as by warks o' Law, sal nae flesh be made richtous in his sicht; for throwe the Law is the unvellin o' sin.
21. But noo, a' thegither sindry frae the Law, a richtouness o' God has been set forth, bein uphauden by the Law and the prophets;
22. E'en a richtouness o' God throwe faith in Jesus Christ, comin to a' wha hae faith; for a' are ane;
23. For a' hae sinned, and a' fail o' the glorie o' God;
24. Bein held richtous, freely, throwe his ain favor, by the re-deemin o' Christ Jesus:
25. Wham God set forth as oor coverin-ower, by faith in his blude; for the settin forth o' his richtouness to the passin-by o' oor auld sins,
26. To schaw the gudeness o'God, in his tholin at this time; to the end he might be richtous his sel, while declarin richtous the man wha believes in Jesus.
28. We are reckonin, than, that a man is held richtous by faith, sindry frae the warks o' the Law.
29. Or, is God the God o' Jews only? No o' the Nations as weel? Aye! eke o' the Nations!
30. Gin at least he be the God, wha wull justify the circumference for their faith, and the uncircum-cession by like faith!
31. Are we, than, makin the Law naething? No sae! On the contrar, we are makin siccar the Law.

CHAPITIR FOWR.

Abr'am and his faith: whilk we wad do weel to follow.

WHATNA than sal we say that Abr'am oor faither i' the flesh has gotten?
2. For gin Abr'am, by his warks, was acceptit as richtous, he had fundation for gloryin: yet no afore God.
3. For what is putten doon i' the buik? "Abr'am lippened God; and it was set doon as richtouness."
4. But to him wha works, the reward iesa coonit by way o' favor, but by way o' debt.
5. While to him wha works-na, but lippens him wha justifies the ungodly—the faith o' him is coonit as richtouness.
6. E'en as Dauvid schaws the weel-bein o' the man to whom God coonts richtouness, sindry frae warks:
7. "Happy they whase ill-deedingeses are forg'Ien, and whase sins are happit ower!"
8. "Happy is the man whase sin the Lord disna haud again him!"
9. Comes than this blessin on the circumference? or on the uncircum-cession as weel? For we are sayin that "faith" was coonit to Abr'am as "richtouness."
10. Hoo than was it coonit? Whan in circumference? or in uncircum-cession? No in circumference, but in uncircumcession!
11. And he was gien the sign o' circumference, a seal o' the faith-richtouness he had in his uncircumcession: sae that he might be the

1V. 11. Tak tent hoo he pruves faith to be the door to God; and no circumference: pruves it e'en by Abr'am his sel!
great heid o' a' wha hae faith while in their uncircumcision, that righteousness sould be coontit to them;

12. And the great heid o' circumcision to them wha not only hae circumcision, but wha follow the steps o' oor faither Abr'am in his uncircumcision.

13. For it wasna throwe the Law that the promise was gien to Abr'am or to his seed, anent bein the heir o' the world; but throwe the righteousnes o' faith.

14. For gin they wha are o' "Law" war heirs, "faith" has failed; and the promise has come to nocht!

15. For the law schaws wrath; but whaur thar is nae law, thar is nae brekin o'.

16. Sae it is o' faith, that it may be by favor, in order that the promise may be siccar till a' the seed: no to that o' the law only, but eke to that o' the Abr'am-faith, wha is the great heid o' us a';

17. (E'en as it is putten doon, "The great heid o' mony nations hae I made thee,"') afore God whan he believed: e'en him wha raises the deid, and ca's things that are-na e'en as gin they war:

18. Wha, whan hope was gane, on hope held fast, that he might become faither o' mony nations; e'en as it was spoken, "Sae sal be thy seed!"

19. And mainteenin strang his faith, he lookit-na on his ain body as bein deid—bein e'en about a hunner-year-auld—nor Sarah's womb as deid;

20. But lookin on the promise o' God, he becam strang in faith, and swither't-na wi' unbelief, gian glorie to God;

21. And siccar i' the belief that what he had promised he was strang to perform:

22. And sae it was coontit to him for righteousness.

23. But it wasna for him alane that this was sae coontit to him;

24. But eke for oor sakes, to wham it was to be coontit; to us wha hae faith in him wha raised Jesus oor Lord frae the deid;

25. Wha was deliver't up for oor sins, and was raised again for oor justifyin.

CHAPTER FYVE.

Receivein the Atonement. The ae sin that brocht in death, and the ae Offeran that brocht in life.

BEIN than coontit richtous by faith, lat us hae peace in God, by oor Lord Jesus Christ;

2. By wham is the introducin we hae had, by oor faith, inthil this favor in whilk we staun: and lat us rejoice i' the hope o' God's glorie.

3. And no this alane, but e'en rejoice in oor troubles; kennin that troubles work oot lang-tholin;

4. And lang-tholin, testin; and testin, hope;

5. And hope makes-na ashamed; for that God's love has been shed abreed in oor hearts throwe the Holie Spirit gien to us.

6. For, we yet bein feckless, Christ in due season doe't for the ungodlie.

7. Far jimpily wad ony ane dee for an upricht man; yet aiblins for a holie man ane might e'en daur death;

8. But God commends his ain love to us, in that e'en while we war yet in sin, Christ doe't for us.

9. Muckle mair, than, bein noo coontit richtous throwe his blude, we sal be sav't frae the wrath throwe him.

10. For gif, bein faes, we war reconcil't to God throwe his Son's death, hoo muckle mair—bein noo reconcil't—sal we be sav't in his life?

11. And no only sae, but, rejoicin in God, throwe oor Lord Jesus Christ; throwe wham, at this present, we receive the reconciliation.

12. For this reason—juist as sin cam intil the world throwe ae man,
CHAPITIR SAX.

Deid to oor auld life in sin; but leevin to the new life in Christ.

WHAT, than, ar we to say? Are we to gang on in sin, that mair tender-love may be seen?
2. Awa wi’ it! Hoo sal we, wha dee’ to sin, be leevin ony lang’ in’t?
3. Ken-ye-na that a’ we wha war bapteez’t intil Jesus Christ, war bapteez’t intil his death?
4. We wi’ him war bury’t, than, in oor bapteezin intil his death; sae that e’en as Christ was raised up frae mang the deid by the glorious pooper o’ the Faither, sae we in the new life micht walk!
5. For, gin we hae been ane wi’ him i’ the image o’ his death, nae doot sae sal we be i’ the image o’ his Risin-again.
6. Tak tent o’ this, that oor auld man was wi’ him crucify’t, sae that the body o’ sin micht perish, that we soud ser’ sin nae mair.
7. For he that has dee’t, is quat o’ sin.
8. Noo, gin we dee’t wi’ Christ, we threep that we sal e’en leeve wi’ him;
9. Kennin, that Christ, bein raised up frae the deid, dees nae mair: death has nae pooper ower him.
10. For the death that he dee’t, he dee’t to sin 2 ance for a’; but noo that he leaves, he leaves to God.
11. And sae you yersels coont yersels as deid to sin, but leevin to God, in Christ Jesus.
12. Dinna lat sin, than, hae pooper i’ yere deesin body, to gar ye mind its craikin;
13. Nor gie ower yere pooeurs, as instruments o’ wickedness, to sin; but gie ower yersels to God, as gin leevin frae amang the deid; and yere poeeurs as instruments o’ holiness to God.

1 V. 14. Some tak this to mean wee bairns; but we rather tak it as referrein to outrageous and wilfu’ sins like Adam’s. A’ sins are ill eneuch; but some are waruer than the lave.

2 V. 10. Ance for a’ occasion, and anece for a’ time: a thing that never needs to be repetit.
14. For sin sal nae mair has pooner ower ye; for ye are-na aneth the Law, but aneth Free-Favor.

15. And what than? Are we to sin, for that we are-na aneth the Law, but aneth Free-Favor? Far frae that!

16. Div ye no ken, that to the ane ye are giean yersels ower to obey as servants, servants dae ye become to wham ye gie obedience: whether aiblins it be o’ sin, to death; or obedience; to holiness.

17. But thanks to God! that hae been Sin’s servants, ye gied obedience oot o’ the heart to yon form o’ lear intil whilk ye war shapit;

18. And, bein set free frae sin, ye war made into servants to Holiness.

19. I speak but as a man, for the wauness o’ yer flesh; for e’en as ye gied ower yere poore as servants to vileness, and lawlessness for lawlessness—sa, noo, gie ower yere poore as servants to Holiness, for yere perfection!

20. For whan ye war Sin’s servants, ye had naither airt nor pairt in holiness.

21. What frute had ye than, i’ yon things ye are noo ashamed o’ for the end o’ sic is death!

22. But noo, bein set free frae sin, and made servants to God, ye hae frute to sanctification; and at the lang-last, Eternal Life!

23. For the fee o’ sin is death; but God’s gree is Eternal Life, in Jesus Christ, oor Lord!

CHAPITIR SEEVEN.

Mair aboot deein and leevin. The Law is richt, tho’ it schews us to be wrang.

KEN-YE-NA, brethren (for to sic as are leal to the Law am I speakin), that the Law has poore ower a man for sicca an time as the lenth o’ his life?

2. For the wumman mairry’t to a husband is bund by law as lang as he leeves; but gin aiblins the husband dee, she has fu’ libertie frae the rule o’ her husband.

3. And sae, her husband leevin, gin she become anither man’s, she war de ca’d “adulteress”; but gin aiblins the husband dee, she is free frae the rule, sae as to be nae adulteress, e’en tho’ she become anither man’s.

4. Sae than, my brethren, ye too war brocht to death throwe the body o’ Christ; to the end ye micht become anither’s—his wha was raised frae the deid; that we soud bring forth frute to God.

5. For whan we war in the flesh, the passions o’ sin, excited by the Law, wrocht in oor poore, to bring forth frute to death.

6. But noo we are dischairsiged frae the Law, bein deid as to that by whilk we war hauden siccar; sae that we micht gie service in a new spirit, and no in the auld formalitie.

7. What, than, are we to say? that the Law is sinfu’? Far frae it! On the contrar, I had ne’er taen ‘tent o’ sin, gin it warna by the Law. For I hadna ony thocht o’ covetin, gin the Law hadna said, “Ye sanna covet!”

8. But sin, makin an occasion, wrocht in me throwe the commandment a’ manner o’ covetousness. For, sindry frae the Law, sin was deid.

9. I mysel was leevin anc, sindry frae the Law. But the commandment cam, and sin lap to life, and I dee’t.

10. And the commaun’—that whilk was to be for life—I faund to be, for me, death!

11. For sin, makin occasion o’ the commaun’, clean deceiv’t me, and by it slew me.

12. Sae that, on the ae haun, the Law is perfete; and the commandment holie, and just and gude.

13. Weel, than, did the gude become death to me? Far frae it! On the ither haun, it was sin, that it soud kythe as sin throwe that whilk was gude, workin oot death in me;

197
that by the commandment, sin soud be seen to be unco sinfu'.

14. For we ken that the Law is spiritual; but I am but a creatur o' flesh; sell't as to a maister, Sin!

15. For that whilk I am workin oot, I appruve na; for what I wiss na that I pursue; but what I hate, that dae I!

16. Gin, than, I dae what I wadna, I own that the Law is richt.

17. And noo, it isna I wha am workin it oot, but it is the sin that dwells in me!

18. For I ken thair dwells na in me—that is in my flesh—a e gude thing. For the desirin lies nar to me, but the workin-oot o' gude diana!

19. For it isna the gude I wiss for I dae: but rather the ill I wadna do I practese.

20. But gin I dae that whilk I wadna, it is nae ma' I wha am workin it oot, but the sin dwallin in me.

21. And sae, I fin thar is a principle, 1 that when I wad dae gude, the ill lies nar me!

22. For in my benmaist heart I joy in the Law o' God;

23. But I see another principle in my bodypoors, fechtin again the principle o' my mind; and takin me prisoner by the principle o' sin that is in my bodypoors.

24. A wasseen man am I! Wha sal rescue me oot the body o' this death?

25. Noo, God be thankit! And sae I mysel, wi' my mind, am in service to the Law o' God; while wi' the flesh I ser' the principle o' sin.

CHAPITIR AUCHT.

Paul wins ayont the mirk, into a gruen Christian hope!

SAE than, thar is nae condemnation for thae that are in Christ Jesus.

2 For the principle o' the Spirit o'

---

Life in Christ Jesus deliver't me frae the principle o' sin and death.

3. For, what coulna be by the Law—in that it was feckless throwiu oor flesh—God condemned sin i' the flesh, in sendin his ain Son i' the image o' our flesh, and because o' sin.

4. That the holy ends o' the Law might be seen in us, wha walk conform to the Spirit, and no conform to the flesh.

5. For they wha leeve conform to the flesh, wad rather hae the things o' the flesh; but they followin the Spirit, wad hae the things o' the Spirit.

6. Sa' what the flesh prefers is but death; but what the Spirit prefers, is indeed life and peace.

7. For what the flesh prefers is at enmity wi' God; seein it disa gie itsel ower to God's law—nor in fact, can it sae dae.

8. And they wha hae their bein i' the flesh, canna pleasur God.

9. But ye haena yere bein i' the flesh, but i' the Spirit, gin God's Spirit is bidin in ye: but gin ony ane hasna Christ's Spirit, he isna o' his.

10. But, gin Christ is in ye, the body is deid on account o' sin, but the Spirit is leevin on account o' holiness.

11. And gin the Spirit, wha raised up Jesus frae among the deid, dwalls in ye, he that raised up Christ Jesus frae among the deid sal e'en gie life to yere deisin bodies, on account o' his indwallin Spirit in ye.

12. Sae than, brethren, debtors are we—no to the flesh, conform to the flesh to leeve—

13. For, gin conform to the flesh ye are leevin, ye are sure to be deisin; but, gin i' the Spirit ye are slayin the deids o' the body, ye sal leeve.

14. For as mony as are 2airstit by God's Spirit, they are God's bairns.

---

1 V. 21. No a law to be follow't, but an ill principle to be condemned. Our English versions are obscure in usin "law" in baith senses.

2 V. 14. No only does this declare the fact, but it indicates the process (I. John v. 1). On our pairt it is believin what we are tell't, and followin us are airstit, by the Spirit: on his pairt—the "new creation" (II. Cor. v. 17).
15. For ye hadna putten in ye a spirit o' slavery, bringin ye back intil dredit; but ye had putten intil ye a spirit o' adoption, in whilk we cry't oot, "Abba! Faither!"

16. The Spirit himsel is joint-witness wi' oor spirit, that we are bairns o' God.

17. But, gin bairns—than heirs as weel! God's heirs, and joint-heirs wi' Christ; gin at least we jointly suffer, that we may be jointly glorify't.

18. For I coont that what we dree i' this present, is no wordie to be mentioned alang wi' the glorie to come, whilk is to be made kent throwe us.

19. For the fain-lookit-forrit o' the Creation is waitin for the revealin o' God's bairns.

20. For to vanity was Creation made subject—no o'its ain wull, but by him wha made it subject—

21. In hope that the Creation itsel soud be deliver't frae the slavery o' corruptness, intil the liberty o' the glorie o' the bairns o' God.

22. For we ken that a' creation is maenin thegither, and travailin thegither, in bearin-pangs till noo;

23. And no only sae; but e'en we, wha hae the first-frute o' the Spirit, e'en we ourselv, within ourselv are maenin, fain-waitin for adoption—the redeemin o' our body.

24. For in hope we are sav'it; but hope beheld isna hope! for what ane sees, why dis he "hope" for?

25. But gin what we see-na we hope for, than patiently we wait, fain to hae it.

26. And in that vera way, the Spirit is giean us help in oor weakness; for e'en what we soud be prayin for i' the way we soud, we ken-na; but the Spirit himsel helps oor intercessions, wi' fainness o' desire no to be utter't.

27. And he wha redds oot the heart kens what the Spirit apprives, for it is conform to God he pleads, on behalf o' the saunta's.

28. But we div ken that to them wha love God, a' things work the-gither for gude; to thae wha are bidden anes, conform to his purpose.

29. For wham he afore apprived, he afore appointit, conform to the likeness o' his Son; that he might be First-born o' mony brethren.

30. And wham he afore appointit, the same anes he bade; and wham war bidden, the same anes he apprived; and wham he apprived, the same he declar't richtous; and wham he declar't richtous, the same he made glorious.

31. Than what sal we say to thir things? Gin God be on oor side, wha is again us?

32. He wha bained-na his ain Son, but gied him up for us a', sal he no wi' the gift o' him, gie us a' things in his lovin favor?

33. Wha sal wyte God's chosen anes? God, wha declares them richtous?

34. Wha condemns? Christ? wha dee't (na, wha rather was raised again), wha is at God's richt haun, and pleadin in oor behalf?

35. Wha sal sinder us frae Christ's love? Sal trouble, or dool, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or skaith, or sword?

36. E'en as it is putten doon, "For thy sake are we gien owre to death the hail day lang; we are coontit as sheep for the slaughter."

37. But, in a' thir things we are victorious—and mair nor victorious—by him wha loved us.

38. For I am perswadit that no life, and no death, nor Angels, nor heigh poore, nor heigh things, nor laigh things, nor any ither creatit thing, sal has poore to sinder us frae God's love, whilk is in Christ Jesus oor Lord!
CHAPTER NINE.

God’s aigual way wi’ Jews and Gentiles.

1. THE truth I say in Christ—I am na speakin fause—my conscience bein witnessin, alang wi’ mysel in the Spirit.

2. That thar is muckle dool to me, and constant sorrow i’ my heart.

3. For I mysel could hae wisst mysel 1devotit by Christ, for my brethren’s sake, my kin aftir the flesh;

4. Wha truly are Israelites; whase are the adoption, and glory, and covenant, and law, and services, and promises;

5. Whase are the patriarchs; and o’ wham accordin to the flesh is the Christ; he wha is heigher than a’, God blessed for aye!

6. But, no in sic mainner as tho’ the promises o’ God had failed. For no a’ wha are o’ Israel are truly Israel.

7. Nor yet, gin they be a seed o’ Abra’am, are they a’ bairns: but, “In Isaac sal thar be coontit thee a seed!”

8. Thus: no the bairns o’ the flesh are bairns o’ God: but the bairns o’ the promise are coontit as the seed.

9. For this word is ane o’ promise: “At this time sal I come, and thar sal be to Sarah a son.”

10. And no only sae; but whan Rebecca had conceivit by ane, e’en by oor faither Isaac—

11. For they no bein yet born, nor had dune gude or bad, that the purpose o’ God conform to choice soud remain; no o’ wurks, but o’ him wha invitat—

12. It was said to her, “The elder sal ser’ the younger.”

13. E’en as it is putten doon,

“Jaucob I lo’ed; Essau I appruv’d—


15. For to Moses he says, “I wull hae mercie on whamsoe’er I can hae compassion!”

16. Sae than, is it neither o’ him that wad hae it, nor o’ him that rins for’t, but o’ God wha gies mercie.

17. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, “For this vera thing I raist thee up, that I mich shaw in thee my poorer; sae as my name soud be kent in a’ the yirth.”

18. And sae, he 2has mercie on wham he pleases, and wham he wull he gars harden.

19. Ye may say to me, than, “Hoo, than, dis is wyte? for wha can staun again his wull!”

20. Na, O man! wha are ye to be answerin God again! Sal the thing made sae to him wha made it, “Why did thou mak me sae?”

21. Or, hasna the potter a richt ower the clay, oot o’ the same dadd to mak as pot to honor, but anither to a want o’ honor?

22. What tho’ God, desirin to schaw his anger, and to mak kent his poorer, thoed wi’ unco patience the veschels o’ wrath that had become fit for destruction?

23. And that he mich kent his rich glorie on veschels o’ mercie he had afore preparit for glorie;

24. Wham he had bidden; e’en us, no only frae amang Jews, but frae amang the nations as weel.

25. E’en as he says by Hoses, “I

V. 18. We hae as side o’ a great doctrine here: the ither side is whaur Christ des’t for the hail world, and “preed o’ death for a’ men” (Heb. ii. 9). And in Eph. i. 4—“Acceptin us in him afor the up-biggin o’ the world.” Juist as ane in choosin a tree or vine, choosits ilka branch and shoot o’t, tho’ some o’ thir may-nas at the time be in existance. Sae whan Christ was acceptit, his folk war acceptit wi’ him.
wull ca' her that wasna my folk 'my folk!' and her that wasna weel-belov'd, 'my weel-beloved.'"

26. And, "It sal be, i' the place whaur it was said, 'Ye are-na my folk!' e'en thar sal they be ca'd, 'Bairns o' the Leevin God!''"

27. And Esaiah, too, cries oot aboot Isra'el, "E'en gin the number o' Isra'el's bairns be as the sand o' the sea, a wheen left sal be saved;

28. "For a perfete and close reckonin wull the Lord mak on the yirth."

29. E'en as Esaiah said afore, "Gin the Lord o' Hosts hadna left us a seed, we wad hae been as Sodom, and wad hae been like to Gomorrah."

30. What, than, are we to say? This: that the nations, thae wha wanna cairryin on righ'teouness, nanethe-less laid bau'd o' a righ'teouness; a righ'teouness a' the same that it was by faith—

31. Whilst Isra'el', tho' cairryin on a rule o' righ'teouness, didna win their way to that rule. 

32. And why? Juist this, that they war cairryin it on, no by faith, but as it war by warks. They stumb'l't at that stane o' stumblin; 

33. E'en as it is gutten doon, "Behauld! I set in Zion a stane o' stumblin, and a rock o' offendin; and he wha lippens thar-till sal no be gutten to shame!"

CHAPITIR TEN.

The righ'teouness o' faith the only righ'teouness that wull slawm!

BRETHREN! the fain desire o' my heart, and its prayer to God on their behaunf, is for their salvation! 

2. For I gie witness to them, that thay hae a zeal for God, but no conform to wisdom. 

3. For, no takin to them God's righ'teounness—and aye seekin to up-bigg their ain righ'teouness, they didna gie in to the righ'teouness o' God. 

4. For Christ is what the Law settles at, i' the way o' righ'teouness, to ilka ane wha has faith.

5. For Moses has gutten doon, anent the righ'teouness whilk is by the Law: "The man wha dis them sal leave by them."

6. Whauras, the righ'teouness o' faith speaks like this: "Ye maun-na say i' yere heart, 'Wha sal speel up intil Heaven?'" (that is, for to fesh Christ doon;)

7. "Or, 'Wha sal lowt doon intil the abyss?'" (that is, for to raise up Christ frae amang the deid;)

8. But what says it? "That whilk is spoken o' is nar-haund ye; in yere mooth, and in yere heart": that is, the thing o' the faith spoken o'; whilk thing we mak kent—

9. That gin ye confess wi' yere mou' that Jesus is Lord, and hae faith i' yere heart that God raised him frae amang the deid, ye sal be saved.

10. For in the heart ane has faith for righ'teouness, and the confession o' ane's mou' to salvation.

11. For sae says the Scriptur, "Nane that trust in him sal be putten to shame."

12. For thar is nae differ atween Jews and Greeska; for the same Lord o' a' is bountifu' to a' that cry to him.

13. For ilka ane—a' and every—wha may ca' on the name o' the Lord sal be saved!

14. Hoo than soud they ca' ane on whom they haena lippened? And hoo sal they lippin ane they haena heard-tell o'? And hoo wull they hear, gin-na some ane publishing?

15. And hoo sal they publish, gin they wanna sent oot? E'en as it is gutten doon, "Hoo bonnie are the

---

1 V. 4. The Law airtit to Christ: and he wha did-na ken that, used the ceremonies and the teachins o' the Law in vain! Thar maun hae been a haultle o' Jews i' the kirk at Rome: to them specially is this reasonin made.

201
feet o' thae bringin us a Joyfu'-message o' gude things!"

16. But they didna' muckle hear the Joyfu'-message. For Esaih says, "Lord! wha lippens what we proclaim?"

17. And sae faith comes oot o' what is heard; and hearin comes by the word that is anent Christ.

18. But say I, Did they no hear? Aye indeed! "Intil a' the yirth gaed their voice, and to the ends o' the inhabitit-ward what they spak."

19. Again, say I, Didna Isra'il come to ken? First, quo' Moses, "I wull mak ye to be jealouse over a Nae-Nation; and anent a glaikit nation wull I gar ye be ang'ry."

20. But Esaih is ventursome, and quo' he, "I was fund o' thae whoocht-me-na; I cam to be kent o' thae who speir't-na efect me!"

21. But anent Isra'il he says, "The hail day lang rax't I oot my hauns to a dour and thrawart-speakin folk!"

CHAPTER ELEVEN.

Isra'il cuttit aff for want o' faith: but faith can graft them in again.

I SPIR than, Hae God cuisen awa his folk? Far frae it! I mysel am an Isra'ilite, o' Abra'm's seed, o' Benjamin's tribe.

2. God disna cast awa his folk he had afore appruv'd. Wat ye na—anent Elijah—what the Scripture says, as he pled wi' God again Isra'il?

3. "Lord! thy prophets hae they slain; and thy altars hae they dung doon; and I am left alenar; and they seek for my life!"

4. But what says the answer to him? "I hae keepit for mysel seven thousand men, wha hae-na loutit a knee to Baal!"

5. Sae than, e'en at this present, that is a wee wheen left, by way o' a favorin choice.

6. But gin it be by favor, it is nae mair o' warks; else the favor isna favor.

7. Weel, what? That whilk Is'ral socht eftir, the same they forgather't-na wi'; but the chosen anes forgather't wi't; whauras the lave war blear't, and saura na.

8. E'en as it is putten doon: "God gae them a spirit that was sleeperie; een that they see-na wi', and lugs they hear-na wi', till this vera day."

9. And Davaid says, "Be their buird a snare, and a ginn, and a stumbling, and an ill-return to them!"

10. "Be their een blear', that they may-na see; and their back be aye loutit doon!"

11. But I say, Stumbl't they to the end they might fa'? Far frae it! But throwe the ill-daen o' them, salvation cam to the nations, to steer them up to be jealous.

12. And noo, gin their ill-daen was like muckle gear to the world, and their loss like muckle gear to the nations—hoo muckle mair their abundance?

13. But to you am I sayin this—you o' the nations; inasmuckle as I am an Apostle to the nations; my office I mak muckle o'.

14. Gin, by ony means, I may steer up to be jealous my ain flesh, and save some frae 'mang them.

15. For, gin the castin-awa o' them was a word's bringin-in, what sal the acceptin o' them be but like life frae the deid?

16. And gin the first frute was holie, the book o' maun be holie as weel; and gin the rute was holie, e'en sae the branches.

17. And gin some o' the branches war ta'en awa—while ye (bein a wild olive) war grafit in amang them—and was made wi' them to share o' the rute—o' the fatness o' the olive—

18. Haud-na yere heid aboon the branches! But gin ye boast, ken that ye bear-na the rute, but the rute you!

19. Ye may say, "The branches
war taen awa, that I might be graffit in!"
  20. Weel! throve their want o' faith they war broken; and ye by yere faith are staunin: look-na at lofty things, but hae fear!
  21. For gin God spared-na the nateral branches, tak tent that he spare-na you!
  22. Gie tent, than, to God's kindness and rigor; upon thae that fell, rigor; but upon you God's kindness, gin aiblins ye bide aye in the kindness: else e'en ye sal be cuttit oot.
  23. And e'en they (except aiblins they still bide in their lack o' faith) sal be graffit in; for God can graff them in again.
  24. For gin ye war cuttit-oot frae the nateral wild-olive, and, ayont natur war graffit intil a gude olive! hoo muckle mair sal thir, the nateral branches, be graffit intil their ain olive tree!
  25. For I wadna hae ye no to ken this mystery, brethren, least ye be ower wyss in yere ain een, that a bleartness to a degree has come on Isra'1, till the abundance o' the nations sal come in:
  26. And sae, a' Isra'1 sal be saved; e'en as it is putten doon, "The Deliverer sal come oot o' Zion; he wull pit awa the ungodliness o' Jaucob!
  27. "And this is my covenant wi' them, i' the day that I tak awa their sins."
  28. Anent the Joyfu'-message, they are contrar t'ye; but as to the Choos'n, they are weel loosed for the faithers' sake.
  29. God never rues his biddin or his gifts!
  30. For e'en as ye war at ae time dour toward God, but at this time hae gotten mercie by their dourness;¹

¹ V. 30. The Jews wadna hae Christ, and sae he bude to be preached to the Gentiles: sae, in the hinner end (v. 31), the Gentiles haein the Gospel wull be the means o' the Jews takin haud o't.

31. Sae, thir war dour, that by yere mercie they too may win mercie.
  32. For God has coontit them a' dour, that he soud hae mercie on them a'.
  33. O, deepness o' God's riches, and wisdom, and knowledge! hoo unfathomable his judgments! and his ways unsearchable!
  34. "For wha kent the Lord's mind? or wha becam his counsellor?"
  35. Or wha first gied to him, and hae it returned again?
  36. For, by him, and throwe him, and for him, are a' things! To him glorie for aye! Amen!

CHAPTIR TWAL'.
Christ's folk maun do as Christ dis; the world is lookin on!

I ENTREAT ye, than, brethren, by the mercies o' God, that ye render yersels as a leevin, holie, weel-pleasin offeran to God—a proper, rational service.

2. And no to be conform to this world, but to be transformed by the renewin o' yer mind, that ye may pit to the prufe what is God's gude, and perfete, and acceptable wull.

3. For, say I, by the favor gien to me, to ilka ane amang ye, no to be thinkin ower muckle o' his sel, ayont what he soud think o' his sel, but to think o' his sel discreetly; e'en as God gied to ilka ane his portion o' faith.

4. For, e'en as in ae body we hae mony pairts, but a' o' the pairts hae-na the same duty,

5. Sae we, the mony, are a' as body in Christ; but allenarlie are pairts ans o' anither.

6. Noo, haein gifts by favor, and gifts differan accordin to the favor gien to us—gin it be prophecie, lat it be i' the proportion o' faith;

7. Or service, i' the service; or he that teaches, i' the teachin;

8. Or an exhorter, i' the exhortin:

203
Return nae ill.

ROMANS, XIII.

Ceivil duties.

tie. For thar is nae authoritie but by God; thae existin, exist by God.
2. Sae be he that sets his sel again the authoritie sets his sel again the ordinance o' God: and they that oppose sal receive condemnation.
3. For rulers are-na a fear to gude works, but to the ill. But wad ye no be fley't o' the authoritie? Dae ye that whilk is gude, and ye sal hae praise o' the same.
4. For he is God's servant t'ye, for that whilk is gude. But gin aiblins ye are doin ill, hae fear; for he disna cairry the sword for nocht. For God's servant is he, punishin wi' wrath him wha practeeses ill.
5. And sae thar is a need o' submittin yourselves, no only on account o' the wrath, but eke on account o' conscience.
6. For sae pey ye tribute as wel: for God's ceevil servants are they, takin tent to this vera thing.
7. Render, than, to a' their dues; tribute to wham tribute; tax to wham tax; fear to wham fear; honor to wham honor.
8. Awe nae man ocht, save love to ane anither; for he wha lo'es the ither fills up the Law.
9. Thus: "Ye canna commit adultery; Ye sanna commit murder; Ye sanna steal; Ye sanna covet"; and gin thar be ony ither commandment, it is summed up i'this word, namely: "Ye sal lo'e yere needor as yer sel!"
10. Love to ane's needor works nae ill; love tharfor, is the pith o' the Law.
11. And, kennin the time, that it is an 'oor e'en noo for us to wauken oot o' sleep: for noo is oor salvation narer-haun than whan we first believed:

1V. 11. For that oor common English version says "business," some hae tae this to refer only to warldly things; and hae e'en made it an excuse for warldly-mindedness. It includes a' things; and is a reprove for indolence.

LAT ilka saul submit itsel to the protection o' the public authori-

CHAPTER THIRTEEN.
The saunt is a gude citizen; and walks i' the licht.

1 V. 7. The dues o' Government are taxes and quate behavior; the dues o' my neebor are what I wad like him to do to me; and aboon a' this, is a braid warld that nae man enters, only God! My haun for my freends; my back for the burden o' life; but my knee for God alane!
The weak brither

ROMANS, XIV.

12. The nitch is far gane; the
dawin comes on. Pit we awa, than,
the warks o' darkness, and lat us tak
the wapins o' licht!

13. Lat us work, honorably, as in
the licht o' day: no in brutizies and
druckenness, no in lewdness and
wantonness, no in castin's-oot and
envin.

14. But pit ye on the Lord Jesus
Christ; and hae nae trokin wi' the
flesh and its corrupt desires.

CHAPITIR FOWRTIEN.
The eatin o' meat, and the keepin o' days:
see ye that it is dune for the sake o' the
Lord, and no for the sake o' contention!

AND forby: ane that is weak i' the
faith tak ye in, and no for the
sake o' doots and disputes.

2. Ane, indeed, in his faith can eat
a' things; anither, wha is weak, eats
what is vegetable.

3. Lat-na the eatin ane despise
him that eats-na; and lat-na him
that eats-na condemn him that eats;
for God receives him.

4. Wha are ye that are judgin a
frem'd ane's servant? he sall staun or
fa' till his ain maister; but he sal be
made to staun; for God is strang to
up-haud him.

5. Ane, indeed, thinks mair o' ae
day nor anither; whauras anither
thinks muckle o' ilk day—lat ilk
ane be well-perswadit in his ain
mind.

5. He that regards the day, re-
gards it to the Lord; and he that
eats, eats to the Lord, for he gies
thanks to God: and he that eats-na,
to the Lord he absteens, and gies
thanks to God.

7. For no ane o' us leeves to his
ain sel; and no ane o' us dees to his
ain sel.

8. For baith, gin aiblins we leave,
we leave to the Lord; and gin aiblins
we dee, we dee to the Lord; sae
than, gif we leave, or gif we dee, we
are the Lord's.

9. For, ettlin thus, Christ baith
dee't and raise again, that he might
hae the lordship ower the deid and
the leevin.

10. But ye, why soud ye condemn
yere brither? Or ye, why soud ye
lichttie yere brither? For we sal a'
present oorsels at God's Judgment
seat.

11. For it is putten-doan: "As I
leeve, says the Lord, 'To me sal lout
ilka knee, and to God sal ilka tongue
confess!'

12. And sae ilka ane o' us sal for
himsel gie an account to God.

13. Sae, nae mair lat us be judgin
ane anither, but this discern ye
rather—no to pit a stumblin-clog
afore yere brither; or a girm.

14. I ken, and hae become pers-
wadit by the Lord Jesus, that
naething is unclean o' itsel; only
till him wha is reckonin onything to
be unclean, till him it bude be un-
clean.

15. Noo, gif ower your meat yere
brither is grieved—nae mair are ye
gangin in love—dinna wi' yere eatin
destroy that ane for whom Christ
dee't!

16. Lat na yere gude be ill-spoken
o'.

17. For God's kingdom isna eatin
and drinkin, but holines and peace,
and rejoicing in Holie Spirit.

18. For ane that is sae doin service
to Christ, is weil-pleasin to God, and
acceptit o' men.

19. The things o' peace, than, are
we pursuin; and the things that are
for oor common up-biggin.

20. For the sake o' meat, be-na
undoin God's wark. A' things, in-
deed, are clean; but it is ill for the
man wha eats wi' cause o' stumblin.

21. It is a grand thing no to eat
flesh, nor to drink wine, nor to do
onything whaurin yere brither is

---

1 V. 14. Sae the Lord perswadit Paul; and
sae he perswadit Peter (Acts x. 15).
But gin a brither's weak conscience airts
anither gate, we mauna condemn him;
but be cannie wi' him.
gart to stumble, or is snared, or is made feckless.

22. And ye, what faith ye hae, bae it to yersel afore God! Weel is he wha condemns-na his ain sel in what he appruves.

23. But he that makes a distinction atween meats is condemned gif he eat, for it wasna o' faith; for what isna o' faith is sin.

CHAPITIR FYFTEEN.

Jews and Gentiles a' to 'gree. Paul's labor and success.

WE that are strang soud be cairrying the burdens o' thae that are-na strang, and no be pleasin oorsels:

2. But ilk ane pleasur his neebor in that whilk is gude, wi' a view to his strenthenin.

3. For e'en Christ pleased-na himsel; but as it is putten doon, "The ill-words o' thae that ill-ca'd thee fell on me!"

4. For as mony things as war putten doon afore-haun, war putten doon for oor lear, that throwe tholin and the consolation o' the Scriptures we soud hae hope.

5. Noo the God o' a' tholin and consolation gie ye to tak tent to the same thing ane wi' anither, accordin to Jesus Christ.

6. Sae that, wi' ae mind, and as voice, ye may be magnifyin the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

7. And sae help ye ane anither, e'en as Christ helpit you, to God's glorie.

8. For I threep that Christ becam a servant o' circumcисion, in behauf o' the truth o' God, that he might mak siccar the promises gien to the faithers.

9. That the nations, on the ither haun, micht magnify God for his mercie; e'en as it is putten doon: "For this cause will I confess to thee amang the nations; and to thy name will I sing psalms."

10. And again he says: "Be joyfu', ye nations, wi' his folk!"

11. And ance mair: "Gie ye praise, a' ye nations, to the Lord! and dwell on his praises, a' ye folk!"

12. And again, Esaih says, "A rute sal thar be o' Jesse; and he wha is reicn to rule the nations: on him sal the nations hope."

13. Noo the God o' hope fill ye wi' a' joy and peace in believin, to the end ye may hae rowth o' hope, and poore o' the Holie Spirit.

14. And I mysel, my brethren, am become perswadit o' ye, that ye yersells are filled wi' gudeness, fu' o' a' knowledge, and fit to coonseal ane anither.

15. Nane-the-less, I wraite the mair bauldly in pairt to ye, steerin up yere memories, because o' the favor o' God gien to me.

16. To the end I soud be a public servant o' Jesus Christ to the nations, giean service in the Joyfu'-message o' God, that the offeran o' the nations micht be weel-pleasin, made holie by the Holie Spirit.

17. I hae, than, the roosin o' mysel in Christ Jesus, as to the things o' God;

18. For I winna daur to speak o' deeds whilk Christ wrought-na oot for himsel by me, to the obeyin o' the nations, in word and deed:

19. In rowth a' signs and ferlies, in poore o' the Holy Spirit, sae that I frae Jerusalem and in a great sweep the lenth o' Illyricum, hae deliver't fully the Joyfu'-message o' Christ.

20. But in sic manner am I strivin to preach the Joyfu'-message — no whaur Christ's name was kent; that I bigg-na on anither's foundation;

21. But, e'en as it is putten doon: "They that warra tell't aboot him sal see; and they wha hae-na heard sal understaan."

22. For whilk thing I was, a gey wheen times, hinder't frae coming to ye;
23. But noo, haein nae mair place
in thir pairts, and haein a strang
desirin a gude wheen year to see ye,
24. Whane'er I mich be gaun intil Spain, I am in hope, whan
gaun throwe, to see ye, and by you
to be sutter forrit on the way, gin
aiblins wi' you first I am in pairt
satisfees't.
25. But e-noo I am gaun to Jeru-
salem, to ser' the saunts.
26. For Macedonia and Achaia
war weel-pleased to mak a certain
gift for the poortith o' the saunts at
Jerusalem.
27. They war sae pleased — and
their debtors are they. For, gin in
their spiritual things the Gentiles
had a share — they soud i' their
temporal things share wi' them.
28. Haein than completit this, and
haein made siccar to them this frute,
I wull come back, by you, to Spain.
29. I ken too, that when I dae
come, I sal come i' the abundance o'
the blessin o' Christ.
30. But I entreat ye, brethren,
throwe oor Lord Jesus Christ, and the
love o' the Spirit, to warisle thegither
wi' me, in prayers for me, to God;
31. That I may be rescued frae
the unbelievin in Judea; and that
my service for Jerusalem may be
acceptable to the saunts:
32. And that joyfully I may come
t'ye, throwe God's wull, and may be
refreshed wi' you a'.
33. Noo the God o' a' peace be
w'ye a'. Amen!

CHAPITIR SAXTEEN.

Salutations and weel-wishins o' Paul.

FORBY, I commend t'ye Phebe oor
sister, as bein ane that ser's the
kirk in Cenchreae,

2. That ye may gie her a welcome
i' the Lord, wordie o' saunts, and
may uphaud her whaur she may hae
need o' ye; for e'en she hersel up-
haudit mony, and me mysel.
3. Salute ye Prisca and Aquila,
my marrows in Christ Jesus;
4. Wha for my life offer't their ain
necks; to wham no only I gie praise,
but a' the kirk's o' the Gentiles.
5. And salute the gaitherin i' their
hoose. Salute Epanetus, my dear
ane, wha is first frute o' the Province
o' Achaia to Christ.
6. Salute Mary, wha wrocht muckle
for us.
7. Salute Andronicus, and Junias,
my kin, and my fellow-captives, wha
are notit amang the Apostles; wha
indeed war in Christ suner than my-
sel'.
8. Salute Ampliatus, a dear ane in
the Lord.
9. Salute Urban, oor comrade in
Christ, and Stachys my beloved.
10. Salute Apelles, ane appruv'd
o' Christ. Salute thae o' Aristob-
ulus' family.
11. Salute Herodian, my kinsman.
Salute thae o' the family o' Narc-
cissus, that are in the Lord.
12. Salute Tryphena and Try-
phosa, wha toil in the Lord. Salute
Persis, the weel-loved ane, wha in-
deed toiled muckle in the Lord.
13. Salute Rufus, chosen o' the
Lord, and his (and my) mither.
14. Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon,
Hermes, Patrobas, Hermes, and the
brethren wi' them.
15. Salute Philologus and Julias,
Nereus and his sister, and Olympas,
and a' the saunts wi' them.
16. Salute anither wi' a sacred
kiss. A' the kirks o' Christ salute
you.

1V. 24. We kenna gin he ever wan the
lenth o' Spain. Gif he did, it wad be
eftir the imprisonm't tell' us in The
Acts. But he had it in his heart, gin
time and opportunity had stude him in
stead, to preach in every land o' the hail
warld!

2V. 3. Tak tent hoo mony kind words
and speirins he sends to sae mony folk in
Rome. Thair maun hae been an unco
deal o' flittin aboot, i' thae days: aiblins
mair amang the Jews than the ither.
It is gude no to write onything anent
onyane that isna o' love!

207
17. But I entreat ye, brethren, to tak tent o' thae that mak the divec-
sions and offences, contrar to the lear ye war learned, and turn awa
frae them.

18. For sic as thir ser-na our Lord Jesus Christ, but their ain wame;
and, by their fleecin words and flatterin speeches, deceive simple ae-
fauld hearts.

19. For yere obedience has come
to be kent o' a'; ower you, than, I rejoyce; but I wad hae ye to be wyss
to that whilk is gude, and innocent
that whilk is ill.

20. But the God o' peace sal ding
Sautan anewth yere feet sune! The
tender-love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ
be w'ye!

21. Timothy, my marrow, salutes
ye, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosi-
pater my kinsmen.

22. I, Tertius, wha penned this
Epistle, salute ye i' the Lord.

23. Gaius, the enterteener o' mysel
and o' the hail kirk, salutes ye.
Erastus the City Treasurer salutes
ye; and Quartus oor brither.

24. The kindly love o' oor Lord
Jesus Christ wi' ye a'! Amen!

25. Noo to him wha has poorer to
dar ye siccarlie staun, conform to
my Joyfu'-message, e'en the preachin
o' Jesus Christ, accordin to the
revelin o' the mystery, in by-gane
ages keepit close,

26. But is make kent e-noo, throwe
the prophecies o' the Scripture, con-
form to the wull o' the everlastin
God, until obedience o' faith, to a'
the nations made plain,

27. To the only wyss God, throwe
Jesus Christ—to him be glory, for
ever mair! Amen.
FIRST CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTER ANE.

Paul likit-na the divisions o' the Corinthians. The Cross o' Christ the ae and only Foundation.

PAUL, ca'd as an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, by the wull o' God; and the brither Sosthenes;
2. To the Kirk o' God, sanctify't in Christ Jesus, whilk is in Corinth, ca'd as saunta; wi' a' that ca' on the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ in a' places, their Lord and oors;
3. Tender love be to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
4. I am thankin my God aye, anent ye, for the favor o' God gien to ye in Christ Jesus,
5. That in a' things ye had rowth in him, in a' word and knowledge,
6. E'en as the 1 testimonie o' Christ was made siccar amang ye.
7. Sae that ye fa' ahint in nae gift o' grace; fa'waitin for the revealin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ;
8. Wha sal e'en mak ye siccar throwe a', unblameable i' the day o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.
9. Leal and faithfu' is God, by tham ye war ca'd intil a ane-ness wi' his Son Jesus Christ oor Lord.
10. But I entreat ye, brethren, by the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, that ye a' speak as ane, and that thar be-na amang ye divisions; but rather that ye be perfetely joined thegither i' the same mind, and the like conclusions.
11. For it has been signify't to me, anent ye, my brethren, by thae o' Chloe, that strife's are amang ye.
12. But this, say I, that ilk ane o' ye says, "I am o' Paul;" and "I am o' Apollos;" and "I o' Peter;" and "I o' Christ."
13. Has Christ been sinder't? Was Paul crucify't in yere behauf? Or intil Paul's name war ye bapteez't?
14. I gie thanks to God that nane o'ye I bapteez't, gin it warna Crispus and Gaius;
15. That nane might say I bapteez't in my ain name.
16. Howbeit, I bapteez't too the family o' Stephanas: mair nor thir I kenna whether I bapteez't ony.
17. For Christ sent-me-na to bapteze, but to gie oot the Joyfu' message; no in wisdom o' speech, least the cross o' Christ soud be made less o'.
18. For the message o' the cross is but havers to thae wha perish: hoobeit, to thae wha are rescued, e'en to us, it is the poore o' God.
19. For it is putten doon: "I destroy the wisdom o' the wyss anes, and set aside the discernment o' the discernin anes."
20. Whaur is a wyss ane? Whaur a writer? Whaur a disputer o' this warid? Has-na God made the wisdom o' the warid witlessness?
21. For, seein that i' the wisdom o' the warid, the warid ken't-na God throwe its wisdom, it was God's gude pleasur, throwe the witlessness o' preachin, to save them that hae faith.
22. For baih Jews for ferlies are speirin, and Greeks for wisdom are seekin:
23. Whauras we proclaim a Messia th wha has been crucify't; to the Jews, indeed, a stumblin-clog; but to the Greeks folly;
24. Nane-the-less, to the bidden anes theirsels, baih Jews and Greeks, a Messiah; the poore o' God, and the wisdom o' God.

1 V. 6. The Testimonie o' Christ; the Message concernin Christ, as brocht to them by Paul.
The natural man.

I. CORINTHIANS, II.

God’s wisdom.

25. For the “folly” o’ God is wysser nor men; and the “weakness” o’ God michtier nor men.

26. For look at yere bidden, brethren; that no mony wyse accord-in to the flesh, no mony o’ poore, no mony heigh anes war chosen;

27. On the contrar, God chose the witless things o’ the world, that he soud shame thae that are wysses; and the weak things o’ the world God waled, to shame the things that are mighty;

28. And the laigh things o’ the world, and the geck’t-at things God waled—things no existin—that exist-in things might be brocht to nocht.

29. Sae as nae flesh soud boast in God’s presence.

30. But o’ him are ye in Christ Jesus, wha has made wisdom fraw God to us, and richtousness, and santification, and rewendung:

31. Sae, as it is putten-doon, “He that boasts, let him boast i’ the Lord.”

CHAPTIR TWA.

Salvation disea come wi’ the knowledge o’ man. The natural man and the spiritual man.

AND I, whan I cam to ye, brethren, cam-na i’ the way o’ speech or wisdom that excelled, bringin to ye God’s testimania.

2. For I set doon my fit to ken naething amang ye, but Jesus Christ, and him as ane that had been crucify’t.

3. And I cam, in fecklessness and shrinking, and wi’ muckle fear, to be wi’ ye;

4. And my speech and my message warna wi’ wheedlin words o’ the wysses, but in demonstration o’ spirit and poore.

5. Sae that yere faith need-na staun in men’s wisdom, but in God’s poore.

6. Wisdom, nane-the-less, we speak—amang experienced anes: wisdom hoobeit, no o’ this world, nor o’ the great men o’ this world—wha are to be a’ putten-by;

7. But we speak God’s wisdom in a riddle, the knowledge that had been keept hidlins, whilk God designed aforehaun, afore a’ time, for oor glorie;

8. That no ane o’ the great anes o’ this world has come to ken; for had they come to ken, they wadna i’ that case hae crucify’t the Lord o’ Glorie!

9. But, e’en as it is putten doon, “What-na things the ee saw-na, and the ear heard-na, and man’s heart conceiv’t-na—sae mony things has God prepared for theae that lo’e him!”

10. To us, nane-the-less, has God reveal’t them, by the Spirit; for the spirit kens a’ things, e’en the deep things o’ God.

11. For wha o’ men kens man’s things, but man’s spirit that is in him? Sae, nane kens the things o’ God, but God’s Spirit.

12. But we gat, no the world’s spirit, but the Spirit that is o’ God, sae as we soud ken the things God gies to us by his favor;

13. Whilk things eke we speak, no in man-taught words o’ learn; but in words spirit-taught to spiritual men, spiritual things exponin.

14. But a man o’ flesh takes-na in the things o’ God’s Spirit; for they are daftness to him, and he canna get to ken them, for that they are to be spiritually redd oot.

15. But the spiritual man speirs oot a’ things; but he his sel is speir’t oot by nane.

16. For wha cam to ken the Lord’s mind, that he micht gie himlear? But we hae Christ’s mind.

1 V. 9. While a hantle folk tak thir words as meanin the glorie o’ the future life, it is better to look on them as settin oot the wisdom and the joy o’ theae that are born again. Paul, and the lave, had it a’ (v. 10). And they gat naething con-trar whan they gat hame to Glorie; only mair o’ t’!
CHAPTIR THRIE.

I. CORINTHIANS, IV. The temple o' God.

AND I, brethren, could only speak to ye as men o' flesh, as bairns in Christ; and no as to spiritual men.

2. Wi' milk I fed ye, and no wi' meat; for ye war-na yet able for't: nay! e'en yet ye are-na able!

3. For ye are yet fleshly; for whaur thar are amang ye jealousy and strife, are ye-na fleshly, and gaun-on as men?

4. For whan ane says, "I, in sooth, am o' Paul!" but another, "I am o' Apollos!" are ye no fleshly men?

5. Wha, than, is Apollos? and wha is Paul? Juist servants, throwe wham ye believ't: e'en as the Maister gied to ilk ane.

6. I plantit, Apollos watir't; but God mak's to growe.

7. Sae, than, naither he that plants is onything, nor he that watirs, but God that mak's to growe.

8. And he that plants, and he that watirs, are baith ane: hoo-beit, ilk ane sal hae his ain reward, e'en as his labour sal be.

9. For we are God's fellow-workers; and ye are God's mailin, God's biggin.

10. E'en as the favor o' God was gien me, as a wyss biggin-maister I lay a fundation, and anither biggs on't. But lat ilk ane tak tent hoo he biggs tharon!

11. For ocht ither fundation nane can lay but that whilk is laid, that is Jesus Christ.

12. But gin ony ane is up-biggin on the fundation, wi' gowd, siller, precious gems, wud, gerse, stibbl—

13. Ilk ane's wark wull be made plain; for the day wull set it forth: and the lowe wull try ilk ane's wark, o' whatna sort it is.

14. Gin ony ane's wark whilk he has biggit tharon stauns, he sal hae his meed:

15. Gin ony ane's wark sal be brunt up, he sal ha' skaitth; hoo-beit, he his sel sal be sav't; yet as throwe the fire.

16. Ken-yen na that ye are a temple o' God, and God's Spirit is dwallin in ye?

17. Gin ony man destroy God's temple, him wull God 2 destroy; for the temple o' God is holie; whilk in sooth are ye.

18. Lat nae ane delude his sel: gin ony ane thinks he is wyss amang ye in this world, lat him become witless, in order that he may become wyss.

19. For the wisdom o' this world is daftness wi' God. For it is putten-doon, "He aneres the wyss wi' their ain pawkiness."

20. And ance mair: "The Lord taks tent o' the reasonins o' the wyss, that they are havers."

21. Sae, lat nae boast o' men; for a' things are yere ain.

22. Gin aiblins it be Paul, or Apollos, or Peter, or the world, or life, or death, or things wi' us, or things to be—a' are yere ain;

23. But ye are Christ's: but Christ is God's.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

SAE lat a man pit us doon as actin for Christ; as awmoners o' God's secret things.

2. And here, too, it is necessar that awmoners be fund honest.

3. But wi' me, it is a sma' thing that I soud be judged by you, or on

1 V. 15. Hoo gude is the Lord, that whan a' oor wark is wrang—gin we ettel purely—we hae skaitth, but are-na lost oorsels! But hoo it soud mak us tak tent, sae as we bigg-na wrang!

2 V. 17. Ane "destroys" the temple, whan he destroys the holiness o't. And gin he sae do, God wull destroy him! Paul has the same word twice.
man's day; aye! I am na e'en judgin mysel.
4. For I ken nocht to wyte mysel wi'; but this disan mak me richtous. But he wha judges me is the Lord.
5. And sae, judge nocht owersune, till the time the Lord comes, wha wull baith mak plain the hidlin things o' the mirkness, and wull schaw the thochts o' the hearts: and than, ilk ane's commendin sal come frae God.
6. But thir things, brethren, I hae (sae to speak), taen to mysel and Apollos, for yere sakes; sae as in us ye might learn the lear, no to gang ayont what is putten-doon: that ye soudna be swarmin yersefs up, ilk ane again anither.
7. For wha mak's a differ atween ye? And what hae ye that ye didna receive? Noo, gin ye received it, why soud ye swall up yer sel as gin ye didna receive it?
8. E'en noo hae ye become staw'\d; e'en noo hae ye become rich: allenarie, and sindry frae us, ye hae gotten to be kings! And I wad ye war kings, that e'en we micht reign alang w'ye.
9. For sae it seems to me; God has set forth us, the Apostles himmaist; as gien ower to the deid: for a spectacle are we made to the world—to Angels and to men.
10. We are made fules for the name o' Christ: but ye are wyss in Christ: we are feckless, but ye are strang: ye are honored, but we dishonored.
11. E'en to this 'oor, we hae hung'er, and drooth, and nakitness; are clour'd, and cuisten-oot;
12. We toil, workin wi' oor ain hauns; whan misc'd, we bless; whan persecutit, we thole it.
13. Whan defamed, we entreat; we are made as the midden-heap o' the world; the dignits and orts o' a' things, e'en to this day.
14. No to shame ye dae I say thir

1 V. 3. See iii. 13. It isna "man's day," but God's Day, that sal mak a' things plain!

things; on the contrar, I admonish ye as my weel-lo'ed barns.
15. For it may be that ye hae ten thousand teachers in Christ, yet surely no mony faithers—for in Christ Jesus I became yere faith'er i' the Joyfu'-message.
16. I entreat ye, than, that ye be as I am.
17. For this reason, I send to ye Timothy, wha is my bairn, belov'd, and faithfu' i' the Lord; wha wull gar ye to ca' to mind my ways whilk are in Christ, e'en as I teach, in a' places, in ilka kirk.
18. But some are swalled-up, as gin I warna comin to ye.
19. But I wull come t'ye, sune; gin it please the Lord; and I sal get to ken—no the words o' thae that are swalled-up—but the poorer.
20. For the Kingdom o' God isna in words, but in poorer!
21. Whatna o' them wad ye hae? Soud I come t'ye wi' a rod? or in love and the spirit o' meekness?

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The ill-deedie man i' the Corinthian Kirk.

I t is the common clash that thar is uncleanness amang ye; and sic uncleanness as is no e'en to be heard o' amang the nations; that ane soud hae his father's wife.
2. And ye hae been swalled-up, and dinna rather lament, that he micht be taen oot o' the mids o' ye, wha did sic wark.
3. For I, absent in body, but present in spirit, hae gien judgment, as gin I war present, on him that has dune this thing.
4. I' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, ye bein forgather't—and my spirit—wi' the pooper o' the Lord Jesus Christ,
5. That ye gie ower siccan a ane to Sautan, for the destroyin o' the
flesh, that the spirit may be sa've't i' the day o' the Lord Jesus.

6. Yere roosin o' yersels is unseemly. Ken-ye-na, that a wee barm wull leaven the hail melder.

7. Pit awa, than, the auld leaven, that ye may be a new lump, accordin as ye are unleavened; for oor Paschal-Lamb has been slain: Christ.

8. Lat us than keep festival, no wi' auld leaven, neiither wi' leaven o' vice and wickedness, but wi' the unleaven'd breid o' aseafulness and truth!

9. I wrate to ye in my epistle, no to be nar-friends wi' unclean anes;

10. Yet no avoidin a'thegither the unclean anes o' this world; or the covetous, or extortioners, or eidol-lovers; for than ye bude gang oot o' the world:

11. But noo I send t'ye, no to be makin nar-friends, gin ony ane ca'd a brothir be unclean, or covetous, or an eidol-lover, or a mis-ca'er, or drucken, or an extortioner: wi' siccan a ane no e'en to eat.

12. For what has I wi' judgin thae oot-by? Is't no for ye to judge thae within?


CHAPTIR SAX.

Aboot law-pleas, and unholie leevin.

DAUR ony o' ye, haein a plea wi' his neebor, gang to the coort afore the unrichteous, and no gang afore the sauntes?

2. Or ken-ye-na that the sauntes sal judge the world? And gin by you the world is judged, are ye unfit for the ama'est tribunal?

3. Ken-ye-na that we sal judge Angels? hoo muckle mair, than, things o' this life?

4. Gin than, ye hae to judge things o' this life, wad ye hae thae to judge that ye esteem-na i' the kirk?

5. I speak this to shame you. Sae is it possible that isna amang ye a discernin man, ane fit to gie a judgment atween his brethren?

6. But brothir has a plea wi' brothir, and that afore unbelievers?

7. Nay, s'en noo are ye 1 cuisten in yere plea! to hae law-pleas ane wi' anither. Why div-ye-na raither tak wrang? Why div-ye-na raither thole defraudin?

8. Nay, but s'en ye yersels do wrang, and defraud; and that yere ain brethren!


10. Nor thieves, nor sellie, nor the drucken, nor thae that curse, nor extortioners, sal come to possess the Kingdom o' God.

11. And sic war some o' ye; but ye had them washed awa, but ye war made pure, but ye war declair' richtous—i' the name o' the Lord Jesus Christ, and i' the Spirit o' oor God.

12. A' things are alloot't to me but a' things wadna profit me; a' things are alloot't to me, but I winna be behauden to ony.

13. Meats for the stammack, and the stammack for meats; but God wull bring to nocht baith it and them. The body isna for uncleanness, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.

14. God baith raised-again the Lord; and wull raise us throwe his poore.

15. Ken-ye-na that a' yere pairs are pairs o' Christ? Takin than the pairs o' Christ, sal I mak them the pairs o' a harlot?

16. Or ken-ye-na that he that joines his sel to a harlot is ae body? ("For," says he, "the twa sal be ae flesh.")

1. V. 7. Ye hae tint yere plea already, to gang to law afore pagans. The skaith is in takin up the plea.

213
17. But he that joins his soul to the Lord is set free. 
18. Flee from uncleanliness! If a man may do it, if it is to his advantage; for when he commits uncleanliness, his sin is upon his body. 
19. O ken ye na that yere body is a temple of the Holy Spirit within ye, that ye bae frae God; and that ye war-na yere ain? 
20. In vera deed, ye war coft wi' a price; sae, magnify God in yere body.

CHAPITIR SEEVER.

Husbands and wives. Makin use o' the world, but no bokin doon till'.

BUT, anent what ye wraite to me: It is gude for a man no to be bound to a wumman. 
2. Yet, because o' uncleanliness, let ilk man bae his ain wife, and ilk wumman her ain man. 
3. Let the husband render to the wife what is due; and in siclike manner, the wife as weil, to the husband. 
4. The wife hasna authority ower her ain body, but the husband; and in siclike manner the husband hasna authority ower his ain body, but the wife. 
5. Defraud-ye-na ane the ither, unless aiblins it may be for a wee, by consent, that ye may hae mair time for prayer: and forgather again, last Sauntin tempt ye wi' incontinence. 
6. This, hoobeit, I am saying by permission, and no o' commandment. 
7. I coud wuss a man to be like mysel; but ilk ane has his ain gift frae God; ane this, and anither that. 
8. Nane-the-less, say I to the unmarried and to weedores: Weel for them gien aiblins they bide e'en as I am. 
9. But, gien they haena continency, lat them mairry: for better is't to mairry than to be ower fain. 
10. To the mairry't hoobeit, I gie chairge—yet no I, but the Lord—that a wife gang-na awa frae her husband. 
11. But gin aiblins she e'en be sinder't, lat her bide unmairry't, or else be reconcill't to her husband; and lat-na a husband pit awa a wife. 
12. And to the lave say I (no the Lord), Gin a brither hae a wife, and she believes-na, and gin she hersel is well-pleased to dwell wi' him—lat him no send her awa. 
13. And a wife who has a husband that believes-na, gin he his sel is well-pleased to dwell wi' her—lat her no lea her husband! 
14. For the misbelievin husband is sanctify't in the wife, and the misbelievin wife is sanctify't in the husband: itherways, as the case is, yere bairns war unclean; but noo are they holy. 
15. Hoobeit, gin the misbelievin husband is unyoking his sel, lat him be unyokin his sel! the brither or the sister haasna come into bondage in sic like: but God has enjoin'd upon us peace. 
16. For hoo ken ye, O wife! but ye may save yere husband? Or hoo ken ye, O husband! but you may save yere wife? 
17. But whether sae, ilk ane, as the Lord has portioned oot to him, ilk ane as God has fund him and ca'd him, sae lat him be walkin'; and sae enjoin I in a' the kirks. 
18. Haein been circumcised when ane was ca'd, lat him no be uncircumcised. In uncircumcision was ony ane ca'd? Lat him no become circumcised! 
19. Circumcision is naething, and uncircumcision is naething: but the keepin o' God's commandments is a' thing.

1 V. 14. Gin the faither and mither warn leevin thegither, it was a' ane as gin their mairriage was unlawfu'; and their bairns wad be as unlawfu'. Sae, for their bairns' sakes, as weil as for peace's sake, and the Gospel's sake, lat them gree thegither.
I. CORINTHIANS, VIII.

20. Ilk ane, in the mairin o' life in whilk he was ca'd, sae abide.
21. A thirlman war ye whan ca'd? Lat it no fash ye! but gin ye hae choice to be free, tak it.
22. For he that in the Lord was ca'd, whan a thirlman, is emancipate i' the Lord; in siclike, he wha was ca'd as a free man, is a bondman in the Lord.
23. Ye war coft wi' a price: become-na servants o' men.
24. Lat ilk ane, in that state in whilk he was ca'd, abide wi' God.
25. But, anent thae that are maidens, I hae nae commau's o' the Lord; but I gie ye my mind, as ane that has had mercie frae the Lord to be true and leal.
26. This than, I wad say is seemlie i' the case, by stress of existin things, that it is weil for a man sae to be.
27. Hae ye become bund to a wife? Seek-na to be loused. Are ye loused frae a wife? Seek-na a wife.
29. But e'en this say I, brethren; the time is wearin dune; lat them wi' wives be as gin they had nane;
30. And them greetin, as gin they grat-na; and them rejoicin, as gin they rejoiced-na; and them buyin, as gin they obtein'd-na;
31. And them usin the world, as no bund-up in't; for the form o' this world is passin awa.  
32. Moreover, I wad ye wear free frae carkin care. The man no mairry't is tentie about the Lord's things, hoo he may pleasur the Lord;
33. Whauras, the man mairry't, is tentie about his wife's matters, hoo he may pleasur his wife, and sae is dividit.
34. And thar is a differ atween a wife and a maiden: she that is no mairry't, is tentie about the Lord's things, sae as she may be holie in body and spirit; whaur-as she that is mairry't is tentie anent the world's things, hoo she may pleasur her husband.
35. This speak I, wi' an ee to yere ain gude; no that I wad cast a snare ower ye; but wi' an ee to what is seemly, and that ye may wait on the Lord untrammil't.
36. But gin ony man thinks he disna weil by his maiden, gin she pass the flooer o' her age, and need be, lat him do as he wad; he isna committin sin; lat them wed.
37. Nane-the-less, he that stauns siccar in his heart, no bein under necessity, but has poorer as anent his ain wull; and has made it up in his ain heart to keep his maiden, dis weil.
38. Sae, baith he wha gies in mairriage his ain maiden dochter dis weil; and he wha disna gie in mairriage dis e'en better.
39. A wife is bund as lang as her husband leeves; but gin aiblins her husband is faun asleep, she is free to mairry whom she wull: only in the Lord.
40. But happier, gin she thus abide, in my judgment; and mair, I think I hae the Spirit o' God.

CHAPTER AUCHT.

Christian liberty anent meats and drinks: its wideness and its straitness.

NOO, anent eidol-sacrifices, "We ken that we a' hae knowledge." Knowledge swalls up, but love upbiggs.
2. Gif ony man thinks he kens a thing, he hasna yet gotten to ken onything as he soud ken.
3. But, gif ony man loe's God, the same man is appruv't o' God.
4. Anent eidol-sacrifices: — we ken weel that an eidol is naething i' the world, and that thar is nae God but ane.
5. For e'en gin thar be sae-ca'd gods, gin they be in heeven or yirth.
Whaur meat is a snare. I. CORINTHIANS, IX. The Gospel free.

—s'en as thar are "gods" mony and "lords" mony;

6. But to us thar is ae God, the Faither, by wham are a' things, and we for him; and ae Lord Jesus Christ throwe wham are a' things, and we throwe him.

7. Hoobeit, that lear is no in a'; but some, trookin wi' the eidol, e'en till noo, wi' the eidol as a sacrifice, eat; and their conscience, bein unco waff, is defiled.

8. But meat will-na gar us win ben to God; naither, gin aiblins we eat-na, div we fa' short; nor aiblins gin we eat, div we excel.

9. But tak ye tent, that by nae means this freedom is made a stumbling clog for the weak.

10. For gin aiblins ane soud see you, wha has knowledge, sittin in an eidol's temple, at meat, wull-na his weak conscience be made bauld to eat the eidol-sacrificees?

11. Sae, than, the weak ane—the brither Christ dee't for—is brocht to ruin by yere knowledge!

12. But in sae sinnin again the brethren, and clouring their conscience whilk is weak, ye are sinnin again Christ!

13. Sae, in ony case ava, whaur meat is a snare to my brither, I se in naewise eat flesh for evermair, that I mak-na my brither to stoiter.

CHAPTIR NINE.
Paul speaks o' his sel. The battlin and the prise.

WALK I no at liberty? Am I no an Apostle? Hae I no seen Jesus Christ oor Lord? Are ye no yersels my wark i' the Lord?

2. Gin to ither anes I am-na an Apostle, yet nae doot I am to you: for the seal o' my apostleship are ye i' the Lord!

3. My defence to thae wha quais-ten me is this:

4. Hae-we-na richt to eat and drink?

5. Hae-we-na richt to be leadin about a wife wha is a believer, as weel as the lave o' the Apostles, and the Lord's brethren, and Peter?

6. Or hae only I and Barnabas no the richt to lay doon wark?

7. Wha gies service as a sodger, at his ain expense at ony time? Wha plants a vine-yaird, and eats-na o' the frute? or wha herds a flock, and takes-na o' the milk o' the flock?

8. Am I sayin thir things as a man wad say? Or isna the Lord sayin the same?

9. For i' the law o' Moses it is putten doon, "Ye sanna muzzle the thresher ox.” Is't for the owsen God has care?

10. Or, was't for oor sakes a' thegither he said it? Aye! for oor sakes was't putten doon: sae that hopin, the pleughman soud pleugh: and hopin to hae, ane soud thresh.

11. Gin we sawed for you spiritual things, is't a muckle thing gin we reap o' yere fleshly things?

12. Gin ither's use the richt ower ye, soudna rather we? But we grippit-na this richt, but rather happit-up things, that naething soud hinder the Joyfu'-message o' Christ.

13. Ken-ye-na that they wha ser' in holie things eat o' the things o' the holy place? and they wha at the altar staun, wi' the altar share?

14. E'en sae has the Lord ordeeneth, that they that declare the Gude-word, sal hae their breid o' the Gude-word.

1 V. 7. Paul kent than an eidol was naething (v. 4.) but a wheen brethren, tho' they worshipp't only God, believed in the existence o' eidols, as enemies o' God. Siccan a ane coudna eat in an eidol's temple, be the meat ever so gude o' itsel; he wad feel he was trookin wi' the eidol. We can hae some airtin here, for oorsels.

2 V. 10. The mair ye'll seek, the mair ye'll see, that a' the Auld Testament things hae a meanin. As Tammas Binney said, "A' the Auld Testament histories are doctrines!"
A' things to a' men.

15. Hoobeit, I haena taen ony o' thir things: and mair, I spak-na o' thae things, that see sa' I soud be done to me; for I wad sunder dee than that ony ane soud mak feckless my gloryin.

16. For, gin I declare the Joyfu'-message, it isna for me a cause o' gloryin: for a necessity is lyin on me; for wae is me! gin aiblins I be-na declarin the Joyfu'-message.

17. For gin I follow this thing o' mysel, I hae my meed; but gin it isna o' mysel, than it is a factorship I hae been lippen'd wi'.

18. And what, than, is my meed? this: That in declarin the Joyfu'-message, I may mak it free, and without cost; that I may-na ower muckle use my richt i' the Joyfu'-message.

19. For e'en free as I am frae a', I am thirman to a', that I miicht win the mair.

20. To the Jews becam I as a Jew, sae as I miicht win the Jews: to thae aneath the Law, as aneath the Law (no bein mysel' neath the Law) that I sould win thae under the Law.

21. To thae no haein the Law, as no haein the Law (no bein without law to God, but aneath Christ's Law), sae as I miicht win thae no haein the Law.

22. I becam to the weak, as weak mysel, that I sould win the weak; to a' men hae I become a' things, that by a' thir means I miicht save some!

23. But a' things div I for the sake o' the Joyfu'-message, that a partaker o' wi' you I miicht become.

24. Ken-ye-na that they wha rin in a coorse a' rin, but that ane wins the gree? Sae be rinnin, that ye may win!

25. But ilka ane strivin i' the games, is self-governin in a' things. They do it to obteem a fadin croon; but we, ane unfadin!

26. And sae I am rinnin, as no at a ventur: sae fecht I, as no baffin the air:

27. But I am haudin my body under, and garrin it do service; least in onywise, haein proclaimed the Joyfu'-message to ither, I mysel soud be cuisten aside!

CHAPTIR TEN.

We maun tak tent o' the Jews' errors, and no do the like: and walk close wi' God.

FOR I wadna hae ye unkennin, brethren, hoo oor forebears war a' aneath the clud, and a' gaed throwe the sea;

2. And war a' bapteez't intil Moses i' the clud and i' the sea.

3. And a' did eat like spiritual breid;

4. And a' did drink like spiritual drink; for they drank oot o' a spiritual rock that follow' them: the Rock, nameless, was Christ.

5. Hoobeit wi' mony o' them was God ill-pleased: and he dang them ower i' the wilderness.

6. Noo in thir things they becam lessons to us, that we soudna glaum at ill things, as eke they glaum'd.

7. Nor worship eidols, as some o' them: juist as it is putten doon, "The folk sut doon to eat and drink, and raise up to mak sport."

8. Naither lat us do uncleanness, as some o' them did uncleanness, and fell in ae day thrie-and-twenty thousand.

9. Naither lat us tempt the Lord, e'en as some o' them temptit, and perish't wi' the serpents.

10. Naither lat us yammer, as some o' them yammer't, and perish't wi' the destroyer.

11. But thir things cam to them for examples. And they war puttindoon for oor warnin, to wham the hinner-end o' time has come.

12. Sae, lat him wha thinks he stauns, tak tent that he fa'na!

1 V. 9. A wheen o' the MSS. hae "Christ" here. But gin we hae the true thocht, that Christ led and ruled the Auld Testament Kirk, e'en as he dis the New, than thar wull be nae differ atwixt "Lord" and "Christ."
13. Nae trial has come to ye but a human an; and God is leal and true, and winna lat ye be try't aboon what ye are fit to thole; but wull mak wi' the trial a gate o' escape, that ye may be able to hauk oot.

14. Whaur-for, my loved anes, flee frae eidol-worship!

15. As to discernin men I speak; judge ye what I am sayin.

16. The cup o' blessin, we bless, ist'na the sharin o' the blude o' Christ? The laif that we brek, ist'na the sharin o' the body o' Christ?

17. Seein that we, tho' mony, are a'ae laif—ae body; for we a' o' the ae laif partak.

18. Look again at Isra'el accord to the flesh: are-na they wha eat the sacrificées sharin wi' the altar?

19. Yet am I sayin that an eidol-sacrifice is any thing? or that an eidol is any thing?

20. On the contrar: "What things the nations sacrifice, to the demons do they sacrifice, and no to God!" and I wadna hae ye to become marrows wi' demons.

21. Ye canna be drinkin the Lord's cup, and demons' cup; ye canna be sharers o' the Lord's table, and demons' table.

22. Wad ye provoke the Lord to jealousie? Are we sterker than he?

23. A' things are alloo't, but a' things are-na for profit: a' things are alloo't, but a' things strengthen-na.

24. Lat nae ane be seekin allenarlie eftir his ain things; but that whilk is his neebor's.

25. Whatasae'er is sellt i' the merkits, eat; speirin-nane on behauff o' conscience.

26. "For the hail yirth is the Lord's, and a' its outcome!"

27. Gin ony o' the misbelievin bid ye, and ye think to gang, eat what- e'er is set afore ye, speirin-nane on behauff o' conscience.

28. But gin aiblins ane say t'ye, "This is a holie sacrifice!" eat-na, for the sake o' him wha said sae, and for conscience sake;

29. "Conscience," say I; no yere ain, but the ither's. For hoo soud my liberty be evened by anither man's conscience?

30. Gin I gratefully am partakin, why am I to be spoken again anent that whilk I am giean thanks ower?

31. Sae, gin ye be eatin, or drinkin, or doin ocht, be doin a' to the glorie o' God!

32. Be ye free frae offence, baith to Jews and to Greeks, and to the Kirk o' God.

33. Accordin as I too am pleasin a' men; no lookin for my ain gain, but the gain o' the mony, that they may be say't.

CHAPTER ELEVEN.

Men and weemen i' the worship o' the kirk.
The Lord's Supper.

BE ye like me, e'en as I follow Christ.

2. I gie ye praise that in a' things ye hae mind o' me; and e'en as I gied to ye the precepts, ye are haudin them siccar.

3. But I wad hae ye ken that the heid o' ilk man is Christ; and the heid o' a wummer is the man; and the heid o' Christ is God.

4. Ony man prayin or preachin, haein ocht on his head, pits his heid under shame;

5. But a wummer, prayin or preachin wi' her heid unveil't, pits her heid to shame: for it is as gin she had been shaven.

6. For gin a wummer disna cover hersel, lat her hair eke be shorn. But gin it be shamefu' in a wummer to be shorn or shaven, lat her be cover't.

7. For a man soudna cover his heid, inasmuckle as he is God's image and glorie; but the wummer is man's glorie.

8. For the man is no o' the wummer, but the wummer o' the man.

9. For naither was man made for
I. CORINTHIANS, XI.

The Lord's Supper.

24. And giean thanks, brak it, and said, "This is my body that is gien for you; this do, in memory o' me."

25. And in like manner the cup too, eftir the takin' o' supper, sayin', "This cup is the New Covenant in my blude: this div ye, e'en as aft as ye may drink o', for the remembrance o' me."

26. For, sae aften as ye may be eatin this laif, and drinkin this cup, ye are setting forth the death o' the Lord, till whatna time he may come.

27. Sae, whasoe'er may be eatin the laif, or drinkin the cup o' the Lord, in an unwordie way, sae be hauden for the body and the bluid o' the Lord.

28. But lat a man pit his sel to the test; and in sic manner lat him eat o' the laif, and drink o' the cup.

29. For he that is eatin and drinkin, is eatin and drinkin condemnation to himsel, gin he be-na 1 consecratin the body.

30. And sae thear are amang ye, a hantle weak and pinin, and a gude wheen fa' in asleep.

31. Gin, hoobie, we had been consecrating oorsels, we wadna i' that case hae been comin aneath condemnation.

32. But, bein brocht aneath judgment by the Lord, we are chasten't, that we soudna be condemned wi' the world.

33. And sae ye, my brethren, whan ye come thegither to eat, wait ye ane for anither.

34. Gin ony man hung'er, lat him eat at hame, leaft ye but come thegither for condemnation: and for the lave o', whan I come, I wull set a' in order.

---

1 V. 29. The sense is a wee obscure. It seems to mean, takin this and the 31st verse thegither, that we maun consecrate oorsels, gin we wad be acceptit; and gin we consecrate oorsels, the breid wull be consecrate, in our mind, and in oor mou'.
CHAPTIR TWAL:
A hantle mair o' the Corinthians had gifts than kent weel hoo to use them. We're a' pairs o' ae body.

NOO, anent the "spiritual," brethren, I wadna hae ye i' the mirk.
2. Ye weel ken that whan ye war Gentiles, ye war led to their dumb eilds, hooseo'er ye micht be airtit.
3. And sae, I gie ye to ken that name, speakin wi' God's Spirit, makes oot Jesus to be accurst; and that nae ane can mak oot Jesus to be Lord, but wi' the Holie Spirit.
4. But braidie-scatter't gifts thar are, yet the ae Spirit:
5. And braidie-scatter't service, yet the ae Lord:
6. And braidie-scatterin o' inward wark thar is; and aye the ae God, wha works inwardly a' things in a' men.
7. But to ilk ane is gien this schawin-forth o' the Spirit, to work whate'er is best.
8. For to ane is gien indeed throwwe the Spirit, a word o' inner wisdom; to anither, the word o' ootward knowledge, by the same Spirit.
9. To anither, faith, by the ae Spirit, but to anither gifts for healin by the same Spirit.
10. To anither ane, wunner-warks and poors; to anither, speakin for God; to anither, discernin o' spirits; to anither, mony tongues; but to anither, interpretin o' tongues.
11. But a' thir dae that ae and the self-same Spirit work inwardly, giean oot to ilk ane, allenarlie e'en as he wull.
12. For e'en as the body is ane, and has a hantle o' members, but a' the members o' the body, mony as they may be, are ae body, sae e'en in Christ.

13. For in ae Spirit, are we a' in ae body bapteez't, either Jews or Greeks, aither bond or free; and war made to a' drink o' ae Spirit.
14. For the body isna ae member, but mony.
15. Gin aiblins the fit soud say, "For that I am-na the haun, I am-na o' the body," is't than no o' the body?
16. And gin aiblins the lug soud say, "For that I am-na an ee, I am-na o' the body," is't than no o' the body?
17. Gin the hail o' the body war ee, whaur the hearin? or gin the hail hearin, whaur the smellin?
18. But noo, God plantit the members, ilk o' them, i' the body, juist as he pleased.
19. Gin hoobeit, a' had been ae member, whaur the body?
20. Whaur-as, noo, a hantle o' members—yet indeed but ae body.
21. Forby, the ee canna say to the haun, "I hae nae need o' you!" nor yet the heid to the feet, "I hae nae need o' you!"
22. But, on the contrar, muckle mair the members o' the body, seemin maist feckless, are needfu';
23. And the pairs o' the body we may deem to be wantin in honor, we pit on the mair honor; and oor less favor't pairs we buak the mair.
24. Whaur-as, oor wee-faur'd pairs are no in want. But God has mouldit the body well; giean mair tender care to the pair that was wantin.
25. That thar soud be nae sedition in the body; but the members hae like cares ane ower anither.
26. And gin ae member dree ill, a' the members dree wi'; or gin ae member be magnifyt, a' the members are blythe wi' it.
27. Noo, ye are Christ's body; and allenarlie, members:
28. Wham, indeed, God plantit i' the Kirk; first o'a' Apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; helpers; airtins; kinds o' tongues.
29. Are a' Apostles? a' prophets? a' teachers? a' workers o' ferlies?
30. Hae a' healin? Div a' speak wi' tongues? Div a' interpret?
31. But desire ye the chief gifts: and noo I airt ye till a better gate for't.

CHAPITIR THIRTEEN.
The praise o' love: it is like God, frae wham it comes, perfete!

GIN aiblins I be speakin wi' a' the tongues o' men and o' Angels, and want love, I am nae mair nor dunnerin brass, or a jinglin cymbal.
2. And gin I hae the gift o' foretellin, and ken a' hidden things, and a' lear; and gin I hae a' faith, sae as to gar mountains lit, but hae-na love, I am naaething.
3. And gin I morsel-oat a' I hae intil hungry mou's, and gie up my body to the lowin fire, and hae-na love, I am nane the better!
4. Love thees lang; is kind and cannie: love isna sellie, love vaunts-na itself, isna sune upliftit;
5. Demeans itself discreetly; seeks-na her ain: isna gien to flytin; casts nae by-ganes.
6. Joys-na ower wrang, but alang wi' truth is blythe:
7. Tholes a' things, lippens a' things, looks forrit to a' things, dress a' things.
8. Love bides aye. But gin thar be 1 foretellins, thay sal be endit; gin thar be tongues, thay sal cease; gin thar be lear, it sal dwine awa.
9. For we ken but in pairt, and we prophesie but in pairt.
10. But when the perfete is come, than a' that is in pairt sal be laid doon.
11. When I was a bairn, I spak like a bairn, I esteemed things like a bairn, I thocht like a bairn; but noo, bein a man, I hae putten-awa bairnlike things.

1. V. 8. Prophesies and foretellins sal cease; no that they warna gude and true, but that a' is come to pass, and they are-na needit.

12. For noo we see but in a keekin-gless, a' dimly; but than, clearly, face to face: noo, in pairt I ken; but than sal I ken, e'en as I mysel hae been clearly kent.
13. But noo, firm bides Faith, Hope, and Love, thir thrie; but Love is boonmaist o' them a'.

CHAPITIR FOURTEEN.
Speakin wi' tongues; and hoo the Kirk may hae a blessin oot o' thae.

FOLLOW ye aftir Love: yet be ye faim to hae spiritual gifts; but amang them a', that ye may prophesy.
2. For he that speaks wi' anither tongue, isna speakin to men, but to God; for nane listens to him; still, i' the Spirit he is speakin deep things.
3. But he that is prophesying is speakin to men for their strenthenin, exhortation, and comfort.
4. He that speaks wi' a tongue is strenthenin his sal; but he that prophesies is strenthenin the Kirk.
5. Hoobet, I desire ye to be speakin wi' tongues, but mair that ye may prophesy; for heigher is he that prophesies than he who speaks wi' tongues—unless indeed be ex- pone it, that the Kirk may be strenthened.
6. And noo, brethren, gin I come to ye speakin wi' tongues, what better sal ye be, gin I divna speak to ye aither by revelation, or wi' wisdom, or by preachin, or by exponin?
7. And sae e'en things no leevin, gien oot a soond, be it pipe or harp, gin they dinna mak a differ in the notes, hoo sal it be kent what is piped or what is harped?
8. For gin the trumpet gie a wafflin soond, wha wull pit on his graith for the fecht?
9. And sae ye, gin ye gie-na speech weel-kent, hoo sal it be up-ten? for ye wull be speakin to the air.
10. Thar may be an unco-mony

221
tongues in the world, and no ane wantin sense.

11. Gin than I ken-na the meanin o' the tongue, I sal be to him wha is speakin like ane fremd; and he that- is speakin, fremd to me.

12. Sin' than ye be faim to hae Spirit-gifts, seek that ye may be forrit in strenthenin the Kirk.

13. And sae, lat him wha speaks wi' a tongue, pray that he may expone it.

14. For gin I be prayin in a tongue, my spirit is prayin, but my mind isna nourish't.

15. What than? I wull pray in the spirit, but I wad eke pray wi' the understandin: I wull praise wi' the spirit, but I wad eke praise wi' the understandin!

16. Eels, gin aiblins ye be blessin i' the spirit, hoo sal he that is wantin in gifts say the "Amen," at yere giean o' thanks! sin' he kene-na what ye are sayin!

17. For ye are indeed giean thanks weel, but the ither isna strenthen't!

18. I gie thanks to God that I speak wi' tongues mair nor a' o' ye.

19. But in the Kirk I wad raither speak fyve words wi' my understandin, that I micht gie ither leir, than myriads o' words in a tongue!

20. Brethren, be-na bairns in yere understandinns: but in a' that is base be ye bairns, while in yere understandinns be ye men.

21. I' the Law than is putten-
doon, "Wi' ither tongues and ither lips, speak I to this folk; and no e'en sae wull they listen to me, says the Lord."

22. Sae that tongues are for a testimonie, no to that hae faith, but to thae wantin faith: but prophecie isna for thae that are wantin faith, but for thay wha hae faith.

23. For gin the hail Kirk come thegither for the ae thing, and a' be speakin wi' tongues, and thar come in men ungiftit, or wantin faith, wull they no report ye are wud?

24. But gin aiblins a' are prophesyin, and thar come in ane wantin faith, or wantin gifts, he is convictit by a'; he is pruv'd by a'; the secrets o' his heart are made kent;

25. And, fa'in doon on his face, he wull adore God, declarin that God is in ye indeed!

26. Hoo, than, is't, brethren? Whane'er ye come thegither, ilk ane has a psalm, or an exhortation, or a revelation, or a tongue, or an interpretation: lat a' things be dune for up-biggin.

27. Gin it be in a tongue, lat it be wi' twa, or at maist by thrie, by turns; and lat ane be exponin.

28. But gif thar be nane to ex-
pone, lat him be quate i' the kirk: to himsel lat him be speakin—and to God.

29. And as to the prophets, lat twa speak, or thrie, and lat the ither discern.

30. But gin aiblins to anither a revelation is made as he is sittin, lat the first be quate:

31. For ane by ane ye can a' prophesy, that a' may learn, and a' haec consolation.

32. And the spirits o' the prophets are ruled by the prophets.

33. For God isna a God o' tulzie, but o' peace; as in a' the kirks o' the saunts.

34. As for the wives, lat them be quate i' the kirks; for it isna allooc'd them to be speakin, but lat them be in submission, e'en as says the Law.

35. But gin they wad faim learn onything, lat them speir at their ain husbands at hame; for it isna seemly for a wife to be speakin i' the kirk.

36. Was't frae you that the word

---

1 V. 29. John Knox recommendit sic meet-
is "for prophesyin"; se he ca'd them: and that twa, or at maist thrie, only, sound speak, and then gang out, till the lave had pronounced on what they had brocht forrit. It wasna dune by our Scots folk; but was gude advice, name-
the-less.
I. CORINTHIANS, XV.

we shall rise.

37. Gin ony ane judge he is a prophet, or spiritual, lat him say that the things I am writing to ye are the Lord's words.

38. But gin ony ane is ignorant anent this, lat him bide ignorant.

39. Sae than, brethren, be faim to prophesy, and forbid-na to speak wi' tongues;

40. But lat a' things be dune decently and in order.

CHAPTIR FIFTEEN.

A' about the Risin-again: mair here nor in a' the lave o' the Word. It is ane o' Paul's special messages frae the Lord to us.

NOO, I mak kent t'ye, brethren, the Joyfu'-message whilk I mysel spak to ye, whilk eke ye received, and in whilk eke ye staun.

2. And throwe whilk ye are saved, gin ye hau siccar the word I tell't ye, in whilk I spak to ye the Joyfu'-message; gin ye hae-na lippened in vain!

3. For I deliver't to ye, the first thing, hoo that Christ dee't for oor sins, as said i' the Scriptures;

4. And that he was bury't; and that he has been raised—on the third day, as said the Scriptures;

5. And that he shawed his sel to Peter; eftir, to the Twal'.

6. Eftir that he shawed his sel to mair nor fyve hunder brethren at ance; the feck o' them remainin till noo, but a wheen are faun asleep.

7. Eftir that he shawed his sel to James; and eftir, to a' the Apostles;

8. And last o' a', as to the un timely birth—o'en to me!

9. For I am but the least o' the Apostles, wha am-na fit to be ca'd an Apostle, for that I persecutit the Kirk o' God.

10. But by God's favor I am what I am: and his favor to me wasna made vain; but, mair aboundin than they a' was I in toil: hoobeit, it wasna I, but God's favor wi' me.

11. Sae, gin it be I or they, sae we preach, and sae ye lippen'd.

12. Noo, gin Christ be proclaimed, as bein risen frae 'mang the deid, hoo say a wheen amang ye that "Thar is nae Risin-frae-the-deid?"

13. But, gin "Risin-frae-the-deid thar be nane," than no e'en Christ has been raised!

14. And gin Christ hasna been raised, oor preachin, at last, is vain; and yere believin is a' vain!

15. And mair: we are schaw'n to be false-witnesse o' God; for we burre witnesse o' God that he raised Christ; wham he raised-na, gin the deid be-na raised!

16. For gin the deid are-na raised, Christ raise-na!

17. And gin Christ raise-na, yere faith is a' in vain; ye are yet in yere sins!

18. And tha'e too, wha fell asleep in Christ, perish't!

19. Gin we hae but hopit in Christ in this life alone, we are o' a' men maist to be pitied!

20. But noo, Christ has been raised frae 'mang the deid, a first-frute o' thame wha are faun asleep!

21. For sin, throwe a man cam death, throwe a man comes eke the Risin-frae-the-deid.

22. For as in Adam a' de, sae in Christ sal a' be made leevin.

23. But ilk ane followin in his proper place: Christ, a first-frute; than they wha are Christ's, at his comin:

24. Eftirhauin, than the end—whane'er he delivers up the Kingdom to God the Father; whan a' rule an authoritie is dune awa' wi'.

25. For he maun rule till whatsna time as he has putten a' his faes aneath his feet.

26. The last fae that is dune awa' wi', is Death.

27. "For a' things are to be putten aneath his feet." But whaur
ane says, "A' things hae been putten aneath," it is plain that thar is an exception o' the Ane wha pat a' things aneath him.

28. But, whan a' things are putten aneath him, than sal the Son his sel become subject to the Ane wha made a' things subject to him—that the Godheid may be a' in a'!

29. Or else, what is for them that are bapteez'd for the degree? Gin the degree be-na raised ava, why than are they bapteez'd for the degree?

30. And why sould we be rinnin intil danger ilka 'oor?

31. Ilk day I am deein, brethren—by a' the gloryin whilk I hae ower you in Christ Jesus oor Lord!

32. Gif, like a man, I battled wi' wild beasts in Epheusus, what is the profit to me? Gin the degree are-na to be raised, "Lat us eat and drink! for the morn we dee!"

33. Dinna be taen-in: "I'll company corrupts gude conduct."

34. Wauken ye to soberness, richtously; and sin-na; for a hantle ken-na God. To yere shame speak I.

35. But some may speir, "Hoo are the degree to be raised? and in whatna body are they to appear?"

36. Doitit ane! what seed, e'en ye saw, isna made leevin till it de:

37. And what ye saw—no the bouk that sal come to be de ye saw—but a bare pickle: be it wheat, or ony o' the lave.

38. Hoobeit, God gies it a bouk e'en as he has been pleased; and to ilk o' the seeds its richt bouk.

39. A' flesh isna ae kind o' flesh; but ane is flesh o' men, anither flesh o' beasts, anither flesh o' fowls, and anither o' fishes.

40. And thar are heevenly bodies, and yirthly bodies. But ae kind o' glorye is the heevenly, and anither kind that o' the yirthly.

41. Thar is ae glorie o' the sun, and anither kind o' glorie o' the mune, and yet anither glorie o' the starns. Nay, thar is a differ, starn frae starn!

42. And sae i' the Risin-frae-the deid. It is sawn in corruption, it is raised in incorruption;

43. It is sawn in abasement, it is raised in glorie; it is sawn in fecklessness, it is raised in poorer.

44. It is sawn a naturall body, it is raised a spirittual body. Gin thar is a naturall body, thar is eke a spirittual body!

45. And sae it is putten doon, "The first man, Adam, becam a leevin bein." But the last Adam, a life-gian Spirit.

46. Hoobeit, the spiritual cam-na first, but the naturall: eftir that the spirittual:

47. The first man, o' the yirth, yirthly; the second man o' heeven.

48. Like as the yirthly ane, siclike are they that are yirthly; and like as the heevenly ane, siclike are they that are heevenly.

49. And e'en as we bure the likeness o' the yirthly ane, we sal e'en bear the likeness o' the heevenly ane.

50. But I say this, brethren, that flesh and blude cannna inherit God's Kingdom; nor is corruption to inherit holiness.

51. Tak tent! I unfauld to ye a riddle: We sanna a' fa' asleep; but a' sal be cheenged,

52. In a moment, in a blink, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet sal soond, and the deid sal be raised, incorruptible; and we'se be cheenged.

53. For this corruptible-man maun needs cleed itsel wi' incorruption, and this mortal cleed itsel wi' immortality.

54. Sae whane'er this corruptible has cleeedit itsel wi' incorruption, and this mortal has cleeedit itsel wi' immortality, than sal come aboot the word putten-doone, "Death was victoriously swallow'd up!"
55. "Whaur, O Death! is yere victory! Whaur, O Death, is yere sting?"

56. Noo, Death's sting is sin; and sin's poore the Law:

57. But God hae thanks, wha gies us victory throwe our Lord Jesus Christ!

58. Sae than, brethren beloved, be aye abiding, no to be moved; unco abounit i' the Lord's wark aye; kennis yere toil isna in vain in the Lord.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN.

Siller for the purr saunta. A wheen pairtin words and salutations.

Noo, anent the siller for the saunta, e'en as I gae orders to the Kirks o' Galatia, sae e'en do ye.

2. On the first day o' the week, lat ilk ane o' ye lay-by by himsel, gaitherin up, whatsoever he may be prosper't wi'; least, when I come, collections may be still gaun on.

3. But, when I come, wha'er ye may appruve, them wull I send wi' letters, to cairry yere bounty to Jerusalem.

4. And, gin it be needfu' that I gang as weel, they sal gang wi' me

5. And I wull come to ye, at sic-like time as I gang throwe Macedonia; for I div gang throwe Macedonia.

6. And wi' you, aibrins, I may stop, or e'en winter; and ye sal set me forrit on my journey.

7. For I divna desire to see ye e-noo, juist in passin; for I am in hope to stop a gey while wi' ye, gin the Lord wull.

8. But I wull stop in Ephesus till Pentecost;

9. For a door has been unsteekit for me, great and effectual; and thar are a hantle adversaries.

10. But gin Timothy come, see ye that he may be wi'ye without dreed; for, e'en as I, he is workin the Lord's wark.

11. Lat nae ane lichtlie him; but set him forrit in peace, sae as he may come to me; for I am lookin for him wi' the brethren.

12. Anent oor brither Apollos: I entreatit him muckle that he wad gang to ye wi' the brethren, but his mind wasna to gang noo; but he wull gang when he sal hae fit opportunitie.

13. Tak tent: haud ye fast i' the faith; be ye men; be sterk.

14. Lat a' things be carry't on in love.

15. And I entreat ye, brethren—ye ken the hoose o' Stephanus, a first-frute o' Greece, and that they hae set theirseels to a service o' the saunta—

16. That ye submit yersels to sic-like as thae, and to ilk ane that is helpin in the wark, and toilin.

17. But I am blythe ower the comin o' Stephanus and Fortunatus and Achaicus; for they made up for yere want.

18. For they gied rest to my spirit and yours. Be ye, than, ownin sic as thae.

19. The Kirks o' Asia salute ye. Aquila and Prisca, wi' the meetin in their hoose, salute ye muckle in the Lord.

20. A' the brethren salute ye. Salute ye ane anither wi' a sacred kiss.

21. The salutation o' me, Paul, wi' my ain bain.

22. Gin ony ane loe's-na the Lord, lat him be assured; 1 Maran-atha!

23. The tender love o' the Lord Jesus be wi'ye.

24. My love be wi'ye a', in Christ Jesus.

---

1 V. 22. Two Aramaic words, meanin "The Lord comes!" Paul left them in his Greek untranslatit, as we do i' the Scots. There is whiles an advantage in lettin a word sae bide: it sets folk spiririn and thinkin.
SECOND CORINTHIANS.

CHAP'TIR ANE.

About sorrows and fashes: and what for he didna come to them sooner.

PAUL, an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, by God's wull, and Timothy oor brither, to the Kirk o' God whilk is in Corinth, wi' a' the saunts i' the hail o' Greece:

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and quateness, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3. Blest be the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, the Bestower o' a' mercies, and the God o' a' comfort.

4. Wha comfortit us in a' oor troubles, that we may e'en be able to comfort thae wha are in trouble, by the comfort we oorsels are comfortit, in God.

5. For e'en as the sufferans-o'-Christ are unco mony wi' us, sae throwe Christ oor comfort is unco great.

6. But, gin we be in trouble, it is the mair for yere consolation and salvation, whilk is workin to yere tholin the same as we are e'en noo tholin; and oor hope is siccar on yere behauf. Or, gin ye be comfortit, it is a' for yere consolation and salvation.

7. Kennin, that as ye are partakers o' the sorrow, sae sal ye e'en be o' the comfort.

8. For we wadna hae ye unkennin, brethren, o' oor trouble that befel us i' the Province o' Asia: hoo that in an unco mainner, ayont oor poore, war we dung doon, sae that we e'en gied up the hope o' life.

9. But we cairry the sentence o' death in oorsels, that we soudna hae confidence in oorsels, but in God wha raises the deid.

10. Wha oot o' sae unco a death rescuit us, and wull rescue; on wham we hae turned oor hope that he wull again rescue.

11. Ye also, joinin thegither in prayer for us, that the gift granted to us by the prayers o' many, may be thankfully acknowledged.

12. For oor consolation is, the witness o' conscience, that in purity, and asauldness afore God, no in wisdom o' man, but by God's favor, we sae leev'd i' the world—and mair overflowin toward you.

13. For we are pittin doon nae ither things than what ye did read and own; and I trust ye wull aye own;

14. E'en as ye did e'en own us in a degree, that we war yere rejoicin, e'en as ye sal be oors i' the day o' the Lord Jesus.

15. Noo, in this mind I was gaun to come to ye, that ye might hae a second joy.

16. And to gang throwe you intil Macedonia; and to come back to ye, and by you to be set on forrit to Judea.

17. And this, was I gaun to do wi' levity o' mind? Or siccan things as I decide, dae I decide conform to the flesh, that wi' me thar sould be the "aye, aye!" or the "na, na."

18. But as God is true, oor word to ye isna "aye" or "na."

19. For God's Son, Jesus Christ, wha was proclaimed amang ye throwe us, throwe me, and Silas, and Timothy, wasna "aye" and "na," but it becam "aye" in him!

20. For, hoo mony God's promises may be, in him it is "aye," and in him it is "Amen," for the glory o' God throwe us.

21. But he wha makes us siccar (alang wi' you) for Christ, and wha anointit us, is God.

22. Wha eke seal't us for his sel,
and gied the first-frutes o' the Spirit in oor hearts.

23. But I tak God as a witness on my saul, that by way o' sparin ye, I keepit frae comin to Corinth.

24. It isna that we hae rule ower yere faith, but are raither helpers o' yere joy: for by yere faith ye are staunin.

CHAPTIR TWÁ.

Paul advises that the ill-deedie (and now repentin) member o' the Kirk be forgie'en.

BUT I determined to mysel, no to come t'ye again wi' sorrow.

2. For gin I mak ye wae, wha is he that is to mak me blythe, savin him that I mak wae?

3. And I wraite this vera thing, least when I cam I might hae had sorrow frae thei ower whom I soud hae had grund o' rejoicin; haein assurance anent ye a' that my joy is e'en the joy o' ye a'.

4. For ooten o' muckle fash and pain o' heart I wraite ye, wi' mony tears: no that ye soud be made wae, but that ye might come to ken the unco love I bear sae greatly t'ye.

5. Gin, than, ony ane has made sorrow, no to me has he made it; but—that I presc-na ower strangly on ye—in pairt to ye a'.

6. Enehuch for siccán a ane was the rebuke gien by the mony;

7. Sae that, on the contrar, it is raither for you to forgie and comfort; least by his unco sorrow sic a ane soud be swallow't up.

8. And sae I entreat ye to mak siccar your love to him;

9. For e'en to this end I wraite, sae as I soud hae prufe o' you; gin, in a' things, ye war obedient.

10. Noo, to ane ye forgie ocht, I too! for e'en I—that I hae forgien—whaur I forgie ocht—for your sakes I forgie it, afore Christ.

11. Sae as we be-na oot-matched wi' Sautan; for we are-na ignorant o' his deceit.

12. Forby, when I cam to Troas, for Christ's Joyfu'-message, and a door was unseekit to me in the Lord,

13. I had nae comfort in my saul, at no finding my brither Titus; but, biddin them God-speed, I gaed oot intil Macedonia;

14. But, to God be praise, wha at a' seasons gars us triumph in Christ, and makes the sweet savor o' his knowledge kent in ilk place throwe us.

15. That we are a sweet savor o' Christ to God, in theae that are saved, and in theae that are tint;

16. In thir, soothly, a savor oot o' death, death-like; but in thae, a savor oot o' life, life-like: and for thir things, wha is aqaul?

17. For we are-na, as a hantle are, corruptin the word o' God; but in a' seaulfulness, as o' God, in the sicht o' God, we speak o' Christ.

CHAPTIR THRE.

The New Covenant unco better that the auld.

ARE we to begin again to roose oorsels? Or hae we need, as a wheen ithers, o' letters o' commendation to ye, or frae ye?

2. Yere ain sels are oor letter, written in oor hearts, kent and read o' a' men:

3. Schawin versels that ye are a message o' Christ, delivert by us, inscritiv no wi' ink, but wi' Spirit o' the Leevin God; no in tablets o' stane, but in tablets, in hearts, o' flesh.
4. And siccan certaintie as this hae we, throwe Christ, toward God.
5. No as we war o'our ainsels able, sae as to reckon onything o' oorsels; but oor ability is o' God.
6. Wha e'en made us able to be messengers o' a new Covenant, no' letter, but o' Spirit; for the letter slays, but the Spirit maketh leevin.
7. But gin the message o' death, inscrit in stane, cam amid glorie, sae that the children o' Israël warna fu'able to look intil Moses' face, for the glorie o' his face—whilk glorie was to come till an end—
8. Hoo soundna rather the message o' the Spirit be in glorie!
9. For gin the message o' condemnation was in glorie, muckle mair the message o' richtouseness is fu' o'glorie.
10. For, in sooth, that whilk was made glorious had nae glorie in comparison, on account o' the greater glorie—
11. For gif that whilk was to pass awa cam wi' glorie, muckle mair that whilk is to bide has glorie!
12. Haein, than, siccan a hope, we use unco plainness o' speech;
13. And no like Moses, wha pat a veil ower his face, sae that the children o' Israël soudna fu'look to the end o' that whilk was passin awa.
14. But their minds war drumlie. For e'en to this vera day, the same veil remains at the readin o' the auld Covenant, no' taen awa; for to be taen awa in Christ.
15. But to this day, whan' Moses is read, a veil ower their hearts is lyin.
16. Hoobeit, whansoe'er a heart may turn toward the Lord, the veil is to be liftit aff.
17. Noo the Lord is the Spirit; and whaure'er the Lord's Spirit is thar is liberty.

---

18. But we a', wi' unveilt face, receivin and reflectin the glorie o' the Lord, are cheended intil the self-same image frae glorie on to glorie, as frae the Lord the Spirit.

CHAPTIR FOWR.
In whatna mairner he preached to them he expones in a aefault waj.

AND sae, haein this message, e'en as we had mercie gien us, we didna gie a' up;
2. But we disowned the secret things o' shame, and gang-na in deceit, nor in a twa fault way dealin wi' the word o' God; but by the schawin o' the truth, seekin favor o' ilk man's conscience i' the sicht o' God.
3. But gin aiblins oor Joyfu'-message has onyway come till ye veil't—to them wha war perishin it cam to be veil't;
4. In wham the god o' this world made drumlie their perceptions, leest they sow discern the brightness o' Christ's Joyfu'-message o' glorie, wha is the image o' God.
5. For we proclaim-na oor ain sels; but Christ Jesus as Lord, and oorsels as yere servitors for Jesus' sake.
6. For God, wha said, "Oot o' the mirk lat licht shine!" has licht-it-up oor hearts, to gie the licht o' the knowledge o' God i' the face o' Christ.
7. But we hae this treasur in veschels o' clay, that the owermasterin o' the pooper may be o' God, and no o' us.
8. On ilka side pressed sair, but no helpless; switherin, but no lackin escape;
9. Pursued, but no abandoned; dung doon, but no made an end o';
10. Aye bearin about i' the body the putten-to-deid o' Jesus; that sae e'en the life o' Jesus micht be schawn in oor body.
11. For evermair, we, the leevin, are deliver't up tae death, for Jesus'
II. CORINTHIANS, V.

sake, that Jesus' life might be shawn in our mortal flesh.
12. Sae that death is wrocht in us, inwardly; but life in you.
13. Hoobeit, we hae the same spirit o' faith, conform to what is putten-doan, "I had faith, thar-for spak I;" sae we hae faith, and thar-for spak:
14. Lippenin that he wha raised up the Lord Jesus, wull also wi' Jesus raise us, and wull present us wi' you.
15. For a' things are for yere sakes, sae that, wi' grace aboundin throws the mony, it may mak the praise to abound the mair, to the-glorie o' God.
16. Thar-for we are-na faint-hearrit; but e'en tho' oor ootward man dwines awa, yet oor inward man is ilka day renewin.
17. For the wee bit passin sorrow that we hae, is workin oot for us, aye mair and mair, a mair excellent and eternal wecht o' glorie;
18. Sae lang as we look-na for things seen, but for things unseen: for the seen things are but for a time, but the things no seen are for aye.

CHAPITIR FYVE.

Paul is siccar in his faith o' comin glorie: the body may fail, but we jit to a better hose!

FOR we ken, that gin aiblins oor yirdly shelin be taen doon, we hae a biggin o' God, a dwallin no made wi' hauns, eternal i' the Heevens.
2. For truly, in this behaft we maen, unco faim to hae spread ower us oor hose whilst is o' heeven;
3. Gin sae that bein covert, we sanne be fund nakit.
4. And vera truly, we that are i' the shelin dae maen, bein haunden doon: yet we are-na faim to be uncover't, but raither to cover oorsels ower; that what is mortal might be swallow't up in immortality.

5. Noo, he wha wrocht us oot for this vera thing is God, wha e'en gied to us the first-frutes o' the Spirit.
6. Hain gude heart at a' times; kennin that whiles bidin i' the body, we are awa frae the Lord;
7. For we are gaun on by faith, and no by oor ain een.
8. We hae gude heart nane-the-less, and are pleased raither to gang frae oot the body, and to come ben to the Lord!
9. And sae we are unco fain—be we at hame, or awa frae hame—to pleasur him.
10. For we maun a' be made seen at the bar o' Christ, that ilk ane may hae conform to the things dune i' the body, e'en as he has dune, be they gude or ill.
11. Kennin than the dreid o' the Lord, we perswad men; but to God we are weel-kent; and I wad hope that e'en in yere conscienties we hae been made weel-kent.
12. We dinna commend oorsels again to ye, but gie ye opportunity to commend us; that ye may hae something for thae wha boast o' their ootward things, and no in heart.
13. For e'en gin we war daft, it was for God; or are douce and grave, it is for you.
14. For Christ's love rinks us in; for we sae judge, that gin ane dee't for a', than in consequence a' dee't;
15. And he dee't for a', that the leevin sound leev' nae lang'er to their sels, but for him wha on their behaft dee't and raise again.
16. Sae that we, frae this oot, ken nae man, conform to the flesh; e'en gin we hae—conform to the flesh— kent the Messiah, yet noo, frae this oot, in siclike ken we him nae mair.
17. Sae than, gif ony man is in Christ, thar is a new creation! auld things hae gane by; lo! a' things are made new!
18. But they are a' o' God, wha reconcil't us to himsel throwe
II. CORINTHIANS, VII.

Christ, and gied to us the message o' reconciliation;
19. Hoo that God, in Christ, was reconcillin the world to his ain sel, no cooatin up to them their sins; and did pit in us the message o' the Reconciliation.
20. For Christ, than, are we Envoys, as gin God war entertain throwe us: we beseech, for Christ, "Be ye reconcilt to God!"
21. Him that kent nae sin has he made for us to be as sin; that ye micht come to be a richtousness o' God.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Paul and his marrows: faithfu' and leal.

Workin thegither wi' him, we entreat ye no to receive the tender-love o' God in vain!
2. For he says, "At a favorable time I heard ye, and in a day o' salvation I befrendit ye." Take tent! Noo a favorable time; lo! noo a day o' salvation!
3. Gies an occasion o' stumblin in onything, that oor ministarion be-na wytit:
4. But in a' things commendin oorSELs as God's servitors; in muckle patience, in dool, in needs, in strettis,
5. In stripes, in imprisonments, in bruizis, in toilins, in waukrifeness, in fastins,
6. In continence, in knowledge, in lang-tholin, in unco kindness, in the Holie Spirit, in asfauld love,
7. In the truthfu' word, in the poor o' God, by the wapins o' richtousness i' the richt haun and the left;
8. Throwe glorie and shame, throwe ill-report and gude-report, as imposters and yet asfauld;
9. As fremd and yet weel-kent;

as deein, and lo! we are leevin; as cloured, and no killed;
10. As in dool, yet aye rejoicin; as in poortith, yet makin mony rich; as baudin naething, yet baudin siccar a' things;
11. O Corinthians! oor smooth is open ty'e; oor heart is enlargid!
12. Ye are na held-in in us, but ye are held-in in yer ain affection.
13. Noo for a return to ye (as to my ain bairns I speak) be ye enlargid as weel!
14. Be-na yokin yer sels thrawartli wi' miebelievers; for whatna ane-ness hae holiness and iniquity; or hoo canlicht marrow wi' mirkness!
15. Or what-na ane-ness has Christ wi' Belial! or what is atween a believer and a mis-believer!
16. Or what-na ane-ness has a temple o' God wi' eidols? For ye are a temple o' God, wha is a leevin God; e'en as God said, "I will dwell in them, and gang in them, and wull be their God; and they sal be my folk.
17. "Whaur-for, come ye oot their mids, and be ye allenar," says the Lord, "and touch-na the unclean thing;"
18. "And I wull tak ye in, and be a Father to ye, and ye sal be to me for sons and dochters, says the Lord Almichty."

CHAPTIR SEEVER.

Sorrow that brings forth joy. Titus faunth the Corinthians true and leal.

Haein than thir promises, belov'd anes, lat us mak oorSELs free frae uncleanness o' flesh and saul, makin holiness perfete i' the fear o' God.
2. Gie us a place in yere hearts! We wrang'd nane, we corruptit nane, we defraudit nane!

1 V. 21. No that Christ was fund to hae sin, or was made a sinner; but rather that he was made a Sin-offeran for us. He taks oor sins; he gies us his richtousness: a blessed exchange for us!
2 V. 14. It is a pawkie plan o' Sautan to get a Christian to taigle his sel wi' a godless wife, or an ill-deedie pairnter in business, or an ungodlie callin!
II. CORINTHIANS, VIII

3. I am-na sayin this to wyte ye; for, as I hae said afore, ye are in oor hearts to leev and dee wi' you.

4. An unco freedom o' speech hae I t'ye; unco boastin hae I o' ye: I am fu' o' comfort, I am unco filled wi' joy in a' oor troubles.

5. For e'en when we cam intil Macedonia, oor flesh had nae rest, but in a' ways war we in a tulzie: ootwardlie fechts; inwardlie switherins.

6. But he wha comforts the humble anes, comfortit us, e'en God; by the comin o' Titus.

7. And no allenar by his comin, but by the comfort whaur-by he was comfortit on yere acount, whan tellin us o' yere fain desire, yere lamentation, yere zeal for me; sae that I rejoiced the mair.

8. For, gin e'en I made ye wae wi' the letter, I am-na regrettin, tho' I did regret; for I see that yon letter made ye wae—e'en gin it was but an 'oor.

9. But noo I am blythe—no that ye war made wae, but that ye war made wae to repentance; for ye war made was accordin to God, that ye micht hae damage frae us in naething.

10. For dool accordin to God works repentance to salvation; no to be regrettit. But the dool o' the world's-kind works oot death.

11. For behauly! this vera thing—the makin was accordin to God: what unco tentiness it wrocht in ye; what judgin o' yer sel's; what sair indignation, what fear, what fain desire, what zeal, what repayin! In a' things ye hae schawn yersels to be pure in this maitter.

12. And sae, e'en gin I wrate t'ye, it wasna for his sake that did the wrang, nor for his sake wha dreed the wrang, but that oor care on yere behauf micht be made kent t'ye, in God's sight.

13. And on this accout we hae been comfortit; but mair—we did rejoice uncolie i' the joy o' Titus, that his heart was refresh't by ye a'.

14. Sae, gin I hae boastit onywise o' you to him, I wasna made to be shamed; but as we tell't ye a' things truly, sae oor boastin afore Titus was seen to be true.

15. And his tender-love is a' the mair toward ye, whan he ca's to mind the obedience o' ye a', and hoo wi' fear and trimlin ye received him.

16. I joy than that in a' things I can lippen ye.

CHAPTER AUCHT.

The liberality o' the Macedonians made to steer up a like liberality wi' the Corinths. "Ae thing aye leads to anither."

FORBY, we mak kent t'ye, brethren, the favor o' God schawn to the Kirks o' Macedonia,

2. That in a great trial o' sorrow, the rowth o' their joy aboundit intil a rich liberality.

3. That, accordin to their poorer, aye e'en ayont their poorer, o' their ain accord,

4. They prayed us wi' entreaty, as to takin pairt in the giean to the saunta.

5. And far ayont oor hopes; giean their ain sels first to the Lord, and to us by God's wull.

6. Sae that we exhortit Titus, that as he had made a beginnin, he soud also perfete in you this favor as weel.

7. And sae, as in a' things ye abound, in faith, and speech, and knowledge, and diligence, and in love to us—ye micht abound too in this grace.

8. No by way o' commaun div I speak; but for pittin the quality o' yere love to the test, on accout o' others' readiness.

1 V. 5. The text is na vera clear: but sin' it wasna accordin to Paul's hopes, and he praises them sae muckle, it is best to tak it as gaun "ayont" his hopes, as we hae putten it doon here.
Hoo to lay by II. CORINTHIANS, IX. for the puir.

9. For ye understaun the love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, in that he made his sel puir for yere sakeis (tho' he was rich!) that ye, throwe his poortith, might be made rich.

10. And in this I gie ye my mind! for this is weel for you, wha indeed begude a year syne, no only to do, but also to wull.

11. And noo, perfete the doin' o't: that e'en accordin to the readiness to wull, thar may be the cairryin oot o' what ye hae.

12. For gin the readiness to wull is set forth accordin to what a man has, it is appruv'; and no accordin to what he has no.

13. For I dinna say that ither soud hae ease, and ye be burdened.

14. But by an aqual-sharin, yere rowth eno soud be for their want; that their rowth soud e'en come to be for yere want; that thar may be aquality.

15. E'en as it is putten doon, "He that gaither't the mair hae nane ower muckle, and he that gaither't the less lacked-na."

16. But God be praised, wha pat the same anxiety in the mind o' Titus anent ye.

17. For tho' he acceptit the exhortation, yet bein his sel unco diligent, he gaed till ye o' his ain wull.

18. And we joined wi' him the brither, whose praise in the word is throwe a' the Kirks.

19. And no only sae, but wha was deputit by the Kirks to travel wi' us in this behauf, whilk is ser'd by us to the Lord's glory, and to schaw oor zeal.

20. Haein it sae, that nae ane soud wyte us in this bounty we are awmoners o'.

21. Providin honorable things, baith in the sicht o' the Lord, and afore men.

22. And we hae jointly sent wi' them oor brither whim we hae testit in mony things, at a' times, and fund diligent; but noo, muckie mair sae, wi' the unco confidence he has toward ye.

23. Whether is it onything aboot Titus? A pairtnner o' mine, and a fellow-worker wi' you. Or aboot oor brethren? They are Apostles to the Kirks, and the glorie o' Christ.

24. Ye did schaw, tharfor, afore the Kirks, the exhibition o' yere love, and oor boastin on yere behauf tae them.

CHAPTIR NINE.

Mair aboot the siller for the saunta; and the blessin o' a liberal heart.

FOR anent the service for the saunta, it is needless for me to write to ye.

2. For I ken yere readiness o' mind, for whilk I roose ye afore them o' Macedonia, that Greece was ready a year syne; and yere zeal has steered up the lave.

3. But I hae sent the brethren, least oor boast on yere behauf soud be in vain in this respect; that, as I said, ye might be prepar't.

4. Least, gif aiblins Macedonians cam wi' me, and faund ye no ready, we (that we maun na be sayin "ye,"') soud be putten to shame i' this confidence.

5. Sae I thocht it necessar to exhort the brethren that they soud gang forrit till ye, and mak up afore-haun yere promised liberalitie, sae as it micht be ready, as a gift gien, and no a thing extortit.

6. But as tae this: He wha saws sparely, sae e'en reap sparely; and wha saws wi' blessins sae e'en reap wi' blessins.

7. Ilk ane sae, e'en as he had it in his heart; no o' sweeriness, nor o' necessity; for "God lo'es a cheerfu' giver."

8. But God has poore to mak a' favor to abound wi' unco rowth, toward ye! sae that in a' things and at a' times, haein a sort o' plenty o' yere ain, ye may abound mair and mair in a gude warks.
II. CORINTHIANS, X.

again ill stories.

9. As it is putten doon: "He dispomed abroad; He gied to the puir; His richtouness hides for aye."

10. Noo he wha gies "seed to the sawer, and breid for eatin," sal supply and mak lairge yere seed sawn, and mak to flourish the outcome o' yere richtounness;

11. In a' things bein made rich to a' liberality; whilk is workin oot praise to God.

12. For the cairryn-oot o' this public service isna only makin up for the lack o' the saunts, but is 1 frutefu' o' mony praises to God.

13. For that mony, throw we this workin-oot o' this service, are magnifyin God for the obedience o' yere confession to the word o' Christ, and for the seasaundness o' yere gifts for them and for a';

14. They their sels, wi' prayers on yere behauf, are unco fain, for the wonderfu' favor o' God to ye.

15. Praise be to God for his unmeasurable bounty!

CHAPTER TEN.

Paul defends his sel again clashes and ill-reports.

NOO I Paul, mysel, entreat ye by the meekness and caniness o' Christ; wha ootwardly to the een am lowly amang ye, but as awa am bauld toward ye;

2. I entreat, hoobeit, that bein present, I may-na be bauld wi' the bauldness I wad hae again a wheen wha look on us as gin we gaed accordin to the flesh.

3. For tho' we are walkin i' the flesh, we are-na battlin conform to the flesh.

4. For the wapins o' oor warfare are-na fleshly, but strang wi' God for dingin doon strangbauls.

5. Pu'in doon lofty thochts, and ilka heigh thing that wad heize up itself contrar to the knowledge o' God; and takin captive ilka motive intil subjection to Christ.

6. And haudin oorsels ready to avenge a' disobedience, whansae'er yere obedience may be seen.

7. Are ye lookin at things accordin to their appearance? Gin ony man thinks he is Christ's, lat him think thus again till his sel', that e'en as he is Christ's, see are we Christ's.

8. For gif indeed muckle mair I soud boast a wee o' oor poor, whilk the Lord ga'e for up-biggin, and no for dingin ye doon, I sanna be putten to shame.

9. That I maun-na seem as gin aiblins I wad gliff ye wi' a letter.

10. For "his letters," says ane, "are vera true, wechty, and o'poorer; but his bodily presence is waff, and his 2 discourse o' nae account!"

11. But lat siccan a ane ken, that o'whatna sort we are in oor letters when we are awa, sae sae we be whan present, in oor wark.

12. For we are-na bauld to even oorsels wi' some wha speak weel o' their sels. But they, measurin their sels amang their sels, and evenin their sels wi' their sels, are wantin in gude understaunin.

13. We, hoobeit, no as regairs unmeasur't things, wull boast oor sels; but by the rule God has measur't to us, to extend e'en to the lenth o' you.

14. For it isna as gin we rax't-na the lenth o' you, or war raxin oor sels unduly; for e'en the lenth o' you war we aforeshaun, wi' the Gude-word o' Christ.

15. No as boastin o' unmeasur't things, in ither men's labors; but haudin a hope by yere strang faith, o' bein enlariged accordin to oor measur, for mair abundance,

1 V. 12. Paul kent that, helpin the puir saunts, their ain hearts wad get a blessin! Tak tent o' this principle i' yere ain life!

3 V. 10. The Greeks war mair taen up wi' grain words than spiritual truths. And Paul, as we ken, dwalt on the main doctrines o' grace, and socht-na for praise on account of eloquence.
16. Intil the districts ayont ye, to cairry the Gude-word; and no by ony ithers' rule o' things made ready, to boast.
17. But wha may boast, lat him boast i' the Lord;
18. For it isna the ane that speaks weel o' his sel the Lord is pleased wi', but the ane the Lord speaks weel o'.

CHAPTRIR ELEENE.
The Corinthians sowd hae studen-up for Paul; but sein they lichtled him and his message, he huid e'en to tak his ain pairt. It isna boastin to speak the truth!

I WAD that ye coud thole me in a wee fulishness: indeed ye are tholin me.

2. For I am jealous ower ye wi' the jealousy o' God: for I espoused ye to ae husband, that I might gie ye ower as a pure maiden to Christ.
3. But I fear least in onywise, e'en as the serpent beguiled Eve wi' his craft, sae yere minds soond be airtit awa frae the aseafuldness and purity that are for Christ.
4. For gin ane comin brings ye anither Jesus, wham we brocht-na, or ye receive anither Spirit wham ye hae-na received, or anither Gude-word that ye hae-na welcomed—ye micht weel 2 thole him.
5. For I reckon to hae some nane short o' the maist pre-eminent Apostles.
6. But, gin I war 2 plain in my speech, yet no wantin in lear! but in a' ways we made it kent in a' things to you.
7. Or, did I do wrang in loutin doon mysel that ye micht be heiz't up, in gian to ye the Gude-word for nocht?

1V. 4. Some render it "me." But we take the sense to be, that gin some ane could bring them a better Saviour and a better salvation than Paul had brocht, they wad do weel to tak it.
2V. 6. Learned and eloquent as a Jew, but provincial and rustic i' the classic cities o' Greece.

8. I took frae ither kirks, takin fees frae them that I soud ser' you.
9. And bein wi' you, and wantin, I wasna a burden tae ony man; for my lack the brethren frae Macedonia made up. And in a' things I keepit mysel frae bein a burden, and sae wull I keep mysel!
10. E'en as the truth o' Christ is in me, i' this boastin I sanna be stoppit in a' the land o' Greece!
11. Whaurfor? for that I lo'e-yna? God kens better!
12. But, as I am doin, I wull do, that I may send aff occasion frae thae wha seek for occasion; that in what they glorie they be fund e'en as we are.
13. For sic men are fause apostles, deceitfu' workers, cheengin theirsels intil Apostles o' Christ.
14. And nae ferlie, for Sautan his sel is cheengin his sel intil an Angel o' licht.
15. Nae unco ferlie, than, gin his servants, too, are cheengin theirsels as servants o' richtouness: whose end sal be e'en as their works are.
16. And mair: lat nae ane tak me to be glaikit; but s'en sae, as a glaikit ane bid me come ben, that I too may boast mysel a wee.
17. What I am sayin I am-na sayin eftir the Lord; but as in havers, in this confidence o' boastin.
18. Sin' mony boast theirsels i' the flesh, I wull boast as weel.
19. For ye thole fules without mur-murin, bein wyss yoursels.
20. For ye thole ane wha is makin bondmen o' ye—wha is devoorin ye, wha is reivin frae ye—wha is magni-fyin his sel—wha is baffin ye on the face.
21. I speak by way o' lichtliean, as gin we war feckless. But whaur ony ane is bauld (I am speakin in a haverin way) I am bauld too!
22. "Hebrews" are they? I as wee! "Isra'ites" are they? I as wee!
23. "Servitors o' Christ" are
they? (As a'ne daft I am talkin,) I e'en mair! In toils mair abundant; in imprisonments muckle mair abundant; in stripes ayont coontin; in deaths aft.

24. Frae Jews, fyve times did I hae the "forty-save-ane."

25. Thrice was I cloured wi' rods; ance staned; thrice ship-wrack't; a day and a nicht hae I spent i' the deep:

26. In journeyins aft; in perils o' rivers; in perils o' robbers; in perils frae my ain folk; in perils 'mang frem'd folk; in perils i' the citie; in perils i' the desert; in perils i' the sea; in perils 'mang fause brethren.

27. In labor and distress; in watchins aft; in hung'er and drouch; in fastins aft; in cauld and nakitness.

28. And forby the things left oot, that whilk comes on me day by day —to tent a' the Kirks.

29. Wha is weak, and am-na I? Wha is bein snared, and am-na I burnin?

30. Gin a'ne maun boast, o' the things I am weak in wull I boast.

31. The God and Faither o' the Lord Jesus—he wha is blessed for aye—kene that I speak-na fausely.

32. In Damascus, the native Governor 'neath Aretas the king, was gairdin the citie o' the Damascenes to grip me.

33. And throwe a winnoch was I loutit doon in a creel 1 by the wa', and escapit his hauns.

CHAPITIR TWAL'.

He gets awa frae his toils and degradations, and speaks o' his revelations.

To boast may be needfu' tho' it has nae profit; sae I wull come to visions and revelations o' the Lord.

1 V. 33. Tak ye tent hoo Paul, effir a' his toils and dangers, ends wi' this o'bein smuggl't throws the wa' o' the citie, and loutit doon in a creel, as gin it was the bitterest degradation o' his life! Fair fa' the honest hauns that held the tow! maist like they war weemen!

2 V. 9. That is, Christ's poorer schaws its glorious and perfete wark i' the lives and character, and amid the human weaknesses o' his folk. It is better for a man to be putten into danger and trial, and susteneend throwe them a', than no to hae the experience ava!
eminent Apostles—e'en tho' I be naething!

12. Truly, the tokens o' an Apostle war wrocht amang ye, in a' lang-tholin; in signs, and ferlies, and poores.

13. For in whatna way war ye made inferior to the lave o' the Kirks, exceptin that I mysel wasna burdensome to ye? Forg'e me this wrang!

14. Tak tent! the third time I am baudin mysel in readiness to come to ye; naith'full wull I be burdensome; fer I seek-na yours, but you! For the bairns are na to be layin up gear for the parents, but the parents for the bairns.

15. For, unco blythely wull I spend and be a' spent in behalf o' yere sauls: tho', the mair I lo'e ye, the less am I lo'ed.

16. But, be it sae! I didna burden ye. But bein' pawkie, I tuik ye wi' guile!

17. Was thar ony ane o' thae I sent t'ye, by whom I tuik advantage o' ye?

18. I entreatit Titus, and I sent him wi' the brethren: surely Titus didna take advantage o' ye? Was't no i' the same spirit we walkit? was't no i' the same fit-prints?

19. Ye think, a' this time, we are makin apology t'ye! Afore God, in Christ, are we speakin. But a' things, beloved, are for yere up-biggin.

20. For I am in fear, least in ony way, haein' come, I soudna fin'in ye sic as I wad desire; and that I soud be fund o' you sic as ye 'wadna. Least by ony means strivin', envies, belchins o' wrath, diveesions, ill-speakings, swallins, tTZies, be fund.

21. Least, haein' come again, my God sal humble me amang ye, and I sae hae to mak maen ower mony o' thae wha had afore sinned, and hae-na repentit o' the uncleannesses, and lechery, and wantonness they war guilty o'.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

Paul speaks kindly to them about their sins. Ends wi' a blessing.

THIS third time am I come t'ye!

"At the mooth o' twa witnesses, or thrie, sal ilka word be made siccar!"

2. I tell't ye afore-haun, and div tell ye afore-haun, as gin I war w'ye the second time, to a' thae wha sinned, and to the lave—that gin I come again, I wull-na spare!

3. Sin' ye are seekin' a prufe o' Christ speakin' in me, who isna feckless toward ye, but is michy amang ye;

4. For he was crucify't oot o' weakness; nane-the-less he leaves wi' God's poore: for e'en we are weak in him, but we sal leave wi' him, oot o' God's poore toward ye.

5. Try yersel's, gin ye be i' the faith: pit yersel's to the prufe. Or ken ye-na o' yere ain sel's gin Jesus Christ be in you! except, aiblins, ye be outerlins.

6. But I trust ye sal ken we are na orts nor outerlins.

7. But we pray God ye do nae evil: no that we may seem acceptit, but that ye may do what is bonnie, e'en tho' we be as outerlins.

8. For we hae nae poore contrar to the truth, but only on the truth's side.

9. And we joy whane'er (we bein' weak) ye are strang: and for this thing we pray, yere perfection.

10. Sae for this reason I tell ye thir things, bein' absent: that bein' w'ye I mayna need to deal snelly, accordin to the poore the Lord ga' me—no for pu'in doon, but for up-biggin.

11. But noo i' the end, brethren, rejoicin', restore yersel's to order; be consoled; be o' the ae mind; leev'e theghether in peace; and the God o' love and peace sal be wi' ye!

12. Greet ye ane another wi' a sacred kiss.

13. A' the saunts salute ye.

14. The favor o' the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love o' God, and the indwallin' o' the Holie Spirit, be wi' ye a'!
GALATIANS.

CHAPTER ANE.

They had sune turned awa frae the plain faith. The Apostle challenges them for't.

PAUL, an Apostle, no frae men nor throwe men, but throwe Jesus Christ, and God the Father wha rais't him frae amang the deid,

2. And a' the brethren wi' me, to the Kirks o' Galatia:

3. The peace and gude favor o' God the Father t'ye, and oor Lord Jesus Christ,

4. Wha gied his sel for oor sins, that he micht deliver us oot o' this present warld, whilk is an ill ane; conform to the wull o' oor God and Father,

5. To wham be glorie for evir and evir. Amen!

6. I ferlie that thus sae sune ye are changin frae him wha perswadit ye intil Christ's love, intil some ither "Gude-word,"

7. Whilk indeed isna 1 anither Gude-word! But that are some wha are fashin ye, and wad damage the Gude-word o' Christ.

8. But 'en aibins it soud be we, or an Angel frae Heeven, wha soud bring ye anither Gude-word, differin frae what we gied t'ye, lat him be accurst'

9. As said we syne, sae say I noo again, Gin ony ane gies ye a "Gude-word" differin frae what ye gat, lat him be accurst'

10. For, at this time, div I perswad men, or dis God? Or div I seek to please men? If aye I am pleasin men, Christ's servant am-I-na!

11. For I mak kent t'ye, brethren, as to the Gude-work whilk was tell't by me; that it isna conform to men;

12. For naither did I frae man obteen it, nor was I learned it by man, but throwe a revealin o' Jesus Christ.

13. For ye heard, as anent my manner o' life at ae time, in Judaism, that in an unco way I persecutit the Kirk o' God, and laid it waste;

14. And was gaun on in Judaism aytont my marrows amang my ain folk, bein unco zealous for the traditions o' my forebears.

15. But wham it pleased God (wha took me sindry frae my mither's womb, and invitit me by his grace),

16. To reveal his Son in me, that I soud deliver the Gude-word regairdin him amang the heathen, at ance I coonsell't-na wi' flesh and blude,

17. Nor gaed I up to Jerusalem to them that war Apostles afore me; but I gaed awa intil Arabia, and cam back again to Damascus.

18. Than, thrie years eftir, I gaed up to Jerusalem, to get acquaint wi' Peter; and bade wi' him fifteen days.

19. But o' the lave o' the Apostles saw I nane, but James, the brither o' the Lord.

20. Noo, as to whatna things I am tellin ye, tent ye! In presence o' God, I am-na speakin fause.

21. And syne, I gaed intil the kintra o' Syria and Cilicia.

22. Forby, I wasna kent by face to the Kirks o' Judea whilk are in Christ.

23. Only they war hearin, "He wha was persecutin us at ae time, is noo preachin the Joyfu'-message o' the faith that ance he laid waste!"

24. And they magnifyt God in me.

237

1V. 7. Like the unwaukit claith that diana sort wi' an auld coat (Matt. ix. 16), some Jew war perswadin them to add Judaism to their faith in Christ. Hearin o't, Paul writes. We maunna lippen to warks; mair by token gin sic kind o' warks are nae mair enjoined.
CHAPITIR TWA.

He tells a weel ma'ir o' his life: nae doot the Galatians wad has been pleased to hae still ma'ir o'! We are "Galatians" orseels, that way!

THAN, in the coorse o' fourteen year, I gaed up again to Jerusalem, wi' Barnabas; takin Titus as weel.

2. And I gaed up by revelation; and laid afore them the Gude-word whilk I preach amang the nations; to their sels, privately, hoobeit, wi' thae o' distinction, least by ony means I sound run, or had been rinnin in vain.

3. And no e'en Titus, wha was wi' me, tho' he was a Greek, was compellit to be circumseceed.

4. And this was on accont o' fause brethren, secretly brocht in; wha cam in but to spy oot our liberty whilk we hae in Christ Jesus, that sae they sound bring us intil bondage;

5. To tham, no e'en for an 'oor, gied we place by siccan a submission; that the truth o' the Gude-word micht still bide wi' you.

6. But frea thae beld to be in repute—(whatsoe'er they war at ae time is naething to me, God accepts nae man's face)—thae o' repute addit naething to me.

7. But on the contrar, seein I was entrustit wi' the Gude-word to the uncircumseceion, e'en as Peter was to the circumseceion,

8. For he that wrocht in Peter for an apostleship o' the circumseceion, wrocht e'en in me for the heathen.

9. And seein the favor whilk was gien to me, James and Peter and John, wha war reputit pillars, gied to me and Barnabas a richt haun o' broitherhood, that we sound gang to the heathen, and they to the circumseceion.

10. Only, that we "soud be mindfu' o' the purp," as to whilk, I was e'en fu' o' zeal, this vera thing to do.

11. But when Peter cam to Antioch, I stude up again him to his face, for that he was to be wyttit.

12. For, afores certain anes cam frae James, he did eat wi' the Gentiles; but when they cam, he held back, and keepit his sel allenar, in fear o' thae o' the circumseceion.

13. And the lave war usin this doobleness wi' him, sae that e'en Barnabas was cairry't awa wi' their deceit.

14. But when I saw they warna gangin upricht i' the truth i' the Gude-word, quo' I to Peter afores them a', "Gin ye—bein a Jew to begin wi'—leewe in a Gentile way, and no in a Jewish mainner, hoo div ye gar Gentiles to be Judaizin?"

15. "We, Jews by natur, and no sinners frae amang Gentiles,

16. "Kennin that a man isna justifit' by warks o' Law, but only thrue faith in Christ Jesus, e'en we pit oor faith in Christ Jesus, that we sound be justifit' by faith in Christ, and no by warks o' Law: for by warks o' Law sal nae flesh be justifit'.

17. "Gin, hoobeit, tho' seekin for justification in Christ, e'en we orseels are fund sinners, is Christ thin a bringer-in o' sin? Far frae it!

18. "For gin I bigg up again whatna things I pu' doon, I schaw mysel to be guilty.

19. "For I, thrue Law, dee't to the Law, that I sound leewe to God!"

20. "I hae become crucify't wi' Christ: nay, I leewe allenar nae langer, but Christ is leevin in me; and the life I noo hae i' the flesh, I leewe i' the faith o' the Son o' God, wha lo'ed me, and gied his sel up on my behalf.

21. "I am-na settin aside the grace o' God; for gin thrue Law is richtousness, Christ maun hae dee't in vain!"

1 V. 2. Paul wad hae men o' note to see as he did i' the matter o' "The Law" amang the Gentiles. And it was better to convince them privately, than to expone to them the hale matter frae the beginnin, in public.
GALATIANS, III.  

15. Brethren! humanly am I speakin'; yet, a human covenant nae ane sets by, or adds to.
16. Noo, to Abra'm war the promises spoken, and to his Seed. It disna say, "And to seeds," as o' mony; but as o' ane, "And to thy Seed," whilk is Christ.
17. But say I, A covenant e'en afore made siccar by God, the Law (whilk eftir fourr hunner and threitty years cam in), disna pit by, that it sould mak the promise feckless!
18. For gin aiblins the inheritance is "by Law," it is nae langer "by promise;" but to Abra'm, by promise, had God bestown it.
19. Why, than, the "Law"? For the cause o' sin it was addit, till siccan a time as the Seed, to whom it was promised, soud come; whilk Law was gien in charge by messengers, at the haun o' a Mediator.
20. But the Mediator isna o' ane; but God is ane.
21. Was the Law, than, contrar to the promises o' God? Far frae it! for gin a law war gien that had poorer to gie life, truly, than, by Law soud hae been richtousness.
22. But the Scriptur stekit up a things as aneath sin, that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ soud be gien to thae that hae faith.
23. But afore faith cam, we war keepit siccar 'neath the Law; shut in to the faith aboot to be made kent.
24. Sae that the Law has been our bairn-keeper to tak us to Christ, that we soud, throwe faith, be declart richtous.
25. But, faith haein come, we are nae mair aneath a bairn-keeper.
26. For ye are a' sons o' God throwe the faith in Jesus Christ.

1 V. 20. A hantle mak the "Mediator" to be Moses: better Christ. God is on the as side, and mankind on the ither; and Christ comes atween, and makes peace and concord. And tent ye, Christ was at Sinai, cairryin on the hail wark there! (Acts vii. 38).
27. For ye, as mony as war baptize'zt into Christ, hae putten on Christ.

28. Thar is na to be said "Jew" nor "Greek"; thar is na to be said "bond" nor "free"; thar is na to be said "male" nor "female"; for a ye, thegither, are ane in Christ Jesus!

29. And, gin ye are Christ's, than are ye Abram's seed; and heirs, e'en as said the promise.

CHAPTER FIVR.

Christ the heir, makes us heirs wi' his sel; and delivers us frae the curse o' the Law.

BUT I say, sae long as the heir is a bairn, he differs na frae a servant, e'en tho' aiblins he be the laird o' a'.

2. But is aneth bairn-keepers and overseers, till the time set by the Faither.

3. Sae we too, when we war bairns, war keepit in bonds to the hornbuik o' the world:

4. But when the fu' time cam, God sent oot his Son, wha cam o' a wumman, wha cam aneath the Law,

5. That he might redeem them aneath the Law, sae that we could receive the adoption o' bairns.

6. And mair: for that ye are sons, God sent oot his Son's Spirit into our hearts, cryin oot, "Abba! Faither!"

7. Sae ye are nae mair a servant but a bairn; and gin a bairn, than an heir, throwe God.

8. But than, in sooth, no kennin God, ye war in bondage 'neath that war by natur nae gods:

9. Whaur-as noo, aftir that ye hae owned God (or raither been owned o' him), hoo is't that ye are gaun back again to the feckless and baggarlie beginnis, to whilk ye wad fain, ower again, be in bondage?

10. Ye precocely observe days, and months, and years.

11. I am fear't for ye, least by ony means I hae toiled for ye in vain!

12. Become ye as I; for that I too becam as yersels. Brethren, I entreat ye! In naething did ye wrang me!

13. But ye ken hoo that by reason o' a weakness i' the flesh, I preached to ye the Gude-word at the first,

14. And the temptation ye saw i' my flesh ye despised-na, nor scunner't it at! but took me to yere hearts as an Angel o' God; as Christ Jesus!

15. Whaur, than, is that happiness o' yours? For I witness t'ye that, gin it had been possible, yere ain wad ye hae pykit oot, and gien to me!

16. Sae noo, hae I gotten to be yere fae, for that I deal leal wi' ye!

17. They zealouslie seek ye, but no in a gude way; aye, they wad steek ye oot, that ye may seek eftir them!

18. But it is gude, for a gude thing to be socht eftir wi' zeal, at a' times, and no only when I am wi'ye.

19. My bairns! o' wham again I am in birth-pangs, till siccan a time as Christ be formed in you.

20. Aye! I could wiss to be wi' ye e-noo, and to change my speech; for I am in a swither aboot ye.

21. But tell me, ye that wad fain be 'neath the Law! div ye no hear the Law?

22. For it is putten-doon, "Abra'm had twa sons; ane by a bondmaid, and ane by a free wumman."

23. But the ane by the bondmaid, hoobeit, was born eftir the mainner o' the flesh; whauras the ane by the free wumman throwe a promise.

V. 3. "Elements" or "rudiments"—atween whilk the English swithers—are juist the first lesson o' ane's lear; or the hornbuik, or alphabet-caird o' knowledge.
Freedom o' love.

GALATIANS, V. Works o' the Spirit.

24. Whilk things, in sooth, are a parable. For thir weemen are twa covenants; ane frae Mount Sinai, bringin forth to bondage, whilk in sooth is Hagar.

25. For "Hagar" is Mount Sinai in Arabia; and is like to Jerusalem that noo is, and is in bondage wi' her bairns.

26. But the Jerusalem aboon is free, wha indeed is mither to us a'.

27. For it is putten-doon, "Rejoice ye barren that be-ness; brek oot intil shouts, ye that warms in birth-pangs! for mair are the bairns o' the desolat, than o' her that has the husband."

28. But we, brethren, everth the mairner o' Isaac, ar bairns o' the promise.

29. But, just as than, the ane born eftir the flesh persecutit the ane born eftir the Spirit, e'en sae is it e-noo.

30. But what says the Scripture? "Pit ye oot the bondmaid and her son; for in naegate sal the bairn o' the bondmaid inherit alang wi' the bairn o' the free."

31. Sae, brethren, we are-na the bondmaid's bairns, but the free wumman's!

CHAPTER FIVE.
The freedom o' love. The works o' the Spirit, and the works o' the flesh.

WI' freedom Christ macks us free: stauin ye steive than, and be-na haunden fast wi' ony yoke o' bondage!

2. Tak tent! I Paul say t'ye, that gin ye receive circumceesion, Christ wull profit ye nocht.

3. But I witness to ilk man again that receives circumceesion, that he is a bund debtor to the hail Law.

4. Ye are set aside frae Christ, ye wha wad be justify't i' the Law: ye are faun awa frae his favor.

5. For we throwe the Spirit, are fain waitin for the hope o' richtouness.

6. For in Christ Jesus, naither circumceesion coonts for ocht, nor uncircumceesion; but faith, wrocht inwardly by love.

7. Ye gaed weel; wha taiglit ye, that ye soudna complie wi' the truth?

8. This compliance wasna o' him wha ca'd ye!

9. A wee barm wull gang throwe the bail melder.

10. I am perswadit o' ye i' the Lord, that ye winna be thrawart; but he that faises ye sal dree his weird, whase'er he may aiblins be.

11. But I, brethren, gin I be preachin circumceesion, why am I sae persecutit? for than had the bogle o' the "Cross" been dune awa.

12. I wad they e'en wad cut aff their sels, that faib ye.

13. For ye war ca'd in freedom, brethren: but turn-na yere freedom intil an indulgence to the flesh, but raither by yere love ser' ye ane anither.

14. For the hail Law is bund up in ae word, this: "Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel!"

15. But gin ye ganst at and devoor ane anither, tak tent that ye be-na destroy't ane o' anither.


17. For the flesh has desires contrar to the Spirit, and the Spirit contrar to the flesh: for thir again ane anither are set; that ye 1 may-na do the things ye wad otherwise do!

18. But, gin than ye are led by the Spirit, ye are-na under the Law.

19. But plain to be seen are the works o' the flesh; whilk are adultery, lechery, wantonness,

20. Idolatry, divination, hatred, fa'in-oott, jealousy, wrath, factions, pairties,

1 V. 17. Tak ye-na this verse (as some folk div) as a wail o' helpless weakness! It is hope and joy! The Spirit wull gar ye triumph, sae that ye "may-na do" what yere ain human weakness and base desires wad hae ye do.

241
21. Envyins, bludeshed, drunkenness, revellins, and siclike things; as to whilk I tell ye plainly, e'en as I hae tell't ye afore, that they wha practissee sic things as thir sanna inherit God's kingdom.

22. But the frute o' the Spirit is love, happiness, peace, lang-tholin, canliness, gudeness, lealness,

23. Meekness, self-guidin; again sic things as thir thar is nae law!

24. But they wha are o' Christ Jesus, hae crucify't the flesh, wi' its desires and hankerins.

25. Gin we leve by the Spirit, by the Spirit lat us e'en be airtit.

26. Lat us no be seekin for vain glory; challengin ane anither, envyin ane anither.

CHAPTIR SAX.
Hoo to walk, and what to glory in.

BRETHREN, gin aiblins a man be betray't intil a faut, ye wha are spiritual recover sic a ane i' the spirit o' canliness; lookin to yersel, least ye yersel be tempit.

2. Uphaud ye ane anither's burdens, sae sae ye perform the Law o' Christ.

3. For gin a man thinks he is something, whan he is naething, he is but deceivin his sel in his ain mind.

4. But lat ilka man test his ain work; and than sal he hae pleasur in himsel allenarlie, and no in what anither thinks.

5. For ilka man sal cairry his ain back-burden.

6. None-the-less, lat him that is instructit i' the Word hae 1 fellowship wi' him that instructs, in a' gude things.

7. Dinna deceive yer sels; God isna to be mocked; for what a man saws, the same sall he shear;

8. For he that saws till his ain flesh, oot o' the flesh sal hae corruption; but he wha saws to the Spirit, oot o' the Spirit sal hae Life-for-aya.

9. But in doin what is weel, lat us no be cuisten-doon; for in due time we sal reap, gin we gie-na-up.

10. Sae than, e'en as we hae openins, lat us work what is gude toward a'men, special toward the hosehauld o' the Faith.

11. (See wi' sic muckle letters I wrate t'ye, wi' my ain haun!)

12. As monie as wad mak a bonnie schaw i' the flesh, they wad gar ye be circumcised, only that they souldna dree persecution for the Cross o' Christ.

13. For no e'en they wha hae become circumcised are thair sels observin the Law, but they wad hae ye circumcised, that they mitt boast thair sels in your flesh.

14. But wi' me, lat it be far frae boastin, gin it be-na in the cross o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, throwe wham the world to me is crucify't, and I to the world.

15. For in Christ Jesus naither circumcision is anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creation.

16. And till as mony as are gaun on by this rule, peace and mercy on them, and on the Isra'il o' God!

17. For the lave, lat nane gie me fash; for I bear aboot in my body the brands o' the Lord Jesus!

18. Oor Lord Jesus Christ's favor wi' yere spirit, brethren! Amen!

1 V. 6. Tho' Paul threeps that they wha declare the Gude-word soond hae their braid oot o' the Gude-word (1. Cor. ix. 14), he dis it in a modest way, that he micht-na seem to be seekin for his sel. Here he ca's it "fellowship."
EPHESIANS.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Paul uplifts God afore the Ephesians, and praises him for them, and for the graces they had.

PAUL, an Apostle o' Christ Jesus, throwe the wull o' God, to the saunts in Ephesus, and a' the leal anes in Christ Jesus:

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ!

3. Blessed aye, the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ; wha bless' us in a' spiritual blessin on Heigh in Christ!

4. Conform to his acceptin us in him afore the up-biggin o' the world, that we soud be pure and wyteless in his presence;

5. In love settin us oot aforehaun for adoption o' bairns, by Jesus Christ to himsel, conform to the gude-pleasur o' his wull,

6. To the praise o' the glorie o' his lovin-favor, wi' whilk he favored us in the Beloved Ane:

7. In wham we hae salvation throwe his blude, the passin-by o' offences, e'en as by the richness o' his favor;

8. Whilk he gar't to owerflow to us; in a' wisdom and skill,

9. Makin kent to us the hidden secret o' his wull, e'en by his gude guidin that he settled in his sel,

10. Lookin to the perfesteness o' the times, to bring thegither a' things for Christ o' things in heeven and things on yirth, a' in him;

11. In wham e'en we war made an inheritance, bein set oot aforehaun by the purpose o' him wha works a' things by the coonsel o' his ain mind.

12. That we soud be for the praise o' his glorie, wha war the first to lippen to Christ.

13. In wham ye too, hearin the leal word, the Gude-tidins o' yere salvation—in wham lippenin, war seal't wi' the Holie Spirit o' promise.

14. Wha is the 'arles o' oor inheritance, till the possession be a' redeemed, to the praise o' his glorie.

15. For the same cause, I too, hearin o' yere faith i' the Lord Jesus, and the love ye hae to a' the saunts,

16. Am aye giean thanks on yere accoont, namin ye ower i' my prayers.

17. That the God o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, the Faither o' glorie, may gie ye a spirit o' wisdom and revealin in his knowledge:

18. Yere inward een bein fu' o' licht, that ye may come to ken what the hope o' his blythe-bidden is, what his rich inheritance o' glorie i' the saunts,

19. And what the unmeasured vastness o' his poorer toward us wha hae faith, e'en as by the up haudin o' his micht.

20. Whilk he wrocht in Christ, raisin him frae 'mang the deid, and settin him doon amang a' the heeven-lies, at his ain richt-haun,

21. Far up aboon a' rule, and authoritie, and poorer, and dominion, and ilka name that is named, no alane i' this world, but eke in that that is to come:

22. And "pat a' things under his feet"; and gied him as heid ower a' things to the Kirk;

23. Whilk in sooth is his body, the completion o' him wha completes a' in a' for himsel.

1 V. 14. The Holie Spirit gies us here the same blessins as Aboon, only less o' them. We are here but broken vesichels, and canna hand muckle o' the Watir-o'. Life. But it is unco sweet; and gars us be drouthie for mair!
CHAPTRIR TWAR.  
_Salvation the gift o' God. The foundation o' the saints' hope._

AND you, brocht to life, war deid in offences and sins;

2. In whilk ye gaed in time by-past, e'en as in the way o' this world, conform to the ruler o' the poorer o' the air, the spirit noo workin' i' the bairns o' dourness;

3. Wi' wham e'en we oorsels hae oor life at ae time i' the fainness o' the flesh, obeyin' the craikins o' the flesh and o' the thocht; and war bairns o' wrath by natur, e'en as war the lave.

4. But God, plenteous in mercy, for his unco love he lo'ed us wi';

5. E'en tho' we war deid by oor sins, brocht us to life, alang wi' Christ (by tender-love are ye saved!);

6. And wi' him raised us up, and wi' him gied us heevenlie seats, in Christ Jesus;

7. That he might schaw i' the ages to come, the unco owergaun riches o' his love, in kindness to us in Christ Jesus;

8. For, it is by his love ye hae been saved, throwe faith; and this comes aboot, no frae you; it is God's free gift.

9. No frae warks, least ony ane soud boast;

10. For his ain wark are we oorsels; bein' formed in Christ Jesus for gude warks, whilk God afore made ready that we soud gang in them.

11. Sae, keep ye in mind, that at ae time ye, Gentiles i' yere flesh, named "Uncircumcised" by the sae-ca'd "Circumcision" in flesh, made wi' haun;

12. That ye war, at yon time staunin' sindry frae Christ; bein' fremd to the citizenship o' Isra'l, and bein' strangers as to the covenants o' promise, wantin' hope, and wantin God i' the world!

13. But e-noo, in Christ Jesus, ye wha war ance far-awa, are made sib, in the blude o' Christ.

14. For he is the makin' o' oor peace, wha made 1 baith to be aye, and dang doon the dividin'-wa';

15. Haisin, in his ain flesh, dune awa the hostility, and the law o' requirements in ordinances; that oot o' the twa he soud mak to his sel as new-formed man; makin' peace.

16. And soud reconcile them baith perfetely in ae body to God, throwe the cross; slayin' the hostility by the same:

17. And cam, and deliver't the Gude-word o' "Peace to you o' the far-awa, and peace to the nar at-haun."

18. For it is throwe him we hae the comin—in—we baith—i' the ae Spirit, to the Faither.

19. Sae than, ye are nae mair frem'd-folk and gangrel; but are marrows o' the saints, and are o' the hoosehauld o' God.

20. Bein up-biggit on the funderation o' the Apostles and Prophets; Christ Jesus his sel the heid cornerstane:

21. In wham the hail edifice i' the way o' bein fitly laid thegither, is growin' to be a holie Temple o' the Lord.

22. In wham ye too are bein biggit thegither, intil a dwallin-place o' God i' the Spirit.

CHAPTRIR THRIE.

_The groan secret oot, that the nations war a' welcome to Salvation! The wondrous Love o' Christ._

AND sae I, Paul, prisoner o' Christ Jesus for you the Gentiles,

2. Gin at least ye hae heard o' the stewardship o' the grace o' God whilk was gien to me for you,

---

1 V. 14. Baith Jews and Gentiles: ane in Christ, and sae at peace atween theirseals; and the dividin-wa', like that i' the Temple, dungi doon—noo that they baith ser' the same Saviour.

2 V. 15. The Jews and the Gentiles.

3 V. 17. Paul has thir bonnie words, like a bit o' a sweet sang frae Esaiah (liv. 19).
3. That by way o' revelation was made plain to me the hidden secret, e'en as I wraite afore in a wee wheen words,
4. As to whilk ye may be able, by readin, to ken my knowledge o' the hidden secret o' Christ,
5. Whilk knowledge in the generations by-gane wasna made kent to the sons o' men, as it is noo made plain to his holie Apostles and Prophete i' the Spirit—
6. That they o' the nations soud be aualghe heads, and aualghe body, and aualghe pauntners i' the promise in Christ Jesus, by the Gude-word.
7. O' whilk I was made a servitor, as by the free gift o' the tender-love o' God, gien to me, conform to the workin o' his pooper:
8. To me, wee'er than the wee-est o' saunts, was gien this gude-favor, to bring to the nations the Gude-word o' the uncoontit riches o' Christ.
9. And to gie licht as to what is the fellowship o' the secret quaisiten that has been hid awa frae the former time in God, wha made a' things.
10. Sae that noo might be made kent to heevenlie poowers and authorities throwe the Kirk, the mony-fauld wisdom o' God.
11. Conform to the ever-bidin purpose he settled in Christ Jesus oor Lord,
12. In wham we hae baunliness o' speech, and o' approach, wi' assurance, throwe oor faith in him.
13. Sae, desire I, that ye swarf-na at my sorrows for you: whilk indeed are your glorie.
14. And for this I bend my knees to the Faither,
15. Frae wham the hail family i' heeven and yirth is named,
16. That he wad gie you, conform to the richness o' his glorie, wi' a poore to hae micht i' the inwart man,

17. To hae Christ dwallin throwe faith i' yere hearts;
18. Rutit and grundit, that ye may be strang to grip siccar, wi' a' ither saunts, what is the breidth and lenth, and heigness and deepness,
19. And to come to ken the love o' Christ, ayont a' tellin, that ye may be fu' wi' the fu'ness o' God.
20. Noo, to him wha has poower ower a' things, to do uncolie and unmeasurably abone a' things we can seek or think, e'en as his poower works in us,
21. To him be the glorie, in the Kirk, and in Christ Jesus, to a' generations, and ages upon ages! Amen.

CHAPITIR FOWR.

God's gifts to men: lat men sin nae mair.

1 ENTREAT ye, than, I the Lord's bondman, to gang on in mainer wordie o' the bode wi' whilk ye are biddin;
2. Wi' a' laichness o' mind and caniness; tholin lang, forbearin wi' ane anither,
3. In love takin tent to keep the ane-ness o' the Spirit, i' the union-bond o' peace.
4. Ae body; ae Spirit; e'en as ye war bidden in ae hope o' yere biddin;
5. Ae Lord; ae faith; ae baptsein;
6. Ae God and Faither o' us a'; he wha is owr a', and throwe a', and in a'.
7. But to ilk o' us, lovin favor was gien, conform to the measur o' Christ's free-gift.
8. Sae, says he, “Gaun up on heigh, he made captivitie captive itself', and gied gifts to men.”
9. But this, “He gaed up,” what is't, save that he ek gaed doon intil the under-pairte o' the yirth?
10. The ane wha gaed doon, is the ane wha gaed up, far aboon the heevens, that he micht hae a' things.
11. And he gied some for Apostles,
and some for prophets, and some for preachers, and some for pastors and teachers;
12. To fit the sauntis for the wark o' service, for the up-biggin o' the body o' Christ.
13. Till we a' win forrit to the ane-ness o' the faith, and o' the perfete knowledge o' the Son o' God, intil man's estate, intil the measur o' the height o' the perfeteness o' Christ.
14. That nae mair soud we be barns, tose't as on billows, and blawn aboot wi' ilka swee o' doctrine, i' the pawkiness o' men, in knaverie; etfir the wiles o' wrang.
15. But, speakin truth in love, soud grow intil him in a' things, wha is the heid, Christ.
16. Oot o' wham a' the body, fitly marrowed thegither, and made siccar by ilka joint supplying, e'en as by the inner workin i' the measur o' ilka pairt, makes siccar the growin o' the body, intil an up-biggin o' itsel in love.
17. This, than, I say i' the Lord, that ye soud nae langer walk conform to the Gentiles' walkin, i' the vänness o' their mind.
18. Wi' their understaunn made mirk, frem'd frae the life o' God, throwe ignorance whilk is in them, throwe want o' feelin i' their heart;
19. Wha indeed hae gotten to be by a' feelin, gien theirsels up wi' wantonness to the workin a' uncleanness wi' greed.
20. But ye didna in siccan a way learn Christ.
21. Gin at least ye heard him, and war instructit in him, as the truth is in Jesus,
22. That sae soud ye cast aff, as to yere past doing, the "auld" man, wha corruptit his sel conform to deceitfu' desires;
23. And be made young again, i' the spirit o' yere mind,
24. And soud pit on the "new" man, wha etfir God is creatit in richtouness and holines o' truth.

25. Sae, tharfor, castin aff what is fause, "Speak ye truth ilk man wi' his neebor," for that we are pairs ane o' anither.
26. Be ye vexed, and yet sin-na; lat-na the sun gang doon on yere anger;
27. And gie nae fit-stance tae Sautan.
28. Lat him that staw steal nae mair, but rather toilin, workin wi' his ain hauns at what is fit, that he may hae to gie to him wha has-na.
29. Lat nae 1 vilenes gae forth frae yere mou'; but rather what is gude, aritt to the up-biggin o' the needs, and to the gien o' grace, for them that hear.
30. And dinn na mak the Spirit grieve, in wham ye war sealed to the day o' redemption.
31. A' bitterness, and wrath, and ill-wull, and stour, and miscalin, lat them be taen awa frae ye, wi' a' malice;
32. And be ye gracious ane till anither, e'en as God in Christ forga'e you.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The Kirk to walk in purity wi' Christ: a gude wife a likeness o' it.

BE ye than taking pattern etfir God, as barns belov'd;
2. And walk in love, e'en as Christ lo'ed you, and gied his sel up on yere behauf, an offeran and a sacrificie to God, for an odour o' sweetness.
3. But lecherie, and a' uncleanness, or selliness, lat-na sic be e'en named amang ye; e'en as besfits saunts;
4. Nor shamelessness, nor glaikit speech, nor levity; whilk are-na fittin; but rather gien o' thanks.

1 V. 29. Maist folk hae ye to learn that the mouth sirtis the heart; and as a man's words are, sae the man sune gets to be.
5. For this ye ken, and tak tent! that nae lecherous ane, nor unclean person, nor covetous man (who is an idol-worshipper!) has ony pairt i' the kingdom o' Christ and God.

6. Be-na cairry't awa wi' a sough o' words; for it is for thir things the wrath o' God sae come doon on the bairns o' thrawwartness.

7. Dinna then become pairtners wi' them!

8. For ye wur at ae time mirkness; but noo are ye licht, i' the Lord; gang ye on as bairns o' the licht!

9. For the ootcome o' the licht is in a' gudeness, and uprichtness, and truth;

10. Puttin to the prufe what is weel-pleasin to the Lord.

11. And be-na ye marrows i' the shamefu' warks o' mirkness, but rather challenge them.

12. For it is shamefu' e'en to speak o' the things wrocht by them hidlins.

13. But a' things when they are challenged, are made plain by the licht: for that whilk makes things plain is "licht."

14. Sae it is 'said, "Wauken, ye sleepin ane! and rise frae 'mang the deid, and Christ sae shine on ye!"

15. Tak ye tent, than, to walk cannilie; no as glaikit, but as wyss;

16. And win ye for yersels the opportunity; for the days are ill.

17. And sae, be-na ye simple, but be ye discernin as to what the Lord's wull may be,

18. And be-na ye fou' wi' wine, in whilk is riot; but be ye fou' o' the Spirit;

19. Speakin anang yersels in psalms and hymns, and godly sangs, liltin and makin music i' yere hearts to the Lord,

20. At a' times giean thanks for a' things, i' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, to yere God and Faither.

21. Pittin yersels aneath ane anither, in the fear o' Christ.

22. Lat wives be in submission to their ain husbands, as to the Lord:

23. For the husband is the wife's heid, as Christ is the Kirk's heid; and he is the Saviour o' the body.

24. And, as the Kirk submits hertsel to Christ, sae the wives, in a things, to their husbands.

25. Ye husbands, lo'e yere wives, e'en as Christ lo'ed the Kirk, and gied himsel up in her behauf.

26. That he micht sanctify it, makin it clean wi' the weshin o' watir by the word,

27. That he micht present, a'—glorious, to himsel, the Kirk, no wi' a blotch or a runkle, or ocht sic thing, but that she should be holie and faultless.

28. Sae soud husbands lo'e their wives as their ain bodies. He that lo'es his ain wife lo'es his sel.

29. For nae ane at any time scunners at his ain flesh, but nourices and cherishes it, e'en as Christ dis the Kirk.

30. For, pairts are we o' his ain body.

31. "For sae sal a man lea' his faither and mither, and be ane wi' his wife; and the twa sal become ae flesh."

32. This is a great riddle; but I speak in regard to Christ, and in regard to the Kirk.

33. Nane-the-less be ye, ilk ane o' ye, sae lo'ein his wife, e'en as his ain sel; and the wife, hae reverence for her husband.

CHAPITIR SAX.

Bairns, and servants, and maisters: and they a' need the prufe-coat o' Faith.

YE bairns, be dutifu' to yere ain parents, i' the Lord; for this is bonnie.

2. "Honor thy faither and thy
mither" (whilk indeed is the first comman wi' a promise);

3. "That it may gan weel w'ye, and ye may leave lang on the yirth."

4. And ye faithers, dinna waken-up ang'er in yere bairn; but rear them up i' the chastenin and admonishin o' the Lord.

5. Ye servants, mind yere maisters i' the flesh, wi' reverence and trimlin, in ausefulness o' yere heart, as to Christ!

6. No by way o'ee-service, as manpleasers, but as Christ's servitors, doin God's wull fre the heart;

7. Wi' gude-wull doin service, as to the Lord, and no to men:

8. Kennin that ilk ane, whatna gude he may dae, e'en that sal he hae back again fre the Lord—gin he be bond or free.

9. And ye, maisters, div ye the like things to them, kennin that their Maister and your's is in Heeven; and thar is nae respectin o' faces wi' him.

10. And for the lave o't—Be ye strang i' the Lord, and i' the poorer o' his might!

11. Pit ye on the hail graith o' God, sae as ye may be fit to staun again the wiles o' Sautan.

12. For oor struggle isna again flesh and blude, but again the poorers, again the authorities, again the world-rulers o' this mirkness; again the spiritual hosts o' ill i' the lift.

13. Whaur-for tak to ye the hail graith o' God, that ye be strang to withstaun i' the ill day; and, haein dune a' things, to staun.

14. And sae staun! beltit about the mids wi' truth, and haein put on the prufe-coat o' holiness;

15. And shod yere feet wi' the readiness o' the Gude-word o' Peace;

16. And wi' a', takin up the shield o' faith, in whilk ye hae poore to kep a' the lowin shafts o' the Ill-ane.

17. And the heid-piece o' salvation tak ye; and the sword o' the Spirit, whilk is whatsoe'er God has spoken.

18. Wi' a' prayer and pleadin, prayin aye i' the Spirit; and watchin i' the same, wi' a' tholin and pleadin, for a' the saunts;

19. And for me, that to me soud be gien utterance, that wi' freedom o' speech I may mak kent the Guedwore;

20. For sake o' while I am like an ambassador in a chain; that in sic behauf I may be bauld to speak, as I soud speak.

21. But that ye may ken things reigardin me, Tythicus, the weel-lo'ed brither, and leal servant o' the Lord, wull mak a' things kent t'ye:

22. Wham I send to ye for this vera purpose, that ye might come to ken oor state, and that he might console yere hearts.

23. Peace to the brethren, and love, wi' faith, from God the Faither and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24. Tender love be wi' a' thae that lo'e oor Lord Jesus Christ wi' lealness!
PHILIPPIANS.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Some preached, for that they war leal to Christ; and some oot o' thrawartness.

PAUL and Timothy, servitors o' Christ Jesus, to a' the saunta in Christ Jesus that are in Philippi, wi' the bishops and deacons:

2. Tender love to you, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3. I am aye gian thanks to my God, at ilka thocht o' you,
4. Aye in ilka prayer o' mine for ye a', makin request for ye wi' joy,
5. On account o' yer 1fellowship i' the Gude-word, frae the first day till noo:
6. Bein siccar i' this vera thing, that he wha begude a gude wark in ye, wull perfete it to the day o' Christ Jesus.
7. E'en as it is richt in me to hae siccan a regard o' ye; for that ye hae me i' yer heart, baith i' my bonds, and i' the defendin and makin steive the Gude-word; ye a' bein marrows wi' me o' my grace.
8. For God is witness to me, hoo fain I am for ye a', in the tender mercies o' Jesus Christ.
9. And for this I pray, brethren, that yer love yet mair and mair may exceed, in fu' knowledge and discernment;
10. To the end ye may pit to the test the things that are gude, that ye may be holie and fautless to the day o' Christ;
11. Bein fu' o' the frute o' richtlessness; that whilk is throwe Jesus Christ, to the glorie and praise o' God.

12. Noo, I wad hae ye to ken, brethren, that the things regairdin me hae rather come out to the advantage o' the Gude-word.
13. Sae as my bonds hae been made kent i' the hail Heid-quarters, and to a' the lave.
14. And sae as that the feck o' the brethren, baerin been heartened i' the Lord by my bonds, are mair uncolie bauld, fearless speakin the word o' God.
15. A wheen, indeed, oot o' envy and strife, and some oot o' gude-wull, are preachin Christ.
16. Thir, oot o' love, kennin I am set for the defence o' the Gude-word;
17. But thae, oot o' thrawartness are settin oot Christ; no in lealness; thinkin to mak fash to me i' my bonds.
18. Weel what? Juist this, that in ony way, gin it be in deceit or in truth, Christ is proclaimed; and I in this am blythe, and wull be blythe!
19. For I ken that this sal turn a' to my 2salvation, throwe yer prayers, and the gian to me o' the Spirit o' Jesus Christ;
20. Conform to my fain lookin-forrit, and my hope, that in naething sal I be putten to shame; but that wi' a' freeness o' speech, as aye, sae e'en noo, Christ sal be glorify't i' my body, gin it be by life, or by death.
21. For to me, leevin is Christ; and deein is treasure.
22. But, gin leevin i' the flesh is Christ, this to me is a reward o' toil; and whatna I sal wale I say-na,
23. But I am hauden atwixt the twa; haein an unco fainness to be

1 V. 5. "Fellowship" in supplyin his needs, for the gospel's sake (chap. iv. 14, 15), and in their gian o' their substance for the puir saunta at Jerusalem.

2 V. 19. No that he needit thir trials in order to be saved, nor that he judged they wad bring him freedom frae prison; but that thir things war a' ripenin his graces, and makin him mair like Christ.
looten awa, and to be wi' Christ, for
this is far, far better!
24. But to be bidin' i' the flesh is
mair necessar for yere sakes.
25. And haein o' this been made
siccar, I lippen that I sal bide, and
stay ahint wi' ye a', for the up-biggin
o' yere faith, and for yere joy.
26. That yere glorying may be the
mair in Christ Jesus—as to me—by
my presence wi' ye again.
27. Only, in siccar a way as is
wordie o' the Gude-word, airt yere
lives; sae that gin I come and see
ye, or gin I be frae ye, I may be
hearin o' ye, that ye staun siccar i'  
ae spirit, wi' as saul joined thee'gither,
for the faith o' the Gude-word;
28. And no bein fley't in ony
thing by thee opposin their sels:
whilk, in truth, is for them a token
o' destruction, but o' yere salvation;
and this frae God.
29. For, to you was gien as a
favor, no only to be haein faith in
Christ, but eke in his behaup to be
sufferan:
30. Haein the like tulzie that ye
saw in me, and noo hear in me.

CHAPTIR TWA.
Christ's humbleness. Timothy and anither
sent to them.

GIN, than, thar is ony comfort in
Christ, gin ony consolation o' 
love, gin ony fellowship o' the Spirit,
gin ony tender-mercies and compassions,
2. Croon ye my joy, that ye a'
may regaird the same things, and hae
the same love; a' ane in saul, the ae
thing regairdin.
3. Doin naething for strife's sake,
nor for pride's sake; but in humble-
ness o' mind, lookin aye on ane-
anither as bein better nor yersels.
4. No lookin on yere ain things
allenarlie, but ilk ake at anither's
things.
5. That whilk ye in Christ Jesus
prefer, that prefer ye in yersels;
6. Wha bein originally i' the form

"'en as Christ was.
o' God, thocht it no a thing to seize
on, to be coontit aqual wi' God;
7. But humbl't his sel, takin a
servant's form, and comin in man's
likeness; and, bein fund in condition
as a man,
8. He made his sel lowly, becomin
obedient 'en till the deid; aye, death
on a cross.
9. Whaur-for God upliftit him far
on heigh, and gied him a name whilk
is aboon ilka name;
10. That i' the name o' Jesus, ilka
knee soud lout, o' thae in heeven,
and thae on the yirth, and aneath
the yirth,
11. And ilka tongue soud own
that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the
grorie o' God the Faither.
12. Sae, than, beloved, 'en as ye
hae aye obey't, no in my presence
alone, but noo muckle mair when I
am awa, work ye oot yere ain salva-
tion wi' fear an trim'lin.
13. For God it is wha is workin
in ye, baith the ettlin and the inward
doin conform to his gude pleasur.
14. And do a' things free frae
yammerin, and argle-barglin,
15. That ye may become fautless
and innocent bairns o' God, wyteless
amang a thrawart and perverse
generation; amang whom schaw yer-
sels asichts i' the world.
16. Gie an oot the word o' life, for
a grorie to me i' the day o' Christ,
that I didna rin in vain, nor tol in
vain.
17. But, gin I am 'en to be offer't
on the sacrificce and service o' yere
faith, I am blythe in mysel and
blythe wi' you.
18. And—as to the same thing—
be ye blythe in yersels and blythe
wi' me!
19. But I am lookin forrit i' the

1 V. 5. The text's no clear; it may either
be, "What'er ye prefer as Christians,
that prefer ye!" or "What'er Christ
prefers [or whatever ye admire in Christ],
that prefer ye!"
2 V. 9. Is this the name in Ex. iii. 14?
PHILIPPIANS, III.

Paul's humility.

3. For we are the circumcision, 
wha worship in God's Spirit, and 
glorie in Christ Jesus, and pit nae 
stress on things o' the flesh.

4. E'en though I mysel might lay 
some stress e'en on things o' the 
flesh. Gin ony ither man thinks to 
hae ocht to glorie o' in the flesh, I 
yet mair!

5. In circumcuesion, an aucht-day 
bairn; o' Isra'1's sons; o' Benjamin's 
tribe; a Hebrew o' Hebrews; as to 
law, a Pharisee;

6. As to zeal, persecuting the Kirk; 
as to richtouness o' Law, wyteless.

7. But, whatnae things war a gain 
to me, thae hae I esteemed loss for 
the sake o' Christ!

8. But, in truth, doubtless I am 
esteein a things to be los, for the 
unco preciousness o' the lear o' Jesus 
Christ my Lord; for whom I suffer't 
the loss o' a things, and coont them 
as midden-ort, that I may win 
Christ,

9. And may be in him; no haecin 
for my richtouness that frae the 
Law—but that throwe faith in Christ; 
the richtouness that is frae God, by 
faith:

10. To come to ken him, and the 
poorer o' his 3 Risin-again, and to be a 
marrow wi' him in his sufferans, bein 
conform to his death.

11. Gin aibins, by ony means, I 
may win on to the "Risin-again"; 
that frae amang the deid.

12. No that I hae it noo, or sae 
sune had been made perfete; but I 
press on, gin that I may grip hau

1V. 1. He may mean the "same things" 
he tell' them in word when he was wi' 
them; or, the "same things" he was, 
about the same time, sendin to the 
Ephesians, etc.

2V. 2. This is neither richtly a Scots 
word, nor an English ane. It means 
cuttin-aff, or mutilatin; but it marrows 
weel wi' the ither word, "circum- 
cuesion."

3V. 10. No the poorer by whilk he raise 
frae the deid, but the poorer—the unco 
force and influence—o' that great fact 
on the Apostle's ain mind.
o' that for whilk I was grippit by Christ.

13. Brethren, I, as to mysel alle-nearlie, am-na yet reckonin to hae grippit baud; but as thing I div: forgettin the things abint, and raxin oot to thae things that are afore,

14. I press on for the gree, for the prize o' the biddin (frae on heigh) o' God in Christ Jesus.

15. As mony o' us, than, as are o' fu' stature, lat this be oor mind; and gin ye be mindit anither way, God wull mak it plain to ye.

16. Nane-the-less, as far on as we hae gotten, lat us resolve to gang on in the same rule.

17. Brethren be ye followers o' me thegither; and tak tent o' thae that sae gang, e'en as ye hae us for an example.

18. For mony walk, o' whom I aft tell't ye, and noo, e'en wi' tears tell ye: faes o' the Cross o' Christ!

19. Whase hinner end is destruction, whase god is their wame, and whase glorie is in their shame; wha mind things o' the yirth.

20. For oor citizen-richts are in Heeven, oot o' whilk fain look we for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ;

21. Wha wull change the body o' oor laigh-easte, to be like to the body o' his glorie; conform to the inwart workin, whaur-by he has poorer e'en to bring a' things intil subjicction to his sel.

CHAPTER FOWR.
Gude advisement, wi' his pairtin commendation.

AND sae, my brethren, belov'd and mickle-langed-for, my rejoicin, sae staun siccar i' the Lord, my beloved!

2. Euodia I entreat, and Syntyche I entreat, that ye be o' as mind, i' the Lord.

3. And I entreat ye as weel, leal yoke-fellow, be ye helpin thae weemen wha, in truth, helpit me i' the labor o' the Gude-word; wi' Clement too, and my ither marrows, whase names are i' the Buik o' Life.

4. Be glad i' the Lord aye; and again I say, "Be glad!"

5. Lat yere reasonableness be kent to a' men: the Lord is at haun.

6. For naething be ye trauchlit i' yere minds; but in a' things by prayer and supplication, wi' gean o' thanks, lat yere needs be made kent to God.

7. And the peace o' God that is aboon a' oor thocht, sal keep yere hearts and yere thochts in Christ Jesus.

8. And for the lave, brethren, As mony things as are leal, as mony things as are honorable, as mony things as are just, as mony things as are pure, as mony things as are bonnie, as mony things as are o' gude repute; gin thare be ony virtue whatsoever, gin thar be ony praise, tak ye account o' thir things.

9. Whatna things ye baith learned and gat, and heard and saw, in me, do ye the same: and the God o' peace sal be wi'ye.

10. But I was made to be unco blythe i' the Lord, that noo i' the end, yere care for me blossom'd again: tho' in truth ye war carin, but wantit opportunity.

11. No that I was in need, am I speakin; for I ken, hoosoe'er I am, to be content.

12. I ken baith hoo to be brocht laigh, and I ken hoo to hae mair nor onuch: in a' ways, and in a' things haes I been instrucctit, baith to be fu' and to hung'er, baith to hae owerrand-aboon, and to want.

13. I can do a' things, by him wha strenthens me!

14. Nane-the-less, ye did weel, in haein a co-stewardship wi' me in the distress.

1 V. 8. Take ye tent, hoo faith wull aye mak itsel kent by gude warks! Coud ony one keep step wi' sic things, wha hadna first keepit step wi' Christ?
15. Noo ye Philippians ken, that i' the beginnin o' the Gude-word, when I gaed oot frae Macedonia, no e'en ae kirk had fellowship wi' me, i' the maitter o' giean and takin, but ye only.

16. For e'en in Thessalonica, ye sent, ance and again, till my need.

17. No that I seek eftir a gift: but I seek eftir the frute that is to increase to yere account.

18. But I hae rowth o' a' things, and mair nor eneuch; I hae been filled, haein frae Epaphroditus the things frae you, a sweet odor, an acceptable offeran, weel-pleasin tae God.

19. But my God wull mak up for ye ilka need, conform to the riches o' his glorie in Christ Jesus.

20. Noo to oor God and Faither be glorie, for evir and for evir. Amen!

21. Salute ye every saunt in Christ Jesus. The brethren that are wi' me salute ye.

22. A' the saunts salute ye; in especial they o' Cesar's househauld.

23. The tender-love o' the Lord Jesus Christ be wi' yere spirit!
COLOSSIANS.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Paul tells what Christ is like: he likes weel to describe his Frend!

Paul, an Apostle o' Christ Jesus, throwe God's wull, wi' Timothy, oor brither,

2. To the holy and leal brethren in Christ in Colosse: tender-love to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither,

3. We are aye giean thanks to the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ; praying at a' times on yere behauf.

4. Hearin' yere faith in Christ Jesus, and the love ye bear to a' the saunta.

5. On acount o' the hope that is lyin-by for ye i' the Heevens, o' whilk ye heard afore i' the word o' the truth o' the Blythe-message,

6. That has come to you, e'en as it is bearin frute and growin' i' the world, sae amang you as weel, frae whatna day ye first heard the sough o't, and cam to ken the tender-love o' God in truth:

7. Conform to what ye had frae Epaphras, oor dear fellow-servant, wha is a leal servitor o' Christ for us;

8. Wha eke made kent to us your love i' the Spirit.

9. And for this, we oorsels, frae what day we heard this, cease-na prayer and seekin, that ye may be filled wi' the fu' knowledge o' his wull, in a' wisdom and spiritual discernment;

10. That ye soud walk in sic mainner wordie o' the Lord, until pleasin him; in a' gude warks bearin frute, and growin in the lear o' God.

11. In a' micht bein made michty, conform to the micht o' his ain

12. Giean thanks to the Faither, wha gars us to be fit to partak o' the inheritance o' the saunta in licht;

13. Wha deliver't us oot o' the poore o' the mirkness, and translatit us intil the Kingdom o' the Son o' his love.

14. In wham we hae redemption, the passin by o' sins.

15. Wha is the likeness o' the invisible God, the first-born o' a' the creation.

16. For in him war a' things creatit, things in Heeven and things on the yirth, the things seen and the things no seen; whether throns, or dominions, or principalities or authorities—thir a', throwe him, and for his sake, hae been creatit.

17. And he is afore a' things, and by him a' things haud thegither,

18. And he is the heid o' the body, the Kirk; wha is the original, the “first-born” frae mang the deid; that he may become, amang a', the pre-eminent.

19. For in him it was the gude-pleassur o' the Faither that a' boundless rowth sould dwell;

20. And throwe him to reconcile a' things to his sel, makin peace throwe the blude o' his cross, whether things on yirth, or things in the Heevens.

21. And you, at ae time bein fremd, and wi' enmitie i' yere minds by ill warks, has he fu'reconciled,

22. I' the body o' his flesh, throwe his death, to bring ye intil his presence holie, and faultless, and wyteless.

1 V. 7. He continued Paul's warc amang them.
23. Gin at least ye bide i’ the faith, sterk and steive, and no dung-awa frae the hope o’ the Gude-word ye heard, that was preached till a’ the creation ’neath the beavens; o’ whilk I Paul became a servitor.

24. Noo I am blythe to suffer on yere behauf, and am fillin up what was wantin o’ the Christ-tribulations in my flesh, on account o’ his body, that is the kirk:

25. O’ whilk I became a servitor, conform tae the stewardship o’ God, whilk was gien me for you, to fulfil the word o’ God.

26. The riddle that was hidden awa frae the ages and the generations, but is at this time made kent to the saunta;

27. To wham God wulled to mak it kent, e’en the treasur o’ the glorie o’ this riddle i’ the nations, whilk is Christ in you, the hope o’ glorie.

28. Wham we declare, warnin ilka man, and teachin ilka man in a’ wisdom, that we soud present ilka man perfete in Christ.

29. To whilk end I am toilin, battlin accordin to his workin, whilk works in me wi’ poorer.

CHAPTIR TWAA.
Christ for safety; and no philosophy or ordinances!

FOR I wad hae ye ken hoo great a fecht I am haein for ye, and for thae o’ Laodicea; and for as mony as haena seen my face i’ the flesh.

2. In order that their hearts may be comfortit, bein wrocht a’ intil ane in love, e’en till a’ the treasurs o’ the perfete assurance o’ the mind, till a fu’ knowledge o’ the mysterie o’ God, e’en Christ.

3. In wham are a’ the treasurs o’ wisdom and lear hidden.

4. But I am sayin this, that nane may wyle ye agley wi’ fleechin words.

5. For gin I be sindry frae ye i’ the flesh, yet am I ane w’ye i’ the Spirit, rejoicin, and seein yere order-

liness, and the steive biggin o’ yere faith anent Christ,

6. In sic way as ye received Christ Jesus the Lord, in him be walkin!

7. Bein firm-rutit and up-biggit in him, and bein made siccar i’ the faith, conform till yere teachin; aboundin in thanksgivin.

8. But tak ye tent, least some ane may be makin booty o’ ye, throwe philosophy and vanities o’ deceit, conform to men’s instruction, conform to the world’s elements, and no conform to Christ.

9. For in him dwells a’ the abundance o’ the Godhead in form-o’body.

10. And ye are made fu’ in him, wha is the heid o’ a’ principalitie and authority;

11. In wham ye hae been circum-cceed wi’ the circum-ceesion no wi’ hauns, i’ the pittin-aff o’ the body o’ the flesh, i’ the 1 “Christ-circum-ceesion”;

12. Bein wi’ him bury’t i’ yere bapteezin, in whilk ye war raised wi’ him again, throwe the faith o’ the workin o’ God, wha raised him frae ’mang the deid:

13. And you, deid i’ the sins and uncircum-ceesion o’ yere flesh, he has made to levee again wi’ him; oot’ love forgiveus us a’ offences.

14. Blottin oot the haun-write again us, in ordinances, that was contrar to us; and took it awa, nailin it to his cross!

15. And haein strippit principalities and pouers, he made a plain spectacle o’ them, and a triumph ower them thar-by.

16. Lat nane, than, be condemnin ye anent eatin or drinkin, or in regaird o’ a feast, or a new-mune, or the Sabbaths;

17. That are a “shadow” o’ comin things; but the “body” is Christ.

1 V. 11. Trow ye hoo the circum-ceesion we hae wi’ Christ is a’ a spirituall thing? The reference here isna to the circum-ceesion o’ the bairn Jesus, whan aught-days auld.

255
18. Let none twine ye, by a putten-on humility, like the worship o' an Angel; pratin aboot things he "has seen"; swallowed up wi' the vain importance o' a carnal mind.

19. And no hauin steive the heid, oot o' whilk the hail body, throwe the joints and union-bands haein supply, and joinin itself thegither, is growin wi' the growth o' God.

20. Gif ye dee't wi' Christ frae the world's elements, hoo, than (as gin ye war still leevin i' the world), are ye subject to ordinances:

21. "Ye mauna handle," "ye maunna taste," "ye mauna touch!"

22. (Whilk are a' to come to an end in the usin!) conform to the communa and teachins o' men?

23. Whilk, in truth, are things, in ae view, haein an appearance o' wysseheid in ane's ain-devised worship and humility of mind, and ill-doin wi' ane's ain body: no in ony honor:—merely a satisfying o' the flesh.

CHAPTIR THRIE.
The new man to be putten-on; and a' folk, in a' stations to do God's will.

GIN, than, ye war raised frae the deid wi' Christ, seek the things on Heigh, whar Christ is, at God's richt haun sittin.

2. Be determined on things aboon, no on thae o' the yirth.

3. For ye dees', and yere life has come to be hid, e'en wi' Christ, in God.

4. Whansoer Christ, oor life, sal be seen, your life, than, alang wi' his, sal be seen in glorie.

5. Slay, than, yere members, as to things on the yirth: lachery, impurity, passion, base desires, and greed, whilk is eidol-servin.

6. For whilk things God's anger is comin on the bairns o' disobedience.

7. In whilk, e'en ye walkit at ae time; whan ye war leevin i' the same.

8. But noo pit ye them a' awa: anger, wrath, malice, misca'in, shamefu' talk oot o' yere mooth.

9. Speak-na twaauld ane to anither; haein put aff frae ye the "auld" man, wi' a' his deeds.

10. And haein putten on ye the "new," wha is formed anew into knowledge, aftir the likeness o' him that creatit him.

11. Whaur naither "Greek" nor "Jew" comes in; circumcision nor uncircumcision, fred ane, Scythian, bond, nor free: but Christ a'; and Christ in a'.

12. Pit ye on, than, as chosen anes o' God, holie and weel-loed, the tender-affections o' compassion, graciousness, humbleness o' mind, canniness, patience:

13. Tholin ane-anither, in tender-ness forgian ane-anither, gin abins ony ane has a compleent again ony; e'en as the Lord oot o' love forgae you, sae do ye.

14. But ower and aboon a' thir things, hae ye love, whilk wull bind thegither a' things in perfeteness.

15. And lat the peace o' Christ be Regent in yere hearts; till whilk ye war bidden, as ae body; and be ye thankful.

16. Be the word o' Christ dwalkin in ye richly; in a' wyss teachin and admonishin o' versels, in psalms, in hymns, and godly sangs: liltin i' yere hearts to God in yere gratitude.

17. And in a' things, whatsoever ye be doin, in word or in wark, do a' in the name o' the Lord Jesus, giean thanks to yere God and Faither throwe him.

18. Wives, submit yersels to yere husbands, as is fittin in the Lord.

19. Husbands, lo'e yere wives, and be-na set again them.

20. Bairns, be ye biddable to yere parents in a' things, for this is weel-pleasin i' the Lord.

21. Faithers, wauken-na up anger in yere bairns, least they be disheartened.

22. Servants, be biddable in a' things to yere maisters i' the flesh; no by way o' ee-service, as men-
pleasers, but in asauldness o' heart, fearin the Lord.
23. Whateae'er ye may do, oot o' the saul do it, as for the Lord, and no for men.
24. Kennin that frae the Lord sal ye duly receive the gree, e'en the inheritance: to the Lord Christ are ye doin service.
25. For he that is doin wrang-ouslie, sal hae return't to him what he wrangouslie did; and thar is nae walin oot o' faces.

CHAPTIR FOWR.
Deal cannlie wi' thae no yet brocht in! A hantle o' good wishes for his friends.

MAISTERS, do justice and equity to yere servants; mindin that ye too hae a Maister in Heeven.
2. Gie yersels to prayer; takin tent that-in, wi' gieane o' thanks.
3. And prayin for us as weel, that God wull unseak to us a door for the word, to speak the ferlies o' Christ, for whilk I hae become a prisoner;
4. That I may mak it plain; e'en as I am hauden to speak.
5. Walk ye wysely anent thae oot-side; obteenin the opportunity for yersels;
6. Yere speech at a' times bein wi' grace, kitchen wi' saut; that ye may ken hoo ye soud be giean ilk ane his speak.
7. A' that regards me, Tychicus wull mak kent t'ye—the weel-lo'ed brither, and faithfu' servitor, and fellow-server i' the Lord.

1V. 5. Tak ye tent o' opportunities! "obteen" them ("buy them"). They come gey aften, gin ye watch for them, as ye wad for a gude bargain!

8. Him hae I sent t'ye, for this vera thing, that ye may ken the things regairdin us, and that he micht comfort yere hearts.
9. Thegither wi' Onesimus, the leal and weel-lo'ed brither, wha is frae amang ye. A' things here wull they mak kent t'ye.
10. Aristarchus, my marrow in captivity, salutes ye; and Mark, cousin o' Barnabas, anent wham ye had instructions. Gin aiblins he comes to ye, gie him welcome.
11. And Jesus, the ane ca'd "Justus"; they bein o' the circum- cession. Thir alane are fellow-workers i' the kingdom o' God; wha in truth, hae been comforters o' me.
12. Epaphras salutes ye, wha is frae 'mang ye, a servitor o' Jesus Christ: at a' times warthin in yere behauf in prayer, that ye may be made to staun complete, and wi' fu' assurance in a' things o' the wull o' God.
13. For I bear witness, that he has unco fainness for ye, and for thae in Laodicea, and thae in Hierapolis.
15. Salute ye the brethren in Laodicea; and Nymphas, and the meetin that is in their house.
16. And whansae'er the letter has been read amang ye, e'en mak it to be read i' the Kirk o' the Laodi- ceans: and that, as weel, the ane oot o' Laodicea be read.
17. And say to Archippus: "Tak tent weel to the stewardship ye received i' the Lord, that it ye may fulfil!"
18. The salutation o' me Paul, wi' my ain haun. Mind ye my chains! Tender love be wi' ye!
FIRST THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTER ANE.
Their faith was spread abroad: and Paul rejoices in't.

PAUL, and Silas, and Timothy, to the Kirk o' the Thessalonians, in God the Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ. Tender love to ye, and peace.

2. We are aye giean thanks to God for ye a', namin ye in oor prayers.

3. Never failin to mind yere wark o' faith, and toilin in love, and tholin in hope in oor Lord Jesus Christ, afore oor God and Faither.

4. We kennin, brethren belov'd o' God, yere choice.

5. And hoo that oor Gude-word didna come to ye as tidings in word alane; but eke in poorer and the Holie Spirit, and in strang certaintie; e'en as ye kent whatna kind o' men we schawed oorseil amang ye for your sakes:

6. And ye took pattern aftir us, and aftir the Lord, takin to ye the word amang mickle affliction, wi' joy i' the Holie Spirit.

7. Sae that ye cam to be a pattern to a' the believin anes, in Macedonia and in Greece.

8. For, frae you has soondit oot the Lord's word, no alane in Macedonia and Greece, but in a' ither pairs, yere faith whilk is to Godward has gane oot; sae that we hae nae need to speak o't.

9. For they, their sels, tell aboot us, whatna sort o' comin-in we had to ye, and hoo ye turned aboot frae eilds to God, to ser' a God—a leevin reality.

10. And to look for his Son frae Heeven, whom he raised frae amang the deid, e'en Jesus, wha saves us frae the wrath that's comin.

CHAPTER TWA.
He comforts his sel in lookin back over the way he cam amang them; what he said, and what he did, and what he dreed.

FOR ye ken yersels, brethren, oor comin amang ye, that it was leal and true.

2. But eftir we had dreed afore, and war treatit in a shamefu' way, as ye ken, at Philippi, we war free o' utterance in oor God to tell ye the Gude-word o' God, wi' muckle strife.

3. For oor coonsellin isna a' error, nor o' vileness, nor in twafauldness;

4. But e'en as we hae been lippened by God to be chairged wi' the Gude-word, in siclike mainner div we speak, no to pleasur man, but raither God wha tries oor hearts.

5. For at nae time did we hae flatterin words, e'en as ye ken; nor made a cloak for self-seekin. God kens.

6. Nor seekin praise o' men, naither frae you, nor frae itheres: tho' we had poorer o' claimin 2 support as Christ's Apostles.

7. Nane-the-less, we war cannie amang ye, as gin a nursin-mother war cherishin her ain bairn.

8. And sae, bein fain for ye, we had been willin to gie ye no the Gude-word o' God only, but e'en oor ain sauls; for that ye had come to be sae loe'd o' us.

9. For ye mind, brethren, oor toils and sairs: nicht and day toilin, that we micht-na be a burden to ony o' ye, we made kent t'ye the Gude-word o' God.

1 V. 9. That is the folk that spek o' the Lord's cause in Thessalonica; whether aibins as traders they had been till that great mart, and heard it; or men o' that place, wha had carry't the Gospel abraid.

2 V. 6. The support, or daily breid, he gained for his sel (verse 9).
10. Ye are witness (and God), hoo purely, and richtouslie, and faultlesslie, we carry't oorsels amang you wha believe.

11. Just as ye ken, hoo to ilk ane o' ye we war like as a faither to his ain bairns, comfortin and heartenin ye, and testifin;

12. That ye soud walk wordie o' God, wha has bidden ye to his ain kingdom and glorie.

13. And for this too we are aye giean thanks to God, that whan ye had frae us the word o' the message, e'en God's message, ye took it to ye, no as man's word, but e'en as it is truly, God's word, whilk is e'en workin inwardly in you wha believe.

14. For ye took pattern, brethren, eftir the Kirks o' God that are in Judea in Jesus Christ—in that the same things ye tholed frae yer ain countrymen that they did frae the Jews;

15. Wha slew baith the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Prophets; and us they persecute, and are displeasin to God, and contrary to a' men;

16. And wad binner us frae speakin to the Nations that they might be saved, to fill up their ain sins aye; for wrath is comin on them to the binner end o'it.

17. But we, brethren, bein taen awa frae ye for an 'oof—in presence, no in heart—sae muckle the mair socht to see yere face, wi' unco fainness.

18. And sae I uncolie desir't to come t'ye, ance and again; but Sau-tan hinder't us.

19. For what sal be oor hope, or joy, or croon o' oor glorie? Sanna e'en ye thus be, afore oor God, at his 1 presence?

20. For ye are oor glorie and oor joy!

---

1 V. 19. Oor English has it "comin." But Paul's word here isna sae muckle "comin," as "haein comie," or "presence"; parousia: no an action sae muckle as a condition. See in iii. 13, and elsewaurn.

---

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Timothy, haen been till Thessalonica, and back again, gars Paul rejoice.

A ND sae whan we could nae lang' er lat-be, we war well-pleased to be left in Athens alane,

2. And sent Timothy, oor brither and God's servant i' the Gude-word o' Christ, to gar ye staun siccar, and comfort ye i' yere faith.

3. Sae that nae ane soud be dauntit by their afflictions; for ye ken yersels that we war appointit for the same.

4. For e'en whan we war wi' ye, we tell't ye afore, that we soud dree afflictions; e'en as it cam aboot, and ye ken.

5. And for this cause, nae mair happen ower my fainness, I sent to ken o' yer faith, least by ony means the tempin-anne had tempit ye, and oor toil soud be a' in vain!

6. But noo Timothy, comin to us frae you, feshin us gude word o' yer faith and love, and that ye kindly hae mind o' us at a' times, bein unco fain to see us, e'en as we are fain to see you,—

7. For this cause we are comfortit, brethren, o' ye, as to a' oor distress and affliction, by yere faith:

8. For noo we hae life in us, gin ye staun steive i' the Lord.

9. For whatsa thanksgiving cam we gie to the Lord anent ye, for a' the joy we rejoice wi' afore oor God, because o' you;

10. Nicht and day, wi' unco abundance, makin petition for the behauldin o' yer faces, and makin perfete the things that are wantin i' yer faith?

11. But, may it be, that oor God and Faither himsel, and oor Lord Jesus Christ, airt oor way t'ye!

12. That the Lord may mak ye to increase, and be unco abundin in yer love ane to anither, and to a' men; e'en as wi' us towards you,

13. For the up-biggin o' yer hearts, to be wyteless in holiness, afore oor God and Faither, at the presence o' oor Lord Jesus wi' a' his saunts.
CHAPTER FOWR.

Folk soul be pure i' their life, wha look for the comin o' the Lord!

And forby, we entreat ye, brethren, and coonseyl ye i' the Lord Jesus, that e'en as ye ha had frae us hoo ye sould be walkin and pleasin God—e'en as ye are walkin—that ye abound yet mair and mair.

2. For ye ken whatna chairsge we gied ye throwe the Lord Jesus.

3. For this is a thing God desires, e'en yere holiness; that ye keep frae lecherie.

4. That ye sould ken, ilk ane o' ye, to possess himsel o' his ain body in holiness and honor.

5. No i' the passion o' ill-desires; e'en as the heathen wha ken-na God;

6. That nae man gang ayont, and defraud i' this maitter his brither; for an avenger is the Lord anent a' thir, e'en as we tell't ye afore, and testify't.

7. For God didna ca' ye to vileness, but to holiness.

8. He, than, that disna heed, disregards no a man, but God; wha gies his Holie Spirit to ye.

9. But, anent love to the brethren, ye need-na that I write to ye; for ye yersels are instrueckit o' God to lo'e ane-anither.

10. And, in truth, ye do sae to a' the brethren that are i' the hail o' Macedonia. But we entreat ye, brethren, that ye owerflow yet the mair.

11. And that ye ettle to be quate, and mind yere ain affairs, workin wi' yere ain hauns, e'en as we ga'e ye chaire;

12. That ye may walk honorably toward thae that are oot-by; and that ye may lack in nocht.

13. But we desire-na ye sould be ignorant, brethren, as to the faun asleep, least ye be sorrowin conform to the lave, wha hae nae hope.

14. For gin we believe that Jesus dee't and raise again, e'en sae sa

God lead oot thae wha fell asleep in Jesus, wi' him.

15. For this to you we say, by the word o' the Lord, that we, wha are leevin to the comin o' the Lord, sal in naegate win forrit afore them wha are faun asleep.

16. For the Lord himsel sal come doon frae Heeven wi' a shout, wi' an Archangel's voice, and a trumpet o' God; and the deid in Christ sal rise foremaist.

17. Eftir that, we, the leevin that are left, a' at ance, thegither wi' them, sal be clauth awa in cluds to meet the Lord i' the lift: and sae at a' times, thegither wi' the Lord sal we be!

18. Sae than, comfort ye ane-anither wi' thir words.

CHAPTER FYVE.

The Day o' the Lord comin on, we ore to be ready to meet him; leadin holie lives, and denyin a' sin.

But, as to the times and the occasions, brethren, ye need-na that I write ocht to ye;

2. For ye yersels weel ken that the Day o' the Lord sae comes as a thief i' the nicht.

3. At sicc an times as they may be sayin, "Peace and safety"; than, o' a sudderly, destruction comes on them—as birth-pangs on a bearin wumman—and in naegate may they escape.

4. But ye, brethren, are-na i' the mirk, that the Day sould come on ye as a thief.

5. For ye are bairns o' light; sons o' the day; we are-na o' the nicht, nor yet o' the gloom.

6. Sae than, lat us no be sleepin, as div the lave, but lat us be wary, and keepin sober.

7. For folk that sleep, sleep by nicht; and folk that mak theirsels fu', by nicht are fu'.

8. But we, bein o' the day, lat us be eident, haein putten on the prufe-
coat o' faith and love; and as a helmet the hope o' salvation.

9. For God did na gie us ower to wrath, but to come into salvation throwe oor Lord Jesus Christ.

10. Wha dees't for us, that, gin we be wakeen, or gin we be sleepin, we a' at ance, and a' thegither, might begin to leeve wi' him.

11. And sae, be ye comfortin anither; e'en as ye are doin.

12. But we entreat you, brethren, to be well-acuint wi' thae wha toil amang ye, and are ower ye i' the Lord, and admonish ye;

13. And hae muckle esteem for them for their wark's sake. And be ye at peace amang yersels.

14. But we coonsel ye, brethren, admonish ye the disorderly; comfort thae o' feebleness o' saul; strenthen the weak; thole lang wi' a'.

15. See to it that nane return ill-doin for ill-doin to ony; but aye pursue efir that whilk is gude,

---

1 V. 10. The "sleepin" here iesna the same as v. 6, 7; but raither the sleepin wi' the deid.

toward anither, and toward a' men.

16. Be aye rejoicin.

17. Cease na to pray.

18. In a' things gie thanks; for this is God's wull in Christ Jesus toward ye.

19. Quench-na the Spirit.

20. Geck-na at preachins,

21. But pit a' things to the test; and what is bonnie haud fast.

22. Keep awa frae evil, in ony shape.

23. And the God o' peace, mak ye perfete in holiness! And may yere hail spirit, and saul, and body, be keepit faultless at the comin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ!

24. He is faithfu' wha ca's you; wha eke wull perform.

25. Brethren, be ye in prayer for us.

26. Salute a' the brethren wi' a sacred kiss.

27. I chairge ye by the Lord, that this letter be read to a' the brethren.

28. The tender love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' ye.
SECOND THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTER ANE.
Paul takis comfort i' the saunts; and kens weel that God takis vengeance on the ungodlie.

PAUL, and Silas, and Timothy, tae the Kirk o' the Thessalonians in God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ!

2. Tender love to ye, and peace frae God oor Faither and the Lord Jesus Christ!

3. We bude gie God thanks at a' times anent ye, brethren, conform tae what is meet; for that yere faith grows uncolie, and the love o' ilk ane o' ye a', ane to anither, overflows.

4. Sae that we oorsels are roosein ye i' the Kirks o' God, in that ye dree'd and had faith, in a' the persecutions and afflictions ye tholed;

5. A token o' the just judgment o' God; to the end that ye soud be reckoned wordie o' God's kingdom, on behauf o' whilk ye suffer.

6. Gif sae be that it is a just thing wi' God to gie tribulation to thae wha mak ye tribulation;

7. And to you whae thole tribulation, to gie rest wi' us, at the revealin o' the Lord Jesus frae Heeven, wi' his mighty Angels.

8. In lowin fire rendering vengeance on thae wha ken-na God, and on thae wha mind-na the Gude-word o' the Lord Jesus.

9. Wha, in truth, sal dree punishment, e'en everlasting destruction frae the presence o' the Lord, and frae the glorie o' his poore.

10. Whansae'er he may come to be glorify't in his saunts, and to be a ferlie to a' wha believe; for that oor witness to ye was lippen'd, i' that day.

11. To whilke end we are e'en prayin at a' times anent you, that oor God may reckon ye wordie o' yere joyful biddin, and fill up a' the pleasur o' his gudeness, and wark o' faith in poore;

12. That the name o' Jesus may be made a' glorious in you, and ye a' glorious in him, conform to the tender love o' oor God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER TWA.
Paul expones mair aboot the Comin o' Christ.

BUT we entreat ye, brethren, by the Bein-wi'-us o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, and oor gatherin thegither to him,

2. That ye be-na sae eithlie tossat aboot i' yere mind, nor yet be fleyt—either throwe spirit, or throwe discorse, or throwe letter as frae us—as that the Day o' the Lord has sitten-in.

3. That nae ane may beguile ye in ony way: for that day winna be, except the gaun-back comes first, and the Man o' Sin be made kent, the son o' perdition,

4. He wha rises up, and lifts up his sel again a' that is ca'd "God," or that is worshipped: sae that he, i' the temple o' God takes his seat, settin himsel forrit that he is "God."

5. Dae ye no mind, that when I was yet wi' ye, I tellt ye thir things?

6. And noo ye ken what hauds back his revealin himsel in his fit time.

7. For the mystery o' lawless sin dis e'en noo work; until that whilk hauds back may be ta'en oot o' the gate.

8. And than sae be seen the Man o' Sin, wham the Lord Jesus "Sal slay wi' the breath o' his lips," and sal destroy wi' the shinin-forth o' his presence.

262
9. E'en he, whase comin is conform to the inwart workin o' Sautan in a' mighty workin and tokens, and leean ferlies.

10. And a' deceitfulness o' wickedness to thae that are perishin; for that the love o' the truth they took-na ben to them, that they might be saved.

11. And, for this, God sends them an inwart-workin' o' error, that they might lippen a lee;

12. That they might be judged, ane and a', wha didna lippen to the truth, but delichit theirsels in unrighteousness.

13. But we are hauden to gie thanks to God at a' times for you, brethren beloved o' the Lord, that God made wale o' you frae the beginning, to salvation, by sanctification o' the Spirit, and lippenin o' the truth.

14. Until whilk he ca'd youthrowe oor Gude-word, to the obteinin' o' the glorie o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Sae than, brethren, stau siccar, and bauz firm the leer ye gat, whether throwe preachin, or throwe oor letter.

16. But oor Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God oor Faither, wha loved us, and ga'e us everlastin' comfort and gude hope throwe his favor,

17. Comfort yere hearts, and upbigg ye in a' gude wark and word.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Some fatherly charges, as ane pairtin wi' his dear bairns.

AND for the lave o' t; pray ye for us, brethren, that the Lord's word may be rinnin, and winnin glorie, e'en as it dis wi' you.

2. And that we may be saved frae forritsome and ill men; for a' men haena the faith.

3. But faithfu' is the Lord, wha wull up-bigge ye, and gaird ye frae the Ill-anie.

4. But we bae persuadit oorsels that whatna things we are gian ye in chairge, ye are baith doin and wull do.

5. The Lord airt yere hearts into the love o' God, and into the langtholin o' Christ!

6. But we chairge ye, brethren, i' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, that ye hauz awa frae ony brither wha walks disorderly, and no conform to the consel ye had frae us.

7. For ye yersels ken hoo ye soud be takin pattern by us; in that we warna disorderly amang ye:

8. Naither, as a free-gift, did we eat ony man's breid; but in toil and sair tholin, nicht and day workin, sae as no to be a burden on ony o' ye;

9. No that we hadna authoritie, but that we might mak oorsels a pattern for ye to pattern eftir us.

10. For e'en when we war wi' ye, this we gar gian in chairge till ye, "That gin ony man wadna work, naither soud he eat."

11. For we hear o' some walkin amang ye disorderly, workin at nathing, yet thrang and forritsone.

12. But sic as thir we chairge and entreat i' the Lord Jesus, that, quately workin, they eat their ain breid.

13. But ye, brethren, be-na wearied in weel-doin.

14. But gin ony ane isna gian heed till oor word throwe this letter, remark this ane, and be-na chief wi' him, that he may be shamed.

15. Yet esteem-him-na as a fae, but counsel him as a brither.

16. And the Lord o' peace himsel, may he gie ye peace aye, and in a' ways! The Lord be wi' ye a'!

17. The salutation o' Paul, wi' my ain haun; that is a token in ilka letter: sae I write.

18. The tender love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' ye a'!
FIRST TIMOTHY.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Paul minde him o' what he had telt him: and than speaks o' God's mercie till his sel.

PAUL, an Apostile o' Jesus Christ, by commane o' God the Father, and Jesus Christ, oor Lord.

2. To Timothy, my true bairn i' the faith: tender love, mercie, peace, frae God oor Father, and Jesus Christ oor Lord.

3. E'en as I entreatit ye to bide still in Ephesus, whilst I gaed intil Macedonia, that ye soud chaire a wheen no to be teachin anither gate,

4. Nor yet gien heed to silly auld tales and endless pedigrees; whilk in truth rin intil nevir-endin quaisstens, rather than a gude stewardship for God that is in faith.

5. But the end o' the commane is love, oot o' a pure heart, and a clean conscience, and a leal faith;

6. Whilk some, haein missed the mark, gaed agley into idle havers;

7. Wha wad be teachers o' the Law, no understaunin the things they war sayin, or anent whilk they war stoutly affirmin.

8. But we ken that the Law is gude, gin a man mak use o' in a lawfu' manner.

9. Kennin this, that to a just man the Law isna laid doon, but to lawless and disobedient anes, ungodly and sinfu', irreigious and profane, slayers o' faithers and slayers o' mithers, blude-shedders,

10. Lecherites, sodomites, man-stealers, leers, mansworn anes; and gin thar be onything mair, contrar to halesome doctrine;

11. Conform to the Gude-word o' the glorie o' the blessed God, whilk was committed to my keepin.

12. Unco thanks hae I to him wha enabl't me—Christ Jesus oor Lord—

in that he esteem'd me leal, pittin me intil the service,

13. Tho' I was ane a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and a hater; nane-the-less, I gat mercie, for that I had dune it throwe ignorance, in unbelief.

14. But aboon a' measur was the tender-love o' oor Lord, wi' faith and love; that whilk is in Christ Jesus.

15. Leal the word! and wordie o' a takin-till ane, "That Christ Jesus cam into the world, sinners to save!" o' wham a chieftain am I!

16. But I wan mercie on this account, that in me, as a chieftain, Christ Jesus micht schaw forth his unco lang-tholin, for a patter for thae wha wad pit faith in him for life everlastin.

17. Noo to the King o' the ages, uncorruptible, unseen, the Ae God, be honor and glorie for evir and evir, Amen!

18. This chaire gie I t'ye, my bairn Timothy: conform to the prophecies gaun afore on ye, that ye micht fecht the noble war.

19. Haudin lealness and a clean conscience; whilk some castin frae them, hae as to the faith made shipwreck;

20. O' wham is Hymeneus and Aysander, whom I gied ower to Sautan, that they micht learn no to blaspheme.

CHAPITIR TWA.

Pray for a' men; for thar is the ae God, and a' men are alike needfu'.

COONSEL, than, that first o' a', supplications, prayers, intercess-

1 V. 20. The words are gey like 1 Cor., v. 5; and the process is the same—pittin them back, oot o' the Kirk, intil Sautan's kingdom [the world], till, discipline haein wrought a gude wark in them, they micht be looten back again intil the Kirk.
sions, thanks-gieans, ye mak on be-
hau f o’ a’ men:
2. For kings, and a’ thae in autho-
ratie; that we may lead a quate and
peaceable life, godly and douce.
3. This is gude and pleasin i’ the
sicht o’ God oor Saviour;
4. Wha wad hae a’ men to be
saved, and to come to ful’kennin o’
the truth.
5. For thar is ae God, and thar is
ae mediator atwixt God and man,
himself man, Christ Jesus;
6. Wha gied himself up a ransom
for a’; the testimonie to be borne in
its sin fit times.
7. Until whilk I was appointit to
proclaim, and to be an Apostle (I say
true, I lee-na!), a teacher o’ the
nations in faith and truth.
8. I counsel thar-for, that the men
pray in a’ places, haudin up holie
hauns, far frae a’ wrath and disputins:
9. I’ the same way, too, that
weemen, in fit cleedin, wi’ meekness
and douceness, be buskin theirsels;
no wi’ braedins, and gowd, or pearls,
or braw attire :
10. But.—what becomes weemen
professin godliness—wi’ a’ gude
warks.
11. Lat a wumman in quateness be
learnin’; wi’ a’ submissiun.
12. But I alloo-na a wumman to
 teach, nor to hae authoritie ower a
man, but to be in quateness.
13. For Adam first was made, then
Eve.
14. And Adam wasna deceiv’t; but
the wumman bein deceiv’t, has come
to be in transgression.
15. Yet she sal be saved in her
bairn-time, gif they abide in faith,
and love, and holiness.

CHAPITR THRIE.

Aenent Bishops and Deacons i’ the Kirk, and
whatna men they soud be.

It is unco true, “Gin a man seeks
for a Bishop’s place, he seeks a
gude wark! ”
2. It is necessar, than, that the
Bishop be aboon reproach, the hus-
band o’ ae wife, douce, o’ sober mind,
behavin weel, hospitable, skilfu’ in
teachin,
3. No gien to wine, nae striker;
but thochtfu’, again contention, no
glaumin eftir siller;
4. Bearin rule weel in his ain hoose,
haein bairns in submission wi’ a’ pro-
priety;
5. For gin ane kens-na hoo to pre-
side ower his ain hoose, hoo sal he
tak chairo’ the Kirk o’ God !
6. No a new convert; least, bein
swalled-up, he fa’ intil the condemna-
tion o’ Sautan.
7. And mair: he maun hae a gude
testimonial frae thae oot-by, least he
fa’ intil reproach, and the snare o’
the adversary.
8. And Deacons maun be grave;
wi’ seafould tongue, no gien to mickle
wine, no greedy o’ canker’t gain;
9. Haudin the mysterie o’ the
faith wi’ a clean conscience.
10. And lat thir, as weel, be first
testit; then lat them tak service,
bein fund wyteless.
11. The wives, i’ the same way,
grave; no gien to slander; douce,
leal in a’ things.
12. Lat the Deacons be husbands
o’ ae wife, airtin their bairns weel,
and their ain hooses.
13. For thar wha weel hae ser’t,
win to their sels a gude stauin, and
mickle freedom o’ speech i’ the faith,
that is in Christ Jesus.
14. Thir things I write to ye;
lookin forrit to comin till ye sune.
15. But, gin aibins I soud delay,
that ye may ken hoo it is necessar i’
the hoose o’ God to conduct ane’s sel,
whilk in truth is the Kirk o’ the
Leavin God, the pillar and grund-
wa’-stane o’ the truth.
16. And, ayont a’ doot, great is
the mysterie o’ godliness! He was

1V. 10. The buskin iana to be gowd, or
pearlins, or hair buskit wi’ tinsel, but
gude warks: aye bonnie i’ the Maister’s
sicht!
made kent i' the flesh, declar't richtous by the Spirit, seen o' Angels, was preached amang the nations, was lippencen on i' the world, was tae up in glorie!

CHAPTIR FOWR.
What the Spirit says. Tak ye gude tent tillt!

BUT the Spirit says in express words, that i' the hinmaist times, some wull gang agley frae the faith, takin tent to beguillin spirits, and to teachins o' demons,

2. Speakin lees in doobleness, seared as wi' a het airn i' their ain conscience,

3. Forbidden mairriage, and layin doon abstinence frae meats, whilk God creatit tae be receivit wi' a' thanksgivin o' thae wha hae faith, and ken the truth.

4. For ilka creatur o' God is gude, and nane to be cuisten-aside gin it be receiv't wi' thanksgivin;

5. For it is made holy by God's word and by prayer.

6. Airtin the brethren in mind o' thir things, ye sal be a gude servant o' Christ Jesus, nouriced wi' the words o' faith and gude teacin that ye hae closely follow't.

7. But refuse ye godless and auld wives' tales: and train yersel into godliness.

8. For bodily exercisses profit but a wee; but godliness is profitable for a' things; haen a promise o' life, noo and comin.

9. Faithfu' the word! and wordie o' a' receivin.

10. For to this end are we toillin and strivin' for that we hae putten oor hope in the leevin God, wha is the Saviour o' a' men, special o' thae that believe.

11. Gie chairge as to thir things, and teach them.

12. Let nae man lichtlie yere youth, but be ye a paittern o' them that believe, in word, in conduc'in love, in lealness, in pureness.

13. Till I come, gie gude attent to the readin, to exhortin, to teachin.

14. Neglect-na the gift in ye, that was gien ye throwe prophesie, wi' the layin-on o' bauns o' the Eldership.

15. Gie thir things yere care: gie yersel to them: that yere progress may be seen by a'.

16. Gie gude tent to yersel and to the teacin. Bide in them: for, sae doin, baith yersel sal ye save and them hearin ye.

CHAPTIR FYVE.
To care weel for the weedows; and lat-na them lack wha toil in the Word!

ENSURE: NA an Elder, but entreat him as a fathier; the young'er men like brithers:

2. Elderly weemen as mithers; young'er weemen as sisters, in a' purity.

3. Honor weedows that are true weedows.

4. But gin ony weedow has bairns or oes, lat them first learn to schaw reverence to their ain folk, and to mak a return to their forbears: for this is weel-pleasin to God.

5. Noo she that is a true weedow, and desolate, has putten her hope in God, and is gien gude tent to supplications and prayers nicht and day.

6. But she that is gien her sel to pleurs, is deid while she yet leevies.

7. And thir things gie ye in chairge, that they may be wyteless.

8. But gin ony ane has nae care for his ain, special for thae o' his ain hoosehauld, he is denyin the faith, and is waurn nor an unbeliever!

9. Lat a weedow be coontit-in when she comes to be nae less than sixty year; that has been ae man's wife;

1 V. 5 Warns sibillins the "weedows" in general, the discardit wives o'converted polygamists; and the "true weedows" thae whase husbands war deid?
I. TIMOTHY, VI.

10. Weel-attestit for her gude works: gif she has brocht up bairns, gif she schawed hospitality, gif she weash't the saunt's feet, gif she helpet tae in distress, gif she gaed a' gude works.

11. But young'er weedows tak-na in! for whan they grow reestie again Christ, they wull desire mairriage.

12. Haein as their condemnation, that their first faith they turned-frae.

13. And forby, they learn to be traikin, gaun aboot frea hoose to hoose; aye, and no traikers alone, but tell-pyats and busybodies, speakin things that soudna be spoken.

14. I desire, than, that the young'er weemen mairry, bear weans, guide the hoose, gian nae occasion for the adversary to reproach.

15. For e'en noo a wheen are gane agley eftir Sautan.

16. Gin ony believin wumman has weedows, lat her be helpin them, and lat-na the Kirk be burden't; that it may help thae that are true weedows.

17. Lat the Elders that bear rule weel be reckoned wordie o' dooble honor; special they wha toil sair in the word and teachin.

18. For the Scriptur says, "A threshin-ox ye sanna muzzle"; and, "Wordie the toiler o' his fee."

19. Again an elder enterteen ye nae chairge, except "Afore twa or thrie witnesse."

20. Thae wha are sinners, reprove ye i' the presence o' a', that the lave may bae fear.

21. I chairge ye, i' the sicht o' God, and Christ Jesus, and the weel-lov'd Angels, that ye tak tent o' thir things, wi' nae fore-judgment; and doin naething for the sake o' inclination.

22. Lay hauns in haste on nae man, nor bae ye airt nor pairt wi' the sins o' unco folk. Keep yersel pure!

23. Drink nae mair watir only, but a drappie wine be ye takin, for yere stamack's sake, and yere aft illnesses.

24. Some men's sins are openly seen, gaun on till judgment; and wi' some, they follow eftir:

25. I' the same mairner, gude works are openly seen; and thae that are-na sic, canna bide hidden.

CHAPTIR SAX.
Content, the best gear. The Gude-Fecht, and the Gude-Treasur ayont.

LAT as mony as are servants under comman, reckon their ain maisters wordie o' a' honor; least the name o' God and the teachin be spoken-again.

2. But thae that bae maisters believin, lat tham no lichtlie tham for that they are brethren, but a'-the-mair do them service on accoont o' being believers and belov'd, partakers o' the same gude-workin. Thir things teach and threep.

3. Gif ony ane differs in his teachin' and stauns-na by halesome words, thae o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine conform to godliness.

4. He is swelled up, skelie in naething, but donnert about quaisens and argle-barglin o' words, oot o' whilk come envy, strivins, misca'ins, ill-surmisins.

5. Unendin tulzies o' men clean-corrupt i' their minds, and wantin the truth, thinkin that godliness is gain.

6. But godliness, wi' content, is unco gain.

7. For naething brocht we into the world, naither are we able to cairry ocht oot.

8. And haein meat and coverin, wi' thir we sal bae eneuch.

9. But thae wha bude be rich, are fa'in into a temptation and a gin, and mony gaikit and ill desiers; whilk ding men into ruin and destruction.

1 V. 5. That is, they think that se chief end o' godliness is to help men ou to win gear. Let us be wyss, and mind what follows. See v. 6-11.
10. For, a rute o' ill-doin is the love o' siller; whilk while some follow't eftir, they war drawn awa frae the faith, and thringed their sels throwe-and-throwe wi' mony pangs.

11. But you, O man o' God! flee frae thir things; and follow ye richt-ousness, godliness, faith, love, lang-tholin, meekness.

12. Fecht ye the noble fecht o' the faith! lay hau'd on the ever-bidin Life, to whilk ye war bidden, and did confess a noble confession forment mony witnesses.

13. I chairge ye i't the sicht o' God, wha gives life to a' things, and o' Christ Jesus, wha confessit afore Pontius Pilate a noble confession.

14. That ye keep the commoun wantin a spot, wantin a' reproach, until the appearin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Whilk glorie in its ain times

---

1 V. 14. The English reader wull tak tent that "wantin," in Scots, means "lack-ing": seldom means "desirin."
CHAPITIR ANE.

Aboot their sel—Paul; Timothy, his mither, and the love.

Paul, an Apostle o' Christ Jesus, throwe the wull o' God, conform to the promise o' Life that is in Christ Jesus,

2. To Timothy, my weel-lo'ed bairn: Tender love, mercie, peace, frae God the Faither, and Christ Jesus oor Lord.

3. Thanks hae I tae God, wham frae my forebears I worship wi' a clean conscience, that I hae constant mind o' ye in my petitions; nicht and day.

4. Bein unco fain to see ye, mindin yere tears, that I may be fu' o' joy;

5. Bein remindit o' the aesauald faith that is in ye, whilk in truth dwalt first i' yere gran'-mither Lois, and i' yere mither Eunice; and I am perswadit in you as weil.

6. And for this cause I pit ye in mind to steer up God's gift that is in ye, throwe the layin-on o' my hauns.

7. For God hasna gien us a spirit o' cowardrie, but o' pooer, and love, and o' a hale mind.

8. Be-na, than, ashamed o' the testimonie o' oor Lord, nor yet o' me his prisoner; but, co-sufferin ill wi' the Gude-word, conform to the pooer o' God;

9. Wha saved us, and bade us wi' a holie biddin—no conform to oor works, but conform to an allenaar purpose and favor—that whilk was gien us in Christ Jesus afore the ages began,

10. But is e-noo made plain throwe the forth-shinin' o' oor Saviour Christ Jesus; wha pat awa death, but brocht to licht life and immortality, throwe the Gude-word:

11. O' whilk I was set as a herald, and an Apostle, and a teacher o' the Nations.

12. For whilk cause I dree thir things; but I am-na putten to shame, for I ken him in whom I hae lippened, and am perswadit that he is mighty to gaird what I hae committit to him, to that day.

13. Keep ye the paitioner o' hale-some teachins ye heard frae me, in faith and love, that whilk is in Christ Jesus.

14. The gude thing in yere keepin, gaird ye by the Holie Spirit, wha dwells in us!

15. This ye ken, that a' they o' Asia are gane frae me, o' wham are Phygelus and Hermogenes.

16. May the Lord gie mercie tae the hoose o' Onesiphorus, for that he aft refresh't me, and wasna sham't o' my chain:

17. But, bein in Rome, eidentlie socht me, and faund me.

18. May the Lord grant to him that he find mercie frae the Lord i' that day! and hoo mony times he ser'd at Epheusus, ye ken better yersel.

CHAPITIR TWA.

He urges Timothy to be laborious, wyse, pure, and meek.

Ye, than, my bairn, be strang i' the tender-love that is in Christ Jesus.

2. And what ye heard o' me throwe mony witnesses, the same things commit ye to aesauald men; sic as can e'en teach ithers.

3. Thole affliction alang wi' us, as a gude sodger o' Christ Jesus.

15. What the "paitioner" was, we ken-na; maist like it was a wheen fundamentals Paul aft gaed ower in his preachins.
4. Nae ane ser'in as a sodger
taigles his sel i' the affairs o' his
"leevin" ; that he may please him
wha summoned him as a sodger.

5. And, gin ane be contestin
for the gree, he isna crooned, gin he con-
test-na in a lawfu' way.

6. The tiller o' the grund that
toils maun first partak o' the frute.

7. Ponder ye what I say ; and the
Lord wull gie ye discernment in a'
things.

8. Keep in mind Jesus Christ, o'
Dauvid's seed, raised frae the deid,
conform to my Blythe-Message :

9. In whilk I dree affliction, s'en
to bonds, as an ill-doer, but God's
word hasna been bune.

10. For this cause I thole a' things,
for the sake o' the chosen anes, that
they may obteem salvation, that whilk
is in Christ Jesus, wi' glorie never-
endin.

11. Faithfu' is the 1 sayin! "Gin
we dee't thegither, we sal eke leeve
thegither.

12. "Gin we dree, we sal eke
reign thegither ; gin we deny, he too
wull deny us ;

13. "Gin we be fause, he leal and
true wull aye remain ! for he canna
be fause to his sel."

14. O' these things pit them in
mind, bearin witness i' the sight o'
the Lord, no to be battlin aboot
words for nae gude, but for the
pu'in-doon o' thea listenin.

15. Gie gude tent to present yer-
sel tae God, a workman no tae be
putten to shame, portionin-oot wyssly
the word o' truth.

16. But shun ungodly, vain haivers;
for they wull but bouk intil mair
ungodliness.

17. And their words wull spread
as a canker ; o' wham is Hymeneus
and Philetus ;

18. Wha, in sooth, anent the truth
hae gane agley frae the mark,
threepin that the Risin-again is a'
by-past ; and are destroyin the
faith o' some.

19. Nane-the-less, the steive funda-
tion o' God stauns, bæin this seal-
mark, "The Lord kens his ain !" and,"Lat ilka ane namin the name
o' the Lord, haud awa frae unright-
ousness !"

20. But in a great hoose they are-na
only veschels o' gowd and o' siller,
but eke o' wud and o' clay ; and some
for honor and some for dishonor.

21. Gin, than, ane purify his sel
frae siclike, he sal be an honor-
able veschel, purify't, usefu' to the
Maister ; made ready for a' gude
warks.

22. But the passions o' youth div
thou flee ! and follow on eftir right-
ousness, faith, love, peace, thegither
wi' thae wha are waitin on the Lord
oot o' a pure heart.

23. Frea glaikit and ignorant quais-
tens haud awa, kennin that they
beget strifes.

24. And the servant o' the Lord
soudna strive; but to be cannie to a' ;
gleg at teachin ; ready to thole ill ;

25. In meekness instructin thea
wha set up their sels as contrar, gif
at ony time God gie them repent-
ance, for winnin' fu' knowledge o'
the truth ;

26. And that they soud come to
their sels, and win oot o' the snare o'
the Adversary, wha war taen alive
by him at his wull.

CHAPTER THRIE.

Ill men comin. But hand ye weel tae
the truth.

But o' this tak ye tent, that i' the
last days fearsome times wull
come.

V. 11. We dinna find this "sayin" ony-
gate i' the Scriptur : it was ablins a
verse o' some kirk-sang ; wi' the bonnie
owerword, "For he canna be fause to
his sel !"

V. 18. Ablins they still held, wi' the
unbelievin Greeks, that thar was nae
"Risin-again" for the body ; or that the
New Birth was a' the "Risin-again" we
war to look for.
2. For men wull be lovers o' their sels, lovers o' siller, boastfu', prood, misca'ers, undutifit' to parents, thankless, unholie.
3. Wantin proper affection, twa-fault, slanderers, unrestrained, harsh, haters o' the just,
4. Fause anes, reckless, ram-stam, lovers o' pleasur mair nor lovers o' God,
5. Mainteenin a shadow o' godliness, but castin awa its poore; Frae a' thir turn ye awa!
6. For frae 'mang thir are they wha creep intil hooses, and lead awa witless weemen, happit ower wi' mony temptations:
7. Aye learnin, and never able to come intil the fu' knowledge o' the truth.
8. But in siclike way as ¹ Jannes and Jambres stude up again Moses, sae thir men staun up again the truth: men a' corruptit i' their mind; and to be rejekit as regairds the faith.
9. But they'ze gang on nae mair, for their folly sal be seen o' a' men, as was the ITHERS'.
10. But ye did closely pattern efir my teachin, mainner o' life, ettlins, faith, lang-tholin, dreein,
11. Persecutions, sufferins; whatna things happened to me in Antioch, in Iconium, in Lystra; whatna persecutions I dred; and oot o' them a' the Lord brocht me!
12. But a'wha mak choice to leve godly in Christ Jesus wull be persecuted!
13. But ill men and deceivers wull warsle on their way to the warst, deceivin, and bein deceived.
14. But div ye bide siccak i' the things ye did learn, and war lippened-wi', kennin frae whatna teacher ye learned them,
15. And that, frae a bairn, ye kent the boile Scriptures, that are able to mak ye wyse to salvation, throwe faith that is in Christ Jesus.
16. A' Scriptur is wi' the breath o' God, and is o' profit for teachin, for convincin, for correctin, for trainin in godliness:
17. In order that the man o' God may be perfete, weel-fetttit' for ilka gude wark.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

His Hame-comin no far awa! His last chairge tae Timothy.

I CHAIRGE ye i' the presence o' God, and Christ Jesus wha is to judge the leevin and the deid, and by his shinin-forth and kingdom,
2. Gie oot the word! Press ye in season and oot o' season; convince, rebute, entreat, wi' a lang-tholin and doctrine.
3. For thar wull be a time whan balesome teachin they winna thole: but, conform to their ain desires, and haein a yeuck i' their lugs, wull gaither-up teachers to theirsels;
4. And wull turn awa frae hearin the truth, and turn agley to glaikit tales.
5. But be ye watchfu' in a' things, thole afflictions, do the wark o' an evangelist, fulfil yere service.
6. For I am bein ṭoff'er't, and the time o' my settin-free is at haun.
7. The gude-fecht hae I fochtien, the race hae I run, the faith hae I keepit!
8. And as for the lave: thar is lyin-by for me a holy croon, that the Lord the Richitous Judge wull gie me i' that day; yet no allenar tae me, but eke tae a' thae wha love his shinin-forth.
9. Gie gude tent to come tae me wi' speed.
10. For Demas gaed awa frae me, earin for this present life, and has

¹ V. 8. A' we ken o' thir men, gin it be-na for a wheem dootfu' tales about them i' the books o' the auld Jews, is what is here tellt'. It makes us wae to think that some men's names are only keepit mind o' for the ill they did!

² V. 6. He speaks o' his sel as bein teemed-oof ['off'er't'] as a drink-offeran was, at the altar; and bein "set free" [by death]
gane to Thessalonica; Crescens intil Gaul; Titus intil Dalmatia.

11. Luke alane is wi' me. Tak Mark, and feeb him wi' ye; for he is o' use to me i' the service.

12. But Tychicus I had sent to Ephesus.

13. The cloak I left ashint at Troas wi' Carpus, whan ye come, bring; and the scrolls, in especial the 1 parchments.

14. Aylsander the coppersmith did me muckle skaith; the Lord wull gie to him conform to his wark.

15. As to wham, be on yere gaird; for he uncolie resistit oor words.

16. At my first hearin, nae man cam forrit to help me, but a' forsook me; may-it-na be laid to their chairege!

17. But the Lord stude by me, and strenthened me, that throwe me the preachin might be weel-kent, and a' the heathen might hear; and I was deliver't oot o' the mooth o' the lion.

18. And the Lord wull deliver me frae ilka evil wark, and bring me safe to his heavenlie kingdom: to wham be the glory for evir and aye! Amen.


20. Erastus bade in Corinth; but Trophimus I left ashint, ill, in Miletus.

21. Gie a' care to come afore winter. Thar salute ye Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and a' the brethren.

22. The Lord be wi' yere spirit. Tender-love be w'ye!

1 V. 13. Some think "the parchments" war the writins schawin his Roman citizen-ship. He aiblins gaed frae Troas in haste, on an occasion we ken-na o', to escape some bruilzie. The leavin o' the scrolls and the cloak looks like it.
TITUS.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Paul, wha left Titus abint in Crete, sends him mony instructions in his kirk-work.

PAUL, a servitor o' God, and an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, conform to the faith o' God's bidden anes, and knowledge o' the truth, that whilk is conform to godliness,

2. In hope o' Life-eternal, that the God wha isna fause promised afore the a ges;

3. But has made plain in his ain gude times his word, wi' whilk I was lippened, as by the comman o'or Saviour God,

4. To Titus, my true bairn eftir a co-ordinate faith; tender-love and peace, frae God oor Faither, and Christ Jesus oor Saviour.

5. For this end I left ye abint in Crete, that the things no yet dune ye mich pit in order, and set Elders in ilka citie, as I gied ye orders.

6. Gin ony man is wyteless, the husband o' aee wife, haein believin bairns, no wytit wi' riot or disobedience.

7. For the bishop maun be wyteless, as the steward o' God; no set in his ain wull, no sune vexed, no gien to wine, no a striker, no grippie wi' siller.

8. But hospitable, a freend o' what is gude, douce-mindit, just, holie, airtin weil his sel,

9. Keepin sterk haud o' the leal word that is conform to the 1 teachin, that he may be able to exhort i' the halesome doctrine, and to convince the contendin.

10. For a hantle are unruly; fu' o' perfec' haivers; deceivers; special they oot o' the Circumcision.

11. As to wham, it is necessar to steek their mou's; wha, in sooth, for the sake o' siller, are whamlin hail hooses, teachin things they soud-na.

12. Says ane frae 'mang their sels, a prophet o' their ain:--"Cretans; aye fause; rampin wild-bease, idle pock-puddins!"

13. This testimonie is true; for whilk cause reprove them snellie, that they may be hale i' the faith.

14. No takin tent to Jewish tales, and commans o' men wha turn their sels awa frae the truth.

15. A' things are clean to the clean: but to the unclean and unbelievin is naething clean: but baith their mind and conscience hae become unclean.

16. God they profess to ken; but i' their warks they deny him; bein abominable and dour, and until a' gude warks rejeckit.

CHAPITIR TWA.

Hoo Titus sowil teach the folk o' Crete.

BUT speak ye the things that conform to the halesome doctrine.

2. Auld men to be tentie, grave, douce-mindit, hale i' the faith; in love, in tholin;

3. The auld weemen, i' the same way, in demeanar as becomes holie anes; no giean to slander, nor yet to muckle wine made captive; teachers o' what is gude;

4. That they may lead the young weemen to lo'e their husbands, to lo'e their bairns;

5. To be douce-mindit, pure, workers-at-hame, gude, submittin to their ain husbands; least the word o' God soud be spoken again.

6. The younger men i' the same way, chaire ge ye to be douce-mindit;

7. Anent a' things schwain yere

1 V. 9. In mony places, Paul speaks o' "the Teachin," as meanin the Gude-word about Christ. In Madagascar, in oor ain day, they ca'it "the prayin."
tain sel as a pattern o' gude warks; in yere instructions, in purity, gravity,

8. Halesome speech no to be condemned; that he wha o' a contrar mind may be shamed; haecin naething ill he can say o' us.

9. Servants, be biddable to yere ain maisters; in a' things pleasin-weet, no answerin-back.

10. No pilferin, but schawin a' gude faith, that they may mak bonnie the doctrine o' oor God and Saviour in a' things.

11. For the tender-love o' God, wi' salvation for a' men, has appear't.

12. To the end that denyin oorsels as to ungodliness and worldly fainness, we sou'd live in a douce-mindit and richtous and godly manner i' the present world.

13. Ready to welcome the blessed hope and shinin-forth o' the glorie o' oor great God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

14. Wha gied himsel for us, that he might rescue us frae a' sin, and mak pure for himsel a people o' his ain, fu' o' zeal in gude warks.

15. As to thir things, be ye speakin, and entreatin, and repruvin, wi' a' authority. Lat nae man lichtlie ye!

CHAPITIR THRIE.

Mair directions to Titus; wha seemed to be amang a loose-tongued folk.

Put them weel in mind to submit their sels to rulers and authorities: to be obedient, ready to a' gude warks.

2. No to speak ill o' ony; no to be contentious: but cannie, schawin a' meekness to a' men.

3. For e'en we, at ae time, war glaikit, dour, deceived, hauen wi' mony handerins and pleurers, leevin on in malice and envy, wordie to be detestit, and hatin ane-anither.

4. But whan the unco favor and the love o' God oor Saviour to man shined oot.

5. No by warks o' richtousness we had dune oorsels, but by his mercie he sav't us, throwe the weshin o' the new birth, and a makin-new o' us by the Holie Spirit.

6. Whilk he teemed-oot on us wi' rowth, throwe Jesus Christ oor Saviour;

7. In order that bein declair't richtous by his tender-love, we micht be made heirs, by way o' hope, o' Eternal Life.

8. Faithfu' is the word! and o' thir things I wad that ye threep strangly, in order that they wha hae believed in God may be carefu' to pit their sels forrit in gude warks. Thir things are gude and profitable to men!

9. But silly quaistens, and pedi-grees, and strifes, and argle-bargles aboot points o' the Law, avoid; for they are fruteless and sapless.

10. A promoter o' factions, eftir a first and second warnin, refuse.

11. Kennin, that siccan a ane has been turned agley oot o' the way, and sins; bein 'condemned o' his sel.

12. At siccan a time as I may send Artemas to ye, or Tychicus, mak a' diligence to come to me at Nicopolis; for I hae determined to winter yonder.

13. Set forrit diligently Zenas the writer, and Apollus, that naething be wantin tae them.

14. But lat oor folk, as weil, be learnin in gude warks to pit their sels forrit in needfu' services; that they be-na ungratefu'.

15. A' they that are wi' me salute ye. Salute ye theae that loe us weil i' the faith. Tender-love be wi' ye a'.

V. 11. Sic a ane, bein wyss and cannie dealt wi', wull be checkbit by his ain conscience, and may sune come back again.

274
PHILEMON.

Paul speaks veel o' Philemon's faith; and commends his servin-man Onesimus.

PAUL, a prisoner o' Christ Jesus, and Timothy, oor brither, to Philemon, oor weel-lo'ed, and oor marrow,
2. And to Apphia oor sister, and to Archippus oor sodger-marrows, and to the Kirk in yere hoose—
3. Tender-love to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither and the Lord Jesus Christ.
4. I am gien thanks to my God, aye pittin ye i' my prayers:
5. Hearin o' yere love and faith that ye hae to the Lord Jesus, and to a' the sauntauns.
6. That the fellowship o' yere faith may be zealous in the schawin-forth o' ilka gude thing in ye, until Christ.
7. For mickle joy had I, and comfort, in yere love; for that the tender-affections o' the sauntauns are refreshed by you, brither;
8. And sae,—tho' unco bauldness o' speech I hae in Christ to press upon ye what is becomin—
9. Yet I wad rather entreat: bein sicc an ane as Paul, in eild, but noo a prisoner o' Christ Jesus.
10. I entreat you regairdin a bairn o' mine, whom I hae begotten i' my bonds, Onesimus;
11. Him, at ae time o' nae profit to ye; but noo unco serviceable to you and me;
12. Wham I send back t'ye; him, that is my ain tender-affections!
13. Wham I wad fain ettle wi' myself to detain, that, in your behauf he micht do service to me, i' the bonds o' the Gude-word.

14. But, wantin word o' yere mind, naething was I willin to do; that no o' necessity, but o' free choice, yere gude soud be.
15. For aibling for siccan a cause he was pairtit wi' ye for a wee, that ye micht hae him back for aye:
16. Nae mair as a servant, but aboon a servant, brither weel-lo'ed—vera specially to me, but hoo mickle mair to you—baith i' the flesh and the Lord!
17. Gin than ye coont me as ane wi' yersell, tak him to ye, as mysel.
18. And gin aibling he has wranged ye, or is indebted, the same tae me di' ye reckon.
19. I Paul pit it doon wi' my ain baun; I wull meet it; tho' I say-na t'ye hoo ye are awn me e'en yere ain sel.
20. Aye, brither! lat me hae joy o' ye i' the Lord: refresh ye my tender-affections in Christ!
21. Lippenin to yere courtesies, I wrate to ye, kennin that ye wull do e'en mair nor I seek.
22. But, at the same time, 1 mak me ready a lodgin; for I look forrit, throwe yere prayers, that I sal be gien as a favor to ye.
23. Thar salute ye Epaphras, my prison-marrows in Christ Jesus,
25. The tender-love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' yere spirit!

1 V. 22. Paul lookit forrit to liberty: and we tak thae to be richt wha think Paul gat awa frae Rome eftir the twa years imprisonment spoken o' in Acts.
HEBREWS.

CHAPTER ONE.

Christ far aboon Angles, and creatit things.

WAUR-AS, in a hantle o' portions and in a hantle o' ways, in auld times, God spak to the faithers by the prophets,

2. At the hinner-end o' thir days he speaks to us by his Son; whan he set forrit for an heir o' a' things; and throwe wham he made the worlds.

3. Wha, bein the radiant brightestness o' glorie, and a perfete likeness o' his sel, and uphaudin a' things by the word o' his poore—haen made a purifyin o' oor sines—sat doon on the richt haun o' the Majestie on Heigh;

4. By sae mickle bein his sel aboon the Angels, as he has inheritit a name that is far aboon their ain.

5. For to whilk o' the Angels said he at any time, "My Son art thou; this day hae I begotten thee"? And again, "I will be a Father to him; and he shall be a Son to me"?

6. But at sic a time again as he soud send the First-Begotten into the world, he says, "And let a' the Angels worship him!"

7. And o' the Angels he says, "Wha mak's his Angels be winds, and his serviters flauchts o' fire."

8. But anent the Son — "Thy thron, O God is to a' ages; and the sceptre o' thy kingdom is a sceptre o' richtouness!"

9. "Thou hast lo'ed richtouness, and scunner'd at ill; and for this

God has anointit thee wi' the oyle o' gladness aboon thy marrows!"

10. And, "Thou, Lord, at the fore-end, did set the fundation o' the yirth; and the beevens are the wraks o' thy hauns.

11. "They sal dwine awa; but thou bides for aye! And they a', as a wearin-dud, sal end;

12. "And, as a maud sal thou fauld them up; and they're be changed; but thou art aye the same, and thy years end-na!"

13. But to whilk ane o' the Angels has he said at any time, "Sit thou at my richt haun, till I mak thy faes the fit-brod o' thy feet?"

14. Are-na they a' waitin spirits, sent oot to wait on thae that sal inherit salvation?

CHAPTER TWO.

The glorious Son o' God, wha becam a man.

AND for the sake o' a' this, we soul elette sair to hand fast the things that war heard, least at any time we sould slype awa.

2. For gif the word spoken throwe Angels was stieve, and ilka gangin-agley and disobedience gat its true recompense o' reward,

3. Hoo sal we 'scape, gif we gie the gang-by to sae great a salvation; whilk in truth, begude to be spoken throwe the Lord by they wha heard, and to us was made siccar:

4. God bearin co-witness, baith wi' tokens and ferlies, and mony-fauld wraks o' poore, and gifts o' the Holie Spirit, conform to his wull?

5. For it wisna to Angels he subjectit the comin world, o' whilk we are speakin:

6. For ane in ae place bure wit- ness, sayin, "What is man, that thou
Why Christ took

soud keep him in mind? or man's barn, that thou soud visit him?

7. "Thou did i mak him for a wee, laigher nor the Angels; thou did croon him wi' glorie and honor; and did set him ower the warks o' thy hauns.

8. "Thou did pit a' things subject aneath his feet." For in makin'a' things subject to him, naething was left oot that waana made subject to him: whaur-as, noo we see-na yet a' things to him made subject.

9. But the Ane wha was "made for a wee, laigher nor the Angels," div we behauld, e'en Jesus; crooned wi' glorie and honor throwe the pangs o' death; that, by the tender-love o' God he might pree o' death for a' men.

10. For it behoo'v'd him, for whase sake are a' things, and throwe wham are a' things, in leading mony sons to glorie, that the Chieftain o' their salvation soud by sufferins be perfete.

11. For baith he wha maku holie, and they wha are made holie, are a' o' aene; for whilk cause he isna backward to ca' them "brethren."

12. Sayin', "I wull mak kent thy name to my brethren; amang a' the thrang wull I sing praise to thee!"

13. And again, "I wull stievely lippen him!" And again, "Behauld! I and the bairns God has gien me . . . . . ."

14. Seein than, that the bairns had pairt in the flesh and blude, he eke in sic manner had fellowship i' the same; that by means o' his death he micht ding the poorer o' him that had the dominion o' death, that is the Adversary;

15. And might deliver thir—as mony as frae fear o' death war a' their life under bondage.

16. For no, truly, is he takin hand o' Angels; but he lays hand o' Abra'm's seed.

17. And sae, in a' things he bude be made like his brethren; that he might be a mercifu' and leal Heigh-priest in the things o' God, to mak a reconciliation for folk's sins.

18. For, seein he dree'd his sel, and was tempit, he kens weil to rescue them that are in temptation.

CHAPTER THRIE.

Christ greater nor Moses, and wordie o' mair honor.

SAE, holie brethren, the bidden-sanes o' a heevenlie biddin, look weel at the Apostle and Heigh-Priest o'oor profession, Jesus.

2. Wha was seal to him wha made him priest, as was Moses in a' his house.

3. For he is coontit wordie o' mair glorie nor Moses, by as muckle as he wha biggs the house has mair glorie nor the house.

4. For ilka house is made by some aene; but he wha made a' things is God.

5. And, indeed, "Moses was seal in a' his house," as a steward, for a witness o' the things that war to be spoken;

6. But Christ, as a Son ower his ain house; whase house are we, gin aiblins we haud siccarr the freedom o' the promise and the glorie o' the hope to the end.

7. Whaur-for. e'en as says the Holie Spirit, "The day, gin ye may hear his voice,

8. "Harden-ye-na yere hearts, as in the bitter thrawwartness, on the day o' temptation-i' the desert,

9. "Whan yere forbears tempit me wi' a test; and saw my warks forty year.
10. "Sae was I sair vexed wi' this generation, and said, 'Aye gang they agley i' their heart, and they divna ken my ways.'

11. "Sae did I sweer i' my wrath, 'They sal enter-na intil my Rest!'

12. Tak ye tent, brethren, least at ony time thar sould be, in ony o' ye, a dour heart o' unbelief, in fa'in-awa frae the leevin God;

13. But exhort ane-the-ither, day by day, e'en as lang as it is ca'd "the day," least ony o' ye be hardened throwe the glamor o' sin.

14. For gin we haud siccar tae the binner end the beginnin o' oor faith, we hae come to be pairtners wi' Christ.

15. While it is said, "The day, gin ye wull hear his voice, harden-ye-na yere hearts, as in the bitter thravartness!"

16. For wha was't, tho' they heard, caused the bitterness? Na, didna a' theae wha cam oot o' Egypt by Moses?

17. But wham was he sair vexed wi' for forty year? Was't no wi' theae that sinned, wha fell i' the desert?

18. And to wham swure he that they soudna enter intil his 1 Rest, but to thae whar war thrown and dour?

19. And we see theywarna able to enter in for unbelief.

CHAPTIR FOWR.
The ever-bidin rest o' God is still to the fore for the believer.

LAT us than hae fear, least at ony time—tho' thar be a promise left o' enterin intil his Rest—ony frae 'mang ye soud come short o't.

2. For to us has the Joyfu'-message been gien, e'en as to them; but the word o' their hearin did them nae gude, they no makin their sels ane in faith wi' thae that harken't.

3. For we that hae had faith div enter intil the 2 Rest; conform to what he has said, "As I did sweer i' my wrath, they sanna enter intil my Rest!" tho' the warks war a' endit frae the fundation o' the yirth.

4. For he has said in a place, anent the sevventh day, thus: "And God restit on the seventh day, frae a' his warks."

5. And in this place again, "Gif they sal enter intil my Rest!"

6. Sae, seein it is left ower for some to enter intil't, and they wha afore had the Joyfu'-message deliver't to them enter't-na in, on accoont o' thravartness.

7. He still marks oot a certain day, sayin by Dauid—e'en aftir sae lang a time as that—just like as it had been said afore: "The day, gin aiblins ye hear his voice, mak-na hard yere hearts!"

8. For gin Joshua had gien "Rest" to them, he wadna i' that case hae been speakin, eftir thae things, o' anither day.

9. Sae thar is bein left ower a Sabbath-keepin for a' the folk o' God!

10. For he that enter't intil his rest, he eke has restit frae a' his warks, as God did frae his.

11. Lat us than gie a' tent to enter intil that "Rest"; least ony ane fa'e, i' the same example o' thravartness.

12. For God's word is leevin and mighty, keener nor a twa-edged sword, thringin throwe to the pairtin o'saul and spirit, o' joints and marrow; and gleg at discernin the airtins and ettlins o' the heart.

13. And thar isna a creatit thing that can be hidden frae his sicht; but a' things are nakit and laid bare to the een o' him wham we hae to do wi'.

1 V. 18. It was a bonnie ee-sweet land they had afore them I and yet they never saw it! God sauf us frae the dourness and thravartness that wad come atween us and oor Canaan Aboon.

2 V. 3. It wasna rest frae wark, but rest frae dool and sin God was promisin: and that Rest is still to the fore!
Oor great Heigh-Priest.  

14. Haein than a great Heigh-Priest, wha has gane up throu the heevens, Jesus, the Son o' God, lat us haud siccer oor confession!

15. For we haena a Heigh-Priest that hasna a brither-feelin wi' oor weaknesses; but ane wha was tempit in a' the likeness o' oorsels, yet wantin sin.

16. Lat us, than, draw nar wi' freedom o' speech to the thron o' tender-love; that we may obteenen mercie, and find favor to help us in oor need!

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Christ, the great Heigh-Priest; the first and the last o' his Order!

FOR ilka Heigh-priest, taen frae among men, is appointit for things o' God, that he may offer baith gifts and sacrificies for sins;

2. As ane wha can marrow weel in his heart wi' thae that are ignorant and gane aside; sin' he his sel is rinkit roon' wi' weakness;

3. And on this account he bude for his sel, sae for the folk, to be offerin for sins.

4. And nae man taks to him this honor, but is ca'd by God, e'en as Aaron was.

5. And sae, e'en Christ magnify't-na himsel' to be made a Heigh-priest; but raither it was be that spak to him, sayin' "My Son art thou; this day hae I begotten thee."

6. E'en as in anither place he says, "Thou, a Priest for aye, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

7. Wha, i' the days o' his flesh, eftir offerin up prayers and entreaties to him wha was strang to save him frae death, wi' sair ooteries and tears; and had been heard for his godly fear.

8. E'en tho' he was a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things that he tholed;

9. And bein perfetit, becam to a' thae obeyin him the fundation o' an endless salvation;

10. Haein been addressed by God himsel as "Heigh-Priest, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

11. Anent wham we hae muckle to say, and are sair beset hoo to say it, seein ye are become feckless in hearin.

12. For, e'en whan ye soud hae come to be teachers i' the lapse o' time, ye hae need ancie mair that ane be teachin you the vera elements o' the first principles o' the oracles o' God; and are gotten to be sic as hae need o' milk and no o' man's meat.

13. For ilka ane takin milk wants skill i' the word o' rightousness; for he is a wean:

14. But tae sic as are man-grown, pertains man's meat; to thae wha throwe proper use, hae their poors exercese't to discern baith gude and ill.

CHAPTIR SAX.

The awfu' state o' thae that fa' back. But God is strang and faithfu' to susteen!

THAR-FOR, lat us lea' thir beginnins o' the things o' Christ, and gang on toward fu' growth; no layin ower again the fundation o' turning frae deid warks, and o' faith toward God.

2. O' the teachin anent baptieezins, and o' layin-on o' hauns, and o' the Risin frae-the-deid, and o' eternal judgment.

3. And this wull we do, gin at least God permit.

4. For it isna possible, as to thae wha ancie had licht, and had preed the free-gift o' Heeven, and had been made to partak o' the Holie Spirit.

5. And had preed the sweet word o' God, and the poors o' the world to come,—

6. And then fa'in awa, ancie mair to new-form them until repentance; seein they are crucifyin ower again

1 V. 7. See Mark xiv. 36, and note; and John xix. 34, and note.
to their sels the Son o' God, and makin a public shame o' him!

7. For the grund, that sooks in the aft-fa'in rain, and brings forth what they wad fain hae wha till it, receives blessin frae God;

8. But gin it bear thorns and briers, it is no esteemed, and is na-haun bein curs't; whase end is to be brunt.

9. But we are perswaedit better things o' you, beloved, e'en things o' salvation, tho' we div sae speak.

10. For God is no ill-deedie to be forgettin yere wark and love that ye schawed forth for his name; in ser'in the saunts, and still ser'in.

11. But we hae mickle desire that ilk ane o' ye schaw forth the same perseverin, to the fu' confidence o' hope, e'en tae the end.

12. That ye be-na slack, but followin on eftir thae wha by faith and long-tholin fell heirs to the promises.

13. For whan God made promise to Abra'm, seein thar war nane greater to sweer by, he bware by his sel,

14. Sayin, "Certee, in blessin wull I bless thee; and in multiplyin wull I multiply thee!"

15. And sae, tholin patiently, he gat the promise.

16. For men sweer by ane greater; and wi' them an aith is the end o' a' disputin.

17. And sae God, bein muckle mair willin to schaw forth to the heirs o' the promise the siccarness o' his coosel, cam in wi' an aith.

18. For by 1 twa unchangeable things, in whilk it wasna possible for God to be fause, a stie consolation we soud hae, wha fled to grip the hope set afore us;

19. Whilk hope we hae as an anchor o' the sault, baith siccar and sure, and comin ben within the veil.

20. Whaur Jesus, as fore-rinner for us, has enter't; wha "was made a Heigh-priest for aye, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

CHAPTER SEVEN.

Jesus Christ, a Priest o' Melchizedek: grander nor Aaron.

FOR this Melchizedek, king o' Salem, priest o' God Maist Heigh, that forgather't wi' Abra'm as he cam back frae the slauchtir o' the kings, and bless't him;

2. Till wham gied Abra'm e'en a tenth o' a': he bein first, by translation, "King o' Righteousness," and than as weel, "King o' Salem," whilk is "King o' Peace,"

3. Wantin faither, wantin mither, without pedigree, haein neither beginnin o' days nor end o' life; but made to be like the Son o' God—bides a Priest without interruption.

4. And noo think hoo great this man is, till wham Abra'm gied a tenth oot o' the best spoil, e'en Abra'm the patriarch!

5. And they, truly, frae amang Levi's sons who are gien the priesthood, hae instructions to tak tithes o' the folk, conform to the law; that is, o' their brethren, e'en tho' they hae come oot o' the loins o' Abra'm!

6. But he wha wins-na his pedigree frae them, gat tithes frae Abram, and bless't him wha had the promises.

7. But, aboon a' disputin, the heigher aye blesses the laigher.

8. And here, truly, men wha dee tak tithes; but thar ane taks them wha obteens witness that he leeves.

9. And, sae to speak, e'en Levi, wha takis tithes, pays tithes throwe Abra'm:

10. For yet i' the loins o' his faither was he, whan Melchizedek forgather't wi' him.

11. Noo truly than, gin thar war a perfetin throwe the Levitical

---

1 V. 18. What the "twa things" war, the text dian a mak vera clear. Aibline we soud tak it as first, the promise; second, the aith.
priesthood (for 'neath it the folk had the Law gien them) whatna need was thar for a different Priest to be raised up, “conform to the order o' Melchizedek,” and no be named as “conform to the order of Aaron!”

12. For seein thar is a change o' priesthood, thar maun e'en as weel be a change o' Law.

13. For be o' wham thir things are said has pairt wi' a different tribe; frae whilk nae man has gien attendance at the altar.

14. For the truth is siccer, that oot o' Judah sprang oor Lord; anent whilk tribe Moses spak naething aboot priests.

15. And still muckle mair is it evident, that, conform to the likeness o' Melchizedek, is to be raised up a different Priest.

16. Wha has been made a Priest, no conform to the rule o' a commandment dealin wi' flesh, but conform to the poore o' a Life for Aye.

17. For it is witnessed, “Thou art a Priest for aye; o' the order o' Melchizedek!”

18. For truly, a settin-side o' a fore-gaun commandment comes aboot, on account o' its weakness and want o' profit.

19. For the Law brocht naething to perfection; but thar is the comin-o' a better hope, throwe whilk we draw nar to God.

20. And inasmuckle as it wasna wantin an aith-takin—

21. For thae priests war made wantin an aith; wha'ur-as he wi' an aith-takin, by him that said to him, “The Lord swure, and gangs-na back, ‘Thou art a Priest for Aye, o' the order o' Melchizedek!’”

22. By sae muckle as this, has Jesus come to be 1 ca'tion o' a heigher covenant.

23. And truly, in lairger numbers hae they been made priests, for that on account o' death they couldna bide;

24. But he, in that he bides for aye, ever-constant honds the priesthood.

25. Sae is he able to sauf to a' extemitie thae that come throwe him to God; leevin aye, to intercede in their behauf.

26. For siccan a Heigh-Priest as this for us was aye meet, wha was holie, innocent, uncorrupt, sindy frae sinners, and made to be aboon the heeveens.

27. Wha has nae need, day by day, to be offerin up sacrificieses, like thae Heigh-priests, for his ain sins, and than for thae o' the folk. For this he did, ance for a', than his ain sel he offer't!

28. For the Law appointit men Heigh-priests, haein weakness; but the word o' the aith-takin (whilk was efir the Law) appoints the Son, wha is consecrate for evermair.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

Christ's priesthood heigher nor Aaron's; and the Gospel winder nar the auld covenant.

BUT, as bringing to a point what we hae said: Siccan a Heigh-Priest hae we as this, wha is set on the richt baun' o' the thron o' The Majestic i' the Heeveens;

2. O’ the Holie Place, and o’ the true tabernacle, whilk the Lord pitched, and no a man.

3. For ilka Heigh-priest is oordened for the offerin o’ baith gifts and sacrificieses; and it was necessar for this ane too, that he soud hae that whilk he might offer.

4. Gin than the Lord had been on yirth, he hadna been a priest ava; sin’ thar are thae, offering the gifts conform to the “Law.”

5. Wha e'en, as a glint and shadow o’ heevenlie things, are doin service; e'en as Moses had word whan about to finish the tabernacle: “For tak tent,” says he, “that ye mak a'
things conform to the paittern schawn ye i' the mount."

6. But noo has he obtained a mair noble ministry, by as muckle as he is the Mediator o' a heigher covenant, whilk is established on heigher promises.

7. For gin the first had been perfete, nae need wad thar haes been for a second.

8. For as wytin them, he says, "Tak tent! the days come, says the Lord, that I wull mak wi' the hoose o' Isra'il and the hoose o' Judah a new covenant.

9. No conform to the covenant I made wi' their forbears, i' the day I took them by the haun, to lead them oot o' the land o' Egypt; for it was that they bade-na i' my covenant, and I disregarid it them, says the Lord.

10. "But this is the covenant I wull covenant wi' Isra'il's house eftir thae days, says the Lord, I wull pit my laws i' their minds, and write them on their hearts; and I wull be to them for a God, and they sal be for me a folk.

11. "And nae need, ilk ane to teach his marrow, or ilk ane his brother, sayin, 'Ken ye the Lord!' for a' they sal ken me, frae the sma'est to the greatest o' them.

12. "For I wull be mercifu' to their unrichtouness, and o' their sins will I be mindfu' nae mair!"

13. By this word, "A new covenant," he made the first ane auld": but what is made past use and auld, is passin awa.

CHAPTIR NINE.

The ordinances and offerans o' the Law war but the fore-gaun shadow o' the better things comin.

AND eke the first covenant had its ordinances o' divine service, and a sanctuary o' this present warld.

2. For a tabernacle was plennisht; the first, in whilk war baih the lamp-steal and the table, and the settin-forth o' the breid; whilk is ca'd the "Holie."

3. But, eftir the second veil, the tabernacle ca'd the "Holie o' Holies":

4. Haein a godwen censer, and the Ark o' the Covenant, overlaid wi' gowd, in whilk was a godwen pat haudin the manna, and Aaron's wand that bloomed, and the tables o' the covenant;

5. But ower aboon it the Cherubim o' glorie, ower-shadin the Mercy-seat; anent whilk things it is nae necessar e-noo to speak specially.

6. Noo, when thir things war sae ordeneed, intil the first tabernacle gaed aye continually the priests, makin the services:

7. But intil the second the Heigh-priest alone, aneilk year; and no wantin blude, whilk he offers for his sel, and for the blin'ness o' the folk.

8. The Holie Spirit sae makin it seen, that the gate to the Holiest hadna yet been made plain, whils the first tabernacle was staunin.

9. Whilk indeed was a likeness for the time noo come; conform to whilk was offer't baith gifts and offerans, that cannna, as to the conscience, mak him perfete wha offers the service;

10. Bein but eatin and drinkin, and a hantle o' purifications, appointit to a time o' mair licht.

11. But whan Christ drew nar, a Heigh-priest, o' comin gude things, throwe the better and mair perfete tabernacle, no made wi' hauns, that is, no o' this creation,

12. Nor yet throwe blude o' goats and caubes, but throwe his ain blude he enter't in, ane for a', to the Holie Place, haein won Eternal redemption!

13. For gin the blude o' goats and bulls, and the assis o' a quy, strink-

1 V. 6. The "heigher" covenant God was makin wi' them in Christ, was nae newer than the ane was whan he brocht them oot o' Egypt! And yet for that it was "new," it "contradicts the auld," quo' the Jews! And they wad hae nae o't!
lin the desil'd, sanctifies to the pure-ness o' the flesh,

14. Hoo muckle mair sal the blude o' Christ, wha, throwe the ever-leevin Spirit offer't his sel, wantin blemish, until God, purify yere conscience frae deid wurks, to the offerin up o' a divine service to the leevin God!

15. And for sic a reason is he the Mediator o' a new covenant; to the end, that a death haein taen place, for the redeemin o' sins aneath the first covenant, thet that has been invitit may receive the promise o' Eternal inheritance.

16. For whaur a covenant is, it is necessar that a death soud come in, on his side wha covenants.

17. For a covenant is made siccarr, eftir a death: but it is o' nae effeck while the 1 "covenanter" leeves.

18. And sae, no e'en the first covenant was consecrate wantin blude.

19. For whan a' the communas war spoken conform tae the Law, by Moses to the folk, takin the blude o' the cauves and the goats, wi' warit and scarlet oo', and hyssop, he strink'it bairth the buik and a' the folk;

20. Sayin, "This is the blude o' the covenant whilk God sent in commun to you!"

21. Aye, and the tabernacle as weel, and a' the vesseles o' the service, strinck't be in like mainner wi' the blude.

22. And nar-haun a' things are purify't wi' blude; conform to the Law; and, wantin the blude-sheddin, is nae remission.

23. It was a necessity than, for the imitations o' things in heeven to be purify't wi' sic; but the hevenlie things theirsels wi' better sacrificees than thir.

24. For no intil Holies made-wi' hauns did Christ gang in—that war but figures o' the true Holies—but intil Heeven itsel, noo to come plainly afore the face o' God for us.

25. Nor yet that aft-times soud he be offerin his sel; like as the Heigh-priest enters the Holie-Place, year by year, wi' ither's blude.

26. Else had it been needfu' for him aften to suffer, frae the beginnig a' the warld. But noo, ance at the end o' the time has he been schawn, for the settin-by o' sin, throwe his sacrifice.

27. And, inasmuckle as it is laid up for men ance to dee, and eftir this the Judgment.

28. Sae Christ, haein ance for a' been offer't, and carryt the sin o' mony, sal appeir a second time, apairt frae sin, to thae that fain wait for him, for their salvation.

CHAPTER TEN.

Christ's sacrificee unco better than thae o' the Law. Warins again hack-yaun.

F or the Law, wi' a shadow o' the gude things to come, and no the perfete likenes o' the things their sels, canna wi' thae sacrificees offer't up year by year aye, mak perfete them that draw nar.

2. For than wadna they quat bein offer't? for they worshippin, bein 2 ance for a' purify't, wad hae nae mair conscience o' sins!

3. But, in them, is a bringin-back to mind o' sins, year by year.

4. Impossible is't for blude o' bulls and goats to tak awa sins!

5. Whaur-for, comin intil the warld, he says, "Sacrificee and offeran thou willest-na, but a body didst thou prepare for me.

6. "In hail brunt-offerans, and offerans for sins, thou dist-na joy;

1 V. 17. "Covenanter" here, isna ane o' the pairties makin the covenant, but that whilk mak's siccarr the covenant—the sacrificee offer't. The text is no vera clear; but "covenanter" is the word the Apostle uses.

2 V. 2. The Jews war sair misguidit by their Scribes, and gar't to think the offerans theirsels took awa sin. But the Ae-offeran needs nae repeatin, as thae offerans are.
7. “Than said I, ‘Behauld, I am come—(at the heid o’ the buik it is written o’ me)—to do thy wull, O God!’”

8. Ahoon, sayin, “Sacrifices and offerans, and baill brunt-offerans, and offerans for sin thou willest-ns, naither didst joy in”—sic as, conform to the Law, are offer’t;

9. Than did he say, “Behauld! I am come to do thy wull!” He taks awa the first, that he may mak siccar the second.

10. By the whilk wull we are made holie, throw the offerin o’ the body o’ Jesus Christ ancie for a’.

11. And ilka priest stauns, in truth, day eftr day servin, and offerin ower again the same sacrificces; whilk, truly, can never tak awa sins;

12. But he, haein offer’t ae sacrificce for sins for evermair, sut doon at God’s richt haun;

13. Frae this waitin, “till his faes be made the fit-brod o’ his feet.”

14. For by the Ae-offeran he has perfettit for evermair them that are sanctifyt’.

15. And the Holie Spirit himsel bears witness for us; for eftr he had said,

16. “This is the covenant I wull covenant wi’ them eftr the days,” says Jehovah, “Gien my laws on their hearts, I wull write them on their minds;”

17. He says mair: “Their sins and their ill-deediness wull I naewise mind ony mair.”

18. Noo, whaurse’e’er they are re-mittit, thar is nae mair offeran for sin needfu’.

19. Haein than, brethren, bauldness o’ speech to enter intil the Holiest by the blude o’ Jesus,

20. Whilk enterin-in he has consecrate for us, a new way, and a way o’ Life, throw the veil (that is, his flesh),

21. And haein sic a great Heigh-Priest ower the hoosebauld o’ God,

22. Lat us come nar, wi’ leal hearts, in the fu’ confidence o’ faith; haein been strinkl’t in oor hearts frae an ill conscience; and haein been wesh’t in oor bodies wi’ pure wattr;

23. Lat us band siccar the confession o’ oor hope wi’ nae wafflin; for leal is he that did undertak.

24. And lat us think upo’ ane-anither, for an encouragin to love and gude warks:

25. No lattin-fa’ the forgatherin o’ oorsels, e’en as it is the way wi’ some; but, perswadin aye; and sae muckle the mair, as ye see the dawin o’ the day.

26. For gif we gang on sinnin eftr receivin the knowledge o’ the truth, nae langer, for sin, is thar remainin a sacrificce;

27. But a fearsome lookin-forrit tae judgment, and a sauntness o’ fire, that sal devour the enemy.

28. Ane that set aside Moses’ Law, dee’t without pitie, “afore twa or thrw witnessse.”

29. O’ hoo muckle sairer punishment, think ye, sal he be hauchen wordie, wha trampt the Son o’ God under fit; and held as an unclean thing the blude o’ the covenant by whilk he is consecrate, and did wantonly misca’ the Spirit o’ love?

30. For we ken wha said, “To me perteens avenging; I wull recom pense!” and again, “Jehovah wull judge his folk.”

31. It is a fearsome thing to fa’ intil the hauns o’ a Leevin God!

32. But mind-ye-na the days gan by, in whilk, ance ye gat licht, ye tholed an unco fecht o’ sufferans?

33. Some pairt that ye war made, wi’ misca’in and grieves, a ferlie for men; and some pairt that ye war made marrows o’ thae that war sae dune till.

34. For ye took the pairt o’ thae in bonds, and tholed the poindin o’ yere gear wi’ joy, kennis that ye hae for yersels better and ever-bidin gear.

35. Ye maunna cast awa, than,
yere baldness o' speech; whilk in truth has unco reward!
36. For ye hae need o' patience, that haein dune God's wull, ye may win the promise:
37. For yet, "A wee while, fleetin, fleetin! the Comin Ane sal come, and no delay!
38. "But the richtous ane by faith sal leeve; but gin ye gang back, my saul delights-na in him!"
39. But we are-na o' them wha gang back to perdation; but o' faith, to the salvation o' the saul.

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.
What faith is? and wha had it, and how they made it to be seen? A noble beaddroll.
NOO faith is gruppin the substance o' things lookit-for; the confidence o' real-things no yet seen.
2. For thar-in the Elders had gude-witness borne them.
3. Throwe faith we come to ken the warld's war ord'ry by the words of God, sae as that whilk is seen was made oot o' what was seen-na.
4. Throwe faith Abel offer't to God a mair perfete sacrifice than Cain; by whilk he obteened testimonie that he was richtous, God testifying anent his gifts: and throwe it, though he dee't, he is still speakin.
5. Throwe faith Enoch was translatis sae as no to see death, and was seen-na, for God had translatis him; for afore the translation he had testimonie borne to him that he had been weel-pleasin to God.
6. But, wantin faith, it isna possible to be weel-pleasin to him; for he that comes to God maun needs hae faith that he is, and that to thae that seek him a Rewarder is he.
7. Throwe faith Noah, being tellt o' things as yet no seen, wrocht-on by godly fear, made ready an ark to the savin o' his hosebauld; throwe whilk he condemned the warld, and becam heir o' the righteousnesse o' faith.
8. Throwe faith Abra'm—he wha was tell't—obey'd to gang till a place he was to hae for a heritate; and gaed oot, no weel-kennin whaur he was gaun.
9. Throwe faith he bade day-by-day i' the Land o' Promise, as in a fremd land; bidin in tents, wi' Isaac and Jacob, joint-heirs o' the same promise:
10. For he was waitin for the Citiie wi' fundations, biggit, and planned by God.
11. Throwe faith e'en Sarah her sel had strength to conceive, whan she was ayont age: seein that she was haudin him as faithfu' that had promised.
12. And sae, e'en frae ane was thar born—and him as he war deid—"as mony as the stars o' the sky in their thrang, and as the sand by the lip o' the sea; no to be number't."
13. And conform to faith, dee't a' thir; no haen their sels grippit the promises, but seein them far awa, and salutin them, and confessin that they their sels war fremd anes, and lodgers on the yirth.
14. For they that say sic things, mak it plain to be kent that they are seekin a land o' their ain.
15. For gin they had been thinkin aye o' the land they came frae, they might hae had opportunity o' returnin:
16. But noo they look for a better land, that is a heavenlie ane; whaur-for God isna ashamed o' them to be socht till as their God; for he did prepare for them a Citiie.
17. Throwe faith Abra'm when he was testit, offer't up Isaac; aye, he wha blythely acceptit the promises, was offerin-up his a' and only son;
18. O' wham it was said, "The sal be ca'd a seed tae thee in Isaac."
19. Reckonin that God could raise him again, e'en frae 'mang the deid; frae whilk he, in a likeness, wan him back again.
20. Throwe faith Isaac gied blessin
to Jacob and Esau, speaking of coming things.

21. Throw faith Jacob, when he came to see, bless'd baith the sons o' Joseph; and "worshipp't, loutin doon on the hid o' his staff."

22. Throw faith Joseph, when his end cam nar, spak o' the gaun oot o' the sons o' Israel, and gae comman anent his banes.

23. Throw faith Moses, when he was born, was keepit hidlin thrie month, for that they saw he was an unco bonnie wean, and fear't na the orders o' the king.

24. Throw faith Moses, when he was grown, wadna be ca'd "Son o' Pharaoh's dochter";

25. Makin choice rather to dree wi' the folk o' God their ill-treatment, than to be enjoyin for a wee the pleasures o' sin.

26. Reckonin the reproach o' the Anointit Ane as unco better than a' the gear o' Egypt; for he was lookin awa to the gian o' the reward.

27. Throw faith he left Egypt a'hint, no fearin the anger o' the king; for he tholeed, as behauldin him who is unseen.

28. Throw faith he institutit the Pasche, and the strinklin o' blude; that he that destroy't the first-born soudna be touchin them.

29. Throw faith they gaed aroon the Red Sea as on dry grun'; whilk the Egyptians, ettlin to do, war whamml't ower.

30. Throw faith the wa's o' Jericho fell doon, haein been rinkit roon' for seven days.

31. Throw faith Rahab the courtesan perish't-na wi' thae that war disobeyt, haein welcomed the spies wi' peace.

32. And what mair can I say? for time wad fail me tellin o' Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah; o' Dauid too, and Samu'el, and the prophets;

33. Wha, throw faith prevailed over kingdoms, wrocht righetousness, obtained promises, dang the mouth o' lions.

34. Quench'd the lowin o' fire, escapit the mouth o' the sword, frae fecklessness raise to strenth, war'k mighty in war; turned to flight armies o' frem'd anes.

35. Weemen gat back their deid, rais't to life; and some war tortured, no acceptin conditions o' deliverance, that they micht come to a better Risin-again.

36. Others war tried wi' mockins and clourins; aye, mair; wi' fetters and dungeons:

37. They war staneed, war saun sindry, war tempit, war murder'd wi' sword; they gaed aboot row't in sheepskins and goat-hides, bein in poortith, dool, and misery.

38. The warld war wasna wordie o' them; wanderin on muirlands and mountains, bidin in dene and caves o' the birth.

39. And thir a', tho' they had witness to their faith, obteen'd-na, their sels, the promise.

40. God haein aforehaun provisit better things for us, that no sindry frae us soud they be perfettit.

CHAPITIR TWAL'.

Haul ye on by faith! A graun Assembly we're comin till!

SAE, seein we hae a' aboot us sic an unco clud o' witnesses—drappin ilka taiglement, and the dawtin sin that eithlie rinks us roond, lat us rin, perseverin, i' the race set afore us;

2. Lookin-awa till oor Leader-Prince and Perfeter, Jesus; wha for the joy held afore him, tho' theed the

1 V. 38. Thank God for sic noble anes! Nae ither leet o' heroes was ever as graun as this. The fragrance o' their works o' faith is wi' us: and their example. Let us follow on!

2 V. 2. Nae doot the Lord aften looks back wi' joy, on the cross he bure; and we wha hae crosses (licht and sma' whan even'd wi' his) mann "lichtlie the shame" o' them, and the skaithe o' them.
cross, and lichtlie the shame; and on God's richt haun has taen his seat.

3. For, think ye o' him, wha has tholed sic gainsayin o' sinners again himsel, least ye be forfouchten, and yere sauls be faint.

4. Ye hae-na yet resistit tae blude, battlin again sin!

5. And ye hae clean forgotten the avisement that speaks till ye as to bairns: "My son, lichtlie-ye-na the chastenin o' the Lord, naither faint ye when ye are reprou'd o' him;

6. "For the Lord chastens the ane he lo'es, and lays stripes on ilk son he welcomes hame."

7. For the experience-sake, thole ye; for God deals wi' you as wi' sons; for wha is a son, and no exercis'd o' his faither?

8. But gin ye are ootside o' a' exercese, o' whilk a' hae their portion, than are ye bastards and no "sons."

9. And mair: faithers o' oor flesh had we to exercese us, and we gied them reverence; sal-we-na muckle rather submit oorsels to the Faither o' oor spirits, and leve?

10. They, certainlie, for a wheen days, exercis'd us, conform tae what seemed to them gude; but he conform tae what is best, that we micht partak o' his holiness.

11. Yet nae exercesein, for the time present, seems a blytheness, but a sorrow; netheless, eftirhaun, to thee wha hae been tar-by exercis'd, it gies peacefu' frutes o' richtousness.

12. Sae, "The feckless hauns and palsied knees rax oot;

13. "And mak straucht fit-roads for yere feet"; that what is gley'd be-na thrawn-oot, but be raiter made hale.

14. Follow peace wi' a'; and holeness; wantin whilk nae man sal see the Lord.

15. Takin tent gif thar be ony man fa'in ahint frae the tender-love o' God, "least ony rute o' bitterness springin up" be makin bitterness, and sae mony corruptit:

16. Ony lecherer; or ony ungodly ane as Esau, wha for the sake o' a meal o' meat, gied up his "first-born" richt.

17. For ye ken that, e'en aftir that was dune, he fain wad bae the blessin, but was rejeckt; for he faund nae turnin again, tho' he socht it wi' unco tears.

18. For ye hae-na come to the lowin and devooin fire, to mirk, and gloom, and tempest.

19. And a peal o' a bugle-horn, and a sound o' spoken words; frae whilk thee wha heard pled no-tae-hear-them ony mair; .

20. For they couldna thole what was bein laid doon, "And, gin a beas' may touch the mountain, it maun be staned!"

21. And sae awesome was that whilk was seen, that Moses said, "I am unco fley'd; and trifle!"

22. But ye are come nar till Zion's mountain, and tae the Citie o' the Leevin God, a Heavenlie Jerusalem; and till hosts o' rejoicin Angels;

23. And to God the Judge o' a'; and to the spirits o' richtous anes made perfete;

24. And till a Mediator o' a new Covenant, Jesus; and to the strinklin o' blude, sair-pleadin mair than Abel!

25. Tak ye tent that ye rejeck-na him that speaks! for gin they escap't-na wha rejeckit him wha on yirth was warnin them, hoo muckle less sal we escape, gin we turn oorsels awa frae him wha warns us frae Heeven!

26. Whase voice did shake the yirth; but noo has he said, "Yet ance mair I wull shake, no the yirth alan, but heeven as weel!"

27. And this: "ance mair" points to the takin awa o' thea things that can be shucken, as o' things that ha been formed; that thea may remain that canna be shucken.

287
28. And sae, sevin we are to hae a kingdom that canna be shucken, lat us hae lovin-favor, that we may render service weel-pleasin until God, wi' reverence and godly fear.

29. For oor God is a devoerin fire.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.
A wheen gude counsels at the hinner-end; and salutations o the Apostle.

LAT britherly love aye staun.

2. Forget-na to enteen fremd anes; for sae some hae takin to them Angels, unkent.

3. Bear in mind thae that are in bonds, as bein in bonds wi' them; and thae dreisin ill-treatment as e'en yersels bein i' the body.

4. Lat mairriage be hauden in honor o' a', and lat the bed be pure; for lecherers and adulterers God wull judge.

5. Lat yere life no be i' the way o' loe'in siller; bein content wi' what ye hae; for he has said, "In naegate wull I lea' ye! Na, in naegate wull I forsake ye!"

6. Sae that, takin heart, we may say, "The Lord is my freend, and I'se be-na fey't; what sal man do to me?"

7. Keep in mind thae wha are airtin ye; wha speak to ye the words o' God; the ootcome o' whase life seein, follow ye their faith!

8. Jesus Christ, yestreen and the day the same, and for evermair!

9. Be-na carry't awa wi' mony and and unco teachins, for it is graun to hae the heart made siccar wi' favor and love; no wi' meats, whaur-in they that hae fash'd theirsels hae gotten nae profit.

10. We hae an altar, o' whilk they hae nae richt to partak, wha ser' i' the Tabernacle.

11. For the bodies o' thae beass whose blude is cairry't within the Holie Place by the Heigh-priest, are brunt 1 ayont the camp.

12. And sae Jesus, that he soud sanctify the folk wi' his ain blude, suffer't ayont the ports.

13. Lat us than gang oot to him ayont the camp, bearin misca'in for his sake!

14. For here we hae nae ever-bidin Citie, but are seekin oor way till ane to come.

15. Throw him, than, lat us be offerin-up a "sacrifice o' praise" aye to God; whilk is "the frute o' oor lips," confessin to his name.

16. But, o' doin gude, and o' fellowship, forget na; for wi' sic sacrificial as thir, God is weel-pleased.

17. Obey them that hae the airtin o' ye, and gie-in to them; for they are takin tent for yere sauls, as baerin an accoont to gie; that they may do siclike wi' joy, and no wi' dool; for that war nae profit for you!

18. Pray for us; for we are per-swadin corses that we keep a gude conscience; in a' things etlin to leave honorably.

19. And muckle mair div I entreat ye to do siclike; that wi' a' the mair speed I may be restor't y'e.

20. Noo the God o' peace, that led up fre amang the deid oor Lord Jesus, the Great Shepherd o' the sheep, throwe the blude o' the ever-bidin covenant,

21. Mak ye perfete in ilka gude thing for the workin o' his wull, doin in ye that whilk is weel-pleasin afore his face, throwe Jesus Christ: tae wham be glorie for evir and evir! Amen.

22. But I entreat ye, brethren, bear wi' the word o' coonSEL; for e'en wi' few words I wrate t'ye.

23. Ken-ye-na that oor brither Timothy is set free? wi' wham, gin he come sune, I wull see ye.

24. Salute a' thae that hae the airtin o' ye, and a' the sauntas. They o' Italie salute ye.

25. Gude-favor be wi' ye a'. Amen.

1 V 11. Tak tent o' the words, "within" and "ayont." The sacrifice is made ayont—the blude presentit within: Calvary—and the Holies o' Holies aboon!
JAMES.

CHAPTER ANE.

James tells what true faith will do in ane’s life. Gin a’ woud dae sae, what a bonnie word we wad hae!

JAMES, a servant o’ God, and o’ the Lord Jesus Christ, tae the Twal’ Tribes o’ the Dispersion; joy!

2. A’ joy coont it, my brethren; whan ye come intil mony trials.

3. Comin to ken that the testicin o’ yere faith works oot lang-tholin.

4. But let lang-tholing hae its perfeteness, sae as ye may be perfete and complete, wanting in naething.

5. Gin ony o’ ye want wisdom, lat him be seekin frae God, wha gies in rowth till a’, and wytes-na; and it sal be gien him.

6. But lat him seek in faith, wi’ nae switherin; for he wha has switherin doots, is like a sea-wave, ca’d wi’ the wind, and toss’d wi’ the storm.

7. For lat-na siccan a man think he sal hae onything o’ the Lord:

8. He, wi’ a twa-auld mind, unsiccar in a’ his ways!

9. Lat the lowly brither joy at his uplifting;

10. But the rich in his hein brocht laigh; for, as the bloom o’ the gerss he is to pass awa.

11. For uprises the sun, wi’ its bire’lin heat, and birelas the gerss; “and its blume fa’s awa,” and the ee-sweetness and beauty o’ its face is gane! e’en sae the rich man dwines awa in his ways.

12. Happy he wha thoes trials! for, sae being appruv’t, he sal hae a croon o’ Life, promised o’ the Lord to thea that lo’e him!

13. Lat nae ane, whan under trials, sae, “I am tempit o’ God!” for God is neither tempit wi’ sin, nor sae tempts he ony ane.

14. But ilk ane is 1 tempit, whan by his ain desires he is wheedl’t awa and enticed.

15. And the desire, haein conceived, brings forth sin; but the sin, whan a’ is dune, brings forth death!

16. Be-ye-na deceiv’t, brethren below’d!

17. Ilka gu’d grant, and ilka perfetit gift is frae Aboon, comin doon frae the Father o’ lights; wi’ wham is nae unsiccariness, nor shadow o’ gaun back.

18. O’ his ain wull begat he us wi’ the word o’ truth, that we sow be like first-frutes o’ his creation.

19. Ye ken this, my brethren below’d! But let ilka man be gleg to hear, backwart to speak, refusin to be ang’ert.

20. For man’s ang’er works-na-oot God’s richtounness.

21. Sae than, pittin by a’ vileness and owercome o’ wickedness, tak till ye in meekness the inborn word, that is able to save yere sauls.

22. But become ye word-doers, and no word-hearsers alane, deceivin yere ain ses.

23. For, gin ane is a word-hearer, and no a word-doer, he is but like a man seein his born face in a keekeless.

24. He sees his sel, and awa he is gane: and belyve he minds-na what sort he was like!

25. But he wha obteens a closer sicht intil a better and perfetite rule, a rule o’ libertie, and taks aye heed thare-till, bein no a hearer forgettin, but a wark-doer, this ain is bless’t in his doin.

1 V. 14. We say “trial,” when it comes frae God; and “temp,” when it comes frae Santan, or wicked men, or oor ain wicked thochtis. In auld times, they said “temp” for baith. Sae James here.

289
26. Gin ony ane thinks to be doin religious service, and commeans-na his tongue, but mislippens his ain heart, this ane's religious service is nocht ava.

27. The service o' religion, pure and perfete afore oor God and Father is this: To be visitin fatherless and widows i' their dool, to keep his sel unstained frae the world.

**CHAPTIR TWA.**

The rich and the puir: hoo ane sould treat the ither. Faith maun be sown and tenit, gin it wad braid and grove!

My brethren, div ye haunt by the faith o'oor Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord o' Glorie, i' the maitter o' respect o' persons?

2. For gin aiblins thar come intil yer kirk a man wi' ringe o' gowd, and braw cleedin; and thar come in as weel, ane in poortith, wi' claes unclean;

3. And ye sould spy him wearin the braw cleedin, and say, "Ye sit here in a gude place!" and to the ane in poortith sould say, "Ye staun there!" or "Sit ye aneath my fit-brod!"

4. Are-ye-na than dividit amang yerseis, and become judges haein unjust thochtis?

5. Hearken, my beloved brethren! Hasna God taen the puir o' the world to be rich in faith, and to hae the kingdom he has promised to thae that lo' him?

6. But ye lightlie the puir ane. Are-na the rich haudin ye doon? and theirsels harl ye afore judgment-seats?

7. Are-they-na misca'in the wordie name whilk is placed upon ye?

8. Gin than, ye fulfil the law, the royal ane, conform to the Scriptures, "Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel," weel are ye doing!

9. But, gin ye schaw walin oot o' persons, ye are committing sin, and are fund guilty by the law as ill-doers.

10. For wha sae may keep the hail law, and yet stoirer in a' thing, has become guilty o' a'.

11. For he wha said, "Ye maunna commit adultery," said as weel, "Ye maunna commit murder." Noo, gin ye commit nae adultery, but are committin murder, ye hae become a breker o' the law.

12. Sae be ye speakin, and sae be ye doing, as men throwe a law o' liberty to be judged!

13. For judgment, wantin mercy, is for him that gied nae mercy; and mercy glories again judgment!

14. What the profitt, my brethren, gin ane says he has faith, but has nae works? Ist' possible for this ane's faith to save him?

15. Gif aiblins a brither or sister be bare, and wantin o' daily meat,

16. But ane o' ye sould say till them, "Be ye gaun in peace! be ye gettin warmed and gettin meat!" but soudna gie them the thing necessar for the body: what the profit?

17. In sic manner, e'en the faith, unless aiblins it has works, is deid by itself.

18. But ane wull say, "Ye hae faith, and I hae works; lat me see yere faith sindry frae yere works, and I wull lat ye see, by means o' my works, my faith!"

19. Ye believe "God is Ane"; weel are ye doin! The demons, too, believe, and trimmel.

20. But, wull ye leern, O vain man! that faith, sindry frae works, is barren.

21. Wasna Abra'm oor faither declar' richtous throwe works, whan he gied up his son on the altar?

---

1 Y. 19. James was specially writing tae Jews (i. 1); "God is Ane!" quo' they; "and sae Jesus canne be divine!" He schwaws that a faith that ganges nae far'er than belief in the existence o' a' God, canne save. Sautan kens as muckle as that!
22. See-ye-na that his faith was workin in his deeds† and by his deeds his faith was ripened!
23. And the Scriptur was fulfilled whilk said, “And Abra’am believed God; and it was reckoned till him as richtousness,” and “Freend o’ God was his name.
24. Div ye no see that by means o’ warks a man is declar’d richtous, and no by faith allenarlie?
25. And, in siclike manner, Rahab the courtesan too, was she no by warks declar’d richtous, when she gae welcome to the messengers, and set them forth anither gate?
26. For e’en as the body, sindry frae the spirit, is deid; sae thus faith, sindry frae warks, is deid.

CHAPTIR THRE.

The tongue, to praise God, and speak cannillie to men: but hoo aft a world o’ fire!

BECOME-NA, mony o’ ye, teachers, my brethren; kennin’ that we sal hae the heavier judgment.
2. For in mony-fauld things ane-and-a’ aft stoiter. Gin ony ane stoiters-na in his 1 words, the same is a weil-ripened man, able to bridle the hail body.
3. We pit bits intil horses’ mou’s, that we mae airt them; and their hail body we turn aboot.
4. Mark too the ships; muckle as they are, and are cairry’t by rouk winds, yet are they airtit aboot wi’ vera wee helm, whaure’er the steerer may wuss.
5. Sae the tongue is a wee pairt, and yet boasts o’ muckle things. Look, hoo a wee fire lunts sae great a wud!
6. And the tongue is a fire, a world o’ wickedness! The tongue is amang oor pairts as that whilk defiles the

hail body; and sets a-lowe the wheel o’ oor natenal life, and is set a-lowe by hell!
7. For ilka natur o’ beasts and o’ birds, and o’ crowlin-things, and things i’ the seas, are tamed, and hae been tamed, by human-kind.
8. But the tongue nane o’ mankind can tame: a restless ill, fu’ o’ deidly pushion:
9. Whaur-by we bless God the Faither; and whaur-by we ban men, made conform to God’s likeness.
10. Oot o’ the sae mooth comes forth blessin and cursin! It is na bonnie, my brethren, for sic things to be!
11. Die the fountain, oot o’ the same mooth, teem oot the sweet and the bitter!
12. Can a fig tree, my brethren, bring forth olives? o’ a vine gie figs? naither can saut wairt yield sweet.
13. Wha is wyss and weel-lear’d amang ye? let him schaw oot o’a gude life his warks, in a wyss meekness.
14. But gin ye hae bitter selliness and rivalry i’ yere hearts, boast-na yersels; and schaw-na yersels fause tae the truth.
15. This wisdom is no the wisdom comin doon frae Aboon; but is yirthly, natenal, and deevilish.
16. For whaur-e’er selliness and rivalry are, thar are taigements and a’ vile deeds.
17. But the wisdom that is frae Aboon is first to purify, than peaceable and cannie; easy to be entreatit, fu’ o’ mercy and gude frutes; wi’ nae pu’in doon; and aefauld.
18. But the seed o’ richtousness is sawn in peace, by thae wha mak peace.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Warnins to the worldly: for a’ that ye wad hae, and a’ that God wad gie, lippen ye to him!

WHAR come the wars and fechtins amang ye? E’en

291
hence, oot o' yere pleasures, that tak the field amang yere members!

2. Ye desire, and hae-na; ye kill, and are fain, and canna obteen: ye fecht and war: ye hae-na, for that ye ask-na:

3. Ye ask, and ye get-na: for that ye ask-na weel; that ye micht ware it on yere pleasures.

4. Ye adulteresse! ken-ye-na that the freendship o' the world is enmity wi' God? Wha, then, wad be a freend o' the world is makin his sel a fea to God.

5. Or reck ye that in vain the Scripture says, "The spirit that dwells in us leads to envy."

6. But he gies the mair lov-in-favor. Sae it is said, "God is again the prood anes; but to the humble anes he gies favor."

7. Pit yersels, than, aneath God; but staun up again Sautan, and he wull flee frae ye.

8. Draw ye nar to God, and he wul draw nar to you. Mak clean yere hauns, sinners! and purify yere hearts, ye dooble anes!

9. Be ye dool, and maen and gret! lat yere daffin be turned to lamentation, and joy to heaviness.

10. Come doon laigh i' the sicht o' the Lord; and he wull lift ye up.

11. Speak-ye-na again ane-anither, brethren. He that speaks again his brither, or judges his brither, speaks again the law itsel, and judges the law: but gin ye pass judgment on the law, nae mair are ye a doer o' the law, but a judge!

12. But thar is ae Lawgiver and Judge! he wha is strang to save and to destroy. But wha are ye that are judgin yere neebor?

13. Awa noo! ye that say, "The day or the morn, we wull gang to this citie here; and bide a year thar; and troke, and win gear."

14. Wha, indeed, ken nocht o' the morn! for o' whatna sort is yere life? For as the scaun o' the sky ye are, whilk appears for a wee, and then dwines awa.

15. Rather soud ye say, "Gin the Lord please, we sal baith leave, and do this or yon."

16. But noo ye vaunt yersels in yere boastins. A' sic boastin is ill.

17. To ane, than, wha kens hoo to do a gude thing, and dis-it-na, it is a sin to him!

CHAPTER FIVE.

A bode for patience and faith. The teachings o' Natur; and the experience o' men, are a' on the ae side!

A WA noo, ye rich! wail ye and cry, for the dool that is comin on ye!

2. Yere gear haa roustit; yere cleedin is moth-eaten;

3. Yere gowd and yere siller are roustit, and their roustit sal wit-ness again ye, and sal eat yere flesh as fire. Ye hae laid-up treasur for the Last Day!

4. Tak tent! the penny-fee o' the workers, wha cuttit doon yere fields, and has by you been keepit back by dishonesty, is crying out: and the cries o' thae that shure are enter't intil the hearin o' the Lord o' Hosts.

5. Ye leevd wanton on the soil, and rioted; ye pamper't yere hearts, as for the day o' slaughtir!

6. Ye condemned, ye killed the Rightous Ane; and he resists-ye-na.

7. Thole patiently, than, brethren! till the Lord be amang ye. Behaund, the tiller is waiting for the precious

* V. 1. Think o' oor sinfu' desires, " takin the field," as an armey, to fecht! The Christian can only owercome, as he has God on his side!

* V. 5. Tho' Eccl. iv. 4, is gey nar the same thing, this is no a direct quotin frae ony part o' the Auld Testament. The New Testament writers and speakers, as here, aft tuik the meanin o' the words, without muckle care about the preceese form o'.
frutes o' the yirth, and is patient wi' it, till it gets the early and the bin-
maist rain.

8. Thole ye patiently, as weel! strethen yere hearts; for the comin o' the Lord draws on!

9. Yammer-na, brethren, again ane anither, least ye be judged: See! the Judge stauns fornet the door.

10. Tak ye, brethren, for yere likeness o' sufferan and patience, the Propheta that spak i' the name o' the Lord.

11. Look! we ca' thae happy wha tholed. O' Job's patience ye hae heard; and the end the Lord had in view ye saw: that the Lord is o' muckle tender-love, and fu' o' com-
passion.

12. But aboon a' things, my brethren, sweer-na; aither by the heeven or the yirth, or by ony ither aith: but lat yere "aye" be "aye," and yere "na" be "na"; least ye fa' under judgment.

13. Is ony afflictit amang ye! lat him be prayin! Is ony blythe! lat him sing wi' harp!

14. Is ony ill amang ye! lat him ca' till him the kirk elders; and lat them pray ower him, anoinitin him wi' oyle i' the name o' the Lord.

15. And the faithfu' prayer sal save the dwinin ane, and the Lord wull raise him up: and gin aiblins he has sinned, it sal be forgien him.

16. Sae confess ye ane to anither yere sins; and pray ye ilk for ither, to the end that ye may be healed. Muckle avails the prayers o' a richtous man in its ootcome.

17. Elijah was a man, o' like natur wi' us; and wi' mickle prayer prayed he that thar soud be nae doonfa'; and thar was nae weet on the grun' for thrie year and a hauf;

18. And again prayed he, and the lift gae rain, and the yirth brocht forth her frute.

19. My brethren, gin aiblins ony ane amang ye mis-airts his way frae the truth, and anither convert him.

20. Lat him ken, that he that turns a sinner frae the error o' his ways, sal save a saul frae death, and gets cover't ower an unco wheen sins.

*V. 20. The words theirsel might mean aither his sins wha is saved, or his wha converts him. But, conform tae the Gospel plan, we understann it o' him that is convertit.
FIRST PETER.

CHAPITIR ANE.

Christ was giean them kennin o', whan bearin witness aforehaun o' the sufferans o' Christ, and the glories eftir.

12. Till wham it was made kent, that no to theirsels, but to you they war bringin them; whilk things e-noo are reportit to ye throwe thea wha deliver't the Blythe-Message to ye, i' the Holie Spirit sent doon frae heeven; intil whilk things the 1Angels wad fain obteine a narer view.

13. Sae, girdin up the loins o' yere endeavour, keepin douce, zealously airt ye yere hope to the lovin-favor to be brocht to ye, at oor clear vision o' Jesus Christ.

14. As bairns o' obedience, no conformin yerseuls to the auld desireis i' yere ignorance;

15. But e'en as he wha bade ye is holie, do ye yerseuls be holie in a' mainner o'leevin;

16. Inasmuckle as it is putten-doon, "Holie sal ye be, for I am holie!"

17. And gin ye ca' on him, wha wi' nae respect o' faces, judges conform to ane's ain wark, wi' a' reverence for the time o' yere bidin here, leev ye.

18. Kennin weel that it wasna wi' perishin things like siller and gowd, ye war ransomd oot o' yere vain life, frae yere forebears handit doon,

19. But wi' maist precious blude (as o' a lamb wantin blemish or spot), o' Ane Anointit;

20. Kent aforehaun; indeed, afore the foundin o' the world, but made plain i' the last day for yere sakes,

21. Wha throwe him are leal to-

1V. 12. Angels ken a hantle aboot us; mair, aiblnis than we jalouse; and are unoo interestit in Christ's folk, and Christ's cause.
ward God, wha rais't him up frae 'mang the deid, and gied him glorie, sae that yere faith and hope are turned towards God.

22. Haein made yere sauls clean, i' the obeyin o' the truth oot o' the heart wi' leal and britherly love, lo'e ye ane-anither fondly.

23. Haein been born again, no o' corruptible seed, but incorruptible, throwe the leevin and abidin love o' God.

24. Forasmuckle as "a' flesh is gerss, and a' its glorie as the blume o' gerss: the gerss birsles-up, and the flourishin o' fa's awa:

25. "But the sayin o' the Lord bides for aye!" And this is the message that by the Glad-tidins is deliver't t'ye.

CHAPITIR TWA.

The weel-vaaled Corner-Stane. The duties o' a' conditions o' folk—weel performed, whan Christ is weel follow't.

SAE, pittin by a' malice, and a' twa- faulniss, and a' pretence, and a' misca'in,

2. As barns new-born, be ye fain to crave the asfauld milk o'reason, that sae ye may grow intill salvation;

3. Gif sae ye hae tastit for yersels that the Lord is fu' o' mercie.

4. To wham comin—a leevin stane, by men cuisten aside, but waled-oott by God, and hauden in honor—

5. Ye yersels, as leevin stanes, are biggit intill a spiritual hoose, to be hollie priestes, to offer up spiritual sacrificces, weel-pleasin tae God, throwe Jesus Christ.

6. For it is contain'd i' Scriptur, "See, I lay in Zion a heid corner-stane, chosen, and hauden in honor, and wha lippens on him sal in nage-gate be putten to shame."

7. To you, than, is this honor; you wha lippens: but to sic as believe-na—"The stane they that biggit wadna hae, the same was made a heid corner-stane!"

8. But, "a stumblin-stane and a rock o' offence" to them that stoiter, bein disobedient to the word; until whilk they war appointit.

9. But ye are "a waled-oott race, priests o' royalty, a holie people"; a folk for his ain possession, that ye may tell oot the glories o' him wha bade ye oot o' darkness to come into his wunnerfu' licht.

10. Wha at a time war "nae-nation," but are noo a "God's nation"; wha hadna been haein mercy, but hae oobtained mercy e-noo.

11. Beloved, I entreat ye, as lodgers and pilgrims, keep ye frae carnal desires, sic as tak-the-field again the saul:

12. Conductin yersels wi' honor amang the Gentiles; sae that whan they speak again ye as ill-doers, they may, seein yere gude warks, glorify God in the 1 day o' his comin amang them.

13. Obey-ye a' human ordinances, for the Lord's sake; gin it be to a Sovereign, as ower a',

14. Or to Governors, as by him set, for punishin ill-doers, but for praise o' them that do weel.

15. For sae is God's will, that wi' weel-doin ye soud pit to silence the ignorance o' glalikit men:

16. As free, and yet no haudin yere freedom for a cloak o' malice; but as servants o' God.

17. To a' men gie honor; lo'e ye the brotherhood; revere ye God; honor ye the Sovereign!

18. Servants, gie-in to yere maisters, wi' a' respect; and no alane to the gude and cannie, but to the thawart as weel.

19. For this is till his praise, gif, on accoont o' conscience afore God, ane drees dool; sufferin wrangously.

V. 12. This (in baith the English versions, "the day o' visitation") is no vera clear. It may be the Day o' Judgment; but, aibins rather, is it no God, lookin doon to see gif they had faith amang them?
Wives and husbands

I. PETER, III.

to be o’ae mind.

20. For whatna credit win ye, gin ye be cloured for yere ill-deeds, that ye soud thole it? But, doin weel, and dreein ill, this is praise-wordie wi’ God.

21. For to siclike war ye ca’d: for Christ suffer’t in yere behauf, les’in ahint a paatten, that ye micht follow his fittsaps:

22. “Wha did nae sin; nor was deceit fund in his mouth”;

23. Wba, whan misca’d, misca’d-na again; sufferin, he banned-na: but gied himsel ower to him wha judges justly.

24. Wha his ain sel bure oor sins in his ain body tae the tree; sae that we, haein dee’t to sin, micht leeve to holiness: “by whase clours ye war healed.”

25. For ye war like sheep, for-wanderin; but are nee came hame to the Shepherd and Guide o’ yere sauls.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Duties o’ wives and husbands: lat o’ do weel, and please the Lord!

1N siclike mainner, ye wives, be biddable wi’ yere ain husbands; sae that gin ony yield-na tae the word, they may, e’en wantin the word, be won by the gude-leevin o’ their wives;

2. As they behauld yere pure mainner o’ life, fu’ o’ reverence.

3. Whase buskin let it no be a’ ootward—the braidin o’ hair, and wearin o’ gowd, and dinkin-oot in braus:

4. But, the inner man o’ the heart, i’ the fadeless pitten-on o’ a meek and lown spirit, whilk is afore God’s face o’ unco price.

5. For sae, langsyne, the holy weemen, wha had their hopes on God, buskit theirsels; obeyin their ain husbands;

6. E’en as Sarah obey’t Abra’m, ca’in him “Lord”; whase bairns ye are, as lang as ye do weel, 1 fearin wi’ nae fear.

7. And ye husbands, in siclike mainner, dwell wi’ them conform to knowledge, as wi’ the weaker veschel, as being joint-heirs o’ leevin grace; that yere prayers be-na interfer’d wi’.

8. To sum up: be ye o’ae mind, sympathizin thegither, lovin the brethren, tender-hearit, lowly-mindit;

9. No giean ill for ill, nor returnin misca’n for misca’in; but on the contrar giean blessin; for to this ye war bidden, that ye soud inherit a blessin.

10. “For ye that wad lo’e life, and see gude days, let him gar his tongue cease frae ill, and his lips that they speak-na guile.

11. “But lat him turn awa frae the ill, and do the gude; let him seek peace and follow it.

12. “For the Lord’s e’en are on the richtous anes, and his hearin to their petition; but the Lord’s face is again them that do ill!”

13. And wha is he that can bring ye skaith, gin ye be fu’ o’ zeal for what is gude?

14. But gin e’en ye soud dree ill for that whilk is gude, happy are ye! “But their dريد, drepid ye-na! nor be ye put-til’t;

15. “But the Anointit, as Lord, sanctify ye i’ yere hearts”;  lose ready as a defence, wi’ ilk ane spirir at ye a reason for the hope ye hae in ye: but aye wi’ meekness, and reverence.

16. Haein a gude conscience; sae that whaur-in they speak again ye as ill-doers, they may be putten to shame, wha misca’ yere gude mainner o’ life in Christ.

17. For nobler is it (gin it please the wull o’ God sae) as weel-doers to be sufferin, than as ill-doers.

18. For that Christ also, ance for a’, suffer’t for sins; a Richitous Ane for unrichtous anes; that he soud
Ye maun cease frae sin I. PETER, IV. and lo'e ane anither.

bring us nar to God; haein been putten to deid in flesh, but made alive in spirit;
19. In whilk, gaun e'en to the spirits in thrall, he preached;
20. Wha war dour at ae time, whan God's lang-tholin was entreatin them i' the days o' Noah, the ark bein preparin; gaun intil whilk a wee wheen, that is aucht sauls, war brocht safe throwe by means o' watir:
21. Whilk, as a true likeness, noo saves ye, e'en baptism (no the syndin-a's o' the filth o' the flesh, but the speirin o' a gude conscience toward God) throwe the Risin-again o' Jesus Christ.
22. Wha is at God's richt haun, haein passed intil the heevens; Angels, and authorities, and poors, bein made obedient to him.

CHAPTER FOUR.

Cease frae sin; for Christ sinned-na! And gin ye be Christians, ye sould be like him!

FORASMUCKLE than as Christ has suffer't i' the flesh, airm ye yersels wi' the same attlin: for he that has thole'd i' the flesh has gotten rest frae sin!
2. Sae that nae lang'er soud ye leeve i' the ill-desires o' men the lave o' yere time i' the flesh.
3. For the by-past time is en euch to hae wrought-oit the desires o' the Gentiles; gaun on in wantonness, ill-desires, an overcomin' wine, riotins, feastings, and vile idol-worshippins;
4. In whilk they ferlie unco that ye rin-na wi' them to the same ower-flowin' o' riot, misca'in ye:
5. Wha sal gie up an account to him wha is haudin himsel ready to judge leevin and deid.
6. For to this end was the Blythe-message gien to thae that are deid; that they might be judged, indeed, by man's judgment, in flesh; but micht leve afore God in spirit.
7. But the end o' a's comes on: be ye than o' soun' mind, and dopely pray ye.
8. Aboon a' things, hae ye love ane for anither; for that "love haps ower a rowth o' sins."
9. Schawin hospitality ane to anither, wi' nae sweriness.
10. Ilk ane, e'en as he has had gien to him a free gift, sharin it wi' ither, as leal stewards o' God's mony-fault favors:
11. Gif ony ane speaks, as God's oracles speakin; gif ony ane ser's, as oot o' strenth gien by God; that, in a' things, God may be made glorious, throwe Jesus Christ, to whom is the glorie and the poore, for evir and aye. Amen.
12. Beloved, be ye na taen by surprise anent the lowin fire amang ye, whilk is comin on ye for to try ye, as gin some ferlie happen't to ye;
13. But in sae far as ye narrow wi' Christ in his sufferans, rejoice ye; that, at the unfauldin o' his glorie, ye may rejoice wi' muckle joy.
14. Gin ye be misca'ed for Christ's name, happy are ye! for the Spirit o' glorie, e'en the Spirit o' God, brings ye rest!
15. But lat nan o' ye dree as a blude-shedder, or a thief, or an ill-doer, or a meddler in ither folk's maitters:
16. But, gin it be as "a Christian," lat him feel nae shame; but lat him gie God praise for this name.
17. For it is time for judgment to

1 V. 19. We needna follow sic queer fancies as that Christ gaed to hell, and preached (preached what?) to the lost anes thar. The time he preached to them was i' the days o' Noah (and by the mood o' Noah). In Noah's time they war dour and thravart ances on yirth; in Peter's time they war "spirites in thrill."
2 V. 1. Christ, at his death, gat rid o' a' onsets o' sin and sinners; sae the Christian, wha takis up his cross and follows Christ, has sinner't his sel frae sin: hae nae mair to do wi't.

3 V. 6. The Apostle here, nae doot, refers to the saunts wha hae won aws hame.
begin at the hoosehauld o' God; but gif it first begin wi' us, what sal be the end o' thae that gie-na-in to the Gude-tidins o' God? 

18. And, gin the richtous ane jimpily be saved, whaur sal the ungodly and the sinner schaw theirsels? 
19. And sae, lat they wha dree, conform to God's wull, commit their sauls, in a' weel-doin, till a true and faithfu' Creator!

CHAPTIR FYVE.
The Elders and the flock; gude avesement for faith.

THE elders that are amang ye I entreat, wha am, wi' you, an elder, and a witness o' the sufferans o' Christ; and ane to partak o' the glorie to be made kent; 
2. Herd the wee flock o' God amang ye! takin the chairge o't, no o' constraint, but o' gude-wull, conform to God; nor yet for base gains, but o' ready mind. 
3. Nor yet as lordin it ower the allotted chairge, but makin yersels as paithers to the wee flock. 
4. And whan the Heid-Shepherd is made manifest, ye sal hae a croon that dwines-na awa.

5. In like mainner, ye younger anes, gie-in to the auldier; and a', ane to anither, pittin on humbleness o' mind; for "God arrays himsel again the haughty, but gies favor to the humble."

6. Lout yersels doon than, under the mighty haun o' God, that he may raise ye up in due time.
7. Castin a' yere carkin cares on him, for that he is carin for ye. 
8. Be douce; be alert; for Sautan yere fae, as a rampin lion, is gaun aboot, seekin wham to dovoor. 
9. Wham resist ye, siccar i' the faith! kennin that like sufferers are broocht to pass wi' yere brethren that are i' the world.
10. But the God o' a' gude-favor, wha ca'd ye to his evir-bidin glorie, in Christ Jesus, whan ye hae tholeth a wee, himsel will mak ye perfete, mak siccar, mak strang!
11. To him be the glorie for evir and aye. Amen!
12. By Silvanus, the leal brither as I tak him, wrate I in brief words, coonsellin and testifyin that this is God's vera favor: staun ye in't!
13. 1 She in Babylon, chosen wi' yersels, and Mark my son, salute ye. 
14. Salute ye ilk ither wi' a kiss o' love. Peace to ye a' wha are in Christ.

1 V. 13. Peter means the Kirk o' Christ in the auld citie o' Babylon; but he says just "she." Sae in Psalm lxxxvii. 5, "The Heighest himsel sal mak her siccar!"
SECOND PETER.

CHAPITIR ANE.
The graun array o' Christian virtues; let by Faith, and linked by Love.

SIMON Peter, a servitor and Apostle o' Jesus Christ, to thae wha obtained the same faith wi' us, throwe the richtousness o' oor God and oor Saviour Jesus Christ.

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and peace, be made great, i' the fu' knowledge o' God, and Jesus oor Lord.

3. As a' things for life and godliness his godly pooper has gien to us, throwe the fu' knowledge o' him wha has ca'd us to glorie and weel-doin.

4. Whaur-by he has gien to us unco promises—and precious—that throwe sic ye sould be brocht to hae fellowship wi' the Divine natur, and flee the world's corruption in ill-desires.

5. Aye, and for this vera thing, bringin forrit a' diligence, add to yere faith courage, and to yere courage knowledge.

6. And to knowledge the airtin o' yersel, and to the airtin o' yersel endurance, and to endurance holliness.

7. And to holliness britherly-kindness, and to yere britherly-kindness love.

8. Thir things belangin t'ye, and aboundin, they sal make ye to be neither idle nor unfrutefu' i' the fu' knowledge o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

9. For he wha is wantin i' thir things is bleart' seein-na far-awa, haein forgotten the purifyin o' his auld sins.

10. Whaur-for the rather, brethren, gie gude tent to mak siccar yere callin and walin-oot; for doin thir things ye sal in naegate at ony time stoiter.

11. For sae sal unco richly be supply't t'ye a graun enterin-in to the evir-bidin kingdom o' oor Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12. And sae I'be be aye ready to pit ye in mind o' thae things; tho' ye ken them, and haes been made siccar i' the truth present wi' ye.

13. Nane-the-less, I tak it to be richt, as lang as I am i' this sheelin, to steer ye up, by remindin ye.

14. Kennin that sune comes the pittin-aff o' my sheelin, conform to what the Lord Jesus Christ made clear to me.

15. Yet I will gie gude tent, on ilka occasion, that ye may hae means, eftir my depairtin, to keep in mind a' thae things.

16. For it wasna as followin eftir pawkie-wrocht-oot tales, that we made kent to ye the poorer and presence o'oor Lord Jesus Christ; but as ee-witnesses o' his gloriousness.

17. For whan he was gien frae God the Faither honor and glorie, and a voice cam to him frae that glorious splendor, "This is my Son, the Beloved Ane, in wham I delicht!"

18. E'en this voice we heard, whan it cam frae heaven; we bein wi' him i' the holie mount.

19. And we hae the word o' prophecie, made maist siccar, to whilk ye do weel gin ye tak gude tent, as to a licht glintin in a mirk place, to what time the dawn come, and the mornin-starn rise i' yere hearts.

3 V. 9. No clean blin'; but wantin in clear sicht. Eng.: "purblind."

9V. 16. On the mount, to whilk Peter specially refers (tho' it is the same word he elsewhaur uses for "comin"), it was rather a glorify't presence, than strictly a "comin."
20. Kennin this first, that nae prophecie o' Scriptur is o' allene and private 1 meanin'.

21. For nevir cam any prophecie by the wull o' man; but as by Holie Spirit mov'd, sae speak holie men o' God.

CHAPTER TWA.
The folk of Sodom and Gomorrah; and thae that follow their ways.

But thar war false-prophets amang the folk; as e'en amang you wull thar be false-teachers: sic as wull hidlins bring in diabolical sects e'en denying the Lord wha bocht them; bringin doon on theirsels sudden destruction.

2. And mony wull follow oot their wanton ways; throwe wham the way o' truth wull be misca'd;

3. And in their menseless greed, wi' twaفاuld words, wull they mak trokin-ware o' ye: whase condemnation o'auld days isna gane-by, and their destruction sleepe-na.

4. For gin God didna spare Angels when they sinned—castin them to hell—and deliverin them ower to dungeons o' gloom, keepit for judgment;

5. And spared-na the auld wairld, lettin lowse a flood on the ungodiie anes, but preserved Noah, a preacher o' richtousness, as the 2 authent person:

6. And bringin the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah till assis, whamnit them ower in condemnation; settin them forth as a lesson to sic as soud eftir be ungodiy.

7. And richtous Lot, sair vex't wi' the wanton lives o' the wicked, he deliver't;

8. For wi' seein and hearin, that richtous ane dwallin among them was distressin his richtous saul wi' their lawless deeds.

9. The Lord kens hoo to deliver sic as are godlie oot farse trials; and to keep the day o' Judgment to to be dealt wi', sic as are ungodiie;

10. Mair in particular, thae gaun awa aftir the fleisch, i' the ill-desires o' uncleanness; despillin rule; darin; pamperers o' theirsels; authorities they fear-na to misca';

11. Whaur-as Angels, heigher in poorer and micht, feeb-na a railin accusation again 3 them afore the Lord.

12. But thir, as beass wantin reason, made to be ta'en and destroyed, misca' things they kenna o', i' their snarin sal theirsels be snared!

13. Dreein wrang as the outcome o' wrang-doing; they that coont it a pleasur to riot i' the day-time: blotches and haines; riotin in self-deceit as they feast wi' you.

14. E'en takin-up wi' an adulteress, and that winna cease farse sin; wheedlin souls that are waft; wi' a heart schuiled by greed; bairns that are accurst;

15. Gaun a-gley farse the straught way, and are forewander't; traikin eftir the gate o' Balaam son o' Bosor, wha socht the fees o' unrichtousness.

16. But was repruv't for his ain wickedness; a dumb beas' wi' man's voice speakin, forbad the rage o' the prophet.

17. Thir are waal-ees wantin the watir; mists carry't wi' the wund; for wham the gloom o' mirkness is keepit for aye.

18. For, speakin unco swalled-up words o' vanity, they wheedle wi' fleshly desires, wi' wanton ways, thae that war escapin farse them that leevie in error;

19. They promisin freedom to them, they theirsels bein a' the time slaves o' corruption. (For, by whate'er ane has been overcome, he has become a slave tilla'.)

20. For gin aiblins eftir they had escapit the pollutions o' the wairld, 4

---

1 V. 20. No to be ta'en as a private rule for me, and no at the same time for my brither. It is for the Kirk, and for the world!

2 V. 5. No the authent frase Adam, for he was the tenth; but the authent o' thae that war saved by the ark.

3 V. 11. Again the anes that fell, nae doot; tho' some read "again theirsels."
II. PETER, III.

Be ready for't!

throwe a knowledge o' the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again taiglit thar-in—ther last state is waur nor the first!

21. Unco better for them no to hae kent the way o' richtouness ava, than, haein come to ken it, to turn awa frae the holie commaun gien to them!

22. It has come aboot wi' them conform to the true sayin, "The dog turnin again to his ain spuein;" and, "A sow washe, to wallowin i' the muck."

CHAPITIR THRIE.

The awesome day o' the Lord. None kens when, but a' to be ready!

THIS, a second letter, beloved, I am writin to ye; in whilk letters I steer up yere aesaual minds by way o' remindin,

2. That ye soud mind the words the holie prophets apak afore, and the commauns o' the Lord and Saviour throwe yere Apostles.

3. Kennin this first, that thar wull come scoffers i' the last day, scoffin; gaun on conform to their aine ill-desires,

4. And speirin, "Whaur is the promise o' his comin? for, frae whatna day the faithers drappit asleep, a' things gang even-on frae the first o' the creation."

5. For this they o' their ain wull forget, that the heevens war frae o' auld, and the yirth oot o' the warit and throwe the warit swappit-the-gither, by God's word;

6. By whilk the warld than-bein, whammiltower in warit, perish't.

7. While the heevens and the yirth that are noon, keepit by his word, hae been stored up for fire, for a day o' judgment and ruin o' ungodlie men.

8. But tak gude tent o' this a thing, beloved, that "Ae day is wi' the Lord as a thoosand year;" and a thoosand year as ae day.

9. The Lord is nae swein anent his promise, as some men speak o' sweariness; but is lang-tholin wi' you, no bein willin that ony soud be destroy't, but that a' soud airt their ways to repentance.

10. But the day o' the Lord wull come as comes a thief; in whilk the heevens wi' an unco noise sal flee awa, and the elements sal be meltit wi' ragin heat, and the yirth and the warks o' sal be brunt.

11. Seein than, that a' thir things are to be dissolvit, whata personasand ye a' the time be, in holie habita o' leevin, and warks o' godliness,

12. Lookin forrit and bringin narer the comin o' God's day, throwe whilk, the heevens bein a-lowe, wull be dissolvit; and elements, wi' awesome heat, are to be meltit?

13. But we look for new heevens and new yirth, conform to his promise, whaur holiness bides.

14. Sae, beloved, lookin forrit for sic things, gie a' tent (wantin blotch or blain), to be fund o' him in peace:

15. And reckon ye oor Lord's lang-tholin to be salvation; e'en as oor weel-lo'd brother Paul, conform to the wisdom gien to him, wrate t'ye:

16. As too, in a' letters, speakin in them o' thir things; in whilk letters are a wheen things hard to be comprehendit, whilk they that are ignorant and unsiccar 1 wrangely turn as they dae the lave o' Scriptur, to their ain ruin.

17. Ye than, weel-lovd anes, kennin aforehaun, tak gude tent, least bein led a-gley wi' the wa'gaun o' the wicked, ye soud fa' oot frae yere ain siccariness.

18. But grow ye in lovin-favor and knowledge o' oor Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be the glorie, baith e-noo and for evir and aye. Amen!

1 V. 16. Tak tent no to handle the Scriptures as did the fuld Pharisees, and mak them serveats o' error and sin. God is holie; and his word, weel understude, airts men to holiness.

301
FIRST JOHN.

CHAPTRIR ANE.

Christ the Life, and Christ the Licht, o’ men.

THAT whilk was frae the first o’ a’,
that whilk we hae heard, that
whilk we hae seen wi’ oor een, that
whilk we for oorschels hae gazit upon,
and oor hauns war laid on, o’ the
Word o’ Life,—

2. And the Life was made kent
to us, and we hae seen, and gie wit-
ness, and report to you the evir-
durin Life, whilk was wi’ the Faither,
and was made kent to us.

3. That whilk we hae oorschels seen
and heard, we report to you, that ye
too as weil may hae marrowin wi’ us;
and oor marrowin is wi’ the Faither,
and wi’ his Son Jesus Christ.

4. And we write thir things,
that oor joy may be filled fu’.

5. And this is what we hae heard
o’ him, and gie to you, that God is
licht, and mirkness isna in him:
nane avy a.

6. Gin aiblins we soud say, “We
hae marrowin wi’ him,’” ar gae
on i’ the mirk, we are lears, and
divna the truth.

7. But gin aiblins we are gae on
i’ the licht, as he is in the licht, we
marrow ane wi’ anither, and
the blude o’ Jesus his Son maks us clean
frae a’ sin.

8. Gin aiblins we soud say, “Sin
hae we nane,” we deceive oorschels, and
the truth bides-na in us.

9. Gin aiblins we confess oor sins,
lee1 and gude is he to forgie oor
sins, and mak us pure frae ilk un-
righteous deed.

10. Gin aiblins we soud say, “We
hae-na sinned,” we are makin him
false, and his word isna in us.

1 V. 9. What a ferlie, that the purit believer
can claim God’s Justice and truth for the
pittin-a wa o’ his sins! God has pro-
mised; and he is leal to his promise!

CHAPTRIR TWA.

Love is the great Law; and Faith the
great want.

MY dear bairns, thir things I write
t’ye, that ye Loudna sin; and
gin aiblins ony ane sins, we hae an
Advocat wi’ the Faither, Jesus Christ
the Gude!

2. And he is the coverin-ower o’
oor sins; and no for oors alenar, but
e’en for thae o’ the hail warld.

3. And in siclike we ken that we
hae come to ken him, gin we keep
his commauns.

4. He that says, “I hae gotten to
ken him,” and keeps-na his com-
mauns, is a leear; and the truth isna
in sic a ane.

5. But whasae’er may be keepin
his word, in sic a ane, truly, is the
love o’ God made perfete. And thus
ken we that we are in him.

6. He that says “he bides in him,”
soud, e’en as he walkit, sae walk his
sel.

7. Beloved, I write nae new com-
maun to ye, but an auld commaun,
whilk ye had frae the first. The auld
commaun is the word that ye heard.

8. Again, a new commaun write I
t’ye, and whilk is true in him and in
you: “That the mirk is gane by,
and the true licht noo shines oot!”

9. He that says “He is i’ the licht,”
and hates his brether, is in the mirk
e’en till noo.

10. He that lo’es his brether bides
i’ the licht; and thair is nae cause for
stoiterin in him.

11. Whaur-as he wha hates his
brether is i’ the mirk, and ganges i’ the
mirk, and kens-na whaur he is airtin,
for that the mirkness has blindit his
een.

12. I write to you, dear bairns,
for yere sins hae been forgien ye, for
the sake o’ his name.
13. I write to you, faithkit, for that ye hae come to ken him that was frae the first. I write to you, lads, for that ye hae owercome the ill-ane.

14. I wrote to you, dear bairns, for that ye hae come to ken the Faither. I wrote to you, faithkit, for that ye hae come to ken him that was frae the first. I wrote to you, lads, for that ye are sterk, and the word o' God bides in ye, and ye hae owercome the ill-ane.

15. Love—ye-na the world, nor yet the things i’ the world; gin ony ane is lovin’ the world, the love o’ the Faither isna in him.

16. For a’ that is i’ the world, the desires o’ the flesh and the craikin’ o’ the een, and the pride o’ folk’s lives, isna o’ the Faither, but is o’ the world.

17. And the world wears awa, and the desires o’ the same; but wha dis the wull o’ God bides for aye.

18. Bairns, it is the last ‘oor; and, e’en as ye heard tell that antichrist is comin, e’en noo antichrists are mony; and sae we come to ken it is the last ‘oor.

19. Frae’mang us they gaed oot, but they warna ane wi’ us; for gin they had been ane wi’ us, they wad hae bidden wi’ us; but it was that they sou’d be kent, hoo they wanna o’ us.

20. And ye hae an anointin frae the Holie Ane, and 1 ken a’ things.

21. I didna write ‘t’ye as jalousin ye kent-na the truth, but for that ye kent it, and for that nae lee is o’ the truth.

22. Wha is a leear, gin it be-na he that denies that Jesus is the Anointit? This is the antichrist, he wha denies the Faither and the Son.

23. Ilka ane wha denies the Son hasna the Faither: he that owns the Son has the Faither as weel.

24. As for yersels, lat that bide w’ye that ye heard frae the first: for gin ye abide in what ye heard at the first, ye sal abide in the Son, and abide in the Faither.

25. And this is the promise he promised to us, e’en the life that is forevir and aye.

26. Thir things I wrote to ye, anent thae that beguile ye.

27. As for you, the anointin ye had frae him bides within ye, and ye dinna need ony ane sou’d gie ye lear; but as his anointin schaws ye o’ a’ things, and is true and nae lee, e’en conform tae the lear o’it, bide ye in him!

28. And noo, dear bairns, bide ye in him; sae that gin aiblins he sou’d be made seen, we may hae freedom o’ speech, and no be putten to shame at his comin.

29. Gin aiblins ye ken that he is richtous, ken ye as weel that ilka ane that is doin richtousness is born o’ him.

CHAPTER THRIE.

God’s bairns to ‘gree thegither—lo’e ane anither—and lo’e God maist o’ a’.

LOOK, whatna love the Faither has bestow on us, that we sow de ca’d “God’s Bairns”; and we are! And that the world kens-us-na; for it kent-him-na!

2. Beloved, noo are we bairns o’ God; and it hasna yet been seen what we sal be. But we ken that gin he sal be seen, we sal be like him; for we sal see him; conform to what he is.

3. And ilka ane haein this hope in him, make his sel pure, e’en as Christ is pure.

4. Ilk ane that dis sin brecks ower the law; for sin is a breckin’ ower the law.

5. And ye are aware that he was made kent, that he mitcht tak aaw oor sins; and in him sin isna!

7. Na’e ane bidin in him sins; na’e ane sinnin has seen him nor comprehendit him.

303
7. Dear bairns! lat nae ane beguile ye! He that dis richtouness he is richtous, e'en as Christ is richtous.
8. He that dis sin is o' Sautan; for Sautan sins frae the first. And for this end was the Son o' God made kent, that he micht whammlie ower the wurks o' Sautan.
9. Nae ane begotten o' God gang on in sin; for his seed in him abides; and he caunna gang on in sin, for he is begotten o' God.
10. In siclike is made kent the bairns o' God, and the bairns o' Sautan. Nae ane that diana do richtouness is o' God, naither he that loe's-na his brither.
11. For this is the message ye heard frae the first: that we soud lo'e ane anither:
12. No like Cain, wha was o' the Ill-an, and slew his brither. And for why did he slay him? For that his wurks war ill, and his brither's richtous.
14. We oorssels ken we hae stappit over frae death intil life, for that we lo'e the brethren. He that loe's-na bides still in death.
15. Ilka ane that hates his brither is a blude-shedder; and we ken that nae blude-shedder has evir-durin life bidin in him.
16. Hereby hae we come to ken love, in that Christ on our behaful laid doon his life; and we soud, in behauf o' the brethren to pawn oor lives.
17. But whasae has this world's gear, and sees his brither in need, and steeks oot his tender affections awa frae him, hoo dwalls God's ain love in him?
18. Dear bairns! lat us no lo'e alane in words; nor wi' the tongue, but in wurks and in truth!
19. And in this sal we come to ken that we oorssels are o' the truth, and sal mak blythe the oor hearts afore him.
20. Whan oor hearts wyte us, God is aboon oor hearts, and kens a' things.
21. Beloved, gin aiblins oor heart wytes-us-na, we hae freedom o' speech toward God;
22. And whatna things we may be seekin, we are obteenin frae him; for his commaun we are keepin, and the things plesin in his sicht we are doin.
23. And this is his commaun, that we soud hae faith i' the name o' his Son Jesus Christ, and be loe'in ane anither; conform to the commaun he gied us.
24. And he that keeps his commauns, in Christ abides, and he in him! And thus we ken that he abides in us, throwe the Spirit he has gien us.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

*We arena to lippen ilka spirit, but to follow true spirits. Hoo to ken siclike.*

WEEL-LOED anes! lippen-ye-na a' spirits, but try the spirits, gin they be o' God! for mony false-prophets are gane oot intil the world.

2. Hereby ken ye the spirit o' God: ilka spirit that owns Jesus Christ, as haein come i' the flesh, is o' God;
3. And ilka spirit that owns-ja Jesus, is no' o' God. And this is the spirit o' anticchrist that ye heard o' as comin; and e'en noo is it i' the world.
4. Ye are o' God, dear bairns, and hae overcome them; for greater is he that is in you than he that is in the world.
5. Thir are o' the world; and sae they speak o' the world, and the world hearkens to them.
6. We are o' God! He that kens God, hearkens to us; and he that isna o' God hearkens-nan till us: and sae we ken the spirit o' truth and the spirit o' error.

7. Beloved, lat us lo'e ane anither; for love is o' God; and ilk ane that lo'es is begotten o' God, and kens God.

8. He that lo'es-na, ne'er kent God: for God is love.

9. And sae was made to be seen the love o' God in us, that God sent oot his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might leeve throwe him.

10. In this is love—no that we lo'ed God, but that he lo'ed us, and sent oot his Son, a coverin'-ower for oor sins.

11. Beloved! gin God sae lo'ed us, we too soud lo'e ane anither,

12. Nae ane has at any time seen God; gin we be lo'ein ane anither God bides in us, and his love has been made perfete in us.

13. And thus we ken that we bide in him, and he bides in us, on account o' his Spirit he has gien us.

14. And we hae 1 seen him, and gie witness that the father has sent oot the Son, as the Saviour o' the world.

15. Whasae may own that Jesus is the Son o' God, God bides in him, and he abides in God.

16. And we hae come to ken and to believe the love that God has to us. God is love; and he wha bides in love, bides in God, and God bides in him.

17. Herein is love perfetit in us, that we may hae freedom o' speech i' the day o' judgment, in that, e'en as he is, sae are we i' this world.

18. Fear bides-na in love; nay, perfete love casts oot fear; for fear has misery, and wha fears isna made perfete in love.

19. We lo'e, for that he first lo'ed us.

20. Gin aiblins any ane soud say. "I lo'e God!" and is hatin his brither, he is a leear; for he that lo'es-na his brither whom he has seen, hoo can he be lo'ein God whom he hasna seen?

21. And this comman hae we frae him, that he wha lo'es God is to be lo'ein his brither as weel.

CHAPITIR FYVE.

Hoo ane is born again: and hoo it is seen and kent.

Whasae believes that Christ is the Anointit, is begotten o' God; and ilk ane that lo'es him that begat, lo'es him as weel that is begotten o' him.

2. By this we ken that we lo'e God's bairns, when we lo'e God, and are keepin his commains:

3. For this is the love o' God, that we soud keep his commains; and his commains are na burden.

4. For a' that is born o' God overcomes the world; and this is the victory that overcam the world, e'en oor faith.

5. And wha is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes Jesus is God's Son?

6. This is he wha came baith by watir and blude, Jesus Christ; no in watir alone; but by the watir and by the blude.

7. And it is the Spirit that is bearin' witness, for the Spirit is truth.

8. For thar are thrie that are giean witness, the Spirit, and the watir, and the blude; and the thrie are for the ae thing.

9. Gin we accept the witness o' men, the witness o' God is mair; for this is the witness o' God, that he has witnessed anent his Son.

10. He wha hau'd to the Son o' God has the witness in himsel; he

1 V. 14. John says, "Nae ane has at any time seen God," that is the Father: but since the Apostles had seen Christ, he had seen God. ...
I. JOHN, V.

wha lippens-na God, has made him oot fause; for he hasna pitten faith i' the witness God has witnessed enent his Son.

11. And here is the witness: that God has giftit us wi' eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

12. Wha has the Son has the life; and wha hasna the Son o' God hasna the life.

13. Thir things I wrate to ye that ye micht ken ye has eternal life; to you wha are pittin faith i' the name o' the Son o' God.

14. And this is the freedom o' speech that we hae toward him; that, gin onything we be askin, conform to his wull, he hearkens to us.

15. And, gif we ken he hearkens to us, whata thing we may be askin frae him, we ken that we hae the askins that we askit o' him.

16. Gin aiblns ony ane soud see his brither sinnin a sin no to death, he sal ask, and he wull gie him life, for thae sinnin no to death. Thar is a sin to death; no anent that am I sayin that he soud mak request.

17. A' wickedness is sin, and thar is sin no to death.

18. We ken that nae ane begotten o' God is sinnin; but anent him wha was begotten o' God—he keeps him, and yon Ill-ane disna touch him.

19. We ken that we are o' God, and the hail warld is in the airms o' the Ill-ane.

20. But we ken the Son o' God has come, and has gien us an inward sicht, that we may comprehend the True Ane; and we are in the True Ane; in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and, and life-for-aye.

21. Dear bairns! gaird yersels frae eidols!
SECOND JOHN.

The Elder has sweet coonsel wi' a Christian mither.

THE Elder to a 'chosen leddy, and her bairns, whom I lo'e i' the truth; and no I alienar, but a' thea too that hae come to ken the truth;

2. For the truth that is bidin in us, and sal be wi' us for aye.

3. Lovin-favor sal be wi' us, mercy and peace frae God the Faither, and frae Jesus Christ the Son o' the Faither, in truth and love.

4. I was blythe that I faund amang yere bairns thae that war ganging i' the truth, e'en as we hae had commaun o' the Faither.

5. And noo I beg o' ye, leddy, no as giean a new commaun to ye, but e'en what we hae frae the first, that we soud lo'e ane anither.

6. And this is love, that we gang

7. For mony faus-anes hae gane oot intil the world, they that own-na that Jesus Christ is come i' the flesh. This is a faus-ane and an anti-christ.

8. Tak ye gude tent to yersels, least ye tine what things ye did win; but that a fu' reward ye may duly hae.

9. Whasa'er ganges ayont, and bides-na i' the teachins o' Christ, hasna God. He that bides i' the teachins, e'en he has baith the Faither and the Son.

10. Gif ony ane comes t'ye, and brings-na this teachin, tak-him-na to yere hoose, nor say to him, "Joy be w'ye!"

11. For be that says to him, "Joy be w'ye!" marrows wi' his ill-deeds.

12. Haein mony things to write t'ye, I wadna wi' paper-an-ink; but I hope to come t'ye, and speak mou' to mou', that yere joy may be fu'.

13. The bairns o' yere chosen sister salute ye.

---

1 V. 1. Some tak the words electe Cyria ("'chosen leddy") to be, ane or ither o' them, the name o' the person to wham this letter was sent. Oor English translators tak the contrar view: but it is like eneuch that her name was Cyria; and here spoken o' as the "chosen" or "elect" Cyria.
THIRD JOHN.

To godly Gaius; and anent anither that was ower muckle pitten his sel forrit.

THE Elder sae Gaius the weel-lo’ed, whom I lo’e truly.

2. Beloved, I pray that in a’ things ye may be prosperin, and be in health; e’en as ye are prosperin in yere saul.

3. For I was blythe whan the brethren cam, and bune witness to yere aseauldness, e’en as ye are walkin in aseaulness.

4. Greater joy hae I nane than that I soud be hearin o’ my bairns, ganging i’ the truth.

5. Beloved, a thing o’ faith are ye doin, whatsa ye are doin for the brethren—and to them being fremd folk t’ye.

6. Wha testify’t afore the Kirk to yere love; wham ye sal do weel to set forrit on their journey, in a way wordie o’ God.

7. For in behauf o’ “The Name” thay gaed forth, takin naething frae thae ootside.

8. We, than, soud susteen sic as thir, that we may be fellow-workers wi’ the truth.

9. I wrae somewhat to the Kirk, but he wha is fain to be heid amang them—Diotrephes—bids me nae wel-come.

10. Whaur-for, gin aiblins I come, I wull hae in mind his warks that he dis, wi’ ill-words misca’in us; and, no content wi’ thir things, he naither bids welcome the brethren, nor hauds frae castin oot o’ the Kirk thae that are sae disposed.

11. Beloved, pit-ye-na on that whilk is ill, but that whilk is gude. The weel-doer is o’ God; the ill-doer hasna seen God.

12. A’ hae borne witness to Demetrius; and the truth itsel. We too, gie witness, and ye ken oor witness is true.

13. Mony things had I to write ye; but I am-na ready wi’ ink-and-pen to be writin t’ye;

14. But I am hopin belyve to see ye, and we will speak mou’ to mou’. Peace be t’ye. The freends salute ye. Salute ye the freends by name.
J U D E.

Warning: again corrupt sine. The Lord is comin!

J U D E, a servitor o' Jesus Christ, brither o' James, to thae wha bein in God the Faither believed anes, and keepit in Jesus Christ, are the chosen.

2. Mercie to you, and peace and love, be made mair!

3. While I was giean a' tent to be writin to ye o' oor common salvation, I fand it necessar to write to ye, exhortin ye to strive uncolie for the faith ance-and-for-a' gien to the saunta.

4. For thar slippit in a wheen men, o' wham it was putten-dooin lang syne, that this soud be their condemnation, ungodlie anes—oor God's lovin-favor turnin intill wantonness, and disownin oor only Lord Jesus Christ.

5. I am thar-for disposed to pit ye in mind, tho' ance-and-for-a' ye ken a' things, that the Lord, haein saved a folk oot o' the land o' Egypt, did again destroy them wha believed-na.

6. Angels too, thae wha mainteen'd-na their ain station, but left their ain place, has he keepit for judgment o' a great day, in eir-durin bonds, in mirkness.

7. As Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities aboot them, for that in siclike they gaed oot to commit uncleanness, and gaun eftir strange flesh, are set forrit as a warin, dreelin the penalty of endless fire.

8. And in siclike, e'en thir dreamers defile the flesh, despise authority, and misca' dignities;

9. Whaur-as Michael the Arch-angel, whan contendid wi' Sautan he debatit aboot Moses' body, daurna misca' him; but quo' he, "The Lord reprove ye!"

10. But thir, as mony things as they ken-na, they misca'; while in as mony things as they ken by nature as the beasts without reason, in thir they corrupt theirsels.

11. Alack for them! for they gaed on i' the path o' Cain, and waris't forrit i' the sin o' Balaam, and perish't i' the mockery o' Korah.

12. Thir are they that are like hidlin rocks at yere love-feasts, whan they feast w'ye; shepherds 1 feedin theirsels without shame; cluda wantin moisture, by the winds driven on; trees o' the leaf-fa'in, wantin frute, twice deid, rived up by the rutes;

13. Wild waves o' the sea, foamin oot o' their ain shame; gangrel starns, for wham black mirkness has been keepit for aye.

14. And to thir prophesye't Enoch, the seeventh frae Adam, and quo' he, "Behauid! the Lord cam, amang his holie myriads,

15. "To gie judgment upon a', and to sentence a' the ungodlie anent a' their warks o' wickedness they for ungodliness had done; and anent a' the hard things they spak again him; sinfu', ungodlie men!"

16. Thir are yammerers, compleenin anes, gaun on eftir their ain desires; and their mou' speak heigh swallin words, fleeing and flatterin folk for their ain ends.

17. But ye beloved, mind ye the words afore spoken by the Apostles o' oor Lord Jesus Christ;

18. For they tell't ye that i' the last times thar soud be mockers, gaun on conform to their own ungodlie desires.

19. Thir are they that mak separations; natural men, no possessin the Spirit :

---

1 V. 12. A shepherd soud feed his flock; but this sort thocht only o' theirsels.

309
20. But ye beloved, up-biggin yersels i' yere maist holie faith, prayin i' the Holie Spirit,
21. Keep yersels in God's love, lookin for the mercie o' oor Lord Jesus Christ until life-for-aye.
22. And on some hae unco compassion, while they argue w'ye;
23. And ither save wi' terrors, cleekin them oot o' the lowe; and on
24. Noo to him wha is strang to gaird ye frae fa'in, and to set-ye-doon i' the presence o' his glorie faultless, wi' unco rejoicin,
25. To this ae God oor Saviour, throwe Jesus Christ oor Lord, be glorie, heighness, dominion, and poore, afore a' time past, and noo, and for a' time to come! Amen!
CHAPITIR ANE.

John to the Seeven Kirks; and the braw blinks he had o' Christ, on the Lord's Day.

A REVEALIN o' Jesus Christ, that God gied to him, to mak kent to his servants the things that bude come to pass; and he sent and shawed by signs, throwe his Angels, to his servitor John:

2. Wha burre witness anent the word o' God, and the testifyin o' Jesus Christ, and as mony things as he saw.

3. Happy he wha reads, happy they wha listen to the words o' the Revealin, and keeps the things sae putten-doan; for the time rows on!

4. JOHN to the Seeven Kirks that are in Asia: lovin-favor to ye, and peace, frae Wha-Is, and Wha-Was, and Wha-is-to-Be; and frae the 1 seiven Spirits that are afore his thron.

5. And frae Jesus Christ, the leal witness, "the first-born o' the deid, the heid o' the kinglly anes o' the yirth." To him wha lo'es us, and lowsed us oot o' oor sins wi' his bluide,

6. And made o' us a kingdom! priests to his God and Faither; to him be glory and dominion for evir and aye. Amen!

7. Tak tent! he comes in cluds, and every ee sal see him, and they that pierced him; and a' the tribes o' the yirth sal maen for him.

8. "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says God, "Wha-Is, and Wha-Was, and Wha-is-to-Be, the Almichty!"

9. I John, yere brither, and yere marrow in dool, and the kingdom, and the tholin, in Jesus, was i' the Isle ca'd Patmos, for the sake o' the word o' God, and the witness o' Jesus.

10. I cam to be i' the Spirit on the Lord's Day; and heard, abhint me, an awfu' voice as o' a bugle born,
11. Sayin, "What ye behauld write ye in a buik, and send to the Seeven Kirks; to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamum, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea."
12. And I turned me aboot to see the voice that spak to me, and haein turned, I saw seiven gowden lamp-bearers;
13. And in the mids o' the seiven gowden lamp-bearers, Ane like as to the Son o' Man, cleedit wi' a mantle doon till his fit, and row't aboot the breist wi' a gowden girdin-grait.
14. His heid and his locks white, as the white woo', as the snaw; and his een like a lowing 2 fire.
15. And his feet like tae brass made clear, as gin they war melit in a furnace; and his voice as the sough o' mony watirs.
16. And he had in his richt haun seiven starns, and oot o' his mou' gaed forth a keen twa-moothed sword; and his countenance was like the sun skinin in his strength.
17. And when I saw him, I loutit doon at his feet as ane deid. And he laid his richt haun on me, and quo' he, "Be na fey't! I am the first and the last;

1 V. 4. Some expone it as a seiven-fauld manifestation o' the attributes o' God; and some as seiven Archangels o' poorer; but we are wyss to haud wi' the feck o' the interpreters, who tak it to mean the Holie Spirit, in a' his mony ways o' workin.

2 V. 14. Here, and in mony places, John quotes or refers to Daniel. See Dan. vii. 9, and x. 6. The twa men were unco like ane anither, i' the revelations they had.
REVELATION, II.

The messages to the Kirks.

18. "And the Leevin-Ane; and I was deid, and behauld! leevin am I for evir and aye, and I hae the keys o' death and the pit.
19. "Set doon, than, the things ye saw, and the things that are, and the things that are sune to come eftrir thir present things.
20. "The secret o' the seeven starns that ye saw on my richt haun, and the seeven lamp-bearers o' gowd: the seeven starns are the messengers o' the Seeven Kirks; and the seeven lamp-bearers are the Seeven Kirks."

CHAPTRIR TWA.
The message to the Kirks. And tak ye tent that a' that could be said gude o' them is said, afore ony faut is fund wi' what was wrang.

TO the messenger o' the Kirk in Ephesus write: Thir things quo' be wha siccar bauds the seeven starns in his richt haun, he that gangs amid the seeven gowden lamp-bearers:
2. "I ken yere work, and strivin, and yere patience; and that ye canna thole ill men; and did test them ca' in theirsels 'Apostles,' and are-na, and faund them leears;
3. "And has striven, and for my name did thole, and hasna gien ower.
4. "Nane-the-less, I hae this again ye, that ye hae turned awa frae yere first love.
5. "Bring ye to mind, than, frae whaur ye hae faun; and turn ye, and div ye yere first works; or I' se come t'ye, and wull tak awa yere lamp-bearer oot o' its place—gin ye turn-na.
6. "But this ye hae, that ye scunner at the works o' the Nicolaitanes, e'en whilk I scunner at.
7. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks! To him wha prevails, I wull gie to him to eat o' the tree o' Life, whilk is in the Paradise o' God.
8. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Smyrnya write: Thir things says the First and the Last, wha was deid, and is leevin:
9. "I ken yere work, and dool, and poortith (but rich are ye!), and the mica'in o' theirsels Jews, and are-na, but are a kirk o' Sautan.
10. "Be-na-fleyt as to whatna things ye are to dree. And look! the Enemy is aboot to cast some o' ye intil thrall, that ye may be testit; and ye'se hae dool ten days. Be ye leal to death, and I wull gie ye the croon o' Life!
11. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit says to the Kirks! He that prevails, sal in naegate be skaithed o' the second death.
12. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Pergamum write: Thir things says he wha has the keen twa-mouth'd sword,
13. "I ken whaur ye dwall, e'en whaur Sautan has his thron; and that ye hau siccar my name, and that ye didna disown my faith, e'en i' the days o' Antipa, my leal ane, wha was slain amang ye, whaur Sautan bides.
14. "But I hae again ye a wheen things: that ye hae thar sic as hau siccar the teashin o' Balaam, wha airtit Balak to set a snare afore the children o' Isral', to eat o' eidol-sacrificees, and commit uncleanness.
15. "Sae hae ye thae as hau siccar the teashins o' the Nicolaitanes, in siclike manner.
16. "Turn ye than; but if no, I am comin to ye wi' speed, and wull war again them wi' the sword o' my mouth.
17. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear, what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks! To him that prevails, wull I gie o' the secret man; and wull gie him a white stane, and on the stane a new name inscrivt, that nae ane kens savin he that gets it.
18. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Thyatira write: Thir things says the Son o' God, he wha has his
een like a lowin fire, and his feet like brass made clear:

19. “I ken yere warks, and lealness, and love, and service, and yere patient tholin, and yere warks; and the end to be mair nor the beginnin.

20. Nane-the-less, I hae this again ye, that ye thole that wumman, Jezebel, wha ca’s hersel a prophetess; and she wheedles my servants to commit uncleanness, and to eat eildil sacrificéeses.

21. “And I gied her time to turn frae her uncleanness, and she repented-na.

22. “Behauld! I wull cast her intil a bed, and thae that commit adultery wi’ her sal sair pyne, gin they turn-na frae her warks.

23. “And I’se slay her bairns wi’ death; and a’ the Kirks sal come to ken that I am he that rypes the inwards and the heart; and I wull return ye—ilk ane—conform to yere warks.

24. “But to you I say, to the lave in Thyatira, as mony hau’d-na this teacin, and ken-na the deep things o’ Sautan’ (as they say), I lay on ye nae ither burden.

25. “But what ye hae, hau’d ye siccar, till sic time as I may come!

26. “And he that prevails, and he that haunds on by my warks to the end, I wull gie him pover ower the nations;

27. “And he sal rule them wi’an airm sceptre, as potters’ veschels are dung in blades; as I too hae received frae my Faither.

28. “And I wull gie him the starn o’ the dawin.

29. “He that has hearin lat him hearken what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks!”

1 V. 19. Thyatira was growin and waxin, as every Kirk and every Christian soul. But I jealouse she etif fell awa the true faith, like the lave o’ them. Her licht was sune tame awa oot o’ its place.

2 V. 22. A bed o’ pain and anguish. The word is “kline,” used either for “bed” or “couch.”

CHAPITIR THRIE.

Coonsels and helps. Mair hope o’ the cauld-rise than ane rather het nor cauld.

AND to the messenger o’ the Kirk in Sardis write ye: Thir things says he wi’ the seeven Spirits o’ God, and the seeven starns: I ken what ye div, and that ye hae the name o’ leevin whan ye are deid.

2. “Tak ye gude tent, and mak siccar what remain, that are ready to dee; for I haen fund yere warks accomplisht &’ the sicht o’ my God.

3. “Mind weel, than, hoo ye ob-teen’d and heard; and hau’d siccar, and turn. Gin ye gaird-na, I wull come as comes a thief, and in naegate sal ye ken whatna ‘oor I’se come on ye.

4. “But ye hae a wee wheen names in Sardie, wha haen stained their robes, and they sal walk wi’ me in white; for they are wordie.

5. “Whasae prevails sal be buskit in white cleedin; and in naegate wull I delete his name oot o’ the Builk o’ Life: and I wull own his name afore my Faither, and afore his Angels.

6. “Ho that has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks!

7. “And to the messengers o’ the Kirk in Philadelphia write ye: Thir things says the Holie Ane, the ‘True Ane, he that has the key o’ Dauid, he that opens and nane can steer, and steer and nane can open:

8. “I ken yere warks (tak tent! I hae set afore ye a door unsteekit; as to whilk nane can shut it!) for ye hae a wee pover, and did keep my word, and dinna disown my name.

9. “Look! I gie them o’ Saitan’s kirk, whilk sae they are Jews and are-na, but lee; see, I wull gar them come and lout doon afore yere feet, and ken that I hae lo’ed ye.

10. “For that ye did keep the word o’ my patience, I sal e’en keep ye oot o’ the ‘oor o’ trial, whilk is coming on the hail world, to test them dwellin on the yirth.

313
11. "Wi' haste come I! haud fast what ye hae, sae as nae man takes yere croon!
12. "He that prevails, I wull mak him a strang pillar i' the temple o' my God; and oot-by sal he gang nae mair; and I wull set upon him the name o' my God, and the name o' the citie o' my God, New Jerusalem, she wha is to come doon oot o' heeven frae my God; and my new name.
13. "He that has hearin lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks!
14. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk o' Laodicea write ye: Thir things says the Amen, the Leal, and True Witness, the 'First o' the Creation o' God:
15. "I ken yere works, that naither cauld nor het ye are; I wad that ye had been aither cauld or het!
16. "And sae than, for that ye are simmer-warm, and naither cauld nor yet het, I wull spue ye oot o' my mouth!
17. "For ye are sayin: 'Rich am I; and hae rowth o' plenishin, and want nocht!'' and divna ken that ye are the wasome ane, and miserable; and in need, and blin', and nakit.
18. "I coonsel ye to buy frae me gowd made clear wi' fire, that ye may be rich; and white cleedin that ye may be weel-buskit; and that the shame o' yere nakitness appear-na; and ee-sa' to anoint yere een that ye may see.
19. "I, as mony as I weel-lo'e, reprove and chasten; be zealous than, and turn ye!
20. "Mark, I am stauin at the door, and chappin; gin ony ane hearken to my voice, and unsteek the door, I wull gang in to him, and sup wi' him, and he wi' me.

1. V. 14. No that he was the first creatit; for he wissa creatit; nor aiblins (in this place) that he was hissel the Creator—tho' that is true; but rather that he is the heid o' a' things; the First and Heighest.
9. And when the leevin-anes gie glorie, and honor, and thanksgiving to him that sits on the Thron, to him wha leaves for evir and evir.

10. The fowr-and-twenty Elders fa' doon afore him wha sits on the Thron, and gie worship to him wha leaves for evir and evir, and cast doon their croons afore the Thron, sayin,

11. "Wordie art thou, O Lord, e’en oor God, to receive a’ glorie, and honor, and poorer; for thou did mak a’ things; and o’ thy wull they war, and war creatit!"

CHAPTIR FYVE.
The Lamb that was slain opens the sealed Buik.

A ND I saw, on the richt haun o’ him that sat on the Thron, a buik, written within and without, seal’t up wi’ seiven seals.

2. And I saw a michty Angel, proclaimin wi’ a soondin voice, “Wha is fit to open the Buik, and to lowse its seals?”

3. And nae man was fit, in heeven, nor yet on the yirth, to open the buik, or e’en to look upon it.

4. And I grat sair, that nae man was fund fit to open the buik, or e’en to look on’t.

5. And ane frae mang the Elders says tae me, “Greet-na: see! the Lion o’ the tribe o’ Judah, the Rute o’ Davud, has prevailt to open the buik, and the seiven seals o’t.”

6. And I saw, i’ the mids o’ the Thron, and o’ the fowr leevin-anes, and in mids o’ the Elders, a Lamb staunin, as it had been slain, haein seeven horns and seseven een, whilk are the seeven Spirits o’ God sent oot till a’ the yirth.

7. And he cam, and has ta’en the buik oot o’ the richt haun o’ him that sits on the Thron.

8. And as soon as he rax’t for the buik, the fowr leevin-anes and the fowr-and-twenty Elders fell doon afore the Lamb, haein ilk a harp, and
gowden flagon fu’ o’ insence, whilk are the prayers o’ saunts;

9. And they sing a new sang, sayin, “Wordie art thou, to tak the buik and to lowse its seals; for thou was slain, and has brocht us to God by thy blude, oot o’ ilka tribe, and tongue, and folk, and nation;

10. “And did mak them a kingdum and priests to oor God; and they rule on the yirth!”

11. And I saw, and I heard as a voice o’ mony Angels, roond aboot the Thron, and o’ the leevin-anes, and o’ the Elders; and their number was myriads of myriads, and thoosunds o’ thoosands.

12. Sayin wi’ a soondin voice, “Wordie is the Lamb that was slain, to receive poorer, and riches, and wisdom, and might, and honor, and glorie, and blessin!”

13. And ilk creatit thing that is in Heeven, and on the yirth, and aneath the yirth, and on the sea, heard I sayin, “To him that sits on the Thron, and to the Lamb, be the blessin, and the honor, and the glorie and the poorer, for evir and aye!”

14. And the fowr leevin-anes war sayin “Amen!” And the Elders loutit doon and worshipped.

CHAPTIR SAX.
Sax seals lowse: and o’ that sould come on the yirth.

A ND I saw when the Lamb lowse d ane o’ the seals, and I heard ane o’ the leevin-anes sayin in a voice o’ thunner, “Come!”

2. And I saw, and lo! a white horse, and he that was on it was haudin a bow; and a croon was gien to him; and he gaed oot conquerin and that he sould conquer.

3. And when he had lowse d the second seal, I heard the second leevin-an, sayin, “Come!”

4. And forth gaed anither horre, reid; and to him that sat oon’t it was

\[^{1}V. 9. A new kind o’ sang a’ thegither: see the word signifies.\]
R E V E L A T I O N ,  V I I .

The Saints sealed.

gien to tak peace frae the yirth, and that they soud shed ither's blude; and that was gien to him a great sword.

5. And whan he had lowesd the third seal, I heard the third leevin-an, sayin, "Come!" And I lookit, and lo! a black horse, and he that sat on it had a pair o' books in his haun.

6. And I heard a voice i' the mids o' the fourf leevin-anes, sayin, "Twa gowpens o' wheath for a hauf-merk, and a forpet o' barley for a hauf-merk; and the oyle and the wine ye are-nas to skaith!"

7. And whan he lowesed the fourth seal, I heard the fourth leevin-an sayin, "Come!"

8. And I lookit, and lo! a blae horse, and he that sat on't had his name "Death," and the Sheuch follow't wi' him. And he had poorer gien him ower a fourth part o' the yirth to slay wi' the sword, and wi' hunger, and wi' the death, and wi' the wild beasts o' the yirth.

9. And whan he lowesed the fifth seal, I saw, aneath the altar, the sauls o' sic as had been slain for the word o' God, and for the witness that they held.

10. And they cry't oot wi' a loud voice, sayin, "To whatna time, O Lord, the Holie and the True, dost thou no judge and avenge oor blude on thae that dwell on the yirth!"

11. And thar was gien to them, ilk ane, a white robe; and it was tellt them that they should rest their sees a weel white, till their marrows, and their brethren that soud be slain e'en as they war, soud be a' fulfilled.

12. And I saw whan he lowesed the sixth seal; thar was a great yirdin; and the sun was black as sack-claith o' hair; and the hale mune becam as blude;

13. And the starns o' heaevn fell
to the yirth, as a fig-tree sheds her oorra figs, when shaken o' a michty win'.

14. And the heeven slippit awa, as a scroll row't-up; and every mountain and isle war mov't oot o' their stances.

15. And the kings o' the yirth, and the nobles, and rulers o' thousands, and the rich, and the michty, and ilka thirlman, and ilka freeman, bid theirsels i' the caves and i' the dens o' the mountains,

16. Sayin to the mountains and the craige, "Fa' on us! and beild us frae the face o' him wha sits on the Thron, and frae the wrath o' the Lamb!"

17. "For the great day o' their wrath is come; and wha is fit to staun?"

C H A P T I R S E E V E N .

The Sauns are sealed: "Wha are they in white attir?"

E FTIR thir things I saw fourf Angels staunin on the fourf corners o' the yirth, hauin siccarr the fourf wins o' the yirth, that nae wins o' soul blaw on the yirth, or on the sea, or on ony tree.

2. And I saw another Angel come up frae the sunrisin, basein the seal o' the leevin God, and he cry't oot wi' a soondin voice to the fourf Angels to whom it was gien to bring skaith on the yirth and the sea,

3. Sayin, "Ye maunna skaith the yirth, nor the sea, nor the trees, to we bae seal't the servants o' oor God on their broos."

4. And I heard the number o' thae seal't: a hunner and forty-four thousand; seal't oot o' every 2 tribe o' the sons o' Isra'il.

5. Oot o' Judah's tribe, twal'
The number sealed. REVELATION, VIII. The seventh seal.

317

thousand seal't; oot o' Reuben's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Gad's tribe, twal' thousand;

6. Oot o' Asher's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Naphtali's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Manasseh's tribe, twal' thousand.

7. Oot o' Simeon's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Levi's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Issachar's tribe, twal' thousand seal't.

8. Oot o' Zabulon's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Joseph's tribe, twal' thousand; oot o' Benjamin's tribe, twal' thousand seal't.

9. Ef'tir this I lookit, and see! an unco number, that nae man could tell, oot o' a' nations and kith, and folk, and speech, stude afore the Thron, and fornt the Lamb, dink't in white, wi' palms i' their hauns.

10. And cry't oot heigh, "Salvation to oor God, wha sits on the Thron, and to the Lamb!"

11. And a' the Angels war stannin i' the compass o' the Thron, and roond-aboot the Elders and the four leven-anes; and fell doon afore the Thron on their faces, worshippin God,

12. And quo' they, "E'en sae: Blessin', and glorie, and wisdom, and giean o' thanks, and honour, and poorer, and micht. be to oor God, for evir and evir mair!"

13. And ane o' the Elders answer't, and quo' he tae me, "Wha are thir, buskit a' in white? and whair cam they frae?"

14. And quo' I tae him, "My lord, ye ken!" And quo' he tae me. "Thir are the anes that cam oot o' sair and unco tossins-aboot, and hae made their cleedin white i' the blude o' the Lamb.

15. "Sae are they i' the presence o' the Thron o' God, and ser' him day and nicht in his Temple: and the Ane that sits on the Thron sal unfauld his tent ower him.

16. "And they sal hunger nae mair, and gang drouthie nae mair; nor sal the sun smite them, nor ony heat-blast.

17. "For the Lamb frae the mids o' the Throne sal herd them, and sal airt them to the watirs o' the waal-see o' Life; and God sal dicht awa' ilka tear frae their e'en!"

CHAPTER AUCHT.
The seventh seal loused. Four bugleorns soond: and the skailth that follows.

AND whane'er he open't the seventh seal, a quateness fell in Heven as it was for half-an'-oor.

2. And I saw the seven Angels wha staun i' the presence o' God; and thar war giean to them seven bugleborns.

3. And anither Angel cam and stude at the altar, wi' a gowden censer; and thar was giean to him muckle incense, that he might pit it wi' the prayers o' the saunts, pittin' them on the gowden altar that is fornt the Thron.

4. And the reek o' the incense gaed up, wi' the prayers o' the saunts, oot o' the Angel's hauns, afore God.

5. And the Angel took the censer, and fillit it wi' the lowin coals o' the altar, and cuist it on the yirth; and thar cam thunners, and voices, and lichtnings, and a yirdin.

6. And the seven Angels, thae baein the seven bugleborns, made theirsels ready that they soud soond.

7. And the first ane soondit: and hail and lowe, mix't in blude, war cuisten on the yirth; and the third-pairt o' the yirth was burnt-up, and the third-pairt o' the trees was burnt up, and a' green foggage was burnt up.

8. And the second Angel soondit; and as it war a great mountain, lowin wi' fire, was cuisten into the sea; and the third-pairt o' the sea becam blude.

1 V. 7. Thir fourw trompets aiblins refer to the invasion o' the Roman Empire, and the terror and skailth frae the hordes o' barbarians, under Alaric, Geneseric, Attila and Odoacer.
9. And the third-paort o' the beast that war i' the sea, that had life, dee't; and the third-paort o' the ships war destroy't.

10. And the third Angel soondit; and frae heeven fell a great starn, lowin like a lamp; and it fell on a third-paort o' the rivers, and on the heid-springs o' the watirs;

11. And the name o' the starn is ca'd "Worm-wud"; and the third-paort o' the watirs becam wormwud, and mony dee't o' the watirs, for they war made bitter.

12. And the fouwrth Angel soondit; and the third-paort o' the sun was smitten, and the third-paort o' the mune, and the third-paort o' the starns; and the third-paort o' them soud be made mirk, and the day soudna glint for a third-paort o'it, nor yet the night.

13. And I saw, and I hearken't to an eagle flyin throwe the mids o' the lift, cryin wi' a soondin voice, "Wae, wae, wae! for thae that dwall on the yirth, by reason o' the lave o' the voices o' the bugleborns o' the thrie Angels that hae yet to soond!"

CHAPTIR NINE.
The reek frae the bottomless pit, and the locusts that cam oot o' it.

AND the fifth Angel soondit; and I saw a starn that had faun oot o' heeven to the yirth; and thar was gien to him the key o' the pit o' the abyss.

2. And he unsteekit the pit o' the abyss; and reek cam up oot o' the pit, as the reek o' a great furnace; and the sun and the lift war darken't wi' the reek o' the pit.

3. And oot o' the reek cam locusts on the yirth; and pooper was gien them, as the scorpions o' the yirth hae power.

4. And it was bidden them that they soudna skaith the foggare o' the yirth, nor yet ony green thing, nor yet ony tree, but only the men wha haesa the seal o' God on their broo.

5. And it was gien to them that they soudna slay them, but that they soud be tormentit fivye months; and the torment o' them was like a scorpion's torment, when it may strike a man.

6. And i' thae days sal men seek for death, and no find it; and desire to dee, and death flees frae them.

7. And the likenes o' the locusts was as horses made ready for war; and on their heids war like croons o' gowd; and their faces as faces o' men;

8. And their hair as the hair o' weemen; and their teeth like lions' teeth;

9. And they had cuirasses as graith o'airn; and the noise o' their wings as the noise o' chariots, as o' mony horses rushin to battle.

10. And they had tails like scorpions, tails like stings; and i' their tails is poore to skaith men for fyve months.

11. And they had a king ower them, an angel o' the abyss; his name in Hebrew is "Abaddon," and in oor common tongue he has a name "Destroyer."

12. Ae wae is past; tak tent! thar are comin yet twa mair wae's eftir thir things!

13. And the sixth Angel soondit; and I heard a voice frae the horns o' the gowden altar, i' the presence o' God,

14. Sayin to the sixth Angel, "Ye that hae the bugleborn! louse the fowwr Angels that ar in bonds at the great river Euphrates!"

15. And the fowwr Angels war lowesed, wha had been made ready for the oor, and day, and month, and year, that they soud slay the third-paort o' men.

16. And the number o' the hosts o' horsemen, twa million: I heard the number o' them.

17. And I saw the horses i' the vision, and thae sittin on them; haein cuirasses as o' fire, and
The booke opened,  

REVELATION, XI.  

and hoo it tasted.

hyacinth, and brunstane; and the heidis o' the horses as heidis o' lions; and oot o' their mou' gangs 1 lowe, and reek, and brunstane.

18. By thir thrie plagues war slain the third-paart o' men; by the lowe, and the reek, and the brunstane that cam oot o' their mou'.

19. For the poore o' the horses is i' their mou' and i' their tail; for their tails are like serpents, wi' heids; and wi' them they do skaitth.

20. And the lave o' men, wha wanna slain by thir plagues, repentit-na o' the warks o' their hauns, that they soudna ser' demons, and eidols o' godd, and siller, and o' brass, and o' stane, and o' wud; whilk can naither see, nor hear, nor gang:

21. And they repentit-na o' their blude-sheddin, nor o' their incantations, nor o' their uncleanness, nor of their plunderins.

CHAPTIR TEN.

The wee booke open; sweet to the taste, but ill to disgust.

AND I saw another, a michty Angel, comin doon oot o' Heeven, clad wi' a clud; and a rainbow on his heid; and his face as the sun, and his feet as lowin pillars.

2. And he had in his haun a wee booke open; and he set his richt fit on the sea, and his left fit on the lan';

3. And cryt oot wi' a soondin voice, as a lion wad roar. And whan he cryt oot, seeven thunners spak wi' their voices.

4. And when the seeven thunners spak I was gaun to write; and I heard a voice oot o' Heeven, sayin,

"Bind ye up the things the seeven thunners spak, and write-them-na!"

5. And the Angel I saw staunin on the sea and on the lan', liftit his richt haun toward heeven.

6. And swure by him wha leevs for evir-and-evir, wha creatit the heeven and a' thar-in, and the yirth and a' thar-in, and the sea and a' thar-in, that "The delay was endit!"

7. But i' the days o' the seventh Angel, whane'er he soud begin to sound, soud be perfekt the secret o' God; conform to the Gude-tidins he has declar't to his ain servants the prophets.

8. And the voice I heard oot o' heeven heard I again talkin wi' me, and saying, "Awa! tak the wee booke, the open ane, i' the haun o' the Angel that stauns on the sea and on the lan'."

9. And I gaed awa to the Angel, and says to him, "Gie the wee booke to me!" And he says to me, "Tak it, and eat it up; and it sal be bitter within ye, but i' yere mou' it sal be sweet as hinny!"

10. And I took the wee booke oot o' the Angel's haun, and ate it up; and it was i' my mou' as hinny sweet; and whan I had eaten it, it was bitter within me.

11. And quo' they to me, "Ye maun prophesie yet again to mony folk, and nations, and tongue, and kings!"

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.

The measurin-wand; the Twa Witneses.

AND thar was gien me a reed like to a wand; and it was said, "Rise ye, and 2 measur the temple o' God, and the altar, and a' that worship thar!"

2. "And the coort that is ootside the Temple lea' ye ootside, and

V. 17. Gin this chapit airts to the Mahommedan pooker, as maist think, than this micht be a glint o' the new way o' making war wi' poosher and ordnance: as amang the Turks.

V. 2. Waana this the Scriptures, or at least the New Testament? nevir weel-open't and understude till the days o' prentin and the Reformation.

3V. 1. Frae this oot, the buik seems to tak up the spiritual history o' the world; thus far haein been wi' the ootward and national. We gang back as it war noo, and look at Christ's Kirk.
measur-it-na; for it is gien ower to the nations: and the holie citie wull they tramp doon forty-twa months.

3. "And I wull gie to my Twu Witnesses, and they sal prophesie twal-bunner and sixty days, cleedit in sack-claith.

4. Thir are the twa olive-trees, and the twa lamp-bearers, whilk staun i' the presence o' the God o' the hail yirth.

5. "And gif ony man wad do them skaith, a lowe comes oot o' their mou' and devoors their faes; and gif ony ane wad do them skaith, sae maun he be slane.

6. Thir hae the poorer to steek heeven, that thar be nae rain or meet i' the days o' their propheseyin; and hae poorer ower the watirs, to turn them intil blude; and to smite the yirth wi' a' plagues, as aft as they wull.

7. "And, at siccan a time as they sal perfete their witnessin, the beas' that comes up oot o' the abyss wull mak war wi' them, and overcame them, and slay them.

8. "And their corpses wull lie on the braid causey o' the great citie, whilk spiritually is ca'd Sodom, and Egypt, whaur e'en their Lord was crucify't.

9. "And a wheen frae 'mang the folk, and tribes, and tongues, and nations look on their corpses, thir days and a hauf, and they dinna alloo their corpses to be putten in a tomb.

10. "And they that dwell on the yirth rejoice ower them, and are blythe; and they send presents ane to anither; for thir twa prophets wadna lat-be them dwallin on the yirth.

11. "And affir the thrie days and a hauf, a spirit o' life frae God enters them; and they stude on their feet: and muckle fear fell on thae behauldin them.

12. "And they heard a soondin voice oot o' Heeven, sayin to them, 'Come ye up here!' And they gaed up intil Heeven, in a clud; and their faes saw them.

13. "And in that same 'oor, thar cam an unco yirdin, and the tenth-pairt o' the citie was whamml't owre; and thar war slain by the yirdin, names o' men seenen thousand: and the lave war fley't, and gied glorie to the God o' Heeven.

14. "The second wae is past; and behauld! the third wae is comin on.'

15. And the sevendh Angel soon-dit; and thar war loud voices in Heeven, sayin, "The Kingdom o' the Warld is come to be the Kingdom o' oor Lord, and o' his Anointit; and he sal reign for evir and aye!"

16. And the fowr-and-twenty Elders, wha sit on their throne, fell on their faces, and adored God, sayin,

17. "We gie thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, wha Is, and wha Was, for that thau hast taen thy great poore, and did become King.

18. "And the nations war offendit; and thine anger com, and the time o' the deid to be judged; and to gie reward to thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and to thae wha reverence thy name, sma' and great; and to destroy them that destroy the yirth!"

19. "And the Temple o' God that is in Heeven was unsteekit, and the Ark o' his Covenant in his Temple was seen; and thar cam fire-flaichts, and voices, and thunner, and a yirdin, and unco hail.

CHAPITIR TWAL'.

The wumman and her lad-bairn. War in Heeven. Glorie be to God!

AND an unco sign appeair't in Heeven: a 1 wumman cleedit wi' the sun, and the moon aneath her feet, and on her heid a croon o' twal' starns.

2. And, bein a mither-to-be, she

---

1 V. 1. Div we no do weel to tak this to be the Kirk o' God; and a fulhillin o' Esaiiah lxvi. 7, 8.
cry't oot in bearin-pains; and in anguish, to be deliver't.

3. And anither ferlie apperit in Heeven; and mark! a great rid Dragon, wi’ seeven heids and ten horns; and on his heid seseven croons;

4. And his tail taig’t the third pairt o’ the starns o’ the heeven, and dash’t them tae the Yirth. And the Dragon stude afore the wumman, wha bein deliver’t, to devoor her bairn as sune as she was deliver’t.

5. And she brocht forth a lad-bairn, a hero-son, wha soud swa’ nations wi’ a sceptre o’ ain; and her son was waftit awa to God and to his Thron.

6. And the wumman fled to the wilderness, whaur she had a howff prepar’t for her o’ God; and thar sal they nourice her twal hunner and safty days.

7. And War begude in Heeven: Michael and his Angels makin war wi’ the Dragon; and the Dragon made war, and his angels;

8. And they owercam-na, nor was a stance foun’ for them ony mair in Heeven.

9. And harl’ doon was the great Dragon, the auld serpent, he that is ca’d “Deevil,” and “Satan,” he that wrangs the hail yirth—he was cuis’n-doon tae the yirth; and his angels war cuis’n-doon wi’ him.

10. And I heard a soondin’ voice in Heeven, sayin, “Noo comes the salvation, and the poorer, and the king-dom o’ oor God, and the poorer o’ his Anointit! for the Accuser o’ oor brethren is cuisten-doon, he that was wyttin them afore oor God day and nicht.

11. “And they prevail’t again him, throwe the blude o’ the Lamb. and by the word o’ their witnessin; and they lo’ed-na their life, e’en on to death.

12. “For this be blythe, O Heevens! and a’ ye that in them dwell! Wae for the yirth, and for the sea! for the fae has gane doon intil you: haein muckle wrath, kennin he has but a wee while.”

13. And whan the Dragon saw he was cuis’n-doon tae the yirth, he pursued the wumman, wha brocht forth the hero-son.

14. And to the wumman war gien the twa wings o’ the great eagle, that she sould flee into the wilder-ness, into the howff; whaur she is to be nouriced a season, and seasons, and hauf a season, frae the serpent’s face.

15. And the serpent belched-forth, eftir the wumman, warit like a river, that he micht mak her to be carry’t awa wi’ the spate.

16. And the yirth helpit the wumman; and the yirth open’t her mou’, and swallowed’t up the spate that the Dragon belched-forth frae his mouth.

17. And the Dragon was fu’ o’ wrath again the wumman, and he gaed awa to mak war wi’ the lave o’ her bairns, thae that war keepin the commauns o’ God, and haudin the testimonie o’ Jesus.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN.

A beast risin oot o’ the sea: anither beast that dis ferlies.

AND he stude upon the sand o’ the sea. And I saw a beast comin up oot o’ the sea, haein ten horns and seseven heids, and on his horns ten croons, and his heids bure the names o’ blasphemie.

2. And the beast I saw was like to a leopard, and his feet like as o’ a bear, and his mouth as a lion’s mouth; and the Dragon gied him the pooper that he had, and his thron, and great authoritie.

3. And I saw ane frae ‘mang his heids as it war thrust-throwe to the deid; and his deid-staik was healed; and a’ the warld ferlie at the beast.

4. And they gied worship to the
Dragon, for giean sic poore to the beast; and they gied worship to the beast, sayin, "Wha can marrow the beast? Wha can mak war wi' him?"

5. And thar was gien to him a mou' speakin unco things, and blasphemies; and thar war gien him authoritye for forty-twa months.

6. And he open't his mou' in blasphemies again God; to misca' his name, and his tabernacle, and thae that dwell in Heeven.

7. And it was gien to him to mak war wi' the saints, and to overcome them. And thar was gien him authoritye ower a' tribes, and folk, and tongues, and nations.

8. And they wull worship him a' they that dwell on the yirth, ilk a' whose name isna putten-dooin i' the Buik-o'-Life o' the Lamb that was slain frae the fundation o' the world.

9. Gif ony ane has hearin, let him hear.

10. Gif ony man is for bonds, intil bonds he gangs; gif ony man wi' sword wull slay, by sword sal he be slain. Here is the tholen and the lealness o' the saunts!

11. And I saw anither beast comin up oot' the yird; and he had twa borns like a lamb, and he was speakin like a dragon.

12. And he sways the poore o' the first beast in his presence; and gars the yirth and a' its dwellers worship the first beast, wha was healed o' his deid-staik.

13. And he dis great ferlies, e'en to gar lowe to come doon oot' the lift, afore the sicht o' men:

14. And he beguiles them that dwell on the yirth, wi' the ferlies it was gien him to do i' the sicht o' the beast, and commauns thae that dwell on the yirth to mak an image to the beast, wha had a deid-staik o' a sword, and leeven.

15. And it was gien him to gie breath to the image o' the beast, that the image o' the beast micht e'en speak; and gar as mony as wadna gie worship to the image o' the beast to be slain.

16. And he gars a', sma' and great, and the rich and the pur, the free and the enthral't, that they sould be brandit on their richt-haun, or on their broo;

17. And that nane soud hae poore to buy or to troke, but he that has the mark, the name o' the beast, or the number o' his name.

18. Here is discernment: he that is wyss lat him coont-up the number o' the beast; for it is the number o' a man, and his number is sax bunner and saxty-sax.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

The Lamb, wi' a' his Sealed Anea. Babylon fa's. The Hairst o' the Worl'd.

A ND I saw, and behauld! the Lamb, stauinin on Mount Zion; and wi' him a hunner and forty-fowr thousand, wi' his name and his Faither's name inscriv' on their broo.

2. And I heard a voice oot' Heeven, as the soondin o' mony watirs, as an unco voice o' thunner; and the voice that I heard was as o' harpers, soondin on their harps.

3. And they sing a new Sang, in presence o' the Thron, and in presence o' the fowr leevin-anea, and o' the Elders; and nae man could ken the Sang but the hunner and forty-fowr thouands that war ransom'd frae the yirth.

4. Thir are they that are-na defiled in incontinency; for they are pure. Thir are they wha follow the Lamb whaurse'er he may lead; thir war ransom'd frae 'mang men, a first-frute for God and the Lamb.

5. And i' their mou' was nae guile; for they are wyteless.

6. And I saw anither Angel, flyin i' the mids o' the lift, haein the evirdurin Gude news to deliver to thae that dwell on the yirth, e'en to ilka nation, and tribe, and tongue, and folk.

7. Cryin wi' a soondin voice, "Re-
The fa' o' Babylon.

REVELATION, XV.

Moses' Sang.

16. And he that sat on the clud swung in his heuk on the yirth, and the yirth was hairstit.

17. And anither Angel came oot o' the Temple that was in heeven, he too haein a shairp heuk.

18. And anither Angel came forth frae the altar, haein poorer ower fire; and he cry't wi' a soondin voice to him that had the shairp heuk, sayin, "Pit in yere heuk, and gaither ye the clusters o' the vine-stock o' the yirth! for her grapes are fu ripe!"

19. And the Angel swung his heuk intil the yirth, and gather't in the vintage o' the yirth; and cuist it intil the great wine-press o' the wrath o' God.

20. And the wine-press was trampit ayont the citie yetts; and forth cam blude oot o' the wine-press, e'en to the horse-bridles, the length o' twa-hunner mile.

CHAPTR FIFTEEN.

The Sang o' Moses and the Lamb.

A ND I saw anither ferlie in heeven, unco and wunnerfu'; seeven Angels, haein seeven plagues—the last—for in them was endit the wrath o' God.

2. And I saw 'an it war a glessy sea, glintin bricht; and they that had gotten the victory ower the beast, and ower his image, and ower his brand, and ower the number o' his name, stude on the glessy sea, haein the harps o' God.

3. And they sing the Sang o' Moses the servant o' God, and the Sang o' the Lamb, sayin, "Unco and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; richtous and true are thy ways, thou King o' Nations!"

4. "Wha wadna fear thee, O Lord, and laud heigh thy name! For thou only art holie; for a' nations sal come and loot doon afore thee; for thy holie commauns are made kent."

5. And eftir the things I saw the

1 V. 15. God may thole lang; but the time comes his faces sal ken his wrath.
The teemin o’ the flagons

REVELATION, XVI.

on the yirth.

Temple o’ the Tabernacle o’ Testimony unsteekit in heaven.
6. And forth cam the seven Angels, thae haen the seven plagues, oot o’ the Temple; buskit wi’ jewels, pure and bricht; and girdit round the breist wi’ bands o’ gowd.
7. And ane frae ’mang the four leevin-anes gied tae the Angels seven gowden flagons, fu’ o’ the wrath o’ God, he wha leeses for evir and evir.
8. And the Temple was fu’o’ reek, frae the glorie o’ God, and frae his poore; and nane could gang intil the Temple, till the seven plagues o’ the seven Angels war endit.

CHAPITIR SIXTEEN.
The Angels teem oot their flagons on the yirth.

AND I hearkened to a soondin voice oot o’ the Temple, cryin to the seven Angels, “Awa! and teem oot the seven flagons o’ the wrath o’ God on the yirth!”
2. And the first gaed awa, and teemed oot his flagon on the yirth; and thar cam a wassome and sair blain on the men who had the brand o’ the beast, and on thae giean worship to his image.
3. And the second teemed oot his flagon into the sea, and it becam blude, as o’ ane that was deid; and every life dee’i’ the sea.
4. And the third teemed oot his flagon into the rivers and waal-ees o’ watter; and became blude.
5. And I heard the Angel o’ the watirs sayin, “Richtous art thou, the Ane wha Is, and the Ane wha Was, the Holie Ane, for that thou hast sae judged;
6. “For the blude o’ thy saunts heae they shed; and blude thou hast gien them to drink; for they are wordie o’.
7. And I heard frae the altar, sayin, “E’en say, Lord God Almichty; true and richteous are thy judgments.”
8. And the fourth Angel teemed oot his flagon upon the sun; and it war gien to it to birsle men wi’ heat.
9. And they war biral’t wi’ an unco biralin; and men misca’ the name o’ God, wha had poore ower thir plagues; and they repentit-na, to gie him glorie.
10. And the fifth Angel teemed oot his flagon on the thron o’ the beast; and his kingdom was made mirk; and they gnash’t at their ain tongues wi’ pain;
11. And misca’ the God o’ Heeven on accoont o’ their pain, and for thir blains; and didna turn frae their warks.
12. And the sixth Angel teemed oot his flagon on the great river Euphates, and its watter was lickit-up, that the comin o’ the kings frae the sun-risin may be made ready.
13. And I saw three unclean spirits, as puddocks, come oot o’ the mouth o’ the Dragon, and oot o’ the mouth o’ the beast, and oot o’ the mouth o’ the fause-prophet.
14. For they are demons’ spirits, workin ferlies; whilk come forth to the kings o’ the haill yirth, to gaither them togerther to the battle o’ the great Day o’ God Almichty.
15. “Behauld I come, as comes a thief! happy he wha is on gaird, and keeping his cleedin, least he gan bare, and they see his shame.”
16. And they gaither’t thegither intil a place that is ca’d i’ the Hebrew, “Mountain o’ Megiddo.”
17. And the seventeenth teemed oot his flagon in the air, and a voice cam oot o’ the Temple, frae the Thron, sayin, “It has come to be!”

1 V. 7. We wad a’ like to ken mair aboot the last days; but tal us mind that gin God had designed we sou’d ken a’ aboot it, he wad hee’l’t us in plain words, and no in visions: and that the great eend o’ prophesie is no to mak folk wyss aforeshan, but rather to strethen their faith, when they see the things come to pass. John xiv. 29.
18. And thar cam fire-flauchts, and voices, and thunners; and a yirdin cam, sic a ane as ne'er cam aboot syn men war on the yirth, sic an unco yirthquake, sae great.

19. And the great citie was pairtit in thrie pars, and the cities o' the nation war whumm'lit; and Babylon the Great cam to mind afore God, to gie to her the cup o' the wrath o' his displeasur.

20. And ilka isle fled awa, and the mountains war-na mair fund.

21. And unco hail, as o' a hauff-hunnerwecht, cam doon oot o' the heeven upon men. And the men misca't God, on accont o' the hail; for the weird o'it was unco.

CHAPITR SEVENTEEN.
The Scarlet Wumman: her abominations, and her punishment.

AND thar cam oot ane o' the seven Angels, thae haein the seven flagons, and spak wi' me, and quo' he, 'Come! and I wull schaw ye the judgment o' the great harlot, that sits on mony waters,'

2. "Wi' wham the kings o' the yirth hae committit uncleanness, and thae dwallin on the yirth hae been made druckeu, oot o' the wine o' her lecherie."

3. And he carry't me awa i' the Spirit intil the wilderness; and I saw a wumman sittin on a scarlet beast, whilk was fu' o' names o' blasphemie, wi' seven heids and ten horns.

4. And the wumman was buskit in purple and scarlet, and was dinkit oot wi' gold and jewels and pearls, haudin a gowden cup in her haun fu' o' abomination, s'en the abomination o' her adulteries.

5. And on her heid a name written, a mysterie: "Babylon the Great, Mither o' Harlots, and o' the Abominations o' the Yirth!"

6. And I saw the wumman drucken wi' the blude o' the saunts, and wi' the blude o' the martyrs o' Jesus, and I ferlied when I saw her, wi' an unco ferliein.

7. And the Angel said to me, "Hoo did ye ferlie? I wull tell ye the secret o' the wumman, and o' the beast that bears her, that has the seven heids and the ten horns.

8. "The beast that ye saw was, and is-na, is to rise frae the abyss, and gangs awa to destruction. And thae that dwell on the yirth sal ferlie, whose names hae no been putten-doon i' the Buik-o'-Life frae the foundation o' the world, at behauldin the beast, hoo that he was, and is-na, and sal come.

9. "Here is the mind that has wisdom. The seven heids are seven mountains, whaur the wumman sit.

10. "And they are seven kings; the fyve fell; the ane is; and the ither isna yet come; and when he comes, he maun bide for a wee while.

11. "And the beast whilk was, and is-na, e'en he is the saucht, and is o' the seven; and gangs awa intil destruction.

12. "And the ten horns ye saw are ten kings; wha hae gotten nae king-doom as yet, but hae poorer gien them æ 'oor wi' the beast.

13. "Thir are o'ae mind, and they gie their poorer and authoritie to the beast.

14. "Thir mak war wi' the Lamb, and the Lamb wull prevail again them; for he is Lord o' the lordly, and King o' the kingly; and thae that are wi' him are bidden, and chosen and leal!"

15. And quo' he to me, "The watire ye did see, whaur the harlot is sittin, are folk, and thrangs, and nations, and tongues.

16. "And the ten horns ye saw, and the beast, thir wull hate the harlot, and wull mak her bare and nakit, and wull eat her flesh, and burn her up wi' fire.

17. "For God pat i' their hearts to fulfil his mind, and to be a' o'ae
mind, and gie their kingdom to the beast, till a' God's words come to pass.
18. “And the wumman ye saw is the great citie; she that has a king-
dom ower the kings o' the yirth.”

CHAPITIR AUCHTEEN.
The fit' o' Babylon: the unco lamentin ower her.

AND aftir thir things I saw anither 
Angel comin doon oot o' 
Heeven, baecin great poore; and the 
yirth was lichtit up wi' his glorie.
2. And he cryt oot wi' a michty 
voice, sayin, “Faun, faun, is Babylon 
the great! and come to be the howff 
o' demons, and a dungeon o' ilka vile 
spirit, and a bauld o' ilka unclean and 
abominable bird.
3. “For by the wine o' the wrath 
o' her adulteries have faun a' the 
nations; and the kings o' the yirth 
committit adultery wi' her: and the 
mairchants o' the yirth, oot o' the 
poore o' her wantonness made theirs-
sels rich.”
4. And I heard anither voice frae 
Heeven, sayin, “Come forth oot o' 
her, my folk! that ye may hae nae 
marrowin wi' her sins, and get-na o' 
hers plagus!
5. “For her sins war heapit-up to 
the heevens, and God has brocht her 
ill-deeds to mind.
6. “Gie ye to her s'en as she her-
sel has gien, and dooble ye to her 
the double, conform to her wark: in 
the cup she has made fou, fill ye to 
her the dooble.
7. “As muckle as she magnifyt 
hersel and leaved dallitly, by sae 
muckle gie her torment and wae; for 
in her heart was sayin, 'I sit a 
queen, and am-na weadow't, and sal 
see munnin nane!'
8. “And sae, in ae day sae come 
her waes; death and murrin, and 
famine; and wi' fire sal she be brunt-

1 V. 18. In this bulk, the Bride is the true 
Kirk o' Christ, the saunta o' God on the 
yirth.

326

up: for michty is the Lord God, he 
wha judges her.
9. “And the kings o' the yirth, that 
committit adultery wi' her, and leaved 
wantonly wi' her, sal weep and wail 
ower her, whan they see the reek o' 
her burnin;
10. “Slaunin far-awa, for the fear 
o' her torment, sayin, 'Wae, wae! 
the great citie, the michty citie; for 
in ae oor has her judgment faun!'
11. “And the mailrants o' the 
yirth great and mak maen for her, 
for that their 2 mailrants nae ane 
buys ony mair.
12. “Mailrantsise o' gowd, and 
o' siller, and o' jewels and pears, and 
o' fine liner, and o' purple, and silk, 
and scarlet, and ilka sort o' odorous 
wud, and ilka thing o' ivorie, and ilka 
thing made o' maist precious wud, 
and o' brass, and o' airn, and o' 
marble,
13. “And cinnamon, and spice, 
and incense, and perfume, and frank-
incense, and wine, and oil, and fine 
flour, and wheat, and nowte, and 
sheep, and o' horses, and chariots, 
and o' bodies and lives o' men.
14. “And the frutes yere saul 
socht aftir hae depairtit frae ye, and 
a' the dainty and delicate things hae 
perisht frae ye, and in naegate sal 
they be fun'.
15. “The trokers i' thae things, 
they wha becam rich frae her, wull 
staun far-awa, for the fear o' her 
torment, greetin and makin maen;
16. “Sayin, 'Wae, wae! the 
michty citie, that had buskit hersel 
wi' fine linen, and purple and scarlet, 
and had dink't hersel oot wi' gowd, 
and jewel and pearl; in ae oor has 
been laid wast eic walth as this!'
17. “And ilka captain, and ilka 
ane gaun to sea, stude far-awa.
18. “And cryt oot, behaudlin the
Rejoicing in Heaven.

REVELATION, XIX.  The Bridal of the Lamb.

reek o' her burnin, sayin, 'Whatna citie like to this great citie!'

19. "And they cuist stoor on their heids, and cry't alood, greeitin and makin maen, sayin, 'Wae, wae! the mighty citie, in whilk wax't rich a' thae baenin ships on the sea, oot o' her luxuries. In ae 'oor is she laid waste!'

20. "Be blythe the ower her, O Heeven! And a' ye saunts, and Apostles, and prophets! for God has judged her for yere saikes."

21. And an Angel, a mighty ane, liftit up a stane, like a great mill-stane, and cuist it into the sea, sayin, "Sae, wi' unco mitcht sal be hurled doon the great citie, Babylon; and in naegate ony mair be fun'.

22. "And voice o' harpers, and minstrels, and pipers, and buglers, sal be heard in ye nae mair! And ony craftsman o' ony craft, sal be fun' in ye nae mair! And the sound o' a mile-stane sal be heard in ye nae mair!

23. "And the licht o' a crusie sal nae mair shine in ye. And the voice o' bridegroom and o' bride sal be nae mair heard in ye! For thy mair-chants war nobles on the yirth; for that a' the nations war beguiled by her sorceries.

24. "And the blude o' prophets and saunts was fun' in her, and o' a' thae that had been slain upon the yirth."

CHAPTIR NINETEEN.

Rejoicing in Heeven. A vision o' a Mighty Conqueror.

EFTIR thir things I heard as a soondin voice o' unco thrang in Heeven, and they said, "Hallelujah! The salvation, and the glorie, and the poorer o'or God!"

2. "For true and holie are his judgments; for he has judged the great harlot, wha corruptit the yirth wi' her adulteries; and he has avenged the blude o' his servants at her haun!"

3. And again they cry't, "Hallelujah!" And her reek gangs up for evir and evir.

4. And the fowr-and-twenty Elders, and the fowr leefvin-anes loutit doun, and worshipped God, that sits on the Thron, sayin, "E'en sae! Hallelujah!"

5. And a voice cam oot frae the Thron, sayin, "Gie ye praise to oor God, a' ye his servants, and thae that reverence him, baith sma' and great!"

6. And I heard the voice as o' an unco thrang, and as the voice o' mighty thunners, sayin, "Hallelujah! for the Lord oor God, the Almichty, is King!

7. "Lat us rejoice, exultin, and gie laud to him; for the bridal o' the Lamb has come, and his bride has made hersel ready.

8. "And it was gien to her that she soud busk hersel in fine linen, bricht and pure; for the fine linen is the holie deeds o' the Saunts."

9. And he said to me, "Write ye, Happy thae wha are bidden to the maireaage-supper o' the Lamb!" And he says to me, "Thir words are the asfauld words o' God."

10. And I loutit doon afore his feet, to do reverence to him. And he says to me, "No sae! for I am a fellow-servant wi' ye, and o' yere brethren wha hauld the testimonie o' Jesus: gie God worship; for the testimonie o' Jesus is the heart o' the prophecie."

11. And I saw the Heevens unsteeikit, and lo! a white horse: and he that sat on't was ca'd "Leal and True"; and in holines judges he, and gang to war.

12. And his e'en lowin fire; and on his heid mony croons; and has a name written whilk nae ane kens but his ain sel;

13. And he war cleedit in a mantle drookit wi' blude, and his name is ca'd, "The Word o' God."

14. And the airmies o' Heeven follow' wi' him, on white horses, clad in fine linen, white and pure.

327
15. And oot o' his mooth gan a shairp twa-mooth't sword, that sae he may smite the nations; and he wull shepherd them wi' a sceptre o' airn, while he tramps the press o' the wine o' the wrath o' God the Almighty.

16. And he has, on his mantle and on his thigh, a name placed: "King o' the kingly, and Lord o' the lordly!"

17. And I saw an Angel staunin i' the sun; and he cryt wi' a soondin voice, sayin to a' the birds fleein in mid-air, "Come ye, and gaither thegither to the great supper o' God.

18. That ye may feast on the flesh o' kings, and flesh o' captains, and the flesh o' mighty anes, and flesh o' horses, and o' thae that sit on them; and flesh o' a', baith free and bond, baith sma' and great!"

19. And I saw the beast, and the kings o' the yirth, and their hosts, gaither't thegither to war wi' him that sat on the horse, and wi' his airmy.

20. And the beast was taen, and wi' him the fause-prophet, he that did the ferlies afore him, by whilk he beguiled thae that took the brand o' the beast, and thae giean worship to his image; and the twa war cuisten, leevin, intil the loch o' fire, lowin wi' brunstane.

21. And the lave war slain by the sword o' him that sat on the horse, the sword that gaed forth oot o' his mooth; and a' the ravenin birds war filled wi' their flesh.

CHAPTR TWENTY.
The blessed Thousand-Year! The great White Thron.

AND I saw an Angel comin doon frae Heeven, baizin the key o' the abyss, and a muckle chain in his haun.

2. And he laid hau' o' the Dragon, the auld serpent, wha is "Deevil," and "Sautan," and chained him for a thousand year.

3. And harled him intil the abyss, and steelkit it, and seal't it aboon him, that he soud nae mair beguile the nations, to the end o' the Thousand-year; and effir that he bude be lowsed a wee while.

4. And I saw throns, and they sat on them; and judgment-poor was gien to them; and I saw the sauls o' them that war beheidit for the testimonie o' Jesus, and for the word o' God; and sae mony as worshipped na the beast nor his image, and took-na the brand on the broo, nor on the haun; and they leevd wi' Christ, and reigned wi' him, a thousand year.

5. And the lave o' the deid leev'd na till soud be endit the thousand year. This is the "First Risin-again."

6. Happy and holie he, wha has pairt in the First Risin-again! owre siclike the second death has nae poorer; but they sal be the priests o' God and o' Christ, and sal reign wi' him for the Thousand Year!

7. And, whane'er the Thousand Year is endit, Sautan wull be lowsed oot o' his thrall.

8. And wull gang oot to beguile the nations, that are i' the fou'r corners o' the yirth, Gog and Magog, to gaither them thegither for the war, o' wham the number is as the sand o' the sea.

9. And they cam up, spread-oot owrer the broidth o' the yirth; and rinkit-roond the camp o' the saunts, and the weel-lo'ed citie: and fire cam doon frae God, oot o' Heeven, and devor't them.

10. And the fae, he that was beguilin them, was cuisten intil the loch o' fire and brunstane, whaur eke war cuisten the beast and the fause-prophet; and they sal be tormentit day and nicht, for evir and evir.

11. And I saw a Great White Thron, and him that sat on it; frae whase face the heven and yirth fled awa, and place wasna fund for them.

12. And I saw the deid, the great and the sma', staun afore the Thron, and buiks war unseal't; and anither
bulk was unseal't, whilk is the Buik-o'-Life; and the deid war judged oot o' the things that war putten-dooin i' the buiks, conform to their wariks.

13. And the sea gied up the deid that war in't, and Death and the Grave gied up the deid that war in them; and they war judged, ilka ane, conform to their wariks.

14. And Death and the Grave war cuisten intil the loch o' fire: this is the Second Death, the lowin loch.

15. And gin ony ane wasna fund putten-dooin i' the Buik-o'-Life, he was cuisten intil the lowin loch.

CHAPTRIR TWENTY-ANE.

A New Heaven and a New Yirth. The bonnie Bride o' Christ, wi' a' her pearlins and her jewels.

AND I saw a New Heaven and a New Yirth; for the first Heaven and the first Yirth war gane-by; and sea war thar nane.

2. And the holie city, "New Jerusalem," saw I comin doon frae God oot o' Heaven, made ready as a bride buskit for her bridegroom.

3. And I heard a soondin voice oot o' Heaven, sayin, "Lo! God's dwellin is wi' men, and he sal bide wi' them; and they sal be his folk, and God his ain sel sal be wi' them!

4. "And he sal dicht a' tears frae their een; and Death sal be nae mair; nor dool, nor ootcry, nor pain sal be ony mair: for a' the auld things are gane-by!"

5. And he that sat on the Thron, said, "Lo! I mak a' things ower again!" And he says to me, "Write; for thir words are seal and true!"

6. And he said to me, "It has come to be! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the forefront and the endin! I to ilka drouthie ane wull gie o' the waal-ee o' the Wairt-o'-Life, freely.

7. "He that prevails has a' things for his heritage; and I sal be to him a God, and he sal be to me a bairn.

8. "But as to the daunit anes, and the unbelievin, and the abominable, and blude-shedders, and lecherers, and eidol-worshippers, and a' leears, their pairt is in the loch that lowes wi' fire and brunstane, whilk is the second death."

9. And thar cam oot ane o' the seveen Angels that had the seveen flagons fu' o' the seveen last plagues and spak wi' me, sayin, "Come awa! I wull schaw ye the Bride, the wife o' the Lamb!"

10. And he burs me awa' i' the Spirit to a mountain great and heigh, and airtit my een to the citie, the holie Jerusalem, loutin doon oot o' Heaven frae God;

11. Haein the glorie o' God; and her glintin was like to a stane maist precious, as a jasper-stane, clear as crystal;

12. Haein a wa' great and heigh; and had twal' ports, and at the ports twal' Angels: and names putten thar-on, whilk are the names o' the twal' tribes o' Isra'il.

13. Eastward, thrie ports; and northward thrie ports; and southward thrie ports; and westward thrie ports.

14. And the city wa's had twal' fundations; and upo' them twal' names, o' the twal' Apostles o' the Lamb.

15. And he that spak to me had a wand o' gowd, that he micht measur the citie, and her portals and her wa'.

16. And the citie lies four-square, and the lenth is as muckle as the breith. And he measur't the citie wi' the wand, up to twal' thousand furlongs; her lenth, and breith in heicht a' marrow thegither.

17. And he measur't her wa' a hunner and forty-fowr half-arims o' a man's measur; that is, the Angel's.

18. And the biggin o' the wa' was jasper; and the citie pure gowd, like shinin gless,

19. And the fundations o' the wa'
o' the citie wi' ilka precious stane
war buskit. The first fudnation,
jasper; the second, sapphire; the
third, chaledonie; the fourth, emer-
ant;
20. The fifth, sardonix; the sixth,
cornelian; the seventh, gowd-stane;
the auchtth, beryl; the ninth, topaz:
the tenth, chrysoprasie; the eleventh,
byacinth; the twal' th, amethyst.
21. And the twal' yetts war twal'
pearls; ilka allenar yett ae pearl;
and the causey o' the citie was gowd,
like shinin gless.
22. And Temple saw I nane thar-
in; for the Lord God Almichty and
the Lamb are her temple!
23. And the citie isna wantin for
the sun, nor yet for the mune, that
they soud be shinin in't; for the
glorie o' God is her licht, and the
Lamb is the lampion o'.
24. And a' folk sal gang by the
licht o't; and a' the kings o' the
yirth bring their glory intil't.
25. And a' the day lang the yetts
are wide unsteekit; for nae 1 nicht
fa's thar!
26. And they sal bring the glory
and treasur o' the nations intil't.
27. And in naegate sal enter intill'
ocht that desfiles, nor any that dis
abomination, or is a leear; but that
wha is setten-doon i' the Lamb's
Buik-o'Life.

CHAPTR TWENTY-TWA.
A brau blink o' Heeven. The Ethanist
word, till the Lord comes again.

And he airtit my een to a river o'
the Watir o' Life, as clear as
crystal, flowin oot frae the Thron o'
God and the Lamb.
2. And atween the river-street
and the river, on this side and on
yon, the Tree o' Life, gian twal'
frutins; month by month gian its
frute; and the leaves o' the tree to
mak the nations hale.

3. And nae curse sal be ony mair;
and the Thron o' God and o' the
Lamb in her sal be; and his servitors
sal do him service.
4. And they sal look on his face;
wi' his name carry't on their broo.
5. And nae nicht sal fa' mair; and
they need nae licht o' lamp nor shine
o' sun; for the Lord God wull shed
licht upon them; and they sal reign
for evir and aye.
6. And he said to me, "Thir
sayins are leal and true; and the
Lord, the God o' the spirite o' the
prophets, has sent oot his Angel to
schaw to his servants whatna things
wull suone come to pass.
7. "And lo! I come wi' speed;
happy he wha keeps the words o' the
prophecie o' this buik."
8. And I, John, am he that heard
and saw thir things; and when I
heard and saw, I loutit doon afore
the feet o' the Angel, wha was schawin
me thir things.
9. And quo' he to me, "No sae!
I am yere fellow-servant, and o' yere
brethren the prophets, and o' thae
that are keepin the words o' the
buik: tae God gie worship!"
10. And he says to me. "Ye may-
nna seal up the words o' the prophecie
o' this buik; for the time is nar-by.
11. "He that is wrang-doin, lat
him still do wrang; and he that is
unclean, lat him be made still unclean;
and he that is just, lat him be just
still; and he that is holie, lat him be
holie still."
12. "Lo! 2 I come wi' speed, and
my reward is wi' me, to bestow on
ilk ane o'en as his wark sal be.
13. "I am the Alpha and the
Omega, the first and the last, the
forefront and the endin.
14. "Blessed they wha weesh their
robes; that they may hae richt to
the Tree o' Life; and may gang in by
the ports intil the citie!
15. "Ootby are the dowgs and

1V. 25. Nae nicht ower the holie citie;
and naething that nicht and mirkness
signify—sorrow, nor dool, nor pain.

3V. 12. Thir are noo the words o' the Lord
Jesus.
sorcerers, and the lecherers, and blude-shedders, and ilka ane that lo'es or maks a lee.

16. "I, Jesus, sent my Angel to witness to ye thir things i' the kirks. I am the rute and offshoot o' Dauvid; the bricht, the mornin starn.

17. "And the Spirit and the Bride say, 'Come ye!' And he wha hears, lat him say, 'Come ye!' And he that is drouthie, lat him be comin! He that wull, lat him hae the Wapir o' Life freely!

18. "I bear witness to ilka ane hearin the words o' the prophecie o' this buik:—Gin ony ane pits ocht mair on them, God wull pit on him the plagues that are putten-doony in this buik.

19. "And gin ony ane takes awa' frae the words o' the buik o' this prophecie, God wull tak awa' his paart frae the Tree o' Life, and frae the Holie Citie, e'en frae the things that are putten-doony i' this buik.

20. "He that bears witness o' thir things says, 'Aye! I come wi'speed!' E'en sae! Come, Lord Jesus!"

21. The lovin-favor o' the Lord Jesus be wi' the saunts!

THE END.
THE TWENTY-THIRD PSAUM.

David is aye unreelin a pirl about Christ. Here he pents him as a Shepherd, and his sel as a silly bit lammie. It evens weel wi' the tenth o' John.

THE Lord is my Shepherd; my wants are a' kent; the pasture
I lie on is growthie and green.

I follow by the lip o' the watirs o' Peace.

He heals and sterklie hauds my saul: and airts me, for his ain name's sake, in a' the fit-roads o' his holiness.

Aye, and though I bude gang throwe the howe whaur the deid-shadows fa', I'se fear nae skaith nor ill, for that yersel is aye aside me; yere rod and yere cruik they defend me.

My table ye hae plenisht afore the een o' my faes; my heid ye hae chrystit wi' oyle; my cup is teemin fu'

And certes, tenderness and mercie sal be my fa' to the end o' my days; and syne I'se bide i' the hoose o' the Lord, for evar and evar mair!
GLOSSARY
GLOSSARY OF SCOTTISH WORDS.

In the following Glossary, there is no attempt made to present a dictionary of the Scottish language. Only those words are inserted that are found in the text; and, generally, only the English definitions that belong to the situations in which the words are placed in the text.

Scottish vowels are considerably deeper than English in sound: the short i sounding to an English or American ear like a short e. The pure sound of er, as in the English words berry, ferry, etc.; the guttural ch or gh, as in the German; the affix it, corresponding to the English ed, and pronounced "ee"; and the termination in, corresponding to the English ing, and pronounced "een"; are some points necessary to be observed.

As to the dialect used in this version, the dialect of Burns, which has become fixed as the literary form of the Broad Scotch, has been mainly followed; and that, notwithstanding many Border predilections on the part of the translator. Burns, Scott, and Hogg are the great dialectic authorities in Scotch, to whose diction all must conform: and the world has accepted, as a representative form of the language, a dialect used by these, which is not strictly peculiar to any definite locality.

Criticism on this work there will be, however rendered; but I have had before me, all throughout, the probability of this translation being counted, in a modest way, as one of the standards of the language in time to come; and have endeavoured to make it consistent with itself, and conformable to already-existing standards; and a help to those who should afterwards write in Scotch.

W. W. S.
GLOSSARY.

A.
A', a. [saw] all
Aboon, prep. above
Abstain, v. abstain
Ae, a. [yea] one
Aesauld, a. single; sincere
Aesauldness, n. sincerity
Agley, adv. oblique; aside
A'gate, adv. everywhere; all ways
Ahint, prep. behind
Ablins, prep. perhaps
Ainsel, n. one's own self
Airl, n. iron
Airt, n. and v. direction; to direct
Airst, v. directed
"Airt or pairt," n. anything at all
Allemar, allemarlie, adv. solely, exclusively
Aias, assis, aise, n. aise
Aiqual, equal, a. equal
A-low, adv. on fire, blazing
Alane, alone, only
Als, conj. [alz] also
An, prep. if
Anent, prep. concerning
Ance, adv. [yence] once
Argle-bargle, n. wordy disputation
Arles, n. "deposit," advance payment
Aschet, n. platter
Akins, n. the thing asked
Ahort, prep. across
Attend, n. attention
Assoiltie, v. to acquit on trial
Aucht, a. (gutt.) eight
Aucht, v. own, possess
Aucht, a. (gutt.) eighth
Auchtly, a. (gutt.) eighty
Auld, a. old, elder
Aumoneries, n. presses for storing alms
Ava, adv. at all
Avisement, n. advice
Avoutrie, n. adultery
Awa, prep. away
Awesome, a. awful
Awnous, n. alms
Awmores, n. almoners
Awn, v. owing

B.
Backlins, prep. backwards
Baff, n. a blow or stroke with the hand
Bairn, n. child
Bairnhood, n. childhood
Ban, v. and n. curse
Bannock, n. flat cake of bread
Barm, a. yeast
Barrie-coat, n. infant's swaddling-cloth
Barrin, v. expecting
Bauks, n. infant's swaddling-cloth
Bauld, a. bold
Beadle, n. sexton
Bearin-pains, n. pangs of childbirth
Beast, n. beasts, cattle
Befaw', v. [befaw] befall
Befawn, v. befallen
Beild, v. and n. shelter
Bein, v. being
Begnade, v. began
Behaved, v. beheld, compelled
Belyve, adv. by and by, soon
Ben, n. an inner part of the house
Benmaist, a. innermost
Besocht, v. (gutt.) besought
Bethocht, v. (gutt.) betought
Biddable, a. obedient
Biddens, n. biddings, orders
Bide, v. remain
Bigg, v. build
Biggit, v. built
Bin, v. (short i) bind
Binna, v. be not
Bink, n. bench
Birr, n. energy, vigour
Birse, v. scorch
Blais, n. pieces
Blae, a. bluish, livid, pale
Blains, n. boils, sores
Blate, a. bashful, shrinking
Blear't, v. made blind
Blink, n. and v. glance
Blirtit, v. wept noisily
Blude, n. blood
Blythe, a. (th hard) joyful
Bocht, v. (gutt.) bought
Bode, n. invitation
Bedle, n. 2d. Scots (a small coin)
Bogle, n. something frightful; an apparition
Bonnie, a. beautiful
Boonmaist, a. uppermost
Born-face, n. natural face
Bothie, n. a hut
Bouk, n. and v. bulk
Bower, n. private chamber
Bowet, n. a small lantern
Braid, a. broad
Braird, v. and n. sprout

V.
GLOSSARY.

Brandered, v. broiled
Braw, a. gaudy, adorned
Braw, n. adornments
Brawlie, adv. gaudily, finely; also exceedingly well
Breast, n. breast
Breck, brek, v. break
Brekin, v. breaking
Bruislie, n. noisy quarrel
Brunt, v. burned
Brunstone, n. brimstone
Bude, v. must
Buird, n. board, table
Bun', v. bound
Burn, n. a. being burst
Busk, v. adorn
Buskit, v. adorned, dressed
Bus, n. bush

C.
Ca', v. [caw] call; turn; drive
Caber, n. rafter-pole, or large round stick
Ca'lt, v. called, named
Callant, m. boy
Canna, v. cannot
Cannie, a. gentle; cautious
Canniness, n. gentleness
Cap, v. equal; complete
Cark, n. burden (of care)
Cauldrife, a. chilly, cold
Causey, n. causeway, pavement of street
Cauves, n. calves
Ca'tion, caution, n. bail, security
Challenge, v. rebuke
Chap, n. knock at a door, v. to knock slightly
Chamer, n. chamber
Chekit, v. restrained
Cheenge, v. and n. change
Chief, m. intimate
Chokit, v. chokèd
Clachan, n. (gutt.) hamlet
Clash, n. cloth
Clash, n. talk; tell-tale, gossip
Claught, v. (gutt.) clutched, caught
Clean, a. and adv. entirely
Cleckin, n. brood
Cleenin, n. clothing
Cleedit, v. clad
Clek, v. and n. snatch, jerk; a hook
Clippit, v. sheared; snatched
Cloir, c. and n. [cloar] a blow; to strike or beat
Close, n. (soft s) blind alley, a narrow side street
Clout, v. and n. patch; a rag
Clud, n. cloud
Coft, v. purchased
Cog, n. vessel for holding or carrying liquids
Colleguein, v. advising together
Complie, n. complaint
Cont, v. count
Conseil, n. counsel, advice

vi.

Crobie, n. ravens
Corp, m. corpse
Coud, v. could
Co'way! interj. come away! "come on!"
Cout, n. colt
Crak, v. persistently entreat
Craig, n. crag, high rock
Crampit, v. restricted
Craw, v. and n. crow
Creel, n. hamper; large basket
Crouse, a. [croose] cheerful, joyful
Croon, v. softly murmur in song
Croft, n. small holding of land
Crawlin, a. and v. crawling
Crupp, v. crept
Crusie, n. (hard s) small open lamp; cup for oil
Crystlet, v. anoint
Cuit, v. did cast
Cuit, n. ankle
Cule, v. and n. cool
Cuisen, cuis'n, v. was cast
Cuis'n oat, v. cast oat; quarrelled
Cushat, n. ringdove
Cuttie, v. did cut

D.
Dadd, v. a piece, especially a somewhat large piece, of anything
Daddit, claudit, v. struck with the open hand
Dae, do
Daen, v. doing
Daffin, v. and n. idle toyin
Daft, a. foolish; insane
Dang, dung, v. struck; knocked over
Darg, n. a specific task, a day's work
Daunt, v. intimidated
Daur, n. dare
Dawin, v. and n. dawning; dawn
Dawit, a. fondled, petted
Deal, n. board or plank
Dee, v. do
Dee't, v. died
Deid-strake, n. death-stroke
Deif, a. deaf
Denner, n. dinner
Dementit, a. deranged in mind
Delight, v. and n. (gutt.) delight
Dentit, a. bruised, dinted
Depone, v. depose; make statement
Differ, a. difference
Dight, v. (gutt.) wipe
Dightins, n. (gutt.) refuse
Ding, v. stroke or knock
Dink, a. neat
Dink, v. to ornament; set off
Dinna, v. do not
Dirl, v. thrill; cause a tremulous motion
Dis, v. (hard s) does
Disgest, v. digest
Disjastit, a. disordered, dilapidated
Div, v. do
Divna, v. do not
Diveessions, n. divisions
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Glossary</th>
<th>Meanings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dochter</td>
<td>n. (gutt.) daughter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doitit</td>
<td>a. foolish, imbecile</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dolor</td>
<td>n. grief, sorrow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunnert</td>
<td>a. stupid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doodle</td>
<td>a. double</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dool</td>
<td>n. grief, woe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomster</td>
<td>n. an officer of the court who announces the sentence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doon-gaun</td>
<td>n. and v. descent, descending</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doot</td>
<td>v. and n. doubt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dootsameness</td>
<td>n. state of indecision; hesitancy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Douce</td>
<td>a. [dooce] respectable, quietly-behaved</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dour</td>
<td>a. [door] obstinate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dourness</td>
<td>n. obstinacy; reluctance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dow</td>
<td>doo, n. dove</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dowg</td>
<td>n. dog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dowie</td>
<td>a. downcast; sad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dree</td>
<td>v. suffer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dreid</td>
<td>v. and n. dread</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Druck</td>
<td>v. drench</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drooth</td>
<td>drouth, n. thirst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Droothie</td>
<td>drouthie, a. thirsty, dry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drucken</td>
<td>a. drunken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drumlie</td>
<td>a. discoloured or muddy (as water)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dune</td>
<td>v. done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dung</td>
<td>v. knocked down</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dwaum</td>
<td>n. faint; trance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dwine</td>
<td>v. shrink; fade away</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dykit</td>
<td>v. built a dyke round</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ear</td>
<td>a. [air] early</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Een</td>
<td>n. eyes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E'enin</td>
<td>n. evening</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ee-sweet</td>
<td>a. sweet to the eyes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eidental</td>
<td>a. frugal, prudent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eidol</td>
<td>n. idol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eild</td>
<td>n. old age</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eithlie</td>
<td>adv. (soft th) easily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Effect</td>
<td>n. and v. effect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Effir, prep.</td>
<td>after</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Effirhaun, prep.</td>
<td>afterwards</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Els</td>
<td>a. (hard e) else; already</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eke, conj.</td>
<td>also</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emerant</td>
<td>n. emerald</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eneuch</td>
<td>a. (gutt.) enough</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-noo, adv.</td>
<td>at the present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ettle</td>
<td>v. intend, attempt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ettlin</td>
<td>v. intending; attempting</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Even</td>
<td>v. compare</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| F. | |
| Fa', v. | [faw] fall, n. lot; portion |
| Factor | n. agent, manager |
| Faddom | n. fathom |
| Fae | n. foe |
| Fain | a. anxious; wishful |
| Fa'in | v. and n. [fain] falling |
| Fell | a. heroic; admirable |
| Fend | v. subsist |
| Fendin | n. necessary food |
| Fail | v. dwindle, faint |
| Fair fa' | interj. well betide! |
| Fank | n. tangle; knot |
| Farder | a. farther |
| Fardin | n. farthing |
| Fash | v. and n. trouble |
| Fauld | v. and n. fold |
| Faun | v. fallen |
| Faud | v. found |
| Fawn-coot | v. fallen out, quarrelled |
| Fause | a. (soft e) false |
| Fant | n. and v. fault |
| Fecht | v. and n. (gutt.) fight |
| Feck | n. principal part |
| Feckless | a. useless; without spirit or strength |
| Fee | n. wages, hire, reward |
| Ferie | n. and v. wonder |
| Fesh | v. fetch |
| Fettle | n. condition, order |
| Firlot | n. fourth part of a "boll"; (about a bushel) |
| Fire-flaucht | n. (gutt.) lightning; flash |
| Fit-brod | n. footstool |
| Fivver | n. fever |
| Flaff | v. shake off; flutter |
| Flauchtit | v. (gutt.) wafted |
| Fleecchin | v. persuading in a flattering way |
| Fley't | v. affrighted |
| Flytin | v. and n. chiding; scolding |
| Fluggage | n. herbage |
| Forsworn | a. perchured |
| Powrteen | a. fourteen |
| Forby | prep. besides |
| Forrit | adv. forward |
| Forritsome | a. forward |
| Forasmuckle, conj. | forasmuch |
| Forebears | n. parents; ancestors |
| Forfoughten | a. (gutt.) exhausted |
| Forneit | prep. opposite; in front of |
| Forgather | v. meet together |
| Forgien | v. forgiven |
| Forluyin | n. adultery |
| Forpet | n. fourth part of a peck |
| Forwander | v. stray away |
| Frae | prep. from |
| Frappin | v. frapping; undergirding a ship |
| Freend | n. friend |
| Fremd | a. strange; alien |
| Frute | n. fruit |
| Frutins | n. fruitings, crops |
| Fu', fou | a. full, drunk |
| Fushionless | a. pitiful, weak |
| Fyfteen | a. fifteen |
| Fyve | a. five |
| Fyle | v. defile |

| G. | |
| Gablerlunzie | n. a licensed beggar |
| Gae | v. go |
| Gae'd | v. went |
| Gaerd | n. and v. guard |
| Gane | v. gone |
GLOSSARY.

Gairden, n. garden
Gang, v. go
Gangable, a. fit for travelling
Gansh, v. snap; bite
Gang-by, n. neglect
Gangrel, a. strolling, n. wanderer
Gar, v. compel
Gaun, v. going
Gate, n. way
Gear, n. treasure, riches
Geck, v. mock, deride
Gerra, n. grass
Gey, adv. somewhat; to some extent; medium
Gibberish,* n. inarticulate speech
Gie, v. give
Gien, v. given
Gian, v. giving
Gif, prep. if
Gin, prep. if
Girn, v. grin, gnash
Girn, n. snare or trap
Girnal, n. receptacle for holding grain or meal
Glamor, n. fascination; occult influence
Glaik, a. exceedingly foolish
Glaum at, v. snatch at
Gliff, v. frighten
Glintin, v. and a. sparkling, shining
Glink, n. glance; transient ray
Glog, a. quick; active
Gleyed, a. crooked; oblique
Glint, n. and a. glance; shine
Glower, n. stare
Gonyel, n. stupid fool
Gousty, a. gusty
Gowd, n. gold
Gowpen, n. "double handful"
Graff, n. grave
Graip, v. grope
Graith, n. harness; accoutrement
Grange, n. a grain farm, or its buildings
Graun', a. grand
Grat, v. wept
Gree, n. prize, reward
Gree, v. agree
Greet, v. weep
Greetin', v. weeping
Grieve, n. farm-overseer
Grippit, v. seized, apprehended
Grit, n. great
Grund, n. ground
Grynin, a. sprinkling; thin covering
Gudes, n. goods
Gude-father, n. father-in-law. (In the same way, gude-mither, gude-son, gude-dochter, gude-brither, and gude-sister)
Gudeman, n. master of the house; husband

H.

Ha', n. [haw] hall
Hae, v. have

* These words in pi, have all the hard sound of g.

Haet, n. the least portion
Hadden, haddin, n. possessions
Hail, a. whole, total
Hain, v. economise; save, or reserve
Hairst, n. harvest
Hald, n. stronghold; dwelling
Hale, a. whole; healed; well
Halesome, a. wholesome
Hansei, v. to honour anything by first use; inaugurate
Hantle, a. a considerable number
Harled, v. dragged
Harrie, v. ravage; rob; plunder
Hand, v. hold
Handiu, v. holding
Hauden, holden; hold
Hauf, n. half
Hau, v. hand
Hauwrite, n. hand-writing
Hausa, n. windpipe, throat
Havers, havers, n. idle talk
Heartit, v. [harteit] encouraged
Heigh, a. (gutt.) high
Heigher, a. (gutt.) higher
Height, a. (gutt.) height (et pron. as short e)
Heid, a. head
Heize, n. hoist, lift
Het, a. hot
Hereaws, adv. herabouts
Herdit, v. herded
Hersel, pr. herself
He'se, v. [hees] he will
Heugh, n. (gutt.) glen; hollow place
Heuk, n. hook; sickle
Heie, heigh, a. high
Hinner, a. and v. last, or hinder; also, to hinder or obstruct
Hinner-end, n. conclusion; the last
Hinny, n. honey
Hirplin, v. limping, creeping with age or weakness
Hirsel, n. small flock
Hiralst, a. drawn together; creeping together
Hooks, n. pods; shells
Hornbuik, n. hornbook; first-book, or alphabet-card
Hoose, n. house
Howe, n. and a. hollow
Howk, v. dig; excavate
Howff, n. and v. rendezvous
Hundit, n. hounded, pursued
Hunner, hunder, n. hundred

I.

Ilk, ilka, a. each
Illeside, a. evil-doing
Ingle, n. [ingl] domestic fire
Inscriev't, v. inscribed
Intil, prep. into
Inwarta, n. inwards
I'ce, v. I am; I will
Iena, v. is not
Ither, a. other
GLOSSARY.

J.
Jalousie, v. [ja-louz] suspect
Juist, conj. just, even
Joult, v. jostled; shaken
Jimp, a. scant; scarce; narrow

K.
Kist, n. and v. chest; to prepare for burial
Ken, v. know
Kith and kin, n. intimate friends, and relatives
Kintra, n. country
Kennon, v. and n. knowing; knowledge; a very small quantity
Kens, n. a. knows not
Keepit, v. kept
Keekin-glass, n. looking-glass
Kythe, v. appear, or show itself

L.
Laff, n. upper room; loft; gallery
Lail, n. loaf
Laigh, a. (gutt.) low
Laigher, a. (gutt.) lower
 Laird, a. landowner
Lameter, n. [la'me-ter] one lane; cripple
Langsyne, n. (soft s) long ago
Lang-tholin, v. and n. long-suffering
Lap, v. leaped
Lass, lassie, n. girl, maiden
Laudit, v. praised
Lave, v. the rest. the remainder
Lax, n. dysentery or diarrhea
Leal, a. [feel] faithful, loyal, true
Lear, n. [lare] knowledge, learning
Leean, v. and a. lying; false
Lessence, n. leave, license
Leech, n. physician
Leet, n. a list, as of candidates
Leuch, v. (gutt.) laughed
Loewe, v. to live
Let-abe, conj. except
Light, n. (gutt.) light
Lichtlie, v. despise, undervalue
Lift, n. the atmosphere; the sky
Lilt, v. and n. sing; a song
Lippen, v. trust
Lippin-fu', a. full to overflowing
Loainin, n. a wide lane, or other enclosed place
Loch, n. (gutt.) lake
Loof, n. palm of the hand: pl. "looves"
Loons, n. fellows
Loot, v. let, permitted
Loup, v. [lowp] leap
Loutit, v. [low'teet] lowered, bent down
Lowe, n. blaze
Lowin, v. and n. blazing
Lown, a. quiet, still
Lowp, v. and n. leap

Lowse, v. (hard s) to loose
Lowse, a. (soft s) loose
Lowntown, v. bend down; to lower
Luntit, v. kindled; lit

M.
Maen, v. and n. moan
Mailin, n. property occupied or possessed
Mausweir, v. perjure
Mansworn, a. perjured
Manteel, n. mantle; wrap
Manglin, v. mangling
Marrow, v. and n. equal
Maud, n. a woolen wrap; a "plaid"
Maun, v. must
Maunna, v. must not
Meat, n. food in general
Meech, n. reward
Melder, n. batch, or "grist"
Mense, n. (soft s) discretion, propriety
Merk, n. a "mark," or coin worth two-thirds of a pound Scots: about 13d. sterling
Mercit, n. market
Mickle, muckle, a. much
Mids, prep. midst; middle
Midden, n. dust-heap; dung-heap
Midden-orta, n. odd trash flung out
Minnie, n. mother
Mirk, n. and a. dark
Misca', v. asperse, slander
Misdootit, v. bad doubts
Miscuis'en, n. wrongly-thrown
Mislearned, v. [miss-laird'] misinformed
Mislapping, v. mistake, deceive
Mistryst, v. (y, sound of long i) disappoint, deceive
Mis-sayin, n. slander
Moil, n. depressing labour
Mony, a. many
Mools, n. crumbs
Mou', n. mouth
Mylane, pr. my self alone

N.
Naegate, adv. nowise; nowhere; no way
Naipkin, n. napkin; kerchief.
Nar, a. near
Nar-by, prep. near-by
Natheless, conj. nevertheless
Neuff', n. handful
Neist, a. next
Neive, n. fist
Nevoy, n. nephew
Nisser, v. barter, exchange
Nocht, n. (gutt.) nothing
Nourice, v. nurse; cherish
Noyte, n. cattle

O.
Ochts, auchts, v. (gutt.) possesses
Oos, n. grandchildren
Offeran, n. offering
GLOSSARY.

Ouygate, adv. anywise
Ou', n. wool
'Or, n. hour
Out-by, prep. outside
Outcome, n. outcome, conclusion
Outermast, a. outermost
'Or, prep. before
Orna, a. occasional; odd; superfluous
Orts, n. refuse; rubbish
Outerline, n. outcast; reprobate
Overcome, n. superfluity
Overgauze, v. and a. overflowing
Owse, n. oxen

Pyke, v. pick; dig out
Pyne, v. and a. punish; sorrow, punishment; pain

Q.
Quain, n. question
Quern, n. a hand-millstone
Query, n. [quae] a heifer
Quat, v. quit, cease; ceased, let go
Quate, a. quiet, silent
Quateness, n. quietness; peace

R.
Raal, a real
Raise, v. raise
Rain-stam, a. thoughtless
Rang, v. reigned
Rax, v. stretch
Rebut, v. rebuke
Re-stie, reistie, a. fractious, unwilling
Red, v. teach, counsel
Redd, v. to disentangle, put to rights
Rede, n. lesson, advice
Reek, v. and n. smoke
Reive, v. plunder
Reiver, n. robber
Renth, n. pity
Richt, a. and n. (gutt.) right
Righteous, a. (gutt.) righteous
Riggin, n. roof
Rinkit, v. ranged round
Rive, v. rend; n. a rent
Rooosin, n. (hard s) praising
Rouch, a. (gutt.) rough
Roast, n. rust
Rowt, v. rolled
Rowth, n. abundance
Runkle, n. and a. wrinkle
Rung, n. stake, or club
Rutit, v. rooted
Rype, v. to probe, to poke

S.
Sa', n. salve
Sab, v. and n. sob
Sacrifice, n. sacrifice
Sad-bred, n. heavy, or unleavened bread
Sair, a. sore, grievous
Sairs, n. injuries
Sairs, v. serves, accomplishes
Sal, v. shall
Sanna, n. shall not
Sauf, n. save
Saul, n. soul
Saunt, a. saint
Saut, n. and a. salt
Sautan, n. Satan
Sawed, v. sowed
Sawn, v. sown
Sax, a. six
Scaum, n. haze
Scaur, n. precipitous bank
Schaw, v. show
Schew, v. [sheu] sew
**GLOSSARY.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Schute, v, push</td>
<td>Insist, demand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scoother, n. and v.</td>
<td>Scorch, scorching</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Screed, n. a writing</td>
<td>Hastiness, epistle, anything written</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scum, v, and n.</td>
<td>Loathe, disgust</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Self, v. strain; filter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sel, pr. self</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sellie, a. selfish</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ser, v. serve</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serin, v. serving</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Servitor, n. servant</td>
<td>Waiter, serving</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sham't, v. ashamed</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shapit, v. formed</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shear, v. reap with a sickle</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sheelin, n. hut</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sheugh, n. (gutt.)</td>
<td>Trench, grave</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shoon, n. shoes</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shooter n. [shoother]: hard th shoulder</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shucken, v. shaken</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shure, v. did shear (or reap)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sib, a. related by blood</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sibness, n. consanguinity</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sic, siccan, siclike, adv. such</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siccar, a. secure, firm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siccarlie, adv. strongly, securely, sternly</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sich, n. (gutt.) sigh</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siller, n. silver, money</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silly, a. weak in body or mind</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silliness, n. weakness, especially of the body</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simmer-warm, a. lukewarm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinder, v. divide, separate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sindy, adv. saunter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sirse n. (soft a)</td>
<td>Sirs, sire, sirs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skail, v. scatter; spill; disperse</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skaith, v. and n. (soft th) injure; injury</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skeelie, a. skilful</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skellied, a. oblique, squinting</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skirlin, v. screaming</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skreigh, v. and n. (gutt) shriek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sleeperie, a. sleepy</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slippit, v. slipped</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slookened, v. slaked, quenched</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slype, v. slide</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smack, n. a small decked, or partially decked vessel</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smoored, v. smothered</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snapper, v. stumble</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snoed, v. snip off</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snod, v. trim, put in order</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sonnie, a. well-conditioned, sensible, pleasant</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snack, n latch</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snell, a. sharp; biting</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soom, v. swim</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sooporit, v. swept</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sooth, n. truth</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sorrin, v. “sponging”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soul, v. should</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sough, n. (gutt.) whisper; echo; sound</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soun', n. [soon] sound</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sowp, n. a mouthful; a small quantity</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sowther, v. solder</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spate, n. freshet; flood</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Speel, v. climb</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Speir, v. enquire</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Speirin, v. questioning</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Speldriu, n. a fish split and dried</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sperli't, v. scattered wastefully</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spread, v. spread</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spuein, v. and n. vomiting</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stance, n. site; standing-place</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stane, a. stony</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Starn, n. star</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stauers-by, n. by-standers</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Staw, n. stole</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steive, stive, a. robust, strong</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steively, adv. strongly</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steek, v. fasten; stitch</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stegh, v. (gutt.) to fill to satiety</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stell'd, v. set fast</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sterk, a. bold, unfinishing</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stibble, n. stubble</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stirk, n. young ox; steer</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stog, v. and n. puncture</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stotter, stiver, v. stubble</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stoun’, n. sudden pain</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stour, n. flying dust; strife</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stoutbriu, n. robbery with violence</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stowp, stoup, n. vessel for holding liquids</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strama, n. disturbance; broil</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Straucht, a. (gutt.) straight</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strejt, a. narrow; n. difficulty</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickly, adv. strictly</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strinkle, v. sprinkle; stew</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strucken, v. struck</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suddaincie, n. a sudden occasion</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suner, a. sooner</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sumph, n. a “soft,” or weak-minded man</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sut, sutten, v. set or sit</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swappit, v. thrown or clapped together</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swoff, v. faint</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swech, n. (gutt.) trumpet</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swee, n. swing, lurch</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sweir, a. reluctant</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swither, v. hesitate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Synd, v. rinse, cleanse</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syne, adv. soon; since</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**T.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tack, n. the term of a lease</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taigle, v. involve; delay</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tang, n. sharpness; a sharp point</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tecm, n. pour</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tempit, v. tempted</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tenner, a. tender</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tent, n. notice; care</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tentie, a. thoughtful; careful</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tether, v. and n. to fasten; a tie, fastening</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thae, pr. (hard th) those</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theek, n. thatch</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thegither, prep. together</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theretill, prep. thereto</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thir, pr. (hard th) these</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thrism, n. slave; prisoner</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thole, v. endure, bear</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tholeable, a. endurable</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thravart, a. intractable, contrary</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thrawn, a. obstinate, contrary</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Threep, v. pertinaciously affirm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY.

Thretty, a. thirty
Thring, v. thrust; press forward
Throwe-gang, n. streete
Throwe-ether, prep. mixed together
Ticht, a. (gutt.) tight
Tichtly, adv. (gutt.) tightly, strictly
Tine, v. lose
Tint, v. lost
Tirl, v. a continuous light knocking or
  touching
To'booth, n. tolbooth, prison
Tocher, n. (gutt.) dowry
To the fore, a. prepared; still available
Tod, n. fox
Toom, n. empty
Tow, n. rope; string; fastening
Towel, n. coarse bagging
Tosh, a. neat, trim
Towerickie, n. tower; high point
Trampl, v. trampled, trod
Trail, v. to trail in a languid way
Trauclit, v. (gutt.) dragged
Trove, v. traffic, deal, trade
Trocha, n. troughs, receptacles for water
Trimit, v. trembled
Trimlin, v. and a. trembling
Tryst, n. an appointment
Trystit, v. made an appointment; cove-
   nanted
Tukken, v. taken
Twafaull, a. double; insincere
Tulzie, n. tumult; conflict

U.

Ulyie, n. oil
Unco, adv. strange; exceedingly
Uncoos, n. strange things
Unsteekit, v. unfastened; opened
Uuwankit, a. unfulled
Up-biggin, v. up-building
Uphauld, v. uphold
Upo', prep. upon
Uptak, n. comprehension
Ussicar, a. unsettled, unstable

V.

Veschel, n. vessel

W.

Wa', n. wall
Waal, n. [waal] well; shaft
Waal-see, n. spring of water
Wad, v. would
Waesome, a. woeful, miserable
Waff, a. weak; insipid
Waffle, v. to show weakness or insincerity
Wafflin, a. weak; undecided
Wa'-gau, v. going away
Wale, v. and n. select; choice
Walin oot, v. selecting
Wame, n. belly, stomach
Want, v. to lack
Wantin, v. lacking
Wand, n. rod
Wanrestie, a. uneasy
Wapins, n. weapons

War, v. were
Warna, v. were not
Wared, v. spent, disbursed
Warsie, v. wrestle
Wastrie, n. waste
Wauftness, n. weakness
Waur, a. worse
Wauk, v. to "full" as cloth
Wastr-it, [wast'trel] spendthrift
Weans, n. infants; children
Wearin-dud, n. a garment
Wecht, n. (gutt.) weight
Weel-faur'd, a. well favoured; handsome
Weir, n. war
Weird, n. fate
Weise, v. (soft s) to turn by gentle means
Wench, n. a young woman
Wersh, a. [inairsh] insipid; unseasoned
Wesh, v. wash
Whammle, v. overturn
Whan, adv. when
Whasae, pr. whoso, whosoever
Whaurin, prep. wherein
When, a. a few
Whilk, pr. which
Whing, whang, n. thong
Whisht, whuht, v. whispered; silenced
Whust, n. silence
Wi', prep. [wee] with
Widdie, n. withe; rope
Win, v. get, obtain; arrive at
Winnock, n. window
Wordie, a. worthy
Wrangous, wrangously, adv. wrongfully
Wricht, n. (gutt.) right; artificer
Writer, n. lawyer
Wrocht, v. (gutt.) wrought
Wud, n. wood
Wud, a. mad, insane
Wull, v. and n. will
Wun, wund, v. wind
Wunner, v. and n. wonder
Wunner-warks, n. miracles
Wuss, v. and n. wish
Wi'ye, prep. and pr. with you
Wyle, v. draw, entice
Wyss, a. (soft s) wise, sane
Wysheid, n. wisdom
Wyte, v. and n. blame
Wyteless, a. blameless

Y.

Yaird, n. garden
Yammer, v. whine, mutter
Yap, a. hungry
Yerbs, n. herbs
Yernest, a. earnest
Yerk, v. jerk, snatch
Yett, n. gate
Yeuckie, a. itching
Yeuk, v. and n. itch; itching
Yird, n. ground; soil
Yirdin, n. earthquake
Yirth, n. earth; world
Yonner, prep. yonder
Yont, prep. beyond